

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA.

WRITTEN BY SIR Philip Sidney Knight.

NOW SINCE THE FIRST EDI-tion augmented and ended.

LONDON.
Printed for William Ponsonbie.
Anno Domini. 1593.

TO MY DEARE LADY AND SISTER, THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKE.



HEre now haue you (moſt deare, and moſt worthye to bee moſt deare Lady) this idle worke of mine: which I feare (like the Spiders webbe) will be thought fitter to be ſwept away, then worne to any other purpoſe. For my part, in very trueth (as the cruell fathers among the Greekes, were woont to doe to the babes they would not foſter) I could well finde in my heart, to caſt out in ſome deſert of forgetfulneſſe this childe, which I am loath to father. But you deſired me to doe it, and your deſire, to my heart is an abſolute commaundement. Now, it is done onely for you, only to you: if you keepe it to your ſelfe, or to ſuch friends, who will weigh errors in the ballance of good will, I hope, for the fathers ſake, it will be pardoned, perchaunce made much of, though in it ſelfe it haue deformities. For indeed, for ſeuerer eies it is not, being but a trifle, and that triflingly handled. Your deare ſelfe can beſt witnes the manner,

being done in looſe ſheetes of paper, moſt of it in your preſence, the reſt, by ſheetes, ſent vnto you, as faſt as they were done. In ſumme, a young head, not ſo wel ſtaied as I would it were, (and ſhall be when God will) hauing many many fancies begotten in it, if it had not beene in ſome way deliuered, woulde haue growen a monſter, and more ſorie might I be that they came in, then that they gat out. But his chiefe ſafety, ſhall bee the not walking abroade; and his chiefe protection, the bearing the liuery of your name; which (if much much good will doe not deceiue me) is worthie to be a ſanctuarie for a greater offender. This ſay I, becauſe I know the vertue ſo; and this ſay I, becauſe it may be euer ſo, or to ſay better, becauſe it will be euer ſo. Reade it then at your idle times, and the follies your good iudgement will finde in it, blame not, but laugh at. And ſo, looking for no better ſtuffe, then, as in a Haberdaſhers ſhoppe, glaſſes, or feathers, you will continue to loue the writer, who doth exceedingly loue you, and moſte moſte heartilie praies you may long liue, to be a principall ornament to the family of the *Sidneis*.

Your louing brother.

Philip Sidney.

To the Reader.

THE disfigured face, gentle Reader, wherewith this worke not long since appeared to the common view, moued that noble Lady, to whose Honour consecrated, to whose protection it was committed, to take in hand the wiping away those spottes wherewith the beauties therof were vnworthely blemished. But as often in repairing a ruinous house, the mending of some olde part occasioneth the making of some new: so here her honourable labour begonne in correcting the faults, ended in supplying the defectes; by the view of what was ill done guided to the consideration of what was not done. Which part with what aduise entred into, with what successe it hath beene passed through, most by her doing, all by her directing, if they may be entreated not to define, which are vnfurnisht of meanes to discerne, the rest (it is hoped) will fauourably censure. But this they shall, for theyr better satisfaction, vnderstand, that though they finde not here what might be expected, they may finde neuertheless as much as was intended, the conclusion, not the perfection of Arcadia: and that no further then the Authours own writings, or knowen determinations could direct. Whereof who sees not the reason, must consider there may be reason which hee sees not. Albeit I

dare affirme hee either ſees, or from wiſer iudgements then his owne may heare, that Sir Philip Sidneies *writings can no more be perfected without* Sir Philip Sidney, *then* Apelles *pictures without* Apelles. *There are that thinke the contrary: and no wonder. Neuer was* Arcadia *free from the comber of ſuch* Cattell. *To vs, ſay they, the paſtures are not pleaſaunt: and as for the flowers, ſuch as we light on we take no delight in, but the greater part growe not within our reach. Poore ſoules! what talke they of flowers? They are Roſes, not flowers, muſt doe them good, which if they finde not here, they ſhall doe well to go feed elſwhere: Any place will better like them: For without* Arcadia *nothing growes in more plenty, then* Lettuce *ſutable to their* Lippes, *If it be true that likenes is a great cauſe of liking, and that contraries, inferre contrary conſequences: then is it true, that the worthelesſ Reader can neuer worthely eſteeme of ſo worthye a writing: and as true, that the noble, the wiſe, the vertuous, the curteous, as many as haue had any acquaintaunce with true learning and knowledge, will with all loue and deareneſſe entertaine it, as well for affinity with themſelues, as being child to ſuch a father. Whom albeit it do not exactly and in euery lineament repreſent; yet conſidering the fathers vntimely death preuented the timely birth of the childe, it may happily ſeeme a thanke-woorthy labour, that the defects being ſo few, ſo ſmall, and in no principall part, yet the greateſt vnlikenes is rather in defect then in deformity. But howſoeuer it is, it is now by more then one intereſt* The Counteſſe of Pembrokes Arcadia: *done, as it was, for her: as it is, by her. Neither ſhall theſe pains be the laſt (if no vnexpected accident cut off her determination) which the euerlaſting loue of her excellent brother, will make her conſecrate to his memory.*

H. S.

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA VVRITTEN BY SIR PHILIP SIDNEI.

(:)

THE FIRST BOOKE.



IT was in the time that the earth begins to put on her new aparrel againſt the approch of her louer, and that the Sun running a moſt euen courſe becums an indifferent arbiter betweene the night and the day; when the hopeleſſe ſhepheard *Strephon* was come to the ſandes, which lie againſt the Iſland of Cithera; where viewing the place with a heauy kinde of delight, and ſometimes caſting his eyes to the Ileward, he called his friendly riuall, the paſtor *Claius* vnto him, & ſetting firſt down in his darkened countenance a dolefull copie of what he would ſpeake: O my *Claius*, ſaide hee, hether we are now come to pay the rent, for which we are ſo called vnto by ouer-buſie Remembrance, Remembrance, reſtleſſe Remembrance, which claymes not only this dutie of vs, but for it will haue vs forget our ſelues. I pray you when we were amid our flocke, and that of other ſhepheardes ſome were running after their ſheep ſtrayed beyond their boundes, ſome delighting their eyes with ſeeing them nibble vpon the ſhort and ſweete graſſe, ſome medicining their ſicke ewes, ſome ſetting a bell for an enſigne of a ſheepiſh ſquadron, ſome with more leaſure inuenting new games of exerciſing their bodies and ſporting their wits: did Remembrance graunt vs any holiday, eyther for paſtime or deuotion, nay either for neceſſary foode or naturall reſt? but that ſtill it forced our thoughts to worke vpon this place, where wee laſt (alas that the word laſt ſhould ſo long laſt) did graze our eyes vpon her euer floriſhing beautie: did it not ſtill crie within vs? Ah you baſe minded wretches, are your thoughts ſo deeply bemired in the trade of ordinary worldlings, as for reſpect of gaine ſome paultry wool may yeeld you, to let ſo much time paſſe without knowing perfectly her eſtate, eſpecially in ſo troubleſome a ſeaſon? to leaue that ſhere vnſaluted, from whence you may ſee to the Iſland where ſhe dwelleth? to leaue thoſe ſteps vnkiſſed wherein *Vrania* printed the farewell of all beautie? Well then, Remembraunce commaunded, we obeyed, and here we find, that as our remembrance

came euer cloathed vnto vs in the forme of this place, ſo this place giues newe heate to the feauer of our languiſhing remembrance. Yonder my *Clauis*, *Vrania* lighted, the verie horſe (me thought) bewayled to be ſo disburdned: and as for thee, poore *Clauis*, when thou wentſt to helpe her downe, I ſaw reuerence and deſire ſo deuide thee, that thou didſt at one inſtant both bluſhe and quake, and in ſtead of bearing her, warte readie to fal down thy ſelfe. There ſhe ſate, vouchſafing my cloake (then moſt gorgeous) vnder her: at yonder riſing of the ground ſhee turned her ſelfe, looking backe toward her woonted abode, and becauſe of her parting bearing much ſorrow in her eyes, the lightſomnes wherof had yet ſo natural a cherefulneſſe, as it made euen ſorrow ſeeme to ſmile; at that turning ſhee ſpake to vs all, opening the cherrie of her lips, and Lord how greedily mine eares did feed vpon the ſweete words ſhe vttered? And here ſhe laide her hand ouer thine eyes, when ſhee ſaw the teares ſpringing in them, as if ſhe would conceale them from other, and yet her ſelfe feele ſome of thy ſorrow: But woe is me, yonder, yonder, did ſhee put her foote into the boate, at that inſtant as it were diuiding her heauenly beautie, betweene the Earth and the Sea. But when ſhe was imbarked, did you not marke how the windes whiſtled, and the ſeas daunſt for ioy, how the ſailes did ſwell with pride, and all becauſe they had *Vrania*? O *Vrania*, bleſſed be thou *Vrania*, the ſweeteſt fairneſſe and faireſt ſweetneſſe: with that word his voice brake ſo with ſobbing, that he could ſay no further; and *Clauis* thus anſwered. Alas my *Strephon* (ſaid he) what needes this skore to recken vp onely our loſſes? What doubt is there, but that the light of this place doth cal our thoughtes to appeare at the court of affection, held by that racking ſteward, Remembrance? Aſwell may ſheepe forget to feare when they ſpie woolues, as we can miſſe ſuch fancies, when we ſee any place made happie by her treading. Who can chooſe that ſaw her but thinke where ſhe ſtayed, where ſhe walkt, where ſhe turned, where ſhe ſpoke? But what is all this? truely no more, but as this place ſerued vs to thinke of thoſe thinges, ſo thoſe thinges ſerue as places to call to memorie more excellent matters. No, no, let vs thinke with conſideration, and conſider with acknowledging, and acknowledge with admiration, and admire with loue, and loue with ioy in the midſt of all woes: let vs in ſuch ſorte thinke, I ſay, that our poore eyes were ſo inriched as to behold, and our lowe hearts ſo exalted as to loue, a maide, who is ſuch, that as the greateſt thing the world can ſhewe, is her beautie, ſo the leaſt thing that may be prayſed in her, is her beautie. Certainely as her eye-lids are more pleaſant to behold, then two white kiddes climing vp a faire tree, and browſing on his tendreſt braunches, and yet are nothing, compared to the day-ſhining ſtarres contayned in them; and as her breath is more ſweete then a gentle South-weſt wind, which coms creeping ouer flowrie fieldes and ſhaddowed waters in the extreeme heate of ſummer, and yet is nothing, compared to the hony flowing ſpeach that breath doth carrie: no more all that our eyes can ſee of her (though when they haue ſeene her, what elſe they ſhall euer ſee is but drie ſtuble after clouers graſſe) is to be matched with the flocke of vnſpeakeable vertues laid vp delightfully in that beſt builded folde. But in deede as we can better conſider the ſunnes beautie, by marking how he guildes theſe waters, and mountaines then by looking vpon his owne face, too glorious for our weake eyes: ſo it may be our conceits (not able to beare her ſun-ſtayning excellencie) will better way it by her workes vpon ſome meaner ſubiect employed. And alas, who can better witneſſe that then we, whoſe experience is grounded vpon feeling? hath not the onely loue of her made vs (beeing ſilly ignorant ſhepheards) raiſe

vp

vp our thoughts aboue the ordinary leuell of the worlde, ſo as great clearkes doe not diſdaine our conference? hath not the deſire to ſeeme worthie in her eyes made vs when others were ſleeping, to ſit vewing the courſe of heauens? when others were running at baſe, to runne ouer learned writings? when other marke their ſheepe, we two marke our ſelues? hath not ſhee throwne reaſon vpon our deſires, and, as it were giuen eyes vnto *Cupid*? hath in any, but in her, loue-fellowſhip maintained frindſhip between riuals, and beautie taught the beholders chaſtitie? He was going on with his praiſes, but *Strephon* bad him ſtay, and looke: and ſo they both perceaued a thinge which floted drawing nearer and nearer to the banke; but rather by the fauourable working of the Sea, then by any ſelfe induſtrie. They doubted a while what it ſhould bee; till it was caſt vp euen hard before them: at which time they fully ſaw that it was a man. Wherupon running for pitie ſake vnto him, they found his hands (as it ſhould appeare, conſtanter frendes to his life then his memorie) faſtgriping vpon the edge of a ſquare ſmall coffer, which lay all vnder his breaſt: els in him ſelfe no ſhew of life, ſo as the boord ſeemed to be but a beere to carrie him a land to his Sepulchre. So drew they vp a young man of ſo goodly ſhape, and well pleaſing fauour, that one would thinke death had in him a louely countenance; and, that though he were naked, nakednes was to him an apparrell. That ſight increaſed their compaſſion, and their compaſſion called vp their care; ſo that lifting his feete aboue his head, making a great deale of ſalt water come out of his mouth, they layd him vpon ſome of their garments, and fell to rub and chafe him, till they brought him to recouer both breath the ſeruant, and warmth the companion of liuing. At length opening his eyes, he gaue a great groane, (a dolefull note but a pleaſaunt dittie) for by that, they founde not onely life, but ſtrength of life in him. They therefore continued on their charitable office, vntill (his ſpirits being well returned,) he (without ſo much as thanking them for their paines) gate vp, and looking round about to the vttermoſt lymittes of his ſight, and crying vpon the name of *Pyrocles*, nor ſeeing nor hearing cauſe of comfort, what (ſaid he) and ſhall *Muſidorus* liue after *Pyrocles* deſtruction? therewithall hee offered wilfully to caſt himſelfe againe into the ſea: a ſtrange ſight to the ſhepheards, to whom it ſeemed, that beefore being in apparance dead had yet ſaued his life, and now comming to his life, ſhould be a cauſe to procure his death; but they ranne vnto him, and pulling him backe, (then to feeble for them) by force ſtickled that vnnaturall fray. I pray you (ſaid he) honeſt men, what ſuch right haue you in me, as not to ſuffer me to doe with my ſelfe what I liſt? and what pollicie haue you to beſtowe a benefite where it is counted an iniury? They hearing him ſpeake in Greeke (which was their naturall language) became the more tender hearted towards him; and conſidering by his calling and looking, that the loſſe of ſome deare friend was great cauſe of his ſorrow; tolde him they were poore men that were bound by courſe of humanitie to preuent ſo great a miſchiefe; and that they wiſht him, if opinion of ſome bodies periſhing bred ſuch deſperate anguiſh in him, that he ſh ould be cõforted by his own proof, who had lately eſcaped as apparant danger as any might be. N o, no (ſaid he) it is not for me to attend ſo high a bliſſefullnes: but ſince you take care of me I pray you find meãs that ſome Bark may be prouided, that will go out of the hauen, that if it be poſſible wee maye find the bodie farre farre too precious a food for fiſhes: and for the hire (ſaid he) I haue within this casket, of value ſufficient to content them. *Clauus* preſently went to a Fiſherman, and hauing agreed with him, and prouided ſome apparrell for the naked ſtranger, he imbarked, and the Shepheards with him: and were no ſooner gone beyond the mouth of the hauen,

but that ſome way into the ſea they might diſcerne (as it were) a ſtayne of the waters colour, and by times ſome ſparkes and ſmoke mounting thereout. But the young man no ſooner ſaw it, but that beating his breſt, he cried, that there was the beginning of his ruine, intreating them to bend their courſe as neere vnto it as they could: telling, how that ſmoake was but a ſmall relique of a great fire, which had driuen both him and his friend rather to committe themſelues to the cold mercie of the ſea, than to abide the hote crueltie of the fire: and that therefore, though they both had abandoned the ſhip, that he was (if any where) in that courſe to bee met withall. They ſteared therefore as neere thether-ward as they cold: but when they came ſo neere as their eies were ful maſters of the obiect, they ſaw a ſight ful of piteous ſtrangenes: a ſhip, or rather the carkas of the ſhippe, or rather ſome few bones of the carkas, hulling there, part broken, part burned, part drowned: death hauing vſed more than one dart to that deſtruction. About it floted great ſtore of very rich thinges, and many cheſtes which might promiſe no leſſe. And amidſt the precious thinges were a number of dead bodies, which likewiſe did not only teſtifie both elements violence, but that the chiefe violence was growen of humane inhumanitie: for their bodies were full of griſly wounds, and their bloud had (as it were) filled the wrinckles of the ſeas viſage: which it ſeemed the ſea woulde not waſh away, that it might witnes it is not alwaies his fault, when wee condemne his cruletie. In ſumme, a defeate, where the conquered kept both field and ſpoile: a ſhipwrack without ſtorme or ill footing: and a waſt of fire in the midſt of the water.

But a litle way off they ſaw the maſt, whoſe proude height now lay along; like a widdow hauing loſt her make of whom ſhe held her honor: but vpon the maſt they ſaw a yong man (at leaſt if hee were a man) bearing ſhew of about 18. yeares of age, who ſate (as on horſeback) hauing nothing vpon him but his ſhirt, which beeing wrought with blew ſilke and golde; had a kinde of reſemblance to the ſea: on which the ſun (then neare his Weſterne home) did ſhote ſome of his beames. His haire (which the young men of Greece vſed to weare very long) was ſtirred vp and downe with the wind, which ſeemed to haue a ſporte to play with it, as the ſea had to kiſſe his feet; himſelfe full of admirable beautie, ſet foorth by the ſtrangenes both of his ſeate and geſture: for, holding his head vp full of vnmoued maieſtie, he held a ſworde aloft with his faire arme, which often he waued about his crowne as though he would threaten the world in that extremitie. But the fiſhermen, when they came ſo neere him, that it was time to throwe out a rope, by which hold they might draw him, their ſimplicity bred ſuch a maſement, and their amaſement ſuch ſuperſtition, that (aſſuredly thinking it was ſome God begotten betweene *Neptune* and *Venus*, that had made all this terrible ſlaughter) as they went vnder ſayle by him, held vp their hands and made their prayers. Which when *Muſidorus* ſaw, though he were almoſt as much rauiſhed with ioy, as they with aſtoniſhment, he lept to the Mariner, and tooke the corde out of his hande and (ſaying, doeſt thou liue, and arte well? who anſwered, thou canſt tell beſt, ſince moſt of my well beyng ſtandes in thee,) threwe it out, but alreadie the ſhippe was paſt beyond *Pyrocles*: and therefore *Muſidorus* could do no more but perſwade the Mariners to caſt about againe, aſſuring them that hee was but a man, although of moſt diuine excellencies, and promiſing great rewardes for their paine.

And now they were alreadie come vpon the ſtaies; when one of the ſaylers diſcried a Galley which came with ſayles and oares directlie in the chaſe of them; and

ſtreight

ſtreight perceaued it was a wel knowne Pirate, who hunted not only for goodes but for bodies of men, which he imployed eyther to be his Galley ſlaues, or to ſell at the beſt market. Which when the Maiſter vnderſtoode, he commaunded forthwith to ſet on al the canuaſſe they could, and flie homeward, leauing in that ſort poore *Pyrocles* ſo neere to be reskewed. But what did not *Muſidorus* faye? what did hee not offer to perſwade them to venture the fight? But feare ſtāding at the gates of their eares, put backe all perſwaſions: ſo that he had nothing wherewith to accompanie *Pyrocles*, but his eyes; nor to ſuccour him, but his wiſhes. Therefore praying for him, and caſting a long looke that way, he ſaw the Galley leaue the purſuite of them, and turne to take vp the ſpoiles of the other wracke: and laſtly he might well ſee them lift vp the yong man; and alas (ſaide hee to himſelfe) deere *Pyrocles* ſhall that bodie of thine be enchained? ſhal thoſe victorious hāds of thine be cōmaunded to baſe offices? ſhal vertue becōe a ſlaue to thoſe that be ſlaues to viciouſnes? Alas, better had it bene thou hadſt ended nobly thy noble daies: what death is ſo euil as vnworthy ſeruitude? But that opinion ſoone ceaſed when he ſawe the gallie ſetting vpon an other ſhippe, which held long and ſtrong fight with her: for then he began a freſh to feare the life of his friende, and to wiſh well to the Pirates whome before he hated, leaſt in their ruyne he might periſh. But the fiſhermen made ſuch ſpeed into the hauen, that they abſented his eyes from beholding the iſſue: where being entred, he could procure neither them nor any other as then to put themſelues into the ſea: ſo that being as ful of ſorrow for beyng vnable to doe any thing, as voide of counſel how to doe any thing, beſides, that ſickneſſe grew ſomething vpon him, the honeſt ſhepheards *Strephon* and *Claius* (who being themſelues true friends, did the more perfectly iudge the iuſtneſſe of his ſorrowe) aduiſe him, that he ſhould mitigate ſomwhat of his woe, ſince he had gotten an amendment in fortune, being come from aſſured perſuaſion of his death, to haue no cauſe to diſpaire of his life: as one that had lamented the death of his ſheepe, ſhould after know they were but ſtrayed, would receiue pleaſure though readily he knew not where to finde them.

Now ſir (ſaide they) thus for our ſelues it is. We are in profeſſion but ſhepheards, and in this countrie of Laconia little better then ſtraungers, and therefore neither in skill, nor abilitie of power greatly to ſtead you. But what wee can preſent vnto you is this: Arcadia, of which countrie we are, is but a little way hence; and euen vpon the next confines there dwelleth a Gentleman, by name *Kalander*, who vouchſafeth much fauour vnto vs: A man who for his hoſpitalitie is ſo much haunted, that no newes ſturre, but comes to his eares; for his vpright dealing ſo beloued of his neighbours, that he hath many euer readie to doe him their vtterꝛnoſt ſeruice, and by the great good will our Prince beares him, may ſoone obtaine the vſe of his name and credit, which hath a principall ſwaie, not onely in his owne Arcadia but in all theſe countries of *Peloponneſus*: & (which is worth all) all theſe things giue him not ſo much power, as his nature giues him will to benefit: ſo that it ſeemes no Muſicke is ſweete to his eare as deſerued thanks. To him we wil bring you, and there you may recouer againe your health, without which you cannot bee able to make any diligent ſearch for your friend: and therefore you muſt labour for it. Beſides, we are ſure the comfort of curteſie, and eaſe of wiſe counſell ſhall not be wanting.

Muſidorus (who beſides he was meerly vnacquainted in the countrie had his wits aſtoniſhed with ſorrow) gaue eaſie conſent to that, from which hee ſawe no reaſon to diſagree: and therefore (defraying the Mariners with a ring beſtowed vpon

them) they tooke their iourney together through *Laconia*; *Claius* and *Strephon* by courſe carying his cheſt for him, *Muſidorus* only bearing in his countenance euident markes of a ſorovvful-mind ſupported vvith a vveake bodie, vvhich they perceiuing, and knovving that the violence of ſorovv is not at the firſt to be ſtriuen vvithall: (being like a mighty beaſt, ſoner tamed vvith followving, than ouerthrovven by vvithſtanding) they gaue vvay vnto it for that day and the next; neuer troubling him, either vvith asking queſtions, or finding fault vvith his melancholie, but rather fitting to his dolor dolorous diſcourſes of their ovvne and other folks misfortunes. Which ſpeeches, though they had not a liuely entrãce to his ſences ſhut vp in ſorow, yet like one halfe a ſleepe he tooke hold of much of the matters ſpoken vnto him, ſo as a man may ſay, ere ſorow was a ware, they made his thoughts beare away ſomthing els beſid his own ſorow, which wrought ſo in him, that at lẽgth he grew content to marke their ſpeeches, then to maruell at ſuch wit in ſhepheardes, after to like their company, and laſtly to vouchſafe conference: ſo that the third day after, in the time that the morning did ſtrow roſes and violets in the heauenly floore againſt the comming of the Sun, the nightingales (ſtriuing one with the other which coulde in moſt dainty variety recount their wrong cauſed ſorow) made them put of their ſleep, and riſing from vnder a tree (which that night had bine their pauilion) they went on their iorney, which by and by welcomed *Muſidorus* eyes (wearied with the waſted ſoile of Laconia) with delightfull proſpects. There were hilles which garniſhed their proud heights with ſtately trees: humble valleis, whoſe baſe eſtate ſeemed comforted with refreſhing of ſiluer riuers: medowes, enameld with all ſortes of eypleaſing floures: thickets, which being lined with moſt pleaſant ſhade, were witneſſed ſo too by the cheerefull diſpoſition of many wel-tuned birds: ech paſture ſtored with ſheep feeding with ſober ſecurity, while the prety lambes with bleting oratory craued the dams comfort: here a ſhepheards boy piping, as though he ſhould neuer be olde: there a yong ſhepherdeſſe knitting, and withall ſinging, and it ſeemed that her voice comforted her hands to worke, and her hands kept time to her voices muſick. As for the houſes of the country (for many houſes came vnder their eye) they were all ſcattered, no two being one by th'other, and yet not ſo far off as that it barred mutuall ſuccour: a ſhew, as it were, of an accompanable ſolitarines, & of a ciuil wildnes. I pray you (ſaid *Muſidorus*, then firſt vnſealing his long ſilent lips) what countreyes be theſe we paſſe through, which are ſo diuers in ſhewe, the one wanting no ſtore, th'other hauing no ſtore but of want.

The country (anſwered *Claius*) where you were caſt a ſhore, and now are paſt through, is Laconia, not ſo poore by the barrennes of the ſoyle (though in it ſelfe not paſſing fertill) as by a ciuill warre, which being theſe two yeares within the bowels of that eſtate, betweene the gentlemen and the peaſants (by them named *Helots*) hath in this ſorte as it were diſfigured the face of nature, and made it ſo vnhoſpitall as now you haue founde it: the townes neither of the one ſide nor the other, willingly opening their gates to ſtrangers, nor ſtrangers willingly entring for feare of being miſtaken.

But this countrie (where now you ſet your foot) is Arcadia: & euen hard by is the houſe of *Kalander* whether we lead you: this country being thus decked with peace, & (the child of peace) good huſbandrie. Theſe houſes you ſee ſo ſcattered are of men, as we two are, that liue vpon the commoditie of their ſheepe: and therefore in the diuiſion of the Arcadian eſtate are termed ſhepheards; a happie people, wanting litle

becauſe

becauſe they deſire not much. What cauſe then ſaide *Muſidorus*, made you venter to leaue this ſweet life, and put your ſelfe in yonder vnpleaſant and dangerous realme? Guarded with pouertie (anſwered *Strephon*) and guided with loue: But now (ſaid *Claius*) ſince it hath pleaſed you to aske any thing of vs whoſe baſenes is ſuch as the very knowledge is darkenes: geue vs leaue to know ſomthing of you, and of the yong man you ſo much lament, that at leaſt we may be the better inſtructed to enforme *Kalander*, and he the better know how to proportion his entertainment. *Muſidorus* (according to the agrement betwene *Pyrocles* & him to alter their names) anſwered, that he called himſelfe *Palladius*, and his friend *Dauphantus*; but till I haue him againe (ſaide he) I am in deed nothing: and therefore my ſtorie is of nothing, his entertainement (ſince ſo good a man he is) cannot be ſo lowe as I account my eſtate: and in ſumme, the ſumme of all his curteſie may be to helpe me by ſome meanes to ſeeke my frend.

They perceiued he was not willing to open himſelfe further, and therefore without further queſtioning brought him to the houſe: about which they might ſee (with fitte conſideration both of the ayre, the proſpect, & the nature of the ground) all ſuch neceſſarie additions to a greate houſe, as might well ſhewe, *Kalander* knewe that prouiſion is the foundation of hoſpitalitie, and thrift the fewel of magnificence. The houſe it ſelfe was built of faire and ſtrong ſtone, not affecting ſo much any extraordinarie kinde of fineues, as an honorable repreſenting of a firme ſtatelines. The lightes, doores and ſtaires, rather directed to the vſe of the gueſt, then to the eye of the Artificer: and yet as the one cheefly heeded, ſo the other not neglected; eache place handſome without curioſitie, and homely without lothſomnes: not ſo dainty as not to be trode on, nor yet ſlubbered vp with good felowſhippe: all more laſting than beautifull, but that the conſideration of the exceeding laſtingneſſe made the eye beleeue it was exceeding beautifull. The ſeruants not ſo many in number, as cleanlie in apparel, & ſeruiceable in behauiour, teſtifiing euen in their countenaunces, that their maiſter tooke aſwell care to be ſerued, as of them that did ſerue. One of them was forth-with readie to wellcome the ſhepheards, as men, who though they were poore, their maiſter greatly fauoured: & vnderſtanding by them, that the young man with thē was to be much accounted of, for that they had ſene tokens of more than commō greatnes, hovv ſo euer novv eclipſed vvith fortune: He ranne to his maiſter vvho came preſentlie foorth, and pleaſantly vvelcomming the ſhepheardes but eſpecially applying him to *Muſidorus*, *Strephon* priuately tolde him all vvhat he knevv of him, and particularly that he found this ſtranger vvas loath to be knovven.

Noe ſaide *Kalander* (ſpeaking alowd) I am no herald to enquire of mens pedegrees, it ſufficeth me if I know their vertues: which (if this young mans face bee not a falſe witnes) doe better apparrell his minde, then you haue done his body. While he was thus ſpeaking, there came a boy in ſhew like a Marchants prentice, who taking *Strephon* by the ſleeue, deliuered him a letter, written ioyntly both to him and *Claius* from *Vrania*: which they no ſooner had read, but that with ſhort leaue-taking of *Kalander* (who quickly gueſt and ſmiled at the matter) & once againe (though haſtely) recommending the yong man vnto him, they went away, leauing *Muſidorus* euen lothe to part with them, for the good conuerſation he had of them, and obligation he accounted himſelf tied in vnto them: and therfore, they deliuering his cheſt vnto him, he opened it, and would haue preſented them with two very rich Iewels, but they abſolutelie refuſed thē, telling him that they were more then enough rewarded

ded in the knowing of him, and without harkening vnto a replie (like men whoſe hartes diſdained all deſires but one) gate ſpeedely away, as if the letter had brought wings to make them flie. But by that ſight *Kalander* ſoone iudged that his gueſt was of no meane calling; and therefore the more reſpectfullie entertaining him, *Muſidorus* found his ſicknes (which the fight, the ſea, and late trauell had layd vpon him) grow greatly: ſo that fearing ſome ſuddaine accident, hee deliuered the cheſt to *Kalander*; which was full of moſt precious ſtones, gorgeouſly and cunningly ſet in diuerſe manners, deſiring him hee would keep thoſe trifles, and if he died, he would beſtow ſo much of it as was needfull, to finde out and redeeme a yong man, naming himſelfe *Daiphantus*, as then in the handes of Laconia pirates.

But *Kalander* ſeeing him faint more and more, with carefull ſpeede conueyed him to the moſt commodious lodging in his houſe: where beeing poſſeſt with an extreeme burning feuer, he continued ſome while with no great hope of life: but youth at length got the victorie of ſickneſſe, ſo that in ſixe weeks the excellencie of his returned beautie was a credible embaſſadour of his health; to the great ioy of *Kalander*: who, as in this time he had by certaine friendes of his, that dwelt neare the Sea in Meſſenia, ſet foorth a ſhippe and a galley to ſeeke and ſuccour *Daiphantus*: ſo at home did he omit nothing which hee thought might eyther profite or gratifie *Palladius*.

For hauing found in him (beſides his bodily giftes beyond the degree of Admiration) by daily diſcourſes which he delighted him ſelfe to haue with him, a mind of moſt excellent compoſition (a pearcing wit quite voide of oſtentation, high erected thoughts ſeated in a hart of courteſie, an eloquence as ſweet in the vttering, as ſlowe to come to the vttering, a behauiour ſo noble, as gaue a maieſtie to aduerſitie: and all in a man whoſe age could not be aboue one and twenty yeares) the good olde man was euē enamoured with a fatherly loue towards him; or rather became his ſeruaunt by the bondes ſuch vertue laid vpon him; once he acknowledged him ſelfe ſo to be, by the badge of diligent attendance.

But *Palladius* hauing gotten his health, and onely ſtaying there to bee in place, vvhere he might heare anſwere of the ſhippes ſet foorth, *Kalander* one after noone led him abroad to a well arayed ground he had behind his houſe, which hee thought to ſhew him before his going, as the place himſelf more thē in any other delighted. the backſide of the houſe was neither field, gardē, nor orchard; or rather it was both field garden, and orchard: for as ſoone as the deſcending of the ſtayres had deliuered them downe, they came into a place cunningly ſet with trees of the moſte taſt-pleaſing fruites: but ſcarcelie they had taken that into their conſideration, but that they were ſuddainely ſtept into a delicate greene, of each ſide of the greene a thicket, and behinde the thickets againe newe beddes of flowers, which beeing vnder the trees, the trees were to them a Pauilion, and they to the trees a moſaicall floore: ſo that it ſeemed that arte therein would needes be delightfull by counterfaiting his enemie error, and making order in confuſion.

In the middeſt of all the place, was a faire ponde, whoſe ſhaking chriſtall was a perfect mirrour to all the other beauties, ſo that it bare ſhewe of two gardens: one in deede, the other in ſhaddowes: and in one of the thickets was a fine fountaine made thus. A naked *Venus* of white marble, wherein the grauer had vſed ſuch cunning, that the naturall blewe veines of the marble were framed in fitte places, to ſet foorth the beautifull veines of her bodie. At her breſt ſhee had her babe

Æneas

Æneas, who ſeemed (hauing begun to ſucke) to leaue that, to looke vpon her fayre eyes, which ſmiled at the babes follie, meane while the breaſt runing. Hard by was a houſe of pleaſure built for a Sommer retiring place, whether *Kalander* leading him, he found a ſquare roome full of delightfull pictures, made by the meſte excellent workeman of Greece. There was *Diana* when *Acteon* ſawe her bathing, in whoſe cheekes the painter had ſet ſuch a colour, as was mixt betweene ſhame and diſdaine: and one of her fooliſh Nymphes, who weeping, and with all lowring, one might ſee the workman meant to ſet forth teares of anger. In another table was *Atalanta*; the poſture of whoſe lims was ſo liuelie expreſſed, that if the eyes were the onely iudges, as they be the onely ſeers, one would haue ſworne the very picture had runne. Beſides many mo, as of *Helena*, *Omphale*, *Iole*: but in none of them all beautie ſeemed to ſpeake ſo much as in a large table, which contained a comely old man, with a lady of midle age, but of excellent beautie; and more excellent would haue bene deemed, but that there ſtood betweene them a yong maid, whoſe wonderfulneſſe tooke away all beautie from her, but that which it might ſeeme ſhee gaue her backe againe by her very ſhadow. And ſuch difference (being knowne that it did in deed counterfeit a perſon liuing) was there betweene her and all the other, though Goddeſſes, that it ſeemd the skill of the painter beſtowed on the other new beautie, but that the beautie of her beſtowed new skill of the painter. Though he thought inquiſitiuenes an vncomely gueſt, he could not chooſe but aske who ſhee was, that bearing ſhewe of one being in deed, could with natural gifts go beyond the reach of inuention. *Kalander* anſwered, that it was made by *Philoclea*, the yonger daughter of his prince, who alſo with his wife were contained in that Table: the painter meaning to repreſent the preſent condition of the young Ladie, vvho ſtood vvatched by an ouer-curious eye of her parents: and that he vvould alſo haue dravvne her eldeſt ſiſter, eſteemed her match for beautie, in her ſhepheardiſh attire; but that the rude clovvne her gardian vvould not ſuffer it: nether durſt he aske leaue of the Prince for feare of ſuſpition. *Palladius* perceaued that the matter vvas vvrapt vp in ſome ſecreſie, and therfore vvould for modeſtie demaund no further: but yet his countenance could not but vvith dumme Eloquence deſire it: Which *Kalander* perceauing, vvell ſaid he, my deere gueſt, I knovv your minde, and I vvill ſatisfie it: neither vvill I doo it like a niggardly anſvverer, going no further than the boundes of the queſtion, but I vvill diſcouer vnto you, alvvell that vvherein my knovvledge is common vvith others, as that vvhich by extraordinarie meanes is deliuered vnto me: knovving ſo much in you (though not long acquainted) that I ſhal find your eares faithfull treaſurers. So then ſitting downe in tvvo chaires, and ſometimes caſting his eye to the picture, hee thus ſpake.

This countrie Arcadia among all the prouinces of Greece, hath euer beene had in ſingular reputation: partly for the ſvveetneſſe of the ayre, and other naturall benefites, but principally for the vvell tempered minds of the people, vvho (finding that the ſhining title of glorie ſo much affected by other natiõs, doth in deed helpe little to the happineſſe of life) are the onely people, vvhich as by their Iuſtice and prouidence geue neither cauſe nor hope to their neighbours to annoy them, ſo are they not ſturred vvith falſe praiſe to trouble others quiet, thinking it a ſmall revvard for the vvaſting of their ovvne liuès in rauening, that their poſteritie ſhould long after ſaie, they had done ſo. Euen the Muſes ſeeme to approue their good determination, by choſing this countrie for their cheife repairing place, and by beſtovving their perfec-

tions

ons ſo largely here, that the very ſhepheards haue their fancies lifted to ſo high conceits, as the learned of other nations are content both to borrow their names, and imitate their cunning.

Here dwelleth, and raigneth this Prince (whoſe picture you ſee) by name *Baſilius*, a Prince of ſufficient skill to gouerne ſo quiet a countrie, where the good mindes of the former princes had ſet downe good lawes, and the well bringing vp of the people doth ſerue as a moſt ſure bond to hold them. But to be plaine with you, he excels in nothing ſo much, as in the zealous loue of his people, wherein he doth not onely paſſe all his owne fore-goers, but as I thinke all the princes liuing. Wherof the cauſe is, that though he exceed not in the vertues which get admiration; as depth of wiſdome, height of courage and largeneſſe of magnificence, yet is he notable in thoſe which ſtirre affection, as trueth of word, meekeneſſe, courteſie, mercifulneſſe, and liberalitie.

He being already well ſtriken in yeares, maried a young princes, named *Gynecia*, daughter to the king of Cyprus, of notable beautie, as by her picture you ſee: a woman of great wit, and in truth of more princely vertues, then her husband: of moſt vnſpotted chaſtitie, but of ſo working a minde, and ſo vehement ſpirits, as a man may ſay, it was happie ſhee tooke a good courſe: for otherwiſe it would haue beene terrible.

Of theſe two are brought to the world two daughters, ſo beyond meaſure excellent in all the gifts allotted to reaſonable creatures, that we may think they were borne to ſhewe, that Nature is no ſtepmother to that ſex, howe much ſo euer ſome men (ſharpe witted onely in euill ſpeaking) haue ſought to diſgrace them. The elder is named *Pamela*; by many men not deemed inferiour to her ſiſter: for my part, when I marked them both, me thought there was (if at leaſt ſuch perfections may receiue the worde of more) more ſweetneſſe in *Philoclea*, but more maieſtie in *Pamela*: mee thought loue plaide in *Philocleas* eyes, and threatned in *Pamelas*: mee thought *Philocleas* beautie onely perſwaded, but ſo perſwaded as all harts muſt yeelde: *Pamelas* beautie vſed violence, and ſuch violence as no hart could reſiſt: and it ſemes that ſuch proportion is betweene their mindes; *Philoclea* ſo baſhfull as though her excellencies had ſtolne into her before ſhee was aware: ſo humble, that ſhe will put all pride out of countenance: in ſumme, ſuch proceeding as will ſtirre hope, but teach hope good manners. *Pamela* of high thoughts, who auoides not pride with not knowing her excellencies, but by making that one of her excellencies to bee voide of pride; her mothers wiſdome, greatneſſe, nobilitie, but (if I can gheſſe aright) knit with a more conſtant temper. Now then; our *Baſilius* being ſo publickly happie as to bee a Prince, and ſo happie in that happineſſe as to be a beloued Prince, and ſo in his priuate bleſſed as to haue ſo excellent a wife, and ſo ouer excellent children, hath of late taken a courſe which yet makes him more ſpoken of then all theſe bleſſings. For, hauing made a iourney to Delphos, and ſafely returned, within ſhort ſpace he brake vp his court, and retired himſelfe, his wife, and children into a certaine Forreſt hereby, which he calleth his deſert, wherein (beſides a houſe appointed for ſtables and lodgings for certaine perſons of meane calling, who do all houſhold ſeruices,) he hath builded two fine lodges. In the one of them him ſelfe remaines with his younger daughter *Philoclea*, which was the cauſe they three were matched together in this picture, without hauing any other creature liuing in that lodge with him.

Which though it bee ſtraunge, yet not ſo ſtraunge, as the courſe hee hath taken

with

with the princeſſe *Pamela*, whom he hath placed in the other lodge: but how thinke you accompanied? truly with none other, but one *Dametas*, the moſt arrant doltiſh clowne, that I thinke euer was without the priuiledge of a bable, with his wife *Miſo*, and daughter of *Mopſa*, in whom no witt can deuiſe anie thing wherein they may pleaſure her, but to exerciſe her patience, and to ſerue for a foile of her perfections. This loutiſh clowne is ſuch, that you neuer ſaw ſo ill fauourd a viſar; his behauiour ſuch, that he is beyond the degree of ridiculous; and for his apparrel, euen as I would wiſh him: *Miſo* his wife, ſo handſome a beldame, that onely her face and her ſplay-foote haue made her accuſed for a witch; only one good point ſhe hath, that ſhe obſerues *decorum*, hauing a froward minde in a wretched body. Betweene theſe two perſonages (who neuer agreed in any humor, but in diſagreeing) is iſſued foorth miſtreſſe *Mopſa*, a fitte woman to participate of both their perfections: but becauſe a pleaſant fellow of my acquaintance ſet foorth her praiſes in verſe, I wil onely repeate them, and ſpare mine owne tongue, ſince ſhe goes for a woman. The verſes are theſe which I haue ſo often cauſed to be ſong, that I haue them without booke.

What length of verſe can ſerue braue Mopſas *good to ſhew?*
Whoſe vertues ſtrange, & beauties ſuch, as no mã them may know
Thus ſhrewdly burdned thẽ, how cã my Muſe eſcape? (*ſhape.*
The gods muſt helpe, and pretious things muſt ſerue to ſhew her
Like great God Saturn *faire, and like faire* Venus *chaſte:*
As ſmooth as Pan, *as* Iuno *milde, like goddeſſe* Iris *faſte.*
With Cupid *ſhe fore-ſees, and goes god* Vulcans *pace:*
And for a taſt of all theſe gifts, ſhe ſteales god Momus *grace,*
Her forhead iacinth like, her cheekes of opall hue,
Her twinkling eies bedeckt with pearle, her lips as Saphir blew:
Her haire like Crapal-ſtone; her mouth O heauenly wide;
Her skin like burniſht gold, her hands like ſiluer vre vntryde.
As for her parts vnknowne, which hidden ſure are beſt:
Happie be they which well beleeue & neuer ſeeke the reſt.

Now truely hauing made theſe deſcriptions vnto you, me thinks you ſhould imagine that I rather faine ſome pleaſant deuiſe, then recount a truth, that a Prince (not baniſhed from his owne wits) could poſſibly make ſo vnworthie a choiſe. But truely (deare gueſt) ſo it is, that Princes (whoſe doings haue beene often ſoothed with good ſucceſſe) thinke nothing ſo abſurde, which they cannot make honourable. The beginning of his credite was by the Princes ſtraying out of the way, one time hee hunted, where meeting this fellow, and asking him the way; and ſo falling into other queſtions, he found ſome of his anſweres (as a dog ſure if he could ſpeake, had wit enough to deſcribe his kennell) not vnſenſible, and all vttered with ſuch rudenes, which he interpreted plainneſſe (though there be great difference betweene them) that *Baſilius* conceauing a ſodaine delight, tooke him to his Court, with apparant ſhew of his good opinion: where the flattering courtier had no ſooner taken the Princes minde, but that there were ſtraight reaſons to confirme the Princes doing, and ſhadowes of vertues found for *Dametas*. His ſilence grew wit, his bluntneſſe integritie, his beaſtly ignorance vertuous ſimplicitie: and the Prince (according to the nature of great perſons, in loue with that he had done himſelfe) fancied, that his

weake-

weakneſſe with his preſence would much be mended. And ſo like a creature of his owne making, hee liked him more and more, and thus hauing firſt giuen him the office of principall heardman, laſtly, ſince he tooke this ſtrange determination, hee hath in a manner put the life of himſelfe and his children into his hands. Which authoritie (like too great a ſayle for ſo ſmall a boate) doth ſo ouer-ſway poore *Dametas*, that if before he weare a good foole in a chamber, he might bee allowed it now in a comedie: So as I doubt mee (I feare me in deede) my maſter will in the end (with his coſt) finde, that his office is not to make men, but to vſe men as men are; no more then a horſe will be taught to hunt, or an aſſe to mannage. But in ſooth I am afraid I haue geuen your eares too great a ſurfette, with the groſſe diſcourſes of that heauie peece of fleſh. But the zealous greefe I conceue to ſee ſo great an error in my Lord, hath made me beſtowe more words, then I confeſſe ſo baſe a ſubiect deſerueth.

Thus much now that I haue tolde you, is nothing more then in effect any Arcadian knows. But what moued him to this ſtrange ſolitarines hath bin imparted (as I thinke) but to one perſon liuing. My ſelfe can coniecture and in deede more then coniecture, by this accident that I will tell you: I haue an onely ſonne, by name *Clitophon*, who is now abſent, preparing for his owne mariage, which I meane ſhortly ſhalbe here celebrated. This ſonne of mine (while the Prince kept his Court) was of his bed-chamber; now ſince the breaking vp thereof, returned home, and ſhewed me (among other things he had gathered) the coppie which hee had taken of a letter: which when the prince had read, he had laid in a windowe, preſuming no body durſt looke in his writings: but my ſonne not only tooke a time to read it, but to copie it. In trueth I blamed *Clitophon* for the curioſitie, which made him breake his dutie in ſuch a kind, whereby kings ſecrets are ſubiect to be reuealed: but ſince it was done, I was content to take ſo much profite, as to know it. Now here is the letter, that I euer ſince for my good liking, haue caried about me: which before I read vnto you, I muſt tell you from whom it came. It is a noble-man of this countrie, named *Philanax*, appointed by the Prince, Regent in this time of his retiring, and moſt worthy ſo to be: for, there liues no man, whoſe excellent witte more ſimplye imbraſeth integritie, beeſides his vnfained loue to his maſter, wherein neuer yet any could make queſtion, ſauing whether he loued *Baſilius* or the Prince better: a rare temper, while moſt men either ſeruile-ly yeeld to all appetites, or with an obſtinate auſteritie looking to that they fanſie good, in effect neglect the Princes perſon. This then being the man, whome of all other (and moſt worthie) the Prince cheefly loues, it ſhould ſeeme (for more then the letter I haue not to gheſſe by) that the Prince vpon his returne from Delphos, (*Philanax* then lying ſick) had written vnto him his determination, riſing (as euidently appeares) vpon ſome Oracle hee had there receaued: whereunto he wrote this anſwere.

Philanax his letter to Baſilius.

Moſt redouted and beloued prince, if aswel it had pleaſed you at your going to Delphos as now, to haue vſed my humble ſeruice, both I ſhould in better ſeaſon, and to better purpoſe haue ſpoken: and you (if my ſpeech had preuailed) ſhould haue been at this time, as no way more in danger, ſo much more in quietnes; I would then haue ſaide, that wiſdome and vertue be the only deſtinies appointed to man to follow, whence wee ought to ſeeke all our knowledge, ſince they be ſuch guides as cannot faile; which, beſides their inwarde comfort, do lead ſo direct

away

a way of proceeding, as either proſperitie muſt enſue; or, if the wickednes of the world ſhould oppreſſe it, it can neuer be ſaid, that euil happeneth to him, who falles accompanied with vertue: I would then haue ſaid, the heauenly powers to be reuerenced, and not ſerched into; & their mercies rather by praiers to be ſought, then their hidden councels by curioſitie. Theſe kinds of ſoothſayings (ſince they haue left vs in our ſelues ſufficient guides) to be nothing but fanſie, wherein there muſt either be vanitie, or infalliblenes, & ſo, either not to be reſpected, or not to be preuented. But ſince it is weakenes too much to remember what ſhould haue beene done. and that your commandemēt ſtretcheth to know what is to be done, I do (moſt deare Lord) with humble boldnes ſay, that the manner of your determination doth in no ſorte better pleaſe me, then the cauſe of your going. Theſe thirtie yeares you haue ſo gouerned this Region, that nether your Subiectes haue wanted iuſtice in you, nor you obedience in them; & your neighbours haue found you ſo hurtleſly ſtrong, that they thought it better to reſt in your friendſhippe, then make new trial of your enmitie. If this then haue proceeded out of the good conſtitution of your ſtate, and out of a wiſe prouidence, generally to preuent all thoſe things, which might encōber your happines: vvhy ſhould you novv ſeeke nevve courſes, ſince your ovvne enſample comforts you to continue, and that it is to me moſt certaine (though it pleaſe you not to tell me the very vvords of the Oracle) that yet no deſtinie, nor influence vvhatſoeuer, can bring mans vvit to a higher point, then vviſdome and goodnes? vvhy ſhould you depriue your ſelfe of gouernment, for feare of looſing your gouernmēt? like one that ſhould kil him ſelfe for feare of death? nay rather, if this Oracle be to be accoūted of, arm vp your courage þ more againſt it: for vvho vvil ſticke to him that abandones him ſelfe; let your ſubiects haue you in their eyes; let them ſee the benefites of your iuſtice dayly more and more; and ſo muſt they needes rather like of preſent ſureties, then vncertaine changes. Laſtly, whether your time call you to liue or die, doo both like a prince. Nowe for your ſecond reſolution; which, is to ſuffer no worthie prince to be a ſuiter to either of your daughters, but while you liue to keepe them both vnmaried; &, as it weare. to kil the ioy of poſteritie, which in your time you may inioye: moued perchance by a miſunderſtoode Oracle: what ſhall I ſaye, if the affection of a father to his owne children, cannot plead ſufficiently againſt ſuch fancies? once certaine it is, the God which is God of nature, doth neuer teach vnnaturalnes. and euen the ſame minde hold I touching your baniſhing them from companie, leaſt, I know not what ſtrange loues ſhould follow. Certainly Sir, in my ladies, your daughters, nature promiſeth nothing but goodnes, and their education by your fatherly care, hath beene hether-to ſuch, as hath beene moſt fit to reſtraine all euil: geuing there minds vertuous delightes, and not greeuing them for want of wel-ruled libertie. Now to fal to a ſodain ſtraightning them, what can it do but argue ſuſpition, a thing no more vnpleaſant, then vnſure, for the preſeruing of vertue? Leaue womens minds, the moſt vntamed that way of any: ſee whether any cage can pleaſe a bird? or whether a dogge growe not fiercer with tying? what doth ielouſie, but ſtirre vp the minde to thinke, what it is from which they are reſtrayned? for they are treaſures, or things of great delight, which men vſe to hide, for the aptneſſe they haue to each mans fancies: and the thoughtes once awaked to that, harder ſure it is to keepe thoſe thoughts from accompliſhment, then it had beene beefore to haue kept the minde (which beeing the cheefe parte by this meanes is defiled) from thinking. Laſtly, for the recommen-

mending ſo principall a charge of the Princeſſe *Pamela*, (whoſe minde goes beyond the gouerning of many thouſands ſuch) to ſuch a perſon as *Dametas* is (beſides that the thing in it ſelfe is ſtrange) it comes of a very euil ground, that ignorance ſhould be the mother of faithfulnes, O no; he cannot be good, that knowes not why he is good, but ſtands ſo farre good, as his fortune may keepe him vnaſſaied: but comming once to that, his rude ſimplicitie is either eaſily changed, or eaſily deceiued: & ſo growes that to be the laſt excuſe of his fault, which ſeemed to haue been the firſt foundation of his faith. Thus farre hath your commaundement and my zeale drawen me; which I, like a man in a valley that may diſcern hills, or like a poore paſſenger that may ſpie a rock, ſo humbly ſubmit to your gratious conſideration, beſeeching you againe, to ſtand wholy vpon your owne vertue, as the ſureſt way to maintaine you in that you are, and to auoid any euill which may be imagined.

By the contents of this letter you may perceiue, that the cauſe of all, hath beene the vanitie which poſſeſſeth many, who (making a perpetuall manſiõn of this poore baiting place of mans life) are deſirous to know the certaintie of things to come; wherein there is nothing ſo certaine as our continuall vncertaintie. But what in particular pointes the oracle was, in faith I know not: nether (as you may ſee by one place of *Philanax* letter) he him ſelfe diſtinctly knew. But this experience ſhewes vs, that *Baſilius* iudgement, corrupted with a princes fortune, hath rather hard then followed the wiſe (as I take it) councell of *Philanax*. For hauing left the ſterne of his gouernment, with much amazement to the people, among whom many ſtrange bruits are receiued for currant, and with ſome apparance of danger in reſpect of the valiant *Amphialus* his nephew, & much enuy in the ambitious number of the Nobilitie againſt *Philanax*, to ſee *Philanax* ſo aduanced, though (to ſpeake ſimply) he deſerue more then as many of vs as there be in Arcadia: the prince him ſelfe hath hidden his head, in ſuch ſort as I tolde you, not ſticking plainly to confeſſe, that he meanes not (while he breathes) that his daughters ſhall haue any huſbãd, but keepe thẽ thus ſolitary with him: weher he gius no other body leaue to viſit him at any time but a certaine prieſt, who being excellent in poetrie, he makes him write out ſuch thinges as he beſt likes, he being no les delightfull in conuerſation, then needfull for deuotiõ. &, about twẽty ſpecified ſhepheards, in whõ ſome (for exerciſes, & ſome for Eglogs) he taketh greater recreation.

And now you know as much as my ſelfe: wherin if I haue held you ouer long, lay hardly the fault vpon my olde age, which in the very diſpoſition of it is talkatiue: whether it be (ſaid he ſmiling) that nature loues to exerciſe that part moſt, which is leaſt decayed, and that is our tongue: or, that knowledge being the onely thing whereof we poore olde men can brag, we cannot make it known but by vtterance: or, that mankinde by all meanes ſeeking to eternize himſelfe ſo much the more, as he is neere his end, dooth it not onely by the children that come of him, but by ſpeaches and writings recommended to the memorie of hearers and readers. And yet thus much I will ſay for my ſelfe, that I haue not laid theſe matters, either ſo openly, or largely to any as your ſelfe: ſo much (if I much faile not) doo I ſee in you, which makes me both loue and truſt you. Neuer may he be olde, anſwered *Palladius*, that doth not reuerence that age, whoſe heauines, if it waie doune the frayl and fleſhly ballance, it as much lifts vp the noble and ſpirituall part: and well might you haue alledged another reaſon, that their wiſedome makes them willing to profite others. And that haue I receiued of you, neuer to be forgotten, but with vngratefulnes.

fulnes. But among many ſtrange conceits you told mee, which haue ſhewed effectes in your Prince, truly euen the laſt, that he ſhould conceiue ſuch pleaſure in ſhepheards diſcourſes, would not ſeeme the leaſt vnto me, ſauing that you told me at the firſt, that this countrie is notable in thoſe wits, & that in deed my ſelfe hauing beene brought not onely to this place, but to my life, by *Strephon* and *Claius*, in their conference found wits as might better become ſuch ſhepheardes as *Homer* ſpeakes of, that be gouernors of peoples, then ſuch ſenatours who hold their councell in a ſheepecoate: for them two (ſaid *Kalander*) eſpecially *Claius*, they are beeyond the reſt by ſo much, as learning commonlie doth adde to nature: for, hauing neglected their wealth in reſpect of their knowledge, they haue not ſo much empayred the meaner, as they bettered the better. Which all notwithſtanding, it is a ſporte to heare howe they impute to loue, which hath indewed their thoughtes (ſaie they) with ſuch a ſtrength.

But certainely, all the people of this countrie from high to lowe, is giuen to thoſe ſportes of the vvitte, ſo as you would vvonder to heare hovv ſoone euen children vvill begin to verſifie. Once ordinary it is among the meaneſt ſorte, to make Songes and Dialogues in meeter, either loue vvhetting their braine, or longe peace hauing begun it, example and emulation amending it. Not ſo much, but the Clowne *Dametas* will ſtumble ſometimes vpon ſome ſonges that might become a better braine: but no ſorte of people ſo excellent in that kind as the paſtors; for their liuing ſtanding but vppon the looking to their beaſtes, they haue eaſe, the Nurſe of Poetrie. Neither are our ſhepheards ſuch, as (I heare) they be in other countries; but they are the verie owners of the ſheepe, to which either them ſelues looke, or their children giue dayly attendance. And then truly, it would delight you vnder ſome tree, or by ſome riuers ſide (when two or three of them meet together) to heare their rurall muſe, how pretily it will deliuer out, ſometimes ioyes, ſometimes lamentations, ſometimes chalenginges one of the other, ſometimes vnder hidden formes vttering ſuch matters, as otherwiſe they durſt not deale with. Then haue they moſt commonly one, who iudgeth the Price to the beſt doer, of which they are no leſſe glad, then great Princes are of triumphes: and his parte is to ſette downe in writing all that is ſaide, ſaue that it may be, his pen with more leaſure doth poliſh the rudneſſe of an vnthought-on ſonge. Nowe the choiſe of all (as you may well thinke) either for goodnes of voice, or pleſantnes of wit, the Prince hath: among whome alſo there are two or three ſtrangers, whom inwarde melancholies hauing made weery of the worldes eyes, haue come to ſpend their liues among the countrie people of *Arcadia*; & their conuerſation being wel approued, the Prince vouchſafeth them his preſence, and not onely by looking on, but by great curteſie and liberalitie, animates the ſhepheardes the more exquiſitely to labour for his good liking. So that there is no cauſe to blame the Prince for ſometimes hearing them; the blame-worthineſſe is, that to heare them, he rather goes to ſolitarineſſe, then makes them come to companie. Nether doe I accuſe my maiſter for aduancing a countriman, as *Dametas* is, ſince God forbid, but where worthyneſſe is (as truely it is among diuers of that fellowſhip) any outward lowneſſe ſhould hinder the hieſt rayſing, but that he would needs make election of one, the baſeneſſe of whoſe minde is ſuch, that it ſinckes a thouſand degrees lower, then the baſeſt bodie coulde carrie the moſt baſe fortune: which although it might be anſwered for the prince, that it is rather a truſt he hath in his ſimple plainneſſe, then any great aduancement, being but chiefe heardman:

yet all honeſt hartes feele, that the truſt of their Lord goes beyond al aduancement. But I am euer too long vppon him, when he croſſeth the waye of my ſpeache, and by the ſhadovve of yonder tovver, I ſee it is a fitter time, vvith our ſupper to pay the duties we owe to our ſtomacks, then to break the aire with my idle diſcourſes: And more witte I might haue learned of *Homer* (whom euen now you mentioned) who neuer entertayned eyther gueſtes or hoſtes with long ſpeaches, till the mouth of hunger be throughly ſtopped. So withall he roſe, leading *Palladius* through the gardeine againe to the parler, where they vſed to ſuppe; *Palladius* aſſuring him, that he had already been more fed to his liking, thē he could be by the skillfulleſt trencher-men of *Media*.

But being come to the ſupping place, one of *Kalāders* ſeruants roūded in his eare; at which (his colour chaunging) he retired himſelfe into his chamber; commaunding his men diligently to waite vpon *Palladius*, and to excuſe his abſence with ſome neceſſary buſines he had preſently to diſpatch. Which they accordingly did, for ſeme fewe daies forcing thēſelues to let no change appeare, but though they framed their countenaunces neuer ſo cunningly, *Palladius* perceaued there was ſome ill-pleaſing accident fallen out. Wherupon, being againe ſet alone at ſupper, he called to the Steward, and deſired him to tell him the matter of his ſuddaine alteration: who after ſome trifling excuſes, in the ende confeſſed vnto him, that his maiſter had receiued newes, that his ſonne before the daie of his neere marriage, chaunſt to bee at a battaile, which was to bee fought betweene the Gentlemenne of Lacedæmon and the *Helots*: who winning the victorie, he was there made priſoner, going to deliuer a friend of his taken priſoner by the *Helots*; that the poore young Gentleman had offered great raunſome for his life: but that the hate thoſe payſaunts conceaued agaynſt all Gentlemen was ſuch, that euerye houre hee was to looke for nothinge, but ſome cruell death: which hether-vnto had onelye beene delayed by the Captaines vehement dealing for him, who ſeemed to haue a hart of more manlie pittie then the reſt. Which loſſe had ſtricken the old Gentleman with ſuch ſorrowe, as if abundance of teares did not ſeeme ſufficiently to witneſſe it, hee was alone retyred, tearing his beard and hayre, and curſing his olde age, that had not made his graue to ſtoppe his eares from ſuch aduertiſementes: but that his faithfull ſeruantes had written in his name to all his friendes followers, and tennants (*Philanax* the gouernour refuſing to deale in it as a priuate cauſe, but yet geuing leaue to ſeeke their beſt redreſſe, ſo as they, wronged not the ſtate of Lacedæmon) of whom there were nowe gathered vpon the frontiers good forces, that he was ſure would ſpende their liues by any way, to redeeme or reuenge *Clitophon*. Now ſir (ſaide hee) this is my mayſters nature, though his griefbe ſuch, as to liue is a griefe vnto him, & that euen his reaſon is darkned with ſorrow; yet the lawes of hoſpitalitie (long and holily obſerued by him) giue ſtill ſuch a ſway to his proceeding, that he will no waie ſuffer the ſtraunger lodged vnder his roofe, to receyue (as it were) any infection of his anguiſh, eſpecially you, toward whom I know not whether his loue, or admiration bee greater. But *Palladius* could ſcarce heare out his tale with patience: ſo was his heart torne in peeces with compaſſion of the caſe, liking of *Kalanders* noble behauiour, kindeneſſe for his reſpect to him-warde, and deſire to finde ſome remedie, beeſides the image of his deereſt friend *Daiphantus*, whom he iudged to ſuffer eyther a like or a worſe fortune. Therefore riſing from the boorde, hee deſired the ſtewarde to tell

him

him particularly, the ground and euent of this accident, becauſe by knowledge of many circumſtances, there might perhaps ſome waie of helpe be opened. Whereunto the Steward eaſilie in this ſorte condiſcended.

My Lorde (ſaid he) when our good king *Baſilius*, with better ſucceſſe then expectation, tooke to wife (euen in his more then decaing yeares) the faire younge Princes *Gynecia*; there came with her a young Lord, couſin german to her ſelfe, named *Argalus*, led hether, partly with the loue and honour of his noble kinſwoman, partlie with the humour of youth, which euer thinkes that good, whoſe goodnes hee ſees not: & in this court he receiued ſo good increaſe of knowledge, that after ſome years ſpēt, he ſo manifeſted a moſt vertuous mind in all his actions, that *Arcadia* gloried ſuch a plant was tranſported vnto them, being a Gentleman in deede moſt rarely accompliſhed, excellentlie learned, but without all vayne glorie: friendly, without factiouſnes: valiaunt, ſoe as for my part I thincke the earth hath no manne that hath done more heroicall actes then hee; howſoeuer now of late the fame flies of the two princes of *Theſſalia* and *Macedon*, and hath long doone of our noble prince *Amphialus*: who indeed, in our partes is onely accounted likely to match him: but I ſay for my parte, I thinke no man for valour of minde, and habilitie of bodie to be preferred, if equalled to *Argalus*; and yet ſo valiant as he neuer durſt doe any bodie iniurie: in behauiour ſome will ſay euer ſadde, ſurely ſober, and ſomewhat giuen to muſing, but neuer vncourteous; his worde euer ledde by his thought, and followed by his deede; rather liberall then magnificent, though the one wanted not, and the other had euer good choiſe of the receiuer: in ſumme (for I perceiue I ſhall eaſily take a great draughte of his praiſes, whom both I and all this countrie loue ſo well) ſuch a man was (and I hope is) *Argalus*, as hardly the niceſt eye can finde a ſpot in, if the ouer-vehement conſtancie of yet ſpotles affection, may not in hard wreſted conſtructions be counted a ſpot: which in this manner began that worke in him, which hath made both him, and it ſelfe in him, ouer all this countrie famous. My maiſters ſonne *Chlitophon* (whoſe loſſe giues the cauſe to this diſcourſe, and yet giues me cauſe to beginne with *Argalus*. ſince his loſſe proceedes from *Argalus*) being a young Gentleman, as of great birth (being our kings ſiſters ſonne) ſo truely of good nature, and one that can ſee good and loue it, haunted more the companie of this worthie *Argalus*, then of any other: ſo as if there were not a friendſhip (which is ſo rare, as it is to bee doubted whether it bee a thing in deede, or but a worde) at leaſt there was ſuch a likeing and friendlines, as hath brought foorth the effectes which you ſhall heare. About two years ſince, it ſo fell out, that hee brought him to a great Ladies houſe, ſiſter to my maiſter, who had with her, her onely daughter, the faire *Parthenia*; faire in deede (fame I thinke it ſelfe daring not to call any fairer, if it be not *Helena* queene of *Corinth* and the two incomparable ſiſters of *Arcadia*) and that which made her faireneſſe much the fairer, was, that it was but a faire embaſſadour of a moſt faire minde, full of wit, and a wit which deliteth more to iudge it ſelfe, then to ſhew it ſelfe: her ſpeech being as rare as pretious; her ſilence without ſullenneſſe; her modeſtie without affectation; her ſhamefaſtnes without ignorance: in ſumme, one, that to praiſe well, one muſt firſt ſet downe with himſelfe, what it is to be excellent: for ſo ſhee is.

I thinke you thinke, that theſe perfections meeting, could not chooſe but find one another, and delight in that they found; for likenes of manners is likely in rea-

ſon to drawe liking with affection. mens actions doo not alwayes croſſe with reaſon: to be ſhorte, it did ſo in deed. They loued, though for a while the fire therof (hopes wings being cut of) were blowē by the bellows of diſpaire vpō this ocaſiō.

There had beene a good while before, and ſo continued, a ſuter to this ſame lady, a great noble man, though of Laconia, yet neere nieghbour to *Parthenias* mother, named *Demagoras*: A man mightie in riches & power, and proude thereof, ſtubbornly ſtout, louing no bodie but him ſelfe, and for his owne delights ſake *Parthenia*: and purſuing vehemently his deſire, his riches had guilded ouer all his other imperfections, that the olde Ladie (though contrarie to my Lord her brothers minde) had giuen her conſent; and vſing a mothers authoritie vppon her faire daughter, had made her yeeld therunto, not becauſe ſhee liked her choice but becauſe her obedient minde had not yet taken vpon it to make choice; and the daie of their aſſurance drew neere, when my yonge lord *Clitophon* brought this noble *Argalus*, perchaunce principallie to ſee ſo rare a ſight, as *Parthenia* by all well iudging eyes was iudged.

But though fewe dayes were before the time of aſſurance appointed, yet loue that ſawe hee had a great iourney to make in ſhort time, haſted ſo him ſelfe, that before her word coulde tie her to *Demagoras*, her hart had vowed her to *Argalus*, with ſo gratefull a receipte in mutuall affection, that if ſhee deſired above all thinges to haue *Argalus*, *Argalus* feared nothing but to miſſe *Parthenia*. And now *Parthenia* had learned bothe lyking and miſliking, louing and lothing, and out of paſſion began to take the authoritie of iudgement; in ſo much, that when the time came that *Demagoras* (ful of proude ioye) though to receaue the gift of her own ſelf, ſhee with woordes of reſolute refuſal (though with teares ſhewing ſhe was ſorie ſhee muſt refuſe) aſſured her mother, ſhee woulde firſt be bedded in her graue, then wedded to *Demagoras*. The chaunge was no more ſtrange, then vnpleaſant to the mother: who beeyng determynatelye (leaſt I ſhoulde ſaye of a greate Ladie wilfully) bent to mary her to *Demagoras*, tryed all waies which a wittie and hard harted mother coulde vſe, vppon ſo humble a daughter: in whome the onely reſiſting power was loue. But the more ſhee aſſaulted, the more ſhee taught *Parthenia* to defende: and the more *Parthenia* defended, the more ſhee made her mother obſtinate in the aſſault: who at the length finding, that *Argalus* ſtanding betweene them, was it that moſte eclipſed her affection from ſhining vpon *Demagoras*, ſhe fought al means how to remoue him, ſomuch the more, as he manifeſted himſelf an vnremoueable ſuiter to her daughter: firſt, by employing him in as many dangerous enterpriſes, as euer the euil ſtepmother *Iuno* recommended to the famous *Hercules*; but the more his vertue was tryed, the more pure it grewe, while all the things ſhe did to ouerthrowe him, did ſet him vp vpon the hight of honour; inough to haue mooued her harte, eſpecially to a man euery way ſo worthy as *Argalus*: but ſhe ſtrugling againſt all reaſon, becauſe ſhe would haue her wil and ſhew her authoritie in matching her with *Demagoras*, the more vertuous *Argalus* was, the more ſhee hated him: thinking her ſelf conquered in his conqueſtes, and therfore ſtil imploying him in more & more dangerous attempts: in the meane while, ſhee vſed all extremities poſſible vpon her faire daughter, to make her giue ouer her ſelfe to her directiō. But it was hard to iudge, whether he in doeing, or ſhe in ſuffering, ſhewed greater conſtancie of affection: for, as to *Argalus* the world ſooner wanted occaſions, then he valour to goe thorow them; ſo to *Parthenia*, malice ſooner ceaſed, then her

her vnchanged patience. Laſtly, by treaſons, *Demagoras* and ſhe would haue made away *Argalus*: but he with prouidence and courage ſo paſt ouer all, that the mother tooke ſuch a ſpitefull greefe at it, that her hart brake withall, and ſhe died.

But then, *Demagoras* aſſuring him ſelfe, that now *Parthenia* was her owne, ſhee would neuer be hit, and receiuing as much by her owne determinate anſwere, not more deſiring his owne happines, then enuying *Argalus*, whom he ſaw with narrow eyes, euen ready to enioy the perfection of his deſires; ſtrengthning his conceite with all the miſchieuous counſels which diſdained loue, and enuious pride could geue vnto him; the wicked wretch (taking a time that *Argalus* was gone to his countrie, to fetch ſome of his principall frendes to honour the mariage, which *Parthenia* had moſt ioyfully conſented vnto,) the wicked *Demagoras* (I ſay) deſiring to ſpeake with her, with vnmercifull force, (her weake armes in vaine reſiſting) rubd all ouer her face a moſt horrible poyſon: the effect whereof was ſuch, that neuer leaper lookt more vgly then ſhee did: which done, hauing his men & horſes ready, departed away in ſpite of her ſeruants, as ready to reuenge as they could be, in ſuch an vnexpected miſchiefe. But the abhominablenes of this fact being come to my L. *Kalander*, he made ſuch meanes, both by our kings interceſſion, and his owne, that by the king, & Senat of Lacedæmon, *Demagoras* was vpon paine of death, baniſhed the countrie: who hating the puniſhment, where hee ſhould haue hated the fault, ioynde himſelfe, with all the powers he could make, vnto the *Helots*, lately in rebellion againſt that ſtate: and they (glad to haue a man of ſuch authority among them) made him their general: and vnder him haue committed diuers the moſt outragious villanies, that a baſe multitude (full of deſperate reuenge) can imagine.

But within a while after this pitifull fact committed vpon *Parthenia*, *Argalus* returned (poore gentleman) hauing her faire image in his heart, and alredy promiſing his eies the vttermoſt of his felicitie, when they (no bodie els daring to tell it him) weare the firſt meſſengers to themſelues of their owne misfortune. I meane not to mooue paſſions with telling you the greefe of both, when hee knew her, for at firſt he did not, nor at firſt knowledge could poſſibly haue vertues aide ſo ready, as not euen weakly to lament the loſſe of ſuch a iewell, ſo much the more, as that skilfull men in that arte aſſured it was vnrecouerable: but within a while, trueth of loue (which ſtill held the firſt face in his memorie) a vertuous conſtancie, and euen a delight to be conſtant, faith giuen, and inward worthines ſhining through the fouleſt miſtes, tooke ſo full holde of the noble *Argalus*, that not onely in ſuch comfort which witty arguments may beſtow vpon aduerſitie, but euen with the moſt aboundant kindneſſe that an eye rauiſhed louer can expreſſe, hee lauboured but to driue the extremitie of ſorow from her, & to haſten the celebration of their mariage: wherunto he vnfainedly ſhewed himſelfe no leſſe cherefully earneſt, then if ſhe had neuer beene diſinherited of that goodly portion, which nature had ſo liberally bequeathed vnto her: and for that cauſe deferred his intended reuenge vpon *Demagoras*, becauſe he might continually be in her preſence; ſhewing moe humble ſeruiceablenes, and ioy to content her, then euer before.

But as he gaue this rare enſample, not to be hoped for of any other, but of an other *Argalus*: ſo of the other ſide, ſhe tooke as ſtrange a courſe in affection: for, where ſhe deſired to enioy him, more then to liue; yet did ſhee ouerthrow both her owne deſire, and his, and in no ſorte would yeeld to marry him; with a ſtrange encounter of loues affects, and effects, that he by an affection ſprong from exceſſiue beautie, ſhould delight in horrible foulneſſe; & ſhe, of a vehement deſire to haue him, ſhould

kindely buyld a reſolution neuer to haue him: for trueth is, that ſo in heart ſhe loued him, as ſhe could not finde in her heart he ſhould be tied to what was vnworthy of his preſence.

Truely Sir, a very good Orator might haue a fayre fielde to vſe eloquence in, if he did but onely repeate the lamentable, & truely affectionated ſpeeches, while he coniured her by remembrance of her affection, & true oathes of his owne affection, not to make him ſo vnhappie, as to thinke hee had not onely loſt her face, but her hart; that her face, when it was fayreſt, had beene but as a marſhal, to lodge the loue of her in his minde; which now was ſo well placed, as it needed no further help of any outward harbinger: beſeeching her, euen with teares, to knowe, that his loue was not ſo ſuperficial, as to go no further then the skin; which yet now to him was moſt faire, ſince it was hers: how could hee bee ſo vngratefull, as to loue her the leſſe for that which ſhe had onely receiued for his ſake? that he neuer beheld it, but therein he ſaw the louelines of her loue towarde him: proteſting vnto her, that hee would neuer take ioy of his life, if he might not enioy her, for whom principally he was glad he had life. But (as I heard by one that ouerheard them) ſhee (wringing him by the hand) made no other anſwere but this: my Lord (ſaid ſhe) God knowes I loue you: if I were Princeſſe of the whole world, and had withal, all the bleſſings that euer the world brought forth, I ſhould not make delay, to lay my ſelfe, and them vnder your feete: or if I had continued but as I was, though (I muſt confeſſe) far vnworthy of you, yet would I, (with too great a ioy for my hart to think of) haue accepted your vouchſafing me to be yours, and with faith and obedience would haue ſupplied all other defects. But firſt let me bee much more miſerable then I am, ere I match *Argalus* to ſuch a *Parthenia*: Liue happy, deare *Argalus*, I geue you ful libertie, and I beſeech you take it; and I aſſure you I ſhall reioyce (whatſoeuer become of me) to ſee you ſo coupled, as may be fitte, both for your honor, & ſatisfaction. With that ſhe burſt out in crying and weeping, not able longer to conteine her ſelfe from blaming her fortune, and wiſhing her owne death.

But *Argalus* with a moſt heauie heart ſtill purſuing his deſire, ſhe fixt of minde to auoid further intreatie, and to flie all companie; which (euen of him) grew vnpleaſant vnto her; one night ſhe ſtole away: but whether, as yet is vnknowen, or in deed what is become of her.

Argalus ſought her long, and in many places: at length (deſpairing to finde her, and the more he deſpaired, the more enraged) weerie of his life, but firſt determining to bee reuenged of *Demagoras*, he went alone diſguyſed into the cheefe towne held by the *Helots*: where comming into his preſence, garded about by many of his ſouldiers, he could delay his fury no longer for a fitter time: but ſetting vpon him, in deſpight of a great many that helped him, gaue him diuers mortall wounds, and him ſelfe (no queſtion) had been there preſently murthered, but that *Demagoras* himſelfe deſired he might bee kept aliue; perchaunce with intention to feed his owne eyes with ſome cruell execution to bee layd vpon him, but death came ſoner then he lookt for; yet hauing had leiſure to appoint his ſucceſſor, a yong man, not long before deliuered out of the priſon of the King of *Lacedæmon*, where he ſhould haue ſuffered death for hauing ſlaine the kings Nephew: but him hee named, who at that time was abſent, making roades vpon the *Lacedæmonians*, but Being returned, the reſt of the *Helots*, for the great liking they conceiued of that yongman, eſpecially becauſe they had none among themſelues to whom the others would

would yeeld) were content to follow *Demagoras* apppointment. And wel hath it ſucceded with thē, he hauing ſince done things beyond the hope of the yongeſt heads of whom I ſpeake the rather, becauſe he hath hetherto preſerued *Argalus* aliue, vnder pretence to haue him publiquelie, and with exquiſite tormentes executed, after the ende of theſe warres, of which, they hope for a ſoone and proſperous iſſue.

And he hath likewiſe hetherto kept my young Lord *Clitophon* aliue, who (to redeeme his friend) went with certaine other noble-men of *Laconia*, and forces gathered by them, to beſiege this young and new ſucceſſor: but hee iſſuing out (to the wonder of all men) defeated the *Laconians*, ſlew many of the noble-men, and tooke *Clitophon* priſoner, whom with much a doo he keepeth aliue: the *Helots* being villanouſly cruel; but he tempereth them ſo ſometimes by following their humor, ſometimes by ſtriuing with it, that hetherto hee hath ſaued both their liues, but in different eſtates; *Argalus* being kept in a cloſe & hard priſon, *Clitophon* at ſome libertie. And now Sir, though (to ſay the truth) we can promiſe our ſelues litle of their ſafeties, while they are in the *Helots* handes, I haue deliuered all I vnderſtande touching the loſſe of my Lords ſonne, and the cauſe thereof: which, though it was not neceſſarie to *Clitophons* caſe, to be ſo particularly told, yet the ſtrangenes of it, made mee think it would not be vnpleſant vnto you.

Palladius thanked him greatly for it, being euen paſſionatly delighted with hearing ſo ſtraunge an accident of a knight ſo famous ouer the world, as *Argalus*, with whome he had himſelfe a long deſire to meete: ſo had fame poured a noble emulation in him, towardes him.

But thē (well bethinking himſelfe) he called for armour, deſiring them to prouide him of horſe & guide, and armed all ſauing the head, he wēt vp to *Kalāder*, whom he found lying vpō the groūd, hauing euer ſince baniſhed both ſleepe and foode, as enemies to the mourning which paſſion perſwaded him was reaſonable. But *Palladius* rayſed him vp, ſaying vnto him: No more, no more of this, my Lord *Kalander*; let vs labour to finde, before wee lament the loſſe: you knowe my ſelfe miſſe one, who though he be not my ſonne, I would diſdayne the fauour of life after him: but while there is hope left, let not the weaknes of ſorrow, make the ſtrength of it languiſh: take comfort, and good ſucceſſe wil follow. And with thoſe wordes, comfort ſeemed to lighten in his eyes, and that in his face and geſture was painted victorie. Once, *Kallanders* ſpirits were ſo reuiued withall, that (receiuing ſome ſuſtenance, and taking a little reſt) he armed himſelfe, & thoſe few of his ſeruants hee had left vnſent, and ſo himſelfe guided *Palladius* to the place vpon the frontiers: where alredy there were aſſembled betwene three and four thouſand men, all wel diſpoſed (for *Kalanders* ſake) to abide any perill: but like men diſuſed with a long peace, more determinate to doo, then skilfull how to doo: luſty bodies, and braue armours: with ſuch courage, as rather grew of deſpiſing their enimies, whom they knew not, then of any confidence for any thing; which in them ſelues they knewe; but neither cunning vſe of their weapons, nor arte ſhewed in their marching, or in cāping. Which *Palladius* ſoone perceiuing, he deſired to vnderſtand (as much as could bee deliuered vnto him) the eſtate of the *Helots*.

And he was anſwered by a man well acquainted with the affaires of Laconia, that they were a kinde of people, who hauing beene of olde, freemen and poſſeſſioners

oners, the Lacedæmonians had conquered them, and layd, not onely tribute, but bondage vpon them: which they had long borne; till of late the *Lacedæmonians* through greedineſſe growing more heauie then they could beare, and through contempt leſſe carefull howe to make them beare, they had with a generall conſent (rather ſpringing by the generalnes of the cauſe, then of any artificiall practiſe) ſet themſelues in armes, and whetting their courage with reuenge, and grounding their reſolution vpon deſpaire, they had proceeded with vnlooked-for ſucces: hauing alredy taken diuers Towns & Caſtels, with the ſlaughter of many of the gẽtrie; for whom no ſex nor age could be accepted for an excuſe. And that although at the firſt they had fought rather with beaſtly furie, then any ſouldierly diſcipline, practiſe had now made them comparable to the beſt of the *Lacedæmonians* and more of late then euer; by reaſon, firſt of *Demagoras* a great Lorde, who had made him ſelfe of their partie, and ſince his death, of an other Captaine they had gotten, who had brought vp their ignorance, and brought downe their furie, to ſuch a meane of good gouernment, and withall led them ſo valourouſlie, that (beſides the time wherein *Clitophon* was taken) they had the better in ſome other great conflicts: in ſuch wiſe, that the eſtate of *Lacedæmon* had ſent vnto them, offering peace with moſt reaſonable and honorable conditions. *Palladius* hauing gotten this generall knowledge of the partie againſt whom, as he had already of the partie for whom hee was to fight, he went to *Kalander*, and tolde him plainlie, that by playne force there was ſmall apparaunce of helping *Clitophon*: but ſome deuice was to bee taken in hande, wherein no leſſe diſcretion then valour was to bee vſed.

Whereupon, the counſel of the cheefe men was called, and at laſt, this way *Palladius* (who by ſome experience, but eſpeciallie by reading Hiſtories, was acquainted with ſtratagemes) inuented, and was by all the reſt approoued: that all the men there ſhoulde dreſſe themſelues like the pooreſt ſorte of the people in *Arcadia*, hauing no banners, but bloudie ſhirtes hanged vpon long ſtaues, with ſome bad bagge pipes in ſtead of drumme and fife, their armour they ſhoulde aſwell as might bee, couer, or at leaſt make them looke ſo ruſtilie, and ill-fauouredly as might wel become ſuch wearers; and this the whole number ſhoulde doo, ſauing two hundred of the beſt choſen Gentlemen, for courage and ſtrength, whereof *Palladius* him ſelfe would be one, who ſhould haue their armes chayned, and be put in cartes like priſoners. This being performed according to the agreement, they marched on towardes the towne of *Cardamila* where *Clitophon* was captiue; and beeing come two houres beefore Sunne-ſet within viewe of the walles, the *Helots* alreadie deſcrying their number, and beginning to ſound the Allarum, they ſent a cunning fellow, (ſo much the cunninger as that hee could maske it vnder rudenes) who with ſuch a kinde of Rhetorike, as weeded out all flowers of Rhetorike, deliuered vnto the *Helots* aſſembled together, that they were countrie people of *Arcadia*, no leſſe oppreſſed by their Lords, and no leſſe deſirous of liberty then they, and therfore had put themſelues in the field, & had alreadie (beſides a great number ſlain) taken nine or ten skore Gentlemẽ priſoners whõ they had there well and faſt chained. Now becauſe they had no ſtrong retiring place in *Arcadia*, & were not yet of number enough to keepe the fielde againſt their Princes forces they were come to them for ſuccour; knowing, that daily more & more of their qualitie would flock vnto them. but that in the mean time, leſt their Prince ſhould purſue

ſue them, or the *Lacedæmonian* King and Nobilitie (for the likenes of the cauſe) fall vpon them, they deſired that if there were not roome enough for them in the town, that yet they might encampe vnder the walles, and for ſurety haue their priſoners (who were ſuch men as were euer able to make their peace) kept within the towne.

The *Helots* made but a ſhort cõſultatiõ, being glad that their contagiõ had ſpread it ſelfe into *Arcadia*, and making account that if the peace did not fall out betweene them and their King, that it was the beſt way to ſet fire in all the partes of *Greece*; beſides their greedineſſe to haue ſo many Gentlemen in their handes, in whoſe raunſomes they alreadie meant to haue a ſhare; to which haſt of concluding, two thinges well helped; the one, that their Captaine with the wiſeſt of them, was at that time abſent about confirming or breaking the peace, with the ſtate of *Lacedæmon*: the ſecond, that ouer-many good fortunes began to breede a proude reckleſneſſe in them: therefore ſending to view the campe, and finding that by their ſpeach they were *Arcadians*, with whom they had had no warre, neuer ſuſpecting a priuate mans credite could haue gathered ſuch a force, and that all other tokens witneſſed them to bee of the loweſt calling (beſides the chaines vpon the Gentlemen) they graunted not onely leaue for the priſoners, but for ſome others of the companie, and to all, that they might harbour vnder the walles. So opened they the gates, and receiued in the carts; which being done, and *Palladius* ſeeing fit time, hee gaue the ſigne, and ſhaking of their chaynes, (which were made with ſuch arte, that though they ſeemed moſt ſtronge and faſt, hee that ware them might eaſily looſe them) drew their ſwordes hidden in the cartes, and ſo ſetting vpon the warde, made them to flie eyther from the place, or from their bodies, and ſo gaue entrie to all the force of the *Arcadians* before the *Helots* could make any head to reſiſt them.

But the *Helots* being men hardened againſt daungers, gathered (as well as they coulde) together in the market place, and thence woulde haue giuen a ſhrewd welcome to the *Arcadians*, but that *Palladius* (blaming thoſe that were ſlowe, hartning them that were forward, but eſpecially with his owne enſample leading them) made ſuch an impreſſion into the ſquadron of the *Helots*, that at firſt the great bodie of them beginning to ſhake, and ſtagger; at length, euerie particular bodie recommended the protection of his life to his feete, Then *Kalander* cried to goe to the priſon, where he thought his ſonne was, but *Palladius* wiſht him (firſt ſcouring the ſtreates) to houſe all the *Helots*, and make themſelues maiſters of the gates,

But ere that could bee accompliſhed, the *Helots* had gotten new heart, and with diuers ſortes of ſhot from corners of ſtreates, and houſe windowes, galled them; which courage was come vnto them by the returne of their Captaine; who though he brought not many with him (hauing diſperſt moſt of his companies to other of his holds) yet meeting a great number running out of the gate, not yet poſſeſt by the *Arcadians*, he made them turne face, and with banners diſplayed, his Trumpet gaue the lowdeſt teſtimonie he could of his returne, which once heard the reſt of the *Helots* which were otherwiſe ſcattered, bent thetherwarde, with a newe life of reſolution: as if their Captaine had beene a roote, out of which (as into braunches) their courage had ſprong. Then beganne the fight to grow moſt ſharpe, and the encounters of more cruell obſtinacie. The *Arcadians* fighting to keepe that they had wonne, the *Helots* to recouer what they had loſt. The *Arcadians*, as in an vnknowne place, hauing no ſuccour but in their hands; the *Helots*, as in their own place

fighting

fighting for their liuings, wiues & children. There was victorie and courage againſt reuenge and diſpaire: ſafety of both ſides being no otherwiſe to bee gotten, but by deſtruction.

At length, the left winge of the *Arcadians* began to looſe ground; which *Palladius* ſeeing, he ſtreight thruſt himſelfe with his choiſe bande againſt the throng that oppreſſed them, with ſuch an ouerflowing of valour, that the Captaine of the *Helots* (whoſe eies ſoone iudged of that wherewith themſelues were gouerned) ſawe that he alone was worth al the reſt of the *Arcadians*. Which he ſo wondred at, that it was hard to ſay, whether he more liked his doings, or miſliked the effects of his doings: but determining that vpon that caſt the game lay, and diſdaining to fight with any other, ſought onely to ioine with him: which minde was no leſſe in *Palladius*, hauing eaſily marked, that he was as the firſt mouer of all the other handes. And ſo their thoughts meeting in one point, they conſented (though not agreed) to trie each others fortune: and ſo drawing themſelues to be the vttermoſt of the one ſide, they began a combat, which was ſo much inferior to the battaile in noiſe and number, as it was ſurpaſſing it in brauery of fighting, and (as it were) delightfull terriblenes. Their courage was guided with skill, and their skill was armed with courage; neither did their hardineſſe darken their witte, nor their witte coole their hardines: both valiant, as men deſpiſing death; both confident, as vnwonted to bee ouercome; yet doubtefull by their preſent feeling, and reſpectfull by what they had already ſeene. Their feete ſtedy, their hands diligent, their eyes watchfull, and their harts reſolute. The partes either not armed, or weakly armed, were well knowen, and according to the knowledge ſhould haue bene ſharpely viſited, but that the aun ſwere was as quicke as the obiection. Yet ſome lighting; the ſmart bred rage, and the rage bred ſmarte againe: till both ſides beginning to wax faint, and rather deſirous to die accompanied, then hopefull to liue victorious, the Captaine of the *Helots* with a blow, whoſe violence grew of furie, not of ſtrength, or of ſtrength proceeding of furie, ſtrake *Palladius* vpon the ſide of the head, that hee reelde aſtonied: and with all the helmet fell off, he remayning bare headed: but other of the *Arcadians* were redie to ſhield him from any harme might riſe of that nakednes.

But little needed it, for his chiefe enemie in ſteed of purſuing that aduauntage, kneeled downe, offering to deliuer the pommell of his ſworde, in token of yeelding, with all ſpeaking aloud vnto him, that he thought it more libertie to be his priſoner, then any others generall. *Palladius* ſtanding vpon himſelfe, and miſdoubting ſome craft, and the *Helots* (that were next their captaine) wauering betweene looking for ſome ſtratageme, or fearing treaſon, What, ſaide the captaine, hath *Palladius* forgotten the voice of *Daiphantus*?

By that watche worde *Palladius* knew that it was his onely friende *Pyrocles*, whom he had loſt vpon the Sea, and therefore both moſt full of wonder, ſo to bee mett, if they had not bene fuller of ioye then wonder, cauſed the retraite to bee ſounded, *Daiphantus* by authoritie and *Palladius* by perſuaſion; to which helped well the little aduantage that was of eyther ſide: and that of the *Helots* partie their Captaines behauiour had made as many amazed as ſawe or heard of it: and of the *Arcadian* ſide the good olde *Kalander* ſtriuing more then his old age could atchiue, was newly taken priſoner. But in deede the chiefe parter of the fraye was the night, which with her blacke armes pulled their malicious fightes one from the other. But he that tooke *Kalander*, meant nothing leſſe then to ſaue him, but onelie ſo long, as the Captaine might

might learne the enemies ſecrets: towardes whom he led the old Gentleman, when hee cauſed the retreit to bee ſounded: looking for no other deliuerie from that captiuitie, but by the painefull taking away of all paine: when whome ſhould hee ſee nexte to the Captaine (with good tokens how valiantly hee had fought that daie againſt the *Arcadians*) but his ſonne *Clitophon*? But now the Captaine had cauſed all the principall *Helots* to bee aſſembled, as well to deliberate what they had to do, as to receiue a meſſage from the *Arcadians*; Among whom *Palladius* vertue (beſides the loue *Kalander* bare him) hauing gotten principall authoritie, hee had perſuaded them to ſeeke rather by parley to recouer the Father and the Sonne, then by the ſworde: ſince the goodnes of the Captaine aſſured him that way to ſpeede, and his value (wherewith hee was of old acquainted) made him thinke any other way dangerous. This therefore was donne in orderly manner, giuing them to vnderſtand, that as they came but to deliuer *Clitophon*, ſo offering to leaue the footing, they already had in the towne, to goe away without any further hurte, ſo as they might haue the father, and the ſonne without raunſome deliuered. Which conditions beyng heard and conceaued by the *Helots*, *Daiphantus* perſwaded them without delay to accept them. For firſt (ſayd he) ſince the ſtrife is within our owne home, if you looſe, you looſe all that in this life can bee deare vnto you: if you winne, it will be a blouddy victorie with no profite, but the flattering in our ſelues that ſame badde humour of reuenge. Beſides, it is like to ſtirre *Arcadia* vppon vs, which nowe, by vſing theſe perſons wel, maie bee brought to ſome amitie. Laſtly but eſpecially, leaſt the king and nobility of *Laconia* (with whom now wee haue made a perfect peace) ſhould hope by occaſiõ of this quarrell to ioyne the *Arcadians* with them, and ſo breake of the profitable agreement alreadie concluded. In ſumme, as in all deliberations (waying the profit of the good ſucceſſe with the harme of the euill ſucceſſe) you ſhall finde this way moſt ſafe and honorable.

The *Helots* aſmuch moued by his authoritie, as perſwaded by his reaſons, were content therewith. Whereupon, *Palladius* tooke order that the *Arcadians* ſhoulde preſently march out of the towne, taking with them their priſoners, while the night with mutuall diffidence might keepe them quiet, and ere day came they might be well on of their way, and ſo auoid thoſe accidents which in late enemies, a looke, a word, or a particular mans quarell might engender. This being on both ſides concluded on, *Kalander* and *Clitophon*, who now (with infinite ioy did knowe each other) came to kiſſe the hands and feete of *Daiphantus*: *Clitophon* telling his father, how *Daiphantus* (not without danger to himſelfe) had preſerued him from the furious malice of the *Helots*: and euen that day going to conclude the peace (leaſt in his abſence he might receiue ſome hurt) he had taken him in his companie, and geuen him armour, vpon promiſe he ſhould take the parte of the *Helots*; which he had in his fight perfourmed, little knowing that it was againſt his father: but (ſaide *Clitophon*) here is he, who (as a father) hath new-begotten me, and (as a God) hath ſaued me from many deathes, which already laid hold on me: which *Kalander* with teares of ioy acknowledged (beſides his owne deliuerance) onely his benefite. But *Daiphantus*, who loued doing well for it ſelfe, and not for thanks, brake of thoſe ceremonies, deſiring to know how *Palladius* (for ſo he called *Muſidorus*) was comne into that companie, and what his preſent eſtate was whereof receiuing a brief declaratiõ of *Kalander*, he ſent him word by *Clitophon*, that he ſhould not as now come vnto him, becauſe he held himſelfe not ſo ſure a maſter of the *Helots* mindes, that hee

would aduenture him in their power, who was ſo wel knowen with an vnfriendly acquaintce, but that he deſired him to returne with *Kalander*, whether alſo he within fewe dayes (hauing diſpatched himſelfe of the *Helots*) would repaire. *Kalander* would needes kiſſe his hand againe for that promiſe, proteſting he would eſteeme his houſe more bleſſed then a temple of the gods, if it had once receiued him. And then deſiring pardon for *Argalus*. *Daiphantus* aſſured them that hee would dye but hee would bring him, (though till then kept in cloſe priſon, indeede for his ſafetie, the *Helots* being ſo animated againſt him as els he could not haue liued) and ſo taking their leaue of him, *Kalander*, *Clitophon*, *Palladius* and the reſt of the *Arcadians* ſwearing that they would no further in any ſorte moleſt the *Helots*, they ſtraight way marched out of the towne, carying both their dead and wounded bodies with them; and by morning were already within the limits of *Arcadia*.

The *Helots* of the other ſide ſhutting their gates, gaue thē ſelus to burye their dead to cure their wounds, and reſt their wearied bodies: til (the next day beſtowing the cheerefull vſe of the light vpon them) *Daiphan'us* making a generall conuocation ſpake vnto them in this manner. We are firſt (ſaid he) to thank the Gods, that (further then wee had either cauſe to hope; or reaſon to imagine) haue deliuered vs out of this gulfe of daunger, wherein we were alredie ſwallowed. For all being loſt, (had they not directed, my return ſo iuſt as they did) it had beene too late to recouer that, which being had, we could not keepe. And had I not happened to know one of the principal men among them, by which meanes the truce beganne betweene vs, you may eaſily conceiue, what little reaſon we haue to think, but that either by ſome ſupplie out of *Arcadia*, or from the Nobilitie of this Country (who would haue made fruits of wiſdom grow out of this occaſion) we ſhould haue had our power turned to ruine, our pride to repentance and ſorrow. But now the ſtorme, as it fell, ſo it ceaſed: and the error committed, in retaining *Clitophon* more hardly then his age or quarrell deſerued, becomes a ſharply learned experience, to vſe in other times more moderation.

Now haue I to deliuer vnto you the concluſion between the kings with the Nobilitie of *Lacedæmon*, and you; which is in all points as your ſelues deſired: aſwell for that you would haue graunted, as for the aſſurance of what is graunted. The Townes and Fortes you preſently haue, are ſtill left vnto you, to be kept either with or without garriſon, ſo as you alter not the lawes of the Countrie, and pay ſuch dueties as the reſt of the *Laconians* doo: Your ſelues are made by publique decree, freemen, and ſo capable both to giue and receiue voice in election of Magiſtrates. The diſtinction of names betweene *Helots* and *Lacedæmonians* to bee quite taken away, and all indifferently to enioy both names and priuiledges of *Laconians*. Your children to be brought vp with theirs in the *Spartane* diſcipline: & ſo you (framing your ſelues to be good members of that eſtate) to bee hereafter fellowes, and no longer ſeruants.

Which conditions you ſee, cary in themſelues no more contentation then aſſurance. For this is not a peace which is made with them, but this is a peace by which you are made of them. Laſtly a forgetfulneſſe decreed of all what is paſt, they ſhewing them ſelues glad to haue ſo valiant men as you are, ioyned with them. ſo that you are to take mindes of peace, ſince the cauſe of war is finiſhed; and as you hated them before like oppreſſours, ſo now to loue them as brothers; to take care of their eſtate becauſe it is yours, and to labour by vertuous doing, that the poſteri-

tie

tie may not repent your ioyning. But now one Article onely they ſtoode vpon, which in the end I with your commiſſioners haue agreed vnto, that I ſhoulde no more tarry heere, miſtaking perchance my humor, and thinking me as ſeditious as I am young, or els it is the king *Amiclas* procuring, in reſpect that it was my ill hap to kill his nephew *Eurileon*; but how ſo euer it be; I haue condiſcended. But ſo will not we cried almoſt the whole aſſemblie, councelling one an other, rather to try the vttermoſt euent, then to looſe him by whom they had beene victorious. But he as well with generall orations, as particular dealing with the men of moſt credit, made them throughly ſee how neceſsary it was to preferre ſuch an opportunity before a vaine affection; but yet could not preuaile, till openly he ſware, that he would (if at any time the *Lacedaemonians* brake this treatie) come back againe, and be their captaine.

So then after a few daies, ſetting them in perfect order, he tooke his leaue of them, whoſe eyes bad him farwell with teares, and mouthes with kiſsing the places where he ſtept, and after making temples vnto him as to a demi-God: thinking it beyond the degree of humanitie to haue a witt ſo farre ouergoing his age, and ſuch dreadfull terror proceed from ſo excellent beautie. But he for his ſake obtained free pardon for *Argalus*, whom alſo (vpon oath neuer to beare armes againſt the *Helots*) he deliuered: and taking onely with him certaine principall Iewells of his owne, he would haue parted alone with *Argalus*, (whoſe countenance well ſhewed, while *Parthenia* was loſt he counted not himſelfe deliuered) but that the whole multitude would needs gard him into *Arcadia*. Where again leauing them all to lament his departure, he by enquirie gotte to the well-knowne houſe of *Kalander*: There was he receiued with louing ioye of *Kalander*, with ioyefull loue of *Palladius*, with humble (though dolefull) demeanor of *Argalus* (whom ſpecially both he and *Palladius* regarded) with gratefull ſeruiſablenes of *Clitophon*, and honourable admiration of all. For being now well veiwed to haue no haire of his face, to witnes him a man, who had done acts beyond the degree of a man, and to looke with a certaine almoſt baſhfull kinde of modeſtie, as if he feared the eyes of men, who was vnmooued with ſight of the moſt horrible countenaunces of death; and as if nature had miſtaken her woorke to haue a *Marſes* heart in a *Cupids* bodie: All that beheld him (and all that might behold him, did behold him) made their eyes quicke meſsengers to their minds, that there they had ſeene the vttermoſt that in mankind might be ſeene. The like wonder *Palladius* had before ſtirred, but that *Daiphantus*, as younger and newer come, had gotten now the aduantage in the moyſt and ficle impreſſion of eye-ſight. But while all men (ſauing poore *Argalus*) made the ioy of their eyes ſpeake for their harts towardes *Daiphantus*: Fortune (that belike was bid to that banket, and ment then to playe the good fellow) brought a pleaſant aduenture among them. It was that as they had newly dined, there came in to *Kalander* a meſſenger, that brought him word, a yong noble Lady, neere kinſwoman to the faire *Helen* Queene of *Corinth*; was come thither, and deſired to be lodged in his houſe. *Kalander* (moſt glad of ſuch an occaſion) went out, and all his other worthie gueſts with him, ſauing onely *Argalus*, who remained in his chamber, deſirous that this company were once broken vp, that he might goe in his ſolitarie queſt after *Parthenea*. But when they met this Lady; *Kalander* ſtreight thought hee ſawe his neece *Parthenea*, and was about in ſuch familiar

miliar ſorte to haue ſpoken vnto her: But ſhee in graue aud honorable manner giuing him to vnderſtande that he was miſtaken, he halfe aſhamed excuſed himſelfe with the exceeding likenes was between them, though in deede it ſeemed that this Lady was of the more pure and daintie complexion; ſhee ſaide, it might very well bee, hauing beene many times taken one for another. But aſſoon as ſhe was brought into the houſe, before ſhe would reſt her, ſhe deſired to ſpeak with *Argalus* publickly, who ſhe heard was in the houſe. *Argalus* came haſtilie, and as haſtilie thought as *Kalander* had done, with ſodaine chaunges of ioye into ſorrow. But ſhe when ſhe had ſtaide their thoughts with telling them her name, and qualitie in this ſorte ſpake vnto him. My Lord *Argalus*, ſayd ſhe, being of late left in the Court of Queene *Helen* of *Corinth*, as chiefe in her abſence (ſhe being vpon ſome occaſion gone thence) there came vnto me the Lady *Parthenia*. ſo diſfigured, as I think Greece hath nothing ſo ougly to behold. For my part, it was many daies, before with vehement oathes, and ſome good prooſes, ſhe could make me think that ſhe was *Parthenia*. Yet at laſt finding certainlye it was ſhe, and greatly pitying her miſfortune, ſo much the more, as that all men had euer tolde me (as now you doo) of the great likenes between vs, I tooke the beſt care I could of her: and of her vnderſtood the whole tragicall hiſtorie of her vndeſerued aduenture: and therewithall, of that moſt noble conſtancie in you my Lord *Argalus*: which whoſoeuer loues not, ſhewes himſelf to be a hater of vertue, and vnworthy to liue in the ſocietie of mankind. But no outwarde cheriſhing could ſalue the inwarde ſore of her minde, but a few dayes ſince ſhe died: before her death earneſtly deſiring, and perſwading me, to thinke of no huſbande but of you; as of the onely man in the worlde worthie to be loued, with-al ſhe gaue me this Ring to deliuer you; deſiring you, & by the authoritie of loue commanding you, that the affection you bare her you ſhould turne to me: aſſuring you, that nothing can pleaſe her ſoule more, then to ſee you and me matched together. Nowe my L. though this office be not (perchance) ſutable to my eſtate nor ſex, who ſhould rather looke to be deſired; yet, an extraordinarie deſert requires an extraordinarie proceeding: and therefore I am come (with faithfull loue built vppon your worthines) to offer my ſelfe and to beſeech you to accept the offer: & if theſe noble gentlemen preſent will ſay it is great folly, let thē withall, ſay it is great loue. And then ſhe ſtaid, earneſtly attending *Argalus* his anſwere, who firſt making moſt hartie ſighes do ſuch obſequies as he could, to *Parthenia* thus anſwered her.

Madame (ſaid he) infinitly am I bound vnto you, for this, no more rare then noble courteſie; but moſt bound for the goodnes I perceiue you ſhewed to the lady *Parthenia*, (with that the teares ranne downe his eyes; but he followed on) and as much as ſo vnfortunate a man, fitte to be the ſpectacle of miſerie, can doo you ſeruice; determine you haue made a purchaſe of a ſlaue (while I liue) neuer to faile you. But this great matter you propoſe vnto me, wherin I am not ſo blinde as not to ſe what happines it ſhould be vnto me; Excellent Ladie, know, that if my hart were mine to giue, you before all other, ſhould haue it; but *Parthenias* it is though dead: there I began, there I end all matter of affection: I hope I ſhall not longe tarry after her, with whoſe beautie if I had onely beene in loue, I ſhould be ſo with you, who haue the ſame beautie: but it was *Parthenias* ſelfe I loued, and loue; which no likenes can make one; no commandemēt diſſolue, no foulnes defile, nor no death finiſh. And ſhall I receiue (ſaid ſhee) ſuch diſgrace, as to be refuſed? Noble Ladie

ſaid

(ſaide he) let not that harde word be vſed; who know your exceeding worthineſſe farre beyond my deſert: but it is onely happines I refuſe, ſince of the onely happines I could and can deſire, I am refuſed.

He had ſcarce ſpoken thoſe words, when ſhee ranne to him, and imbracing him, Why then *Argalus* (ſaid ſhe) take thy *Parthenia*; and *Parthenia* it was in deede. But becauſe ſorow forbad him too ſoon to beleeue, ſhe told him the trueth, with all circumſtances; how being parted alone, meaning to die in ſome ſolitarie place, as ſhe hapned to make her complaint, the Queene *Helen* of *Corinth*, (who likewiſe felt her part of miſeries) being then walking alſo alone in that lonely place, hearde her and neuer lefte, till ſhe had knowen the whole diſcourſe. Which the noble Queene greatly pitying, ſhe ſent her to a Phiſition of hers the moſt excellent man in the world, in hope he could helpe her: which in ſuch ſort as they ſaw he had perfourmed, and ſhee taking with her of the Queenes ſeruants, thought yet to make this triall, whether he would quickly forget his true *Parthenia*, or no. Her ſpeach was confirmed by the *Corinthian* Gentlemen, who before had kept her councell, and *Argalus* eaſily perſwaded to what more then ten thouſand yeares of life he deſired: and *Kalander* would needes haue the mariage celebrated in his houſe, principallie the longer to holde his deare gueſtes, towardes whom he was now (beſides his owne habite of hoſpitallitie) carried with loue and dutie: & therefore omitted no ſeruice that his wit could inuent, and his power miniſter.

But no way he ſawe he could ſo much pleaſure them as by leauing the two friends alone, who being ſhruncke aſide to the banqueting houſe where the pictures were; there *Palladius* recounted vnto him, that after they had btahbādōed the burnig ſhip (& either of them taken ſome thing vnder him the better to ſupport him to the ſhore) he knew not how, but either with ouer-labouring in the fight and ſoddaine colde, or the to much receiuing of ſalt water, he was paſt him ſelfe: but yet holding faſt (as the nature of dying men is to do) the cheſt that was vnder him, he was caſt on the ſandes, where he was taken vp by a couple of ſhepeheards, and by them brought to life againe, and kept from drowning himſelfe, when he deſpaired of his ſafetie. How after hauing failed to take him into the fiſher boate, he had by the ſhepherds perſwaſion come to this Gentlemans houſe; where being daungerouſlie ſicke, he had yeelded to ſeeke the recouerie of health, onely for that he might the ſooner goe ſeeke the deliuerie of *Pyrocles*: to which purpoſe *Kalander* by ſome friends of his in *Meſſena*, had alreadie ſet a ſhip or two abroad, when this accident of *Clitophons* taking had ſo bleſſedly procured their meeting. Then did he ſet foorth vnto him the noble intertainment and carefull cheriſhing of *Kalander* towards him, & ſo vpon occaſion of the pictures preſent deliuered with the franknes of a friendes tongue, as neere as he could, word by word what *Kalander* had told him touching the ſtrange ſtorie (with all the particularities belonging) of *Arcadia*, which did in many ſortes ſo delight *Pyrocles* to heare; that he would needes haue much of it againe repeated, and was not contented till *Kalander* himſelfe had anſwered him diuers queſtions.

But firſt at *Muſidorus* requeſt, though in briefe manner, his mind much running vpon the ſtrange ſtorie of *Arcadia*, he did declare by what courſe of aduentures he was com to make vp their mutuall happines in meeting. When (coſin ſaid he) we had ſtript our ſelues, and were both leapt into the Sea, and ſwom a litle toward the

ſhoare, I found by reaſon of ſome wounds I had, that I ſhould not be able to get the lande, and therefore turned backe againe to the maſt of the ſhippe, where you found me, aſſuring my ſelfe, that if you came aliue to ſhore, you woulde ſeeke me; if you were loſt, as I thought it as good to periſhe as to liue, ſo that place as good to periſh in as an other. There I found my ſworde among ſome of the ſhrowds, wiſhing (I muſt confeſſe) if I died to bee found with that in my hande, and withall wauing it about my head, that ſaylers by might haue the better glimpſe of me. There you miſſing mee, I was taken vp by Pyrates, who putting me vnder boorde priſoner, preſentlie ſett vppon another ſhippe, and mainteyning a long fight, in the ende, put them all to the ſworde. Amongſt whom I might heare them greatlie prayſe one younge man, who fought moſt valiantlie, whom (as loue is carefull, and misfortune ſubiect to doubtfulnes) I thought certainely to bee you. And ſo holding you as dead, from that time till the time I ſawe you, it trueth I ſought nothing more then a noble ende, which perchaunce made me more hardie then otherwiſe I would haue beene. Tryall whereof came within two dayes after: for the Kinges of *Lacedæmon* hauing ſett out ſome Galleys, vnder the charge of one of their Nephewes to skowre the Sea of the Pyrates, they met with vs, where our Captaine wanting men, was driuen to arme ſome of his priſoners, with promiſe of libertie for well fighting: among whom I was one, and beeing boorded by the Admirall, it was my fortune to kill *Euryleon* the Kinges nephew: but in the end they preuailed, & we were all taken priſoners: I not caring much what became of me (onely keeping the name of *Daiphantus*, according to the reſolution you know is betweene vs,) but beyng laide in the iayle of *Tenaria*, with ſpeciall hate to me for the death of *Euryleon*, the popular ſorte of that towne conſpired with the *Helots*, and ſo by night opened them the gates; where entring and killing all of the gentle and riche faction, for honeſtie ſake brake open all priſons, and ſo deliuered me; and I mooued with gratefulneſſe, and encouraged with careleſneſſe of life ſo behaued my ſelfe in ſome conflictes they had with in few dayes, that they barbarouſlie thinking vnſenſible wonders of mee, and with all ſo much the better truſting mee, as they heard I was hated of the Kinge of *Lacedæmon*, their chiefe Captayne beyng ſlaine as you knowe by the noble *Argalus*, who helped thereunto by his perſwaſion) hauing borne a great affection vnto mee, and to auoyde the daungerous emulation whiche grewe among the chiefe, who ſhoulde haue the place, and alſo affected, as rather to haue a ſtraunger then a competitour, they elected mee, (God wotte little prowde of that dignitie;) reſtoring vnto mee ſuch thinges of mine as beeing taken firſt by the Pyrates, and they by the *Lacedæmonians*, they had gotten in the ſacke of the towne. Now being in it, ſo good was my ſucceſſe with manie victories, that I made a peace for them to their owne liking: the verie daye that you deliuered *Clitophon*, whom I with much a doo had preſerued. And in my peace the Kinge *Amiclas* of *Lacedæmon* would needes haue mee banniſhed, and depriued of the dignitie whereunto I was exalted: which (and you may ſee howe much you are bounde to mee) for your ſake I was content to ſuffer, a newe hope riſing in mee, that you were not dead: and ſo meaning to trauaile ouer the worlde to ſeeke you; and now heere (my deere *Muſidorus*) you haue mee. And with that (embracing and kiſſinge eche other) they called *Kalander*

der, of whom *Daiphantus* desired to heare the ful storie, which before he had recounted to *Palladius*, and to see the letter of *Philanax*; which hee read and well marked.

But within some daies after, the marriage betweene *Argalus* and the faire *Parthenia* beyng to bee celebrated *Daiphantus* and *Palladius* selling some of their Iewels furnished themselues of very faire apparell, meaning to doo honour to their louing hoste; who as much for their sakes, as for the marriage, set foorth each thing in most gorgeous manner. But all the cost bestowed did not so much enrich, nor all the fine deckinges so much beautyfie, nor all the daintye deuises so much delight, as the faireneſſe of *Parthenia*, the pearle of all the maydes of *Mantinea*: who as shee went to the Temple to bee maried, her eyes themselues seemed a temple, wherein loue and beautie were married: her lippes though they were kepte close with modest silence, yet with a pretie kinde of naturall swelling, they seemed to inuite the guestes that lookt on them; her cheekes blushing, and withallwhen shee was spoken vnto, a little smilyng, were like roses, when their leaues are witha little breath stirred: her hayre beeyng layed at the full length down her backe, bare shew as if the voward sayled, yet that woulde cõnquer. *Daiphantus* marking her, to *Iupiter* (said hee speaking to *Palladius*) how happens it, that beautie is only confined to *Arcadia*? But *Palladius* not greatly attending his speach, som daies were continued in the solemnising the marriage, with al conceipts that might deliuer delight to mens fancies.

But such a chaunge was growen in *Daiphantus*, that (as if cheerefulneſſe had bene tediousneſſe, & good entertainement were turnd to discourtesie) he would euer get himselfalone, though almost whẽ he was in company, he was alone, so little attentiõ he gaue to any that spake vnto him: euen the colour & figure of his face began to receaue some alteration; which hee shewed little to heede: but euerie morning earlie going abroad, either to the garden, or to some woods towards the desert, it seemed his onely comfort was to be without a comforter. But long it could not be hid from *Palladius*, whom true loue made redy to marke, & long knowledge able to marke; & therefore being now growen weary of his abode in *Arcadia*, hauing informed him selfe fully of the strength and riches of the coũtry, of the nature of the people, and manner of their lawes: & seeing the courte coulde not be visited, prohibited to all men, but to certaine sheapheardish people, hee greatly desired a speedy returne to his owne countrie, after the many mazes of fortune hee had troden. But perceauing this great alteration in his friend, hee thought first to breake with him thereof, and then to hasten his returne; whereto hee founde him but smally enclined: whereupon one day taking him alone with certaine graces and countenances, as if he were disputing with the trees, began in this manner to say vnto him.

A minde well trained and long exercised in vertue (my sweete and worthy cosin) doth not easily chaunge any course it once vndertakes, but vpon well grounded and well wayed causes. For being witnes to it selfe of his owne inward good, it findes nothing without it of so high a price, for which it should bee altered. Euen the very countenaunce and behauiour of such a man doth shewe foorth Images of the same constancie, by maintaining a right harmonie betwixt it and the inward good, in yeelding it selfe sutable to the vertuous resolution of the minde. This speech I direct to you (noble friende *Pyrocles*) the excellencie of whose minde and well chosen course in vertue, if I doo not sufficiently know, hauing

ſeene ſuch rare demonſtrations of it, it is my weakenes, and not your vnworthynes, But as in deede I know it, and knowing it moſt dearely loue both it, and him that hath it; ſo muſt I needes ſaye, that ſince our late comming into this countrie, I haue marked in you, I will not ſaye an alteration, but a relenting truely, and a ſlacking of the maine career, you had ſo notablye begon and almoſt performed; and that in ſuch ſorte, as I cannot finde ſufficient reaſon in my great loue toward you howe to allowe it; for (to leaue of other ſecreter argumentes which my acquaintaunce with you makes mee eaſilie finde) this in effect to any man may bee manifeſt, that whereas you weere wont in all places you came, to giue your ſelfe vehemently to the knowledge of thoſe thinges which might better your minde; to ſeeke the familiaritye of excellent men in learning and ſouldiery: and laſtly, to put all theſe thinges in practiſe both by continuall wiſe proceedinge, and worthie enterpriſes, as occaſion fell for them; you now leaue all theſe thinges vndone: you let your minde fall a ſleepe: beſide your countenaunce troubled (which ſurely comes not of vertue; for vertue like the cleare heauen is without cloudes) and laſtly you ſubiect your ſelfe to ſolitarines, the ſlye enimie, that doth moſt ſeparate a man from well doinge. *Pyrocles* minde was all this while ſo fixed vpon another deuotion, that hee no more attentiuely marked his friendes diſcourſe, then the childe that hath leaue to playe, markes the laſt parte of his leſſon; or the diligent Pilot in a daungerous tempeſt doth attende the vnskilfull wordes of a paſſinger: yet the very ſound hauing imprinted the generall pointe of his ſpeech in his hart, pierced with any miſlike of ſo deerelie an eſteemed friende, and deſirous by degrees to bring him to a gentler conſideration of him, with a ſhamefaſt looke (witneſſing he rather could not helpe, then did not know his fault) anſwered him to this purpoſe. Excellent *Muſidorus*, in the praiſe you gaue mee in the beginning of your ſpeech, I eaſily acknowledge the force of your good will vnto mee, for neither coulde you haue thought ſo well of me, if extremitie of loue had not made your iudgement partiall, nor you could haue loued me ſo intirelie, if you had not beene apt to make ſo great (though vndeſerued) iudgementes of me; and euen ſo muſt I ſay to thoſe imperfections, to which though I haue euer through weaknes beene ſubiect, yet you by the daily mending of your mind haue of late bin able to looke into them, which before you could not diſcerne; ſo that the chaunge you ſpeake of, falles not out by my impairing, but by your bettering. And yet vnder the leaue of your better iudgement, I muſt needes ſay thus much, my deere coſin, that I finde not my ſelfe wholie to bee condemned, becauſe I do not with continuall vehemency follow thoſe knowledges, which you call the bettering of my minde; for both the minde it ſelfe muſt (like other thinges) ſometimes be vnbent, or elſe it will be either weakned, or broken: And theſe knowledges, as they are of good vſe, ſo are they not all the minde may ſtretch it ſelfe vnto: who knowes whether I feede not my minde with higher thoughts? Truelie as I know not all the particularities, ſo yet I ſee the boundes of all theſe knowledges: but the workinges of the minde I finde much more infinite, then can bee led vnto by the eye, or imagined by any, that diſtract their thoughts without themſelues.

And in ſuch contemplation, or as I thinke more excellent, I enioye my ſolitarines; and my ſolitarines perchaunce is the nurſe of theſe contemplations. Eagles wee ſee flye alone; and they are but ſheepe, which alwayes waies

waies heard together; condemne not therefore my minde ſometime to enioy it ſelfe; nor blame not the taking of ſuch times as ſerue moſt fitte for it. And alas, deere *Muſidorus*, if I be ſadde, who knowes better then you the iuſt cauſes I haue of ſadnes? And here *Pyrocles* ſodainly ſtopped, like a man vnſatiſfied in himſelfe, though his witte might well haue ſerued to haue ſatiſfied another. And ſo looking with a countenaunce, as though hee deſired hee ſhoulde know his minde without hearring him ſpeake, and yet deſirous to ſpeake, to breath out ſome part of his inwarde euil, ſending againe new blood to his face, hee continued his ſpeach in this manner. And Lord (dear couſin: ſaid he) doth not the pleaſauntnes of this place carry in it ſelfe ſufficient reward for any time loſt in it? Do you not ſee how all things conſpire together to make this country a heauenly dwelling? Do you not ſee the graſſe how in colour they excell the Emeralds, euerie one ſtriuing to paſſe his fellow, and yet they are all kept of an equall height? And ſee you not the reſt of theſe beautifull flowers, each of which would require a mans wit to know, and his life to expreſſe? Do not theſe ſtately trees ſeeme to maintaine their floriſhing olde age with the onely happines of their ſeat, being clothed with a continuall ſpring, becauſe no beautie here ſhould euer fade? Doth not the aire breath health, which the Birds (delightfull both to eare and eye) do dayly ſolemnize with the ſweete conſent of their voyces? Is not euery *Eccho* thereof a perfect Muſicke? & theſe freſh and delightfull brookes how ſlowly they ſlide away, as loth to leaue the company of ſo many thinges vnited in perfection? and with how ſweete a murmur they lament their forced departure? Certainely, certainely, coſin, it muſt needs be that ſom Goddeſſe enhabiteth this Region, who is the ſoule of this ſoyle: for neither is any leſſe then a Goddeſſe, worthie to bee ſhrined in ſuch a heape of pleaſures: nor any leſſe then a Goddeſſe coulde haue made it ſo perfect a plotte of the celeſtiall dwellings. And ſo ended with a deep ſigh, rufully caſting his eye vpon *Muſidorus* as more deſirous of pittie then pleading. But *Muſidorus* had all this while helde his looke fixed vpon *Pyrocles* countenance; and with no leſſe louing attention marked howe his wordes proceeded from him: but in both theſe he perceiued ſuch ſtrange diuerſities, that they rather increaſed new doubtes, then gaue him ground to ſettle anie iudgement: for, beſides his eyes ſometimes euen great with teares, the oft changing of his colour, with a kinde of ſhaking vnſtayednes ouer all his bodie, he might ſee in his countenance ſome great determination mixed with feare; and might perceiue in him ſtore of thoughts, rather ſtirred then digeſted; his wordes interrupted continually with ſighes (which ſerued as a burthen to each ſentence) and the tenor of his ſpeech (though of his wonted phraſe) not knit together to one conſtant end, but rather diſſolued in it ſelfe, as the vehemencie of the inwarde paſſion preuayled: which made *Muſidorus* frame his aunſwere neereſt to that humor, which ſhould ſooneſt put out the ſecret. For hauing in the beginning of *Pyrocles* ſpeech which defended his ſolitarines, framed in his minde a replie againſt it, in the praiſe of honourable action, in ſhewing that ſuch a kind of contemplatiõ is but a glorious title to idlenes; that in action a man did not onely better himſelfe but benefit others; that the gods would not haue deliuered a ſoule into the bodie, which hath armes and legges, onely inſtrumentes of doeing, but that it were intended the minde ſhoulde imploy them, and that the minde ſhould beſt knowe his owne good or euill, by practiſe:

which

which knowledge was the onely way to increaſe the one, and correct the other: beſides many other argumentes, which the plentifulneſſe of the matter yeelded to the ſharpnes of his wit. When hee found *Pyrocles* leaue that, and fall into ſuch an affected praiſing of the place, he left it likewiſe, and ioyned with him therein: becauſe hee found him in that humor vtter more ſtore of paſſion; and euen thus kindely embraſing him, he ſaid: Your words are ſuch (noble couſin) ſo ſweetly and ſtrongly handled in the praiſe of ſolitarineſſe, as they would make mee likewiſe yeeld my ſelfe vp into it, but that the ſame words make me know, it is more pleaſant to enioy the companie of him that can ſpeake ſuch wordes, then by ſuch wordes to bee perſwaded to follow ſolitarines. And euen ſo doo I geue you leaue (ſweete *Pyrocles* euer to defende ſolitarines, ſo long as to defende it, you euer keep companie. But I maruell at the exceſsiue praiſes you giue to this countrie; in truth it is not vnpleſant: but yet if you would returne into *Macedon* you ſhould either ſe many heauens or find this no more then earthlie. And euen *Tempe* in my *Theſſalia* (where you and I to my great happyneſſe were brought vp together) is nothing inferiour vnto it. But I thinke you will make me ſee, that the vigor of your witte can ſhew it ſelfe in any ſubiect: or els you feede ſometimes your ſolitarines with the conceites of the Poets, whoſe liberall pennes can as eaſilie trauaile ouer mountaines, as molehils: and ſo like well diſpoſed men, ſet vp euery thing to the higheſt note; eſpecially, when they put ſuch wordes in the mouths of one of theſe fantaſticall mind-infected people, that children & Muſitiās cal Louers. This word, Louer, did no leſſe pearce poore *Pyrocles*, then the right tune of muſicke toucheth him that is ſicke of the *Tarantula*. There was not one parte of his body, that did not feele a ſodaine motion, while his hart with panting, ſeemed to daunce to the ſounde of that word, yet after ſome pauſe (lifting vp his eyes a litle from the ground, and yet not daring to place them in the eyes of *Muſidorus*) armed with the verie conntenance of the poore priſoner at the barr, whoſe aunſwere is nothing but guiltie: with much a do he brought forth this queſtion. And alas, ſaide he, deare coſin, what if I bee not ſo much the Poet (the freedome of whoſe penne canne exerciſe it ſelfe in any thing) as euen that miſerable ſubiect of his conning, whereof you ſpeake? Now the eternall Gods forbid (mainely cryed out *Muſidorus*) that euer my eare ſhould be poyſoned with ſo euil news of you. O let me neuer know that any baſe affectiō ſhould get any Lordſhip in your thoughts. But as he was ſpeaking more, *Kalander* came, and brake of their diſcourſe, with inuiting them to the hunting of a goodly ſtagge, which being harbored in a wood thereby, he hoped vvould make them good ſporte, and driue avvay ſome parte of *Daiphantus* melancholy. They condiſcended, and ſo going to their lodgings, furniſhed them ſelues as liked them *Daiphantus* writing a fewe words which he left ſealed in a letter againſt their returne.

Then wēt they together abroad, the good *Kalāder* entertaining thē with pleaſaunt diſcourſing, howe well he loued the ſporte of hunting when hee was a young man, how much in the compariſon thereof hee diſdained all chamber delights, that the Sunne (how great a iornie ſoeuer he had to make) could neuer preuent him with earlines, nor the Moone (with her ſober couutenance) diſſwade him from watching till midnight for the deeres feeding. O, ſaide he, you will neuer liue to my age, without you keepe your ſelues in breath vvith exerciſe, and in hart vvith ioifullnes: too much thinking doth conſume the ſpirits and oft it falles out, that vvhile

one

one thinkes too much of his doing, he leaues to doe the effect of his thinking. Then ſpared he not to remember how much *Arcadia* was chaunged ſince his youth: actiuitie and good fellowſhip being nothing in the price, it was then held in, but according to the nature of the old growing world, ſtil worſe and worſe. Then would he tell them ſtories of ſuch gallaunts as he had knowē: and ſo with pleaſant company beguiled the times haſt, and ſhortned the wayes length, till they came to the ſide of the wood, where the hounds were in couples ſtaying their comming, but with a whining Accent crauing libertie: many of them in colour and markes ſo reſembling, that it ſhowed they were of one kinde. The huntſmen handſomely attired in their greene liueries, as though they were children of Sommer, with ſtaues in their handes to beat the guiltleſſe earth, when the houndes were at a fault, and with hornes about their neckes to ſounde an alarum vpon a fillie fugitiue. The houndes were ſtraight vncoupled, and erelong the Stagge thought it better to truſt to the nimblenes of his feete, then to the ſlender fortification of his lodging: but euen his feete, betrayed him; for howſoeuer they went, they themſelues vttered themſelues to the ſent of their enimies; who one taking it of an other, and ſometimes beleeuing the windes aduertiſements, ſometimes the viewe of (their faithfull councellors) the huntſmen, with open mouthes then denounced warre, when the warre was alreadie begun. Their crie beeing compoſed of ſo well ſorted mouthes, that any man would perceiue therein ſome kinde of proportion, but the skilfull woodmen did finde a muſicke. Then delight and varietie of opinion drew the horſmen ſundrie wayes; yet cheering their houndes with voyce & horne, kept ſtill (as it were) together. The wood ſeemed to conſpire with them againſt his own citizens, diſperſing their noiſe through all his quarters, and euen the Nimph *Echo* left to bewayle the loſſe of *Narciſſus*, and became a hunter. But the Stagge was in the end ſo hotly purſued, that (leauing his flight) hee was driuen to make courage of diſpaire; and ſo turning his head, made the hounds (with change of ſpeech) to teſtifie that he was at a bay: as if from hotte purſuite of their enemie, they were ſodainly come to a parley.

But *Kalander* (by his skill of coaſting the Countrey) was among the firſt that came in to the beſieged Deere; whom when ſome of the younger ſorte would haue killed with their ſwordes, he woulde not ſuffer: but with a Croſſebowe ſent a death to the poore beaſt, who with teares ſhewed the vnkindnes he tooke of mans crueltie.

But by the time that the vvhole companie vvas aſſembled, & that the Sagge had beſtovved himſelfe liberally among them that had killed him, *Daiphantus* vvas miſt, for vvhom *Palladius* carefully enquiring, no nevves could bee giuen him, but by one that ſaide, he thought hee was returned home; for that hee markt him, in the chiefe of the hunting, take a by way, which might lead to *Kalanders* houſe. That anſwere for the time ſatisfying, and they hauing perfourmed all dueties, as well for the Stagges funerall, as the hounds triumph, they returned: ſome talking of the fatnes of the Deeres bodie; ſome of the fairenes of his head; ſome of the hounds cunning; ſome of their ſpeed; and ſome of their cry: till comming home (about the time that the candles begin to inherit the Suns office) they found *Daiphantus* was not to bee found. Whereat *Palladius* greatly maruailing, and a day or tvvo paſſing, vvhile neither ſearch nor inquirie could help him to knovvledge, at laſt he lighted vpō the letter, vvhich *Pyrocles* had vvritten before he vvent a hunting, and left in his ſtudie among other of his vvritings. The letter vvas directed to *Palladius* himſelfe, and conteyned

teyned theſe wordes.

My onely friend, violence of loue leades me into ſuch a courſe, whereof your knowledge may much more vexe you, then helpe me. Therefore pardon my concealing it from you, ſince: if I wrong you, it is in the reſpect I beare you. Return into *Theſſalia*, I pray you, as full of good fortune, as I am of deſire: and if I liue, I will in ſhort time follow you; if I die, loue my memorie.

This was all, and this *Palladius* read twiſe or thriſe ouer. Ah (ſaid hee) *Pyrocles*, what meanes this alteration? what haue I deſerued of thee, to bee thus baniſhed of thy counſels? Heretofore I haue accuſed the ſea, condemned the Pyrats, and hated my euil fortune, that depriued me of thee; But now thy ſelf is the ſea, which drounes my comfort, thy ſelfe is the Pirat that robbes thy ſelfe of me: Thy owne wil becomes my euill fortune. Then turned he his thoughts to all formes of gheſſes that might light vpon the purpoſe and courſe of *Pyrocles*: for hee was not ſo ſure by his wordes, that it was loue, as hee was doubtfull where the loue was. One time he thought, ſome beautie in *Laconia* had layed hold of his eyes; an other time hee feared, that it might be *Parthenias* excellencie, which had broken the bands of al former reſolution But the more he thought, the more he knew not what to thinke, armies of obiections riſing againſt any accepted opinion.

Then as carefull he was what to doo himſelfe: at length determined, neuer to leaue ſeeking him, till his ſearch ſhould bee either by meeting accompliſhed, or by death ended. Therfore (for all the vnkindneſſe bearing tender reſpect, that his friends ſecrete determinatiõ ſhould be kept from any ſuſpition in others) he went to *Kalander*, and told him, that he had receaued a meſſage from his friend, by which he vnderſtood he was gone backe againe into *Laconia*, about ſome matters greatly importing the poore men, whoſe protection he had vndertaken, and that it was in any ſort fit for him, to follow him, but in ſuch priuate wiſe, as not to bee knowne, and that therefore he would as then bid him farewell: arming himſelfe in a blacke armour, as either a badge, or prognoſtication of his minde: and taking onely with him good ſtore of monie, and a fewe choiſe iewels, leauing the greateſt number of them, and moſt of his apparell with *Kalander*: which he did partly to giue the more cauſe to *Kalander* to expect their returne, and ſo to be the leſſe curiouſly inquiſitiue after them: and partly to leaue thoſe honorable thankes vnto him, for his charge and kindenes, which hee knewe hee woulde no other way receaue. The good old man hauing neither reaſon to diſſuade, nor hope to perſuade, receaued the things, with minde of a keeper, not of an owner; but before he went, deſired he might haue the happines, fully to know what they were: which he ſaide, he had euer till then delaid, fearing to be any way importune: but now he could not be ſo much an enemy to his deſires as any longer to impriſon them in ſilence, *Palladius* tolde him that the matter was not ſo ſecrete, but that ſo worthie a friend deſerued the knowledge, and ſhould haue it as ſoone as he might ſpeake with his friend: without whoſe conſent (becauſe their promiſe bound him otherwiſe) he could not reueale it: but bad him hold for moſt aſſured, that if they liued but a while, he ſhould finde that they which bare the names of *Daiphantus* and *Palladius*, would giue him and his cauſe to thinke his noble courteſie well imploied. *Kalander* would preſſe him no further: but deſiring that he might haue leaue to goe, or at leaſt to ſende his ſonne and ſeruauntes with him, *Palladius* brake of all ceremonies, by telling him; his caſe ſtood ſo, that his greateſt fauour ſhould be in making leſt adoo of his parting. Wherewith *Kalander*

know-

knowing it to bee more cumber then curteſie, to ſtriue, abſtained from further vrging him, but not from hartie mourning the loſſe of ſo ſweete a conuerſation.

Onely *Clitophon* by vehement importunitie obteyned to go with him, to come againe to *Daiphantus*, whom he named and accounted his Lord. And in ſuch priuate guiſe departed *Palladius*, though hauing a companion to talke withall, yet talking much more with vnkindnes. And firſt they went to *Mantinæa*; wherof becauſe *Parthenia* was, he ſuſpected there might be ſome cauſe of his abode. But finding there no newes of him he went to *Tegæa*, *Ripa*, *Eniſpe*, *Stimpahlus*, and *Pheneus*, famous for the poiſonous *Stygian* water, and through all the reſt of *Arcadia*, making their eyes, their eares, and their tongue ſerue almoſt for nothing, but that enquirie. But they could know nothing but that in none of thoſe places he was knowne. And ſo went they, making one place ſucceed to an other, in like vncertaintie to their ſearch, many times encountring ſtrange aduentures, worthy to be regiſtred in the roulles of fame; but this may not be omitted. As they paſt in a pleaſant valley, (of either ſide of which heigh hills lifted vp their beetle-browes, as if they would ouer looke the pleaſantnes of their vnder-proſpect) they were by the daintines of the place, & the wearienes of themſelues, inuited to light from their horſes; & pulling of their bits, that they might ſomthing refreſh their mouthes vppon the graſſe (which plentifully grewe, brought vp vnder the care of thoſe well ſhading trees,) they themſelues laid them downe hard by the murmuring muſicke of certain waters, which ſpouted out of the ſide of the hills, & in the bottome of the vallie made of many ſprings a pretie brooke, like a common-wealth of many famylies: but when they had a while harkened to the perſwaſion of ſleepe, they roſe, and walkt onward in that ſhadie place, till *Clitophon* eſpied a peece of armour, & not far of an other peece: and ſo the ſight of one peece teaching him to looke for more he at length found all, with headpeece and ſhield, by the deuice whereof, which was he ſtraight knew it to be the armour of his couſin, the noble *Amphialus*. Whereupō (fearing ſome inconuenience hapned vnto him) he told both his doubte and cauſe of doubte to *Palladius*, who (conſidering thereof) thought beſt to make no longer ſtay, but to follow on: leaſt perchaunce ſome violence were offered to ſo worthie a Knight, whō the fame of the world ſemed to ſett in ballance with any Knight liuing. Yet with a ſoddaine cōceipt, hauing long borne great honour to the name of *Amphialus*, *Palladius* thought beſt to take that armour, thinking thereby to learne by them that ſhould know that armour, ſome newes of *Amphialus*, & yet not hinder him in the ſearch of *Daiphantus* too. So he by the helpe of *Clitophon* quickly put on that armour, whereof there was no one piece wāting, though hacked in ſome places, bewraying ſome fight not long ſince paſſed. It was ſome-thing to great, but yet ſerued well enough. And ſo getting on their horſes, they trauailed but a litle way, when in opening of the mouth of the valley into a faire field, they met with a coach drawen with foure milke white-horſes, furniſhed al in blacke, with a blacke a more boye vpon euerie horſe, they all apparelled in white, the coach it ſelfe very richly furniſhed in blacke and white. But before they coulde come ſo neere as to diſcerne what was within, there came running vppon them aboue a doſen horſmen, who cried to them to yeelde them ſelues priſoners, or els they ſhould die. But *Palladius* not accuſtomed to graunt ouer the poſſeſſion of him ſelfe vppon ſo vniuſt titles, with ſworde drawne gaue them ſo rude an anſwer, that diuers of them neuer had breath to reply again: for being well

backt by *Clitophon*,& hauing an excellent horse vnder him, when he was ouerprest by some,he auoided them,and ere th'other thought of it,punished in him his fellows faults: and so either with cunning or with force,or rather with a cunning force, left none of them either liuing, or able to make his life serue to others hurt. Which being done, he approched the coach, assuring the blacke boies they should haue no hurt, who were els readie to haue run away, and looking into the coach, he found in the one end a Lady of great beautie,& such a beautie,as shewed forth the beames both of wisdome & good nature, but all as much darkned, as might be, with sorrow. In the other, two Ladies, (who by their demeanure shewed well, they were but her seruants) holding before them a picture; in which was a goodly Gentleman (whom he knew not) painted,hauing in their faces a certaine waiting sorrow, their eies being infected with their mistres weeping.But ,the cheife Ladie hauing not so much as once heard the noise of this cõflict(so had sorrow closed vp all the entries of her mind,& loue tied her sẽces to that beloued picture(now the shadow of him falling vpon the picture made her cast vp her eie,and seing the armour which too well knew,thinking him to be *Amphialus* the Lord of her desires,(bloud comming more freely into her cheekes,as though it would be bolde,& yet there growing new again pale for feare) with a pitiful looke(like on vniustly condemned) My Lord *Amphialus* saide she you haue enough punished me: it is time for crueltie to leaue you,and euill fortune me; if not I praie you,(& to graunt,my praier fitter time nor place you can haue)accomplish the one euen now,& finish the other. With that,sorrow impatient to be slowly vttered in her oftẽ staying speeches, poured it self so fast in teares, that *Palladius* could not hold her longer in errour,but pulling of his helmet,Madam(said he) I perceaue you mistake me: I am a stranger in these parts,set vpon(without any cause giuẽ by me)by some of your seruants,whom because I haue in my iust defence euill entreated, I came to make my excuse to you, whom seing such as I doo,I finde greater cause,why I should craue pardon of you. When she saw his face,& heard his speech, she looked out of the coach, & seing her men, some slaine,some lying vnder their dead horses,& striuing to get from vnder them,without making more account of the matter, Truly(said she)they are wel serued that durst lift vp their armes against that armour.But Sir Knight(said she) I pray you tell me, how come you by this armour? for if it be by the death of him that owed it, then haue I more to say vnto you. *Palladius* assured her it was not so; telling her the true manner howe hee found it. It is like enough (said shee) for that agrees with the manner he hath lately vsed. But I beseech you Sir (said she) since your prowes hath bereft me of my company: let it yet so farre heale the woundes it selfe hath giuen, as to garde me to the next towne. How great so euer my businesse bee fayre Ladie (saide hee) it shall willingly yeeld to so noble a cause: But first euen by the fauour you beare to the Lorde of this noble armour I coniure you to tell mee the storie of your fortune herein, lest hereafter when the image of so excellent a Ladie in so straunge a plight come before mine eyes, I condemne my selfe of want of consideration in not hauing demaunded thus much. Neither aske I it without protestation, that wherein my sworde and faith may auaile you, they shall binde themselues to your seruice. Your coniuration, fayre Knight (saide she) is too strong for my poore spirite to disobey, and that shall make me (without any other hope, my ruine being but by one vnrelieueable) to graunt your will herein: and to say the truth, a straunge niceness were it in me to refraine that from the eares of a person representing

ting

ting ſo much worthineſſe, which I am glad euen to rockes and woods to vtter. Know you then that my name is *Helen*, Queene by birth: & hetherto poſſeſſion of the faire citie and territorie of *Corinth*. I can ſay no more of my ſelfe, but beloued of my people: & may iuſtly ſay, beloued, ſince they are content to beare with my abſence, & folly. But I being left by my fathers death, & accepted by my people, in the higheſt degre, that coũtry could receiue; aſſone, or rather, before that my age was ripe for it; my court quickely ſwarmed full of ſuiters; ſome perchance louing my ſtate, others my perſon, but once I know all of them, howſoeuer my poſſeſſions were in their harts, my beautie (ſuch as it is) was in their mouthes; many ſtrangers of princely and noble blood, and all of mine owne countrie, to whom either birth or vertue gaue courage to avowe ſo high a deſire.

Among the reſt, or rather before the reſt, was the Lorde *Philoxenus*, ſonne and heire to the vertuous noble man *Timotheus*: which *Timotheus* was a man both in power, riches, parentage, and (which paſſed all theſe) goodnes, and (which followed all theſe) loue of the people, beyond any of the great men of my countrie. Now this ſonne of his I muſt ſay truly, not vnworthye of ſuch a father, bending himſelfe by all meanes of ſeruiſeablenes to mee, and ſetting forth of himſelfe to win my fauour, wan thus farre of mee, that in truth I leſſe miſliked him then any of the reſt: which in ſome proportion my countenaunce deliuered vnto him. Though I muſt proteſt it was a very falſe embaſſadour, if it deliuered at all any affection, whereof my hart was vtterly void, I as then eſteeming my ſelfe borne to rule, & thinking foule ſcorne willingly to ſubmit my ſelfe to be ruled.

But whiles *Philoxenus* in good ſorte purſued my fauour, and perchance nouriſhed himſelfe with ouer much hope, becauſe he found I did in ſome ſorte acknowledge his valew, one time among the reſt he brought with him a deare friend of his. With that ſhe loked vpõ the picture before her, and ſtraight ſighed, & ſtraight teares followed, as if the Idol of dutie ought to be honoured with ſuch oblations, and then her ſpeach ſtaied the tale, hauing brought her to that looke, but that looke hauing quite put her out of her tale. But *Palladius* greatly pitying ſo ſweete a ſorrow in a Ladie, whom by fame he had already knowen, & honoured, beſought her for her promiſe ſake, to put ſilence ſo longe vnto her moning, till ſhe had recounted the reſt of this ſtory. Why ſaide ſhe, this is the picture of *Amphialus*: what neede I ſay more to you? what eare is ſo barbarous but hath hard of *Amphialus*? who followes deeds of armes, but euery where findes monumẽts of *Amphialus*? who is courteous, noble, liberall, but he that hath the example before his eyes of *Amphialus*? where are al heroical parts, but in *Amphialus*? O *Amphialus* I would thou were not ſo excellent, or I would I thought thee not ſo excellent, and yet would I not that I would ſo: with that ſhe wept againe, till he againe ſolliciting the concluſion of her ſtory: Then muſt you (ſaide ſhee) know the ſtory of *Amphialus*: for his wil is my life, his life my hiſtory: and indeed in what can I better emploie my lippes thẽ in ſpeaking of *Amphialus*?

This Knight then whoſe figure you ſee, but whoſe minde can be painted by nothing, but by the true ſhape of vertue, is brothers ſonne to *Baſilius* King of *Arcadia*, and in his childhood eſteemed his heir: till *Baſilius* in his olde yeares marrying a yonge and a faire Lady, had of her thoſe two daughters, ſo famous for their perfection in beautie: which put by their yong coſin from that expectation. Wherevppon his mother (a woman of a hautie heart, being daughter

to the King of *Argos*, either diſdaining, or fearing, that her ſonne ſhould liue vnder the power of *Baſilius* ſent him to that Lorde *Timotheus* (betweene whome and her dead husband there had paſſed ſtreight bands of mutuall hoſpitality to be brought vp in company with his ſonne *Philoxenus*.

A happie reſolution for *Amphialus*, whoſe excellent nature was by this meanes trained on with as good education, as any Princes ſonne in the worlde could haue, which otherwiſe it is thought his mother (farre vnworthie of ſuch a ſonne) would not haue giuen him. The good *Timotheus*) no leſſe louing him then his owne ſonne: well they grew in yeeres; and ſhortly occaſions fell aptly to trie *Amphialus*, and all occaſions were but ſteppes for him to clime fame by. Nothing was ſo harde, but his valour ouercame: which yet ſtill he ſo guided with true vertue, that although no man was in our parts ſpoken of but he for his manhood, yet, as though therin he excelled him ſelfe, he was cõmonly called the courteous *Amphialus*. An endleſſe thing it were for me to tell, how many aduentures (terrible to be ſpoken of) he atchieued: what monſters, what Giants, what conqueſts of countries ſome times vſing policy, ſome times force, but alwaies vertue well followed, and but followed by *Philoxenus*: betweene whom, and him, ſo faſt a frindſhip by educatiõ was knit, that at laſt *Philoxenus* hauing no greater matter to imploye his frindſhipp in, then to winne me, therein deſired, and had his vttermoſt furtheraunce: to that purpoſe brought he him to my court, where truely I may iuſtly witnes with him, that what his wit coulde conceiue (and his wit can conceiue as far as the limits of reaſon ſtretch) was all directed to the ſetting forwarde the ſuite of his friend *Philoxenus*: my eares could heare nothing from him, but touching the worthines of *Philoxenus*, and of the great happines it would be vnto mee to haue ſuch a husband: with many arguments, which God knowes, I cannot well remember becauſe I did not much beleue. For why ſhould I vſe many circumſtances to come to that where alreadye I am, and euer while I liue muſt continue? in fewe wordes, while he pleaded for another, he wanne me for himſelfe: if at leaſt (with that ſhe ſighed) he would account it a winning, for his fame had ſo framed the way to my mind, that his preſence ſo full of beautie, ſweetnes, and noble cõuerſation, had entred there before he vouchſafed to call for the keyes. O Lorde, how did my ſoule hang at his lippes while he ſpake! O when he in feeling maner would deſcribe the loue of his frend, how well (thought I) dooth loue betweene thoſe lippes! when he would with daintieſt eloquence ſtirre pittie in me towarde *Philoxenus*, vvhy ſure (ſaid I to my ſelfe) *Helen*, be not afraid, this hart cannot vvant pittie: and vvhen he vvould extoll the deeds of *Philoxenus*, vvho indeede had but vvaited of him therin, alas (thought I) good *Philoxenus* hovv euil doth it become thy name to be ſubſcribed to his letter? vvhat ſhould I ſaie? nay, vvhat ſhould I not ſay (noble Knight) vvho am not aſhamed, nay am delighted, thus to expreſſe mine ovvne paſſions?

Dayes paſte; his eagernes for his friend neuer decreaſed, my affection to him euer increaſed. At length, in vvay of ordinarie curteſie, I obteined of him (vvho ſuſpected no ſuch matter) this his picture, the onely *Amphialus*, I feare that I ſhall euer enioy: and grovven bolder, or madder, or bould vvith madnes, I diſcouered my affection vnto him. But, Lord, I ſhall neuer forget, how anger and curteſie, at one inſtant apeared in his eyes, vvhen he harde that motion: hovv vvith his bluſh he taught me ſhame. In ſumme, he left nothing vnaſſayed, vvhich might diſgrace himſelfe, to grace his friẽd; in ſvveet termes making me receiue a moſt reſolute

refuſal

refuſall of himſelfe. But when he found that his preſence did far more perſwade for himſelfe, then his ſpeeche could doo for his frend, hee left my court: hoping, that forgetfulneſſe (which commonly waits vpon abſence) woulde make roome for his friende: to whome hee woulde not vtter thus much (I thinke) for a kinde feare not to grieue him, or perchance (though he cares litle for me) of a certain honorable gratefulnes, nor yet to diſcouer ſo much of my ſecrets: but as it ſhould ſeeme, meant to trauell into farre countryes, vntill his friends affectiō either ceaſed, or preuailed. But within a while, *Philoxenus* came to ſee how onward the fruites were of his friends labour, when (as in trueth I cared not much how he tooke it) he found me ſitting, beholding this picture, I know not with how affectionate countenance, but I am ſure with a moſt affectionate mind. I ſtraight found ielouſie and diſdaine tooke holde of him: and yet the froward paine of mine owne harte made mee ſo delight to puniſh him, whom I eſteemed the chiefeſt let in my way; that when he with humble geſture, and vehement ſpeeches, ſued for my fauor; I told him, that I would heare him more willingly, if hee woulde ſpeake for *Amphialus*, as well as *Amphialus* had done for him: he neuer anſwered me, but pale & quaking, went ſtraight away; and ſtraight my heart miſgaue me ſome euill ſucceſſe: and yet though I had authoritie inough to haue ſtayed him (as in theſe fatall thinges it falles out, that the hie-working powers make ſecond cauſes vnwittingly acceſſarie to their determinations) I did no further but ſent a foot-man of mine (whoſe faithfulnes to me I will knew) from place to place to follow him, and bring me word of his proceedings: which (alas) haue brought foorth that which I feare I muſt euer rewe.

For hee had trauailed ſcarſe a dayes iorney out of my Countrey, but that (not farre from this place) he ouer-tooke *Amphialus*, who (by ſuccouring a diſtreſſed Lady) had bene here ſtayed: and by and by called him to fight with him, proteſting that one of them two ſhould die: you may eaſily iudge how ſtraunge it was to *Amphialus*, whoſe hart could accuſe it ſelfe of no fault, but too much affection towarde him, which he (refuſing to fight with him) woulde faine haue made *Philoxenus* vnderſtand, but (as my ſeruant ſince tolde me) the more *Amphialus* went back, the more he followed, calling him Traytor, and coward, yet neuer telling the cauſe of this ſtrange alteration. Ah *Philoxenus* (ſaide *Amphialus*) I know I am no Traytor, and thou well knoweſt I am no coward: but I pray thee content thy ſelfe with this much, and let this ſatisfie thee, that I loue thee, ſince I beare thus much of thee, but hee leauing wordes drew his ſworde and gaue *Amphialus* a great blow or two, which but for the goodnes of his armour would haue ſlaine him: and yet ſo farre did *Amphialus* containe himſelfe, ſtepping aſide, and ſaying to him, Well *Philoxenus*, and thus much villany am I content to put vp, not any longer for thy ſake (whom I haue no cauſe to loue, ſince thou doſt iniury mee, and wilt not tell me the cauſe) but for thy vertuous fathers ſake, to whom I am ſo much bound. I pray thee goe awaye, and conquer thy owne paſſions, and thou ſhalt make mee ſoone yeeld to be thy ſeruant. But he would not attend his wordes, but ſtill ſtrake ſo fiercely at *Amphialus*, that in the end (nature preuailing aboue determination) he was faine to defend him ſelfe, and with-all to offend him, that by an vnluckye blow the poore *Philoxenus* fell dead at his feete; hauing had time onely to ſpeake ſome wordes, whereby *Amphialus* knew it was for my ſake: which when *Amphialus* ſawe, he forthwith gaue ſuch tokens of true felt ſorrow; that as my ſeruant ſaid no imagination could conceiue greater woe. But that by and by, and vnhappye

occaſion made *Amphialus* paſſe himſelfe in ſorrow: for *Philoxenus* was but newelie dead, when there comes to the ſame place, the aged and vertuous *Timotheus*, who (hauing heard of his ſonnes ſodaine and paſſionate manner of parting from my Court) had followed him as ſpeedily as he coulde; but alas not ſo ſpeedily, but that hee founde him dead before hee coulde ouertake him. Though my heart bee nothing but a ſtage for Tragedies; yet I muſt confeſſe, it is euen vnable to beare the miſerable repreſentation thereof: knowing *Amphialus* and *Timotheus* as I haue done. Alas what ſorrowe, what amaſement, what ſhame was in *Amphialus*, when hee ſawe his deere foſter father, finde him the killer of his onely ſonne? In my heart I knowe, hee wiſhed mountaines had laine vpon him, to keepe him from that meeting. As for *Timotheus*, ſorrow of his ſonne and (I thinke principally) vnkindeneſſe of *Amphialus* ſo deuoured his vitall ſpirites that able to ſay no more but *Amphialus*, *Amphialus*, haue I? he ſancke to the earth, and preſently died.

But not my tongue though daily vſed to complaints; no nor if my heart (which is nothing but ſorrow) were turned to tongues, durſt it vnder-take to ſhew the vnſpeakeablenes of his griefe. But (becauſe this ſerues to make you know my fortune) he threw away his armour, euen this which you haue now vppon you, which at the firſt ſight I vainely hoped, hee had put on againe; and then (as aſhamed of the light) hee ranne into thickeſt of the woods, lamenting, and euen crying out ſo pitifully, that my ſeruant, (though of a fortune not vſed to much tendernes) could not refraine weeping when he told it me. He once ouertooke him, but *Amphialus* drawing his ſword, which was the onely part of his armes (God knowes to what purpoſe) he carried about him, threatned to kil him if he followed him, and withal, bad him deliuer this bitter meſſage, that he wel inough found, I was the cauſe of all this miſchiefe: and that if I were a man, he would go ouer the world to kill me: but bad me aſſure my ſelfe, that of all creatures in the world, he moſt hated mee. Ah ſir Knight (whoſe eares I think by this time are tired with the rugged waies of theſe misfortunes) now weigh my caſe, if at leaſt you know what loue is. For this cauſe haue I left my countrie, putting in hazard how my people will in time deale by me, aduenturing what perilles or diſhonors might enſue, onely to follow him, who proclaimeth hate againſt me, and to bring my necke vnto him, if that may redeeme my treſpaſſe and aſſwage his fury. And now ſir (ſaide ſhe) you haue your requeſt, I pray you take paines to guide me to the next towne, that there I may gather ſuch of my company againe, as your valor hath left me. *Palladius* willingly condiſcended: but ere they began to go, there came *Clitophon*, who hauing bene ſomething hurt by one of them, had purſued him a good way: at length ouertaking him, and ready to kill him, vnderſtoode they were ſeruants to the faire Queene *Helen*, and that the cauſe of this enterpriſe was for nothing, but to make *Amphialus* priſoner, whō they knew their miſtreſſe ſought; for ſhe concealed her ſorrow, nor cauſe of her ſorrow frō no body.

But *Clitophon* (very ſory for this accident) came backe to comfort the Queene, helping ſuch as were hurt, in the beſt ſort that he could, and framing friendly conſtructions of this raſhly vnder-taken enmitie, when in comes an other (till that time vnſeene) all armed, with his beuer downe, who firſt looking round about vpon the cōpany, as ſoone as he ſpied *Palladius*, he drew his ſword, & making no other prologue, let flie at him. But *Palladius* (ſorie for ſo much harme as had already happened) ſought rather to retire, and warde, thinking he might be ſome one that belonged to the faire Queene, whoſe caſe in his heart he pitied. Which *Clitophon* ſeeing, ſtept

betweene

betweene them, asking the new come knight the cauſe of his quarrel; who anſwered him, that hee woulde kill that theefe, who had ſtollen away his maſters armour, if he did not reſtore it. With that *Palladius* lookt vpon him, and ſawe that hee of the other ſide had *Palladius* owne armour vpon him: truely (ſaide *Palladius*) if I haue ſtolne this armour, you did not buy that: but you ſhall not fight with me vpon ſuch a quarrell, you ſhall haue this armour willingly, which I did onely put on to doo honor to the owner. But *Clitophon* ſtraight knewe by his words and voyce, that it was *Iſmenus*, the faithfull and diligent Page of *Amphialus*: and therefore telling him that he was *Clitophon*, and willing him to acknowledge his error to the other, who deſerued all honour, the yong Gentleman pulled of his head-peece, and (lighting) went to kiſſe *Pallaaius* hands; deſiring him to pardon his follie, cauſed by extreame griefe, which eaſilie might bring foorth anger. Sweete Gentleman (ſaide *Palladius*) you ſhall onely make me this amendes, that you ſhall cary this your Lords armour from me to him, and tell him from an vnknowen knight (who admires his worthines) that he cannot caſt a greater miſte ouer his glory, then by being vnkind to ſo excellēt a princeſſe as this Queene is. *Iſmenus* promiſed he would as ſoone as he durſt find his maiſter: and with that went to doo his duetie to the Queene, whom in al theſe encounters aſtoniſhment made hardy; but aſſoone as ſhe ſaw *Iſmenus* (looking to her picture) *Iſmenus* (ſaide ſhee) here is my Lord, where is yours? or come you to bring me ſome ſentence of death from him? if it be ſo, welcome be it. I pray you ſpeake; and ſpeake quickly. Alas Madame, ſaid *Iſmenus*, I haue loſt my Lorde, (with that teares came vnto his eyes) for aſſoone as the vnhappie combate was concluded with the death both of father and ſonne, my maiſter caſting of his armour, went his way: forbidding me vpon paine of death to follow him. Yet diuers daies I followed his ſteppes; till laſtly I found him, hauing newly met with an excellent Spaniell, belonging to his dead companion *Philoxenus*. The dog ſtraight fawned on my maſter for old knowledge: but neuer was there thinge more pittifull then to heare my maiſter blame the dog for louing his maiſters murtherer, renewing a freſh his complaints, with the dumbe counceller, as if they might comfort one another in their miſeries. But my Lord hauing ſpied me, raſe vp in ſuch rage, that in truth I feared he would kill me: yet as then he ſaid onely, if I would not diſpleaſe him, I ſhould not come neere him till he ſent for me: too hard a commaundement for me to diſobey: I yeelded, leauing him onely waited on by his dog, and as I thinke ſeeking out the moſt ſolitarie places, that this or any other country can graunt him: and I returning where I had left his armour, found an other in ſteede thereof, and (diſdaining I muſt confeſſe that any ſhould beare the armour of the beſt Knight liuing) armed my ſelfe therein to play the foole, as euen now I did. Faire *Iſmenus* (ſaid the Queene) a fitter meſſenger could hardly be to vnfold my Tragedie: I ſee the end, I ſee my end.

With that (ſobbing) ſhe deſired to be conducted to the next towne, where *Palladius* left her to be waited on by *Clitophon*, at *Palladius* earneſt entreatie, who deſired alone to take that melancholy courſe of ſeeking his friend: and therefore changing armours againe with *Iſmenus* (who went withall to a caſtle belonging to his maſter) he continued his queſt for his friend *Daiphantus*.

So directed he his courſe to *Laconia*, aſwell among the *Helots*, as *Spartans*. There indeede hee found his fame flouriſhing, his monuments engraued in Marble, and yet more durably in mens memories; but the vniuerſall lamenting his

abſented preſence, aſſured him of his preſent abſence. Thence into the *Elean* prouince, to ſee whether at the Olympian games (there celebrated) he might in ſuch concourſe bleſſe his eyes with ſo deſired an encounter: but that huge and ſportfull aſſemblie grewe to him a tedious louelineſſe, eſteeming no bodie founde, ſince *Daiphantus* was loſt. Afterward he paſſed through *Achaia* and *Sicyonia*, to the *Corinthians*, prowde of their two Seas, to learne whether by the ſtreight of that *Iſthmus*, it were poſſible to know of his paſſage. But finding euerie place more dombe then other to his demaundes, and remembring that it was late-taken loue, which had wrought this new courſe, he returned againe (after two moneths trauaile in vaine) to make a freſhe ſearche in *Arcadia*; ſo much the more, as then firſt he bethought him ſelfe of the picture of *Philoclea* (which reſembling her he had once loued) might perhaps awake againe that ſleeping paſſion. and hauing alreadie paſt ouer the greateſt part of *Arcadia*, one daie comming vnder the ſide of the pleaſant mountaine *Menalus*, his horſe (nothing guiltie of his inquiſitiuenes) with flat-tyring taught him, that diſcrete ſtayes make ſpeedie iourneis. And therefore lighting downe, and vnbrideling his horſe, he him ſelfe went to repoſe him ſelfe in a little wood he ſawe there by. Where lying vnder the protection of a ſhadie tree, with intention to make forgetting ſleepe comfort a ſorrowfull memorie, he ſawe a ſight which perſwaded, and obteined of his eyes, that they would abide yet a while open. It was the appearing of a Ladie, who becauſe ſhe walked with her ſide toward him, he coulde not perfectly ſee her face; but ſo much he might ſee of her, that was a ſuretie for the reſt, that all was excellent.

Well might he perceiue the hanging of her haire in faireſt quantitie, in locks, ſome curled, and ſome as it were forgotten, with ſuch a careleſſe care, & an arte ſo hiding arte, that ſhee ſeemed ſhe would lay them for a paterne, whether nature ſimply, or nature helped by cunning, be the more excellent: the reſt whereof was drawne into a coronet of golde richly ſet with pearle, and ſo ioyned all ouer with golde wiers, & couered with feathers of diuers coulours, that it was not vnlike to an helmet, ſuch, a glittering ſhew, it bare, & ſo brauely it was held vp from the head. Vpon her bodie ſhe ware a doublet of Skie colour ſattin, couerd with plates of golde & as it were nailed with pretious ſtones, that in it ſhe might ſeeme armed; the nether part of her garment was ſo full of ſtuffe, & cut after ſuch a faſhion, that though the length of it reached to the ankles, yet in her going one might ſometimes diſcerne the ſmall of her leg, which with the foot was dreſſed in a ſhorte paire of crimſon veluet buſkins, in ſome places open (as the ancient manner was) to ſhew the fairenes of the skin. Ouer all this ſhe ware a certaine mantell, made in ſuch manner, that comming vnder her right arme, and couering moſt of that ſide, it had no faſtning of the left ſide, but onley vpon the top of the ſhoulder: where the two endes met, and were cloſed together with a very riche iewell: the deuiſe whereof as he after ſaw was this: a *Hercules* made in litle fourme, but ſet with a diſtaffe in his hand as he once was by *Omphales* commaundement with a worde in Greeke, but thus to be interpreted, *Neuer more valiant*. On the ſame ſide, on her thigh ſhe ware a ſword, which as it witneſſed her to be an *Amazon*, or one following that profeſſion, ſo it ſeemed but a needleſſe weapon, ſince her other forces were without withſtanding. But this Ladie walked out-right, till he might ſee her enter into a fine cloſe arbour: it was of trees whoſe branches ſo louingly interlaced one the other, that it could reſiſt the ſtrongeſt violence of eye-ſight; but ſhee went into it by a doore

ſhee

ſhe opened; which moued him as warely as he could to follow her, and by & by he might heare her ſing this ſong, with a voice no leſſe beautifull to his eares, then her goodlineſſe was full of harmonie to his eyes.

TRansformd in ſhew, but more transformd in minde,
I ceaſe to ſtriue with double conqueſt foild:
For (woe is me) my powers (all I finde
With outward force, and inward treaſon ſpoild.

For from without came to mine eyes the blowe,
Whereto mine inward thoughts did faintly yeeld;
Both theſe conſpir'd poore Reaſons ouerthrowe;
Falſe in my ſelfe, thus haue I loſt the fielde,

Thus are my eyes ſtill Captiue to one ſight
Thus all my thoughts are ſlaues to one thought ſtill:
Thus Reaſon to his ſeruants yeelds his right;
Thus is my power transformed to your will,
What maruaile then I take a womans hew,
Since what I ſee, thinke, know is all but you?

The dittie gaue him ſome ſuſpition, but the voice gaue him almoſt aſſurance, who the ſinger was. And therefore boldly thruſting open the dore, and entring into the arbour, hee perceaued in deed that it was *Pyrocles* thus diſguiſed, where-with not receauing ſo much ioy to haue found him, as griefe ſo to haue found him, amazedly looking vpon him (as *Apollo* is painted when hee ſaw *Daphne* ſodainlie turned into a Laurell) he was not able to bring forth a worde. So that *Pyrocles* (who had as much ſhame, as *Muſidorus* had ſorrow) riſing to him, would haue formed a ſubſtantiall excuſe; but his inſinuation being of bluſhing, and his diuiſion of ſighes, his whole oration ſtood vpon a ſhort narration, what was the cauſer of this Metamorphoſis? But by that time *Muſidorus* had gathered his ſpirites together, and yet caſting a gaſtfull countenaunce vpon him (as if he would coniure ſome ſtrange ſpirits) he thus ſpake vnto him.

And is it poſſible, that this is *Pyrocles*, the onely yong Prince in the world, formed by nature, and framed by education, to the true exerciſe of vertue? or is it indeede ſome *Amazon* that hath counterfeited the face of my friend, in this ſort to vexe me? for likelier ſure I would haue thought it, that any outward face might haue bene diſguiſed, then that the face of ſo excellent a mind could haue bene thus blemiſhed. O ſweete *Pyrocles*, ſeparate your ſelfe a little (if it be poſsible) from your ſelfe, and let your owne minde looke vpon your owne proceedings: ſo ſhall my wordes be needleſſe, and you beſt inſtructed. See with your ſelfe, how fitte it will be for you in this your tender youth, borne ſo great a Prince, and of ſo rare, not onely expectation, but proofe, deſired of your olde Father, and wanted of your natiue Countrie, now ſo neere your home, to diuert your thoughtes from the way of goodneſſe; to looſe, nay to abuſe your time. Laſtly to ouer-throw all the excellent things you haue done, which haue filled the world with your fame; as if you ſhould drowne your ſhip in the long deſired hauen, or like an ill

an ill player, ſhould marre the laſt act of his Tragedie. Remember (for I know you know it) that if we will be men, the reaſonable parte of our ſoule, is to haue abſolute commaundement; againſt which if any ſenſuall weaknes ariſe, wee are to yeelde all our ſounde forces to the ouerthrowing of ſo vnnaturall a rebellion, wherein howe can we wante courage, ſince wee are to deale againſt ſo weake an aduerſary, that in it ſelfe is nothinge but weakeneſſe? Nay wee are to reſolue, that if reaſon direct it, we muſt doo it, and if we muſt doo it, we will doo it; for to ſay I cannot, is childiſh, and I will not, womaniſh. And ſee how extremely euery way you endaunger your minde; for to take this womaniſh habit (without you frame your behauiour accordinglie) is wholie vaine: your behauiour can neuer come kindely from you, but as the minde is proportioned vnto it. So that you muſt reſolue, if you will plaie your parte to anie purpoſe, whatſoeuer peeuiſh imperfections are in that ſexe, to ſoften your hart to receiue them, the verie firſt downe-ſteppe to all wickedneſſe: for doo not deceiue your ſelfe, my deere coſin, there is no man ſodainelie either excellentlie good, or extremelie euill but growes either as hee holdes himſelfe vp in vertue, or lettes himſelfe ſlide to vitiouſnes. And let vs ſee, what power is the auᶜthor of all theſe troubles: forſooth loue, loue, a paſſion, and the baſeſt and fruitleſſeſt of all paſſions: feare breedeth wit, Anger is the cradle of courage: ioy openeth and enhableth the hart: ſorrow, as it cloſeth, ſo it draweth it inwarde to looke to the correcting of it ſelfe; and ſo all of them generallie haue power towardes ſome good by the direction of Reaſon. But this baſtarde Loue (for indeede the name of Loue is moſt vnworthylie applied to ſo hateſull a humour) as it is engendered betwixt luſt and idlenes; as the matter it workes vpon is nothing but a certaine baſe weakenes, which ſome gentle fooles call a gentle hart; as his adioyned companions bee vnquietnes, longings fond comforts, faint diſcomforts, hopes, ielouſies, vngrounded rages, cauſleſſe yeeldings; ſo is the higheſt end it aſpires vnto, a litle pleaſure with much paine before, and great repentaunce after. But that ende how endleſſe it runes to infinite euils, were fit inough for the matter we ſpeake of, but not for your eares, in whome indeede there is ſo much true diſpoſition to vertue: yet thus much of his worthie effects in your ſelfe is to bee ſeene, that (beſides your breaking lawes of hoſpitallitie with *Kalander* and of friendſhip with me) it vtterly ſubuerts the courſe of nature, in making reaſon giue place to ſenſe, and man to woman. And truely I thinke heere-vpon it firſt gatte the name of Loue: for indeede the true loue hath that excellent nature in it, that it doth transforme the verie eſſence of the louer into the thing loued, vniting, and as it were incorporating it with a ſecret and inwarde working. And herein do theſe kinde of loues imitate the excellent; for as the loue of heauen makes one heauenly, the loue of vertue, vertuous; ſo doth the loue of the world make one become worldly, and this effeminate loue of a wōman, doth ſo womanize a man, that (if hee yeeld to it) it will not onely make him an *Amazon*; but a launder, a diſtaff-ſpinner; or what ſo euer other vile occupation their idle heads can imagin and their weake hands performe. Therefore (to trouble you no longer with my tedious but louing wordes) if either you remember what you are, what you haue bene, or what you muſt be: if you cōſider what it is, that moued you, or by what kinde of creature you are moued, you ſhall finde the cauſe ſo ſmall, the effect ſo daungerous, your ſelfe ſo vnworthie to runne into the one, or to bee driuē by the other, that I doubt not I ſhal quicklie haue occaſion rather to praiſe you

for

for hauing conquered it, then to giue you further counſell, howe to doo it. But in *Pyrocles* this ſpeech wrought no more, but that hee, who before hee was eſpied, was afraide; after, being perceiued, was aſhamed, now being hardly rubd vpon, left both feare and ſhame, and was moued to anger. But the exceeding good will he bare to *Muſidorus* ſtriuing with it, hee thus, partly to ſatisfie him, but principally to looſe the reines to his owne motions, made him anſwere. Coſin, whatſoeuer good diſpoſition nature hath beſtowed vpon me, or howſoeuer that diſpoſition hath bene by bringing vp confirmed, this muſt I confeſſe, that I am not yet come to that degree of wiſedome, to thinke light of the ſexe, of whom I haue my life; ſince if I be any thing (which your friendſhip rather finds, then I acknowledge) I was to come to it, born of a womā, & nurſed of a womā. And certēly (for this point of your ſpeach doth neereſt touch me) it is ſtrāg to ſee the vnman-like cruelty of mā-kind; who not content with their tyrānous ābition, to haue brought the others vertuous patience vnder them (like childiſh maiſters) thinke their maſterhood nothing, without doing iniury to them, who (if wee will argue by reaſon) are framed of nature with the ſame partes of the minde for the exerciſe of vertue, as we are. And for example, euen this eſtate of *Amazons*, (which I now for my greateſt honor do ſeek to counterfait) doth well witnes, that if generally the ſweetnes of their diſpoſition did not make them ſee the vainneſſe of theſe thinges, which wee accōpt glorious, they nether want valor of mind, nor yet doth their fairnes take away their force. And truely we men, and praiſers of men, ſhould remember, that if wee haue ſuch excellēcies, it is reaſon to thinke them excellent creatures, of whom wee are: ſince a Kite neuer brought foorth a good flying Hauke. But to tell you true, as I thinke it ſuperfluous to vſe any wordes of ſuch a ſubiect, which is ſo prayſed in it ſelfe, as it needes no praiſes; ſo withall I feare leſt my conceate (not able to reach vnto them) bring forth wordes, which for their vnworthines may be a diſgrace to them I ſo inwardly honor. Let this ſuffice, that they are capable of vertue and vertue (ye your ſelues ſay) is to be loued, & I too truly: but this I willingly confeſſe, that it likes me much better, when I finde vertue in a faire lodging, then when I am bound to ſeeke it in an ill fauoured creature, like a pearle in a dounghill. As for my fault of being an vnciuill gueſt to *Kalander*, if you coulde feele what an inward gueſt my ſelfe am hoſt vnto: ye would thinke it very excuſeable, in that I rather performe the dueties of an hoſt, then the ceremonies of a gueſt. And for my breaking the lawes of friendſhippe with you, (which I would rather dye, then effectually doo) truely, I could finde in my hart to aske you pardon for it, but that your now handling of me giues me reaſon to my former dealing. And here *Pyrocles* ſtayed, as to breath himſelfe, hauing beene tranſported with a litle vehemency, becauſe it ſeemed him *Muſidorus* had ouer-bitterly glaunſed againſt the reputation of woman-kinde: but then quieting his countenance (aſwell as out of an vnquiet minde it might be) he thus proceeded on: And poore Loue (ſaid he) deare coſin, is little beholding vnto you, ſince you are not contented to ſpoile it of the honor of the higheſt power of the mind, which notable mē haue attributed vnto it; but ye deiect it below all other paſſions, in trueth ſomewhat ſtrangely; ſince, if loue receiue any diſgrace, it is by the company of theſe paſſions you preferre before it. For thoſe kinds of bitter obiections (as, that luſt, idlenes, and a weake harte, ſhoulde bee, as it were, the matter and forme of loue) rather touch me, deare *Muſidorus*, then loue: But I am good witneſſe of mine owne imperfections, and therefore will not defende

my

my ſelfe: but herein I muſt ſay, you deale contrary to your ſelfe: for if I be ſo weak, then can you not with reaſon ſtir me vp as ye did, by remembrance of my owne vertue: or if indeed I be vertuous, then muſt ye confeſſe, that loue hath his working in a vertuous hart: and ſo no dout hath it, whatſoeuer I be: for if we loue vertue, in whom ſhall wee loue it but in a vertuous creature? without your meaning bee, I ſhould loue this word *vertue*, where I ſee it written in a booke. Thoſe trobleſome effectes you ſay it breedes, be not the faults of loue, but of him that loues; as an vnable veſſell to beare ſuch a licour: like euill eyes, not able to looke on the Sun; or like a weake braine, ſooneſt ouerthrowen with the beſt wine. Euen that heauenly loue you ſpeake of, is accompanied in ſome harts with hopes, griefes, longinges, and diſpaires. And in that heauenly loue, ſince there are two parts, the one the loue it ſelfe, th'other the excellencie of the thing loued; I, not able at the firſt leap to frame both in me, do now (like a diligent workman) make ready the chiefe inſtrument, and firſt part of that great worke, which is loue it ſelfe; which when I haue a while practiſed in this ſorte, then you ſhall ſee me turne it to greater matters. And thus gentlie you may (if it pleaſe you) thinke of me. Neither doubt ye, becauſe I weare a womans apparell, I will be the more womanniſh, ſince, I aſſure you (for all my apparrel) there is nothing I deſire more, then fully to proue my ſelfe a man in this enterpriſe. Much might be ſaide in my defence, much more for loue, and moſt of all for that diuine creature, which hath ioyned me and loue together. But theſe diſputations are fitter for quiet ſchooles, then my troubled braines, which art bent rather in deeds to performe, then in wordes to defende the noble deſire that poſſeſſeth me. O Lord (ſaide *Muſidorus*) how ſharp-witted you are to hurt your ſelfe? No (anſwered he) but it is the hurt you ſpeake of, which makes me ſo ſharp-witted. Euen ſo (ſaide *Muſidorus*) as euery baſe occupation makes one ſharp in that practiſe, and fooliſh in all the reſt. Nay rather (anſwered *Pyrocles*) as each excellent thing once well learned, ſerues for a meaſure of all other knowledges. And is that become (ſaide *Muſidorus*) a meaſure for other things, which neuer receiued meaſure in it ſelfe? It is counted without meaſure (anſwered *Pyrocles*,) becauſe the workings of it are without meaſure but otherwiſe, in nature it hath meaſure, ſince it hath an end allotted vnto it. The beginning being ſo excellent, I would gladly know the ende. Enioying, anſwered *Pyrocles*, with a deepe ſigh. O (ſaide *Muſidorus*) now ſet ye foorth the baſenes of it: ſince if it ende in enioying, it ſhewes all the reſt was nothing. Ye miſtake me (aunſwered *Pyrocles*) I ſpake of the ende to which it is directed; which end ends not, no ſooner then the life. Alas, let your owne braine diſenchaunt you (ſaide *Muſidorus*.) My hart is too farre poſſeſſed (ſaide *Pyrocles*.) But the head giues you direction. And the hart giues me life; aunſwered *Pyrocles*.

But *Muſidorus* was ſo greeued to ſee his welbeloued friend obſtinat (as he thought) to his owne deſtruction, that it forced him with more then accuſtomed vehemency to ſpeake theſe words; Well, well, (ſaide he) you liſt to abuſe your ſelfe; it was a very white and red vertue, which you could pick out of a painterly gloſſe of a viſage: Confeſſe the truth; and ye ſhall finde, the vtmoſt was but beautie; a thing, which though it be in as great excellencye in your ſelfe as may be in any, yet I am ſure you make no further reckning of it, then of an outward fading benefite Nature beſtowed vpon you. And yet ſuch is your want of a true grounded vertue, which muſt be like it ſelfe in all points, that what you wiſely account a trifle in your ſelfe, you fondly become a ſlaue vnto in another. For my part I now proteſt, I haue left nothing vn-

ſaide

ſaid, which my wit could make me know, or my moſt entier friendſhip to you requires of me; I doo now beſeech you euen for the loue betwixt vs (if this other loue haue left any in you tovvards me) and for the remembrance of your olde careful father (if you can remēber him that forget your ſelfe) laſtly for *Pyrocles* ovvn ſake (who is novv vpon the point of falling or riſing) to purge your ſelfe of this vile infection; other vviſe giue me leaue, to leaue of this name of freindſhip, as an idle title of a thing vvhich cannot be, vvhere vertue is aboliſhed. The length of theſe ſpeaches before had not ſo much cloied *Pyrocles*, though he vvere very impatient of long deliberations, as this laſt farevvell of him he loued as his ovvne life, did vvound his ſoule for thinking him ſelfe afflicted, he vvas the apter to conceiue vnkindneſſe deepely: inſomuch, that ſhaking his head, and deliuering ſome ſhevve of teares, he thus vttered his greifes. Alas (ſaid he) prince *Muſidorus*, hovv cruelly you deale with me; if you ſeeke the victorie, take it and if ye liſt, the triumph; haue you all the reaſon of the world, and with me remaine all the imperfections; yet ſuch as I can no more lay from me, then the Crow can be perſwaded by the Swanne to caſt of all his blacke fethers. But truely you deale with me like a Phiſition, that ſeeing his patient in a peſtilēt feuer, ſhould chide him, in ſteed of miniſtring helpe, and bid him be ſick no more; or rather like ſuch a friēd, that viſiting his friend condemned to perpetuall priſon; and loaden with greeuous fetters, ſhould will him to ſhake of his fetters, or he would leaue him. I am ſick, and ſick to the death; I am priſoner, neither is there any redreſſe, but by her to whom I am ſlaue. Now if you liſt, leaue him that loues you in the hieſt degree: But remember euer to cary this with you, that you abandon your friend in his greateſt extremitie.

And herewith the deepe wound of his loue being rubbed a freſh with this new vnkindnes, began (as it were to bleed againe, in ſuch ſort that he was vnable to beare it any longer, but guſhing out aboundance of teares, and croſſing his armes ouer his woefull hart, he ſuncke downe to the ground which ſodaine trance went ſo to the hart of *Muſidorus*, that falling downe by him and kiſſing the weping eyes of his friend, he beſought him not to make account of his ſpeach; which if it had beene ouer vehement, yet was it to be borne withall, becauſe it came out of a loue much more vehement; that he had not thought fancie could haue receiued ſo deep a wound: but now finding in him the force of it, hee woulde no further contrary it; but imploy all his ſeruice to medicine it, in ſuch ſorte, as the nature of it required. But euen this kindnes made *Pyrocles* the more melte in the former vnkindenes, which his manlike teares well ſhewed, with a ſilent look vpon *Muſidorus*, as who ſhould ſay, And is it poſſible that *Muſidorus* ſhould threaten to leaue me? And this ſtrooke *Muſidorus* minde and ſenſes ſo dumbe too, that for greefe being not able to ſay any thing, they reſted with their eyes placed one vpon another, in ſuch ſort, as might well paint out the true paſſion of vnkindenes to be neuer aright, but betwixt them that moſt dearely loue.

And thus remained they a time; till at length, *Muſidorus* embraſing him, ſaid and will you thus ſhake of your friend? It is you that ſhake me of (ſayde *Pyrocles*) being for my vnperfectnes vnworthie of your friendſhippe. But this (ſaid *Muſidorus*) ſhewes you more vnperfect, to be cruell to him, that ſubmits himſelfe vnto you; but ſince you are vnperfect (ſaid he ſmiling) it is reaſon you be gouerned by vs wiſe and perfect men. And that authoritie will I begin to take vpon me, with three abſolute cōmandemēts: The firſt, that you increaſe not your euill with fur

ther griefes: the ſecond, that you loue her with all the powers of your mind: and the laſt commandement ſhalbe, ye command me to do what ſeruice I can, towardes the attaining of your deſires. *Pyrocles* hart was not ſo oppreſſed with the two mighty paſſions of loue and vnkindnes, but that it yeelded to ſome mirth at his commaundement of *Muſidorus*; that he ſhould loue: ſo that ſome thing cleering his face from his former ſhewes of griefe; Well (ſaid he) deare couſin, I ſee by the well choeſing of your commandementes, that you are farre fitter to be a Prince, then a Counſeller: & therfore I am reſolued to imploy all my endeuour to obey you; with this condition that the commandementes ye commaund me to lay vpon you, ſhall onely bee, that you continue to loue me, and looke vpon my imperfections, with more affection then iudgement. Loue you? (ſaid hee) alas, how can my hart be ſeperated from the true imbraſing of it, without it burſt, by being too full of it? But (ſaid he) let vs leaue of theſe flowers of newe begun frendſhip: and now I pray you againe tel me; but tell it me fully, omitting no circumſtance, the ſtorie of your affections both beginning, and proceeding: aſſuring your ſelfe, that there is nothing ſo great, which I will feare to doo for you: nor nothing ſo ſmall, which I will diſdaine to doo for you. Let me therefore receiue a cleere vnderſtanding, which many times we miſſe, while thoſe things we account ſmall, as a ſpeech, or a looke are omitted, like as a whole ſentence may faile of his congruitie, by wanting one particle. Therefore betweene frends, all muſt be layd open, nothing being ſuperfluous, nor tedious. You ſhalbe obeyed (ſaid *Pyrocles*) and here are we in as fitte a place for it as may be; for this arbor no body offers to come into but my ſelfe; I vſing it as my melancholy retiring place, and therefore that reſpect is born vnto it; yet if by chance any ſhould come, ſay that you are a ſeruant ſent from the Queene of the *Amazons* to ſeeke mee and then let mee, alone for the reſt. So ſate they downe, and *Pyrocles* thus ſaid.

Couſin (ſaid he) then began the fatall ouerthrow of all my libertie when walking among the pictures in *Kalāders* houſe; you your ſelfe deliuerd vnto me what you had vnderſtood of *Philoclea*, who much reſembling (though I muſt ſay much ſurpaſſing) the Ladie *Zelmane*, whom ſo well I loued: there were mine eyes infected, and at your mouth did I drinke my poiſon. Yet alas ſo ſweete was it vnto me, that I could not be contented, till *Kalander* had made it more and more ſtrong with his declaration. Which the more I queſtioned, the more pittie I conceaued of her vnworthie fortune: and when with pittie once my harte was made tender, according to the aptneſſe of the humour, it receaued quickly a cruell impreſſion of that wonderfull paſſion which to be definde is impoſſible, becauſe no wordes reach to the ſtrange nature of it: they onely know it, which inwardly feele it, it is called loue. Yet did I not (poore wretch) at firſt know my diſeaſe, thinking it onely ſuch a woonted kinde of deſire, to ſee rare ſights; and my pitie to be no other, but the fruits of a gentle nature. But euen this arguing with my ſelfe came of further thoughts; and the more I argued, the more my thoughts encreaſed. Deſirous I was to ſee the place where ſhe remained, as though the *Architecture* of the lodges would haue beene much for my learning; but more deſirous to ſee her ſelfe, to be iudge, for ſooth, of the painters cunning. For thus at the firſt did I flatter my ſelf, as though my wound had bene no deeper: but when within ſhort time I came to the degree of vncertaine wiſhes, and that thoſe wiſhes grew to vnquiet longinges, when I could fix my thoughts vpon nothing, but that within little varying, they ſhould end with *Philo-*

clea

cles: when each thing I ſaw, ſeemed to figure out ſome parte of my paſſions; when euen *Parthenias* faire face became a lecture to me of *Philocleas* imagined beautie; when I heard no word ſpoken, but that me thought it caried the ſounde of *Philocleas* name: then indeed, then I did yeeld to the burthen, finding my ſelfe priſoner, before I had leaſure to arme my ſelfe; and that I might well, like the ſpaniell, gnaw vpon the chaine that ties him, but I ſhould ſooner marre my teeth, then procure liberty. Yet I take to witneſſe the eternall ſpring of vertue, that I had neuer read, heard, nor ſeene any thing; I had neuer any taſt of Philoſophy, nor inward feeling in my ſelfe, which for a while I did not call to my ſuccour. But (alas) what reſiſtance was there, when ere long my very reaſon was (you will ſay corrupted) I muſt confeſſe, conquered; and that me thought euen reaſon did aſſure me, that all eyes did degenerate from their creation, which did not honour ſuch beautie? Nothing in trueth could de holde any plea with it, but the reuerent friendſhip I beare vnto you. For as it went againſt my harte to breake any way from you, ſo did I feare more then any aſſault to breake it to you: finding (as it is indeed) that to a hart fully reſolute, counſaile is tedious, but reprehenſion is lothſome: and that there is nothing more terrible to a guilty hart, then the eie of a reſpected friend. This made me determine with my ſelfe, (thinking it a leſſe fault in frendſhip to do a thing without your knowledge, then againſt your will) to take this ſecret courſe: Which conceit was moſt builded vp in me, the laſt day of my parting and ſpeaking with you; whē vpō your ſpeach with me, & my but naming loue, (whē els perchaūce I would haue gone further) I ſaw your voice and countenance ſo chaunge, as it aſſured me, my reuealing it ſhould but purchaſe your griefe with my cumber: & therfore (deere *Muſidorus*) euen ran away from thy wel knowne chiding: for hauing writtē a letter, which I know not whether you found or no, and taken my chiefe iewels with mee, while you were in the middeſt of your ſport, I got a time (as I thinke) vnmarked by any, to ſteale away, I cared not whether ſo I might ſcape you & ſo came I to *Ithonia* in the prouince of *Meſſenia*; wher lying ſecret I put this in practiſe which before I had deuiſed. For remēbring by *Philanax* his letter, & *Kalāders* ſpeech, how obſtinately *Baſilius* was determined not to mary his daughters, & therefore fearing, leſt any publike dealing ſhould rather increaſe her captiuitie, then further my loue; Loue (the refiner of inuentiō) had put in my head thus to diſguiſe my ſelfe, that vnder that maske I might (if it were poſſible,) get acceſſe, and what acceſſe could bring foorth, commit to fortune & induſtry: determining to beare the countenance of an *Amazon*. Therefore in the cloſeſt maner I could, naming my ſelfe *Zelmane*, for that deere Ladies ſake, to whoſe memorie I am ſo much bound, I cauſed this apparell to be made, and bringing it neere the lodges, which are heard at hand, by night, thus dreſſed my ſelfe, reſting till occaſion might make me to be found by them, whom I ſought: which the next morning hapned as well, as my owne plot could haue laide it. For after I had runne ouer the whole petigree of my thoughts, I gaue my ſelfe to ſing a little, which as you knowe I euer delighted in, ſo now eſpecially, whether it be the nature of this clime to ſtir vp Poeticall fancies, or rather as I thinke, of loue; whoſe cope being pleſure, wil not ſo much as vtter his griefes, but in ſome form of pleaſure.

But I had ſong very little, when (as I thinke diſpleaſed with my bad muſicke) comes maſter *Dametas* with a hedging bill in his hand, chafing, and ſwearing by the pantable of *Pallas*, & ſuch other othes as his ruſticall brauery could imagine; & when he ſaw me, I aſſure you my beauty was no more beholding to him then my harmo-

ny; for leaning his hands vpon his bil, and his chin vpon his hands, with the voice of one that plaieth *Hercules* in a play, but neuer had his fancie in his head, the firſt word he ſpake to me, was, am not I *Dametas?* why? am not I *Dametas?* hee needed not name himſelfe: for *Kalanders* deſcription had ſet ſuch a note vpon him, as made him very notable vnto me, and therefore the height of my thoughts would not diſcend ſo much as to make him any anſwer, but continued on my inward diſcourſes: which (he perchaunce witnes of his owne vnworthines, and therefore the apter to thinke himſelfe contemned) tooke in ſo hainous manner, that ſtanding vpon his tip-toes, and ſtaring as if he would haue had a mote pulled out of his eie, Why (ſaid he) thou woman, or boy, or both, whatſoeuer thou bee, I tell thee here is no place for thee, get thee gone, I tell thee it is the Princes pleaſure, I tell thee it is *Dametas* pleaſure. I could not chooſe, but ſmile at him, ſeeing him looke ſo like an Ape that had newly taken a purgation; yet taking my ſelfe with the manner, ſpake theſe wordes to my ſelfe: O ſpirite (ſaide I) of mine, how canſt thou receaue anie mirth in the midſt of thine agonies, and thou mirth howe dareſt thou enter into a minde ſo growne of late thy profeſſed enemie? Thy ſpirite (ſaide *Dametas*) dooſt thou thinke me a ſpirite, I tell thee I am *Baſilius* officer, and haue charge of him, and his daughters. O onely pearle (ſaide I ſobbing) that ſo vile an oyſter ſhould keepe thee? By the combe-caſe of *Diana* ſware *Dametas*) this woman is mad: oyſters, and pearles? dooſt thou thinke I will buie oyſters? I tell thee once againe get thee packing, and with that lifted vp his bill to hit me with the blunt ende of it: but indeede that put me quite out of my leſſon, ſo that I forgat *Zelmanes-ſhip*, and drawing out my ſworde, the baſeneſſe of the villaine yet made me ſtay my hande, and he (who, as *Kalander* tolde mee, from his childehood euer feared the blade of a ſworde) ran backe, backward (with his handes aboue his head) at leſt twentie paces, gaping and ſtaring, with the verie grace (I thinke) of the clownes, that by *Latonas* prayers were turned into Frogs. At length ſtaying, findinge himſelfe without the compaſſe of blowes, hee fell to a freſh ſcolding, in ſuch mannerlie manner, as might well ſhewe hee had paſſed through the diſcipline of a Tauerne. But ſeeing mee walke vp and downe, without marking what he ſaide, he went his way (as I perceiued after) to *Baſilius*: for within a while he came vnto mee, bearing in deede ſhewes in his countenaunce of an honeſt and well-minded gentleman, and with as much courteſie as *Dametas* with rudeneſſe ſaluting mee, Faire Lady (ſaide hee) it is nothing ſtrange, that ſuch a ſolitary place as this ſhould receiue ſolitary perſons; but much doe I maruaile howe ſuch a beauty as yours is, ſhould be ſuffered to be thus alone. I (that now knew it was my part to play) looking with a graue maieſtie vpon him, as if I found in my ſelfe cauſe to be reuerenced. They are neuer alone (ſaide I) that are accompanied with noble thoughts. But thoſe thoughts (replied *Baſilius*) cannot in this your lonelines neither warrant you from ſuſpition in others, nor defende you from melancholy in your ſelfe. I then ſhewing a miſlike that he preſſed me ſo farre, I ſeeke no better warrant (ſaide I) then my owne conſcience, nor no greater pleaſure, then mine owne contentation. Yet vertue ſeekes to ſatisfie others, (ſaide *Baſilius*.) Thoſe that bee good (ſaide I,) and they will bee ſatiſfied as long as they ſee no euill. Yet will the beſt in this country, (ſaide *Baſilius*) ſuſpect ſo excellent beauty being ſo weakely garded. Then are the beſt but ſtarke nought, (aunſwered I) for open ſuſpectingothers, comes of ſecrete condemning themſelues; But in my countrie

whoſe

whoſe manners I am in all places to maintaine and reuerence) the generall goodnes (which is nouriſhed in our harts) makes euerye one thinke the ſtrength of vertue in an other, whereof they finde the aſſured foundation in themſelues. Excellent Ladie (ſaid he) you praiſe ſo greatly, (and yet ſo wiſely) your country, that I muſt needes deſire to knowe what the neſt is, out of which ſuch Byrds doo flye. You muſt firſt deſerue it (ſaid I) before you may obtaine it. And by what meanes (ſaide *Baſilius*) ſhall I deſerue to know your eſtate? By letting me firſt knowe yours (aunſwered I.) To obey you (ſaid he) I will doe it, although it were ſo much more reaſon, yours ſhould be knowen firſt, as you doo deſerue in all points to be preferd. Know you (faire Lady) that my name is *Baſilius*, vnworthily Lord of this country: the reſt, either fame hath alreadie brought to your eares, or (if it pleaſe you to make this place happie by your preſence) at more leaſure you ſhall vnderſtand of me. I that from the beginning aſſured my ſelfe it was he, but would not ſeeme I did ſo, to keepe my grauitie the better, making a peece of reuerence vnto him, Mightye Prince (ſaid I) let my not knowing you ſerue for the excuſe of my boldenes, and the little reuerence I doe you, impute it to the manner of my country, which is the inuincible Land of the *Amazons*; My ſelfe neece to *Senicia*, Queene thereof, lineally deſcended of the famous *Pentheſilea*, ſlaine by the bloudie hand of *Pyrrhus*: I hauing in this my youth determined to make the worlde ſee the *Amazons* excellencies, aſwell in priuate, as in publicke vertue, haue paſſed ſome daungerous aduentures in diuers countries, till the vnmercifull Sea depriued me of my company: ſo that ſhipwrack caſting me not farre hence, vncertaine wandring brought me to this place. But *Baſilius* (who now began to taſt of that, which ſince he hath ſwallowed vp, as I will tell you) fell to more cunning intreating my aboad, then any greedy hoſt would vſe to well paying paſſengers. I thought nothing could ſhoot righter at the mark of my deſires; yet had I learned alredye ſo much, that it was againſt my womanhood to be forward in my owne wiſhes. And therefore he (to prooue whether interceſsions in fitter mouths might better preuaile) commaunded *Dametas* to bring forth with his wife and daughters thether; three Ladies, although of diuers, yet all of excellent beauty.

His wife in graue Matronlike attire, with countenaunce and geſture ſutable, and of ſuch fairenes (being in the ſtrength of her age) as if her daughters had not bene by, might with iuſt price haue purchaſed admiration; but they being there, it was enough that the moſt dainty eye would thinke her a worthye mother of ſuch children. The faire *Pamela*, whoſe noble hart I finde doth greatly diſdaine, that the truſt of her vertue is repoſed in ſuch a louts hands as *Dametas*, had yet to ſhewe an obedience, taken on ſhepeardiſh apparell, which was but of Ruſſet cloth cut after their faſhion, with a ſtraight body, open breſted, the nether parte full of pleights, with long and wide ſleeues: but beleeue me ſhe did apparell her apparell, and with the pretiouſnes of her body made it moſt ſumptuous. Her haire at the full length, wound about with gold lace, onely by the compariſon to ſhew how farre her haire doth excell in colour: betwixt her breaſts (which ſweetlye raſe vp like two faire Mountainettes in the pleaſaunt vale of *Tempe*) there honge a verie riche Diamond ſet but in a blacke horne, the worde I haue ſince read is this; *yet ſtill my ſelfe*. And thus particularlie haue I deſcribed them, becauſe you may know that mine eyes are not ſo partiall, but that I marked them too. But when the ornament of the Earth, the modell of heauen, the Triumph of Nature, the life of

beauty the Queene of Loue, young *Philoclea* appeared in her Nimphe-like apparell, ſo neare nakednes, as one might well diſcerne part of her perfections; and yet ſo apparelled, as did ſhew ſhe kept beſt ſtore of her beauty to her ſelfe: her haire (alas too poore a word, why ſhould I not rather call thē her beames) drawē vp into a net, able to haue caught *Iupiter* when he was in the forme of an Egle; her body (O ſweet body) couered with a light Taffeta garment, ſo cut, as the wrought ſmocke came through it in many places, inough to haue made your reſtraind imagination haue thought what was vnder it: with the caſt of her blacke eyes; blacke indeed, whether nature ſo made them, that we might be the more able to behold & bear their wonderfull ſhining, or that ſhe, (goddeſſe like) would work this miracle with her ſelfe, in giuing blacknes the price aboue all beauty. Then (I ſay) indeede me thought the Lillies grew pale for enuie, the roſes me thought bluſhed to ſee ſweeter roſes in her cheekes, and the apples me thought, fell downe from the trees, to do homage to the apples of her breaſt; Then the cloudes gaue place, that the heauens might more freely ſmile vpon her; at the leſt the cloudes of my thoughts quite vaniſhed: and my ſight (then more cleere and forcible then euer) was ſo fixed there, that (I imagine) I ſtood like a well wrought image, with ſome life in ſhew, but none in practiſe. And ſo had I beene like inough to haue ſtayed long time, but that *Gynecia* ſtepping betweene my ſight and the onely *Philoclea*, the chaunge of obiect made mee recouer my ſences: ſo that I coulde with reaſonable good manner receiue the ſalutation of her, and of the princeſſe *Pamela*, doing them yet no further reuerence then one Princeſſe vſeth to another. But when I came to the neuer-inough praiſed *Philoclea*, I could not but fall downe on my knees, and taking by force her hand, and kiſſing it (I muſt confeſſe) with more then womanly ardency, Diuine Lady, (ſaid I) let not the world, nor theſe great princeſſes maruaile, to ſe me (contrary to my manner) do this eſpeciall honor vnto you, ſince all both men and women, do owe this to the perfection of your beauty. But ſhe bluſhing (like a faire morning in May) at this my ſingularity, and cauſing me to riſe, Noble Lady, (ſaide ſhe) it is no maruaile to ſee your iudgemēt much miſtaken in my beauty, ſince you beginne with ſo great an errour, as to do more honour vnto me then to them, to whom I my ſelfe owe all ſeruice. Rather (anſwered I with a bowed downe countenaunce) that ſhewes the power of your beauty, which forced me to do ſuch an errour, if it were an errour. You are ſo well acquainted (ſaide ſhee ſweetely, moſt ſweetely ſmiling, with your owne beautie, that it makes you eaſilie fall into the diſcourſe of beauty. Beauty in me? (ſaid I truely ſighing) alas if there be any, it is in my eyes, which your bleſſed preſence hath imparted vnto them.

But then (as I thinke) *Baſilius* willing her ſo to do, Well (ſaid ſhe) I muſt needes confeſſe I haue heard that it is a great happines to bee praiſed of them that are moſt praiſe worthie; And well I finde that you are an inuincible *Amazon*, ſince you will ouercome, though in a wrong matter. But if my beauty bee any thing, then let it obtaine thus much of you, that you will remaine ſome while in this companie, to eaſe your owne trauail, and our ſolitarines. Firſt let me dye (ſaid I) before any word ſpoken by ſuch a mouth, ſhould come in vaine. And thus with ſome other wordes of entertaining, was my ſtaying concluded, and I led among them to the lodge; truely a place for pleaſantnes, not vnfitte to flatter ſolitarineſſe for it being ſet vpon ſuch an vnſenſible riſing of the ground, as you are come to a prety height before almoſt you perceiue that you aſcend, it giues the eye Lordſhip ouer a

good

good large circuit, which according to the nature of the countrey, being diuerſified betwene hills and dales, woods and playnes, one place more cleere, an other more darkſome, it ſeemes a pleaſant picture of nature, with louely lightſomnes and artificiall ſhadowes. The Lodge is of a yellow ſtone, built in the forme of a ſtarre; hauing round about a garden framed into like points: and beyond the gardein, ridings cut out, each aunſwering the Angles of the Lodge: at the end of one of them is the other ſmaller Lodge, but of like faſhion; where the gratious *Pamela* liueth: ſo that the Lodge ſeemeth not vnlike a faire *Comete*, whoſe taile ſtretcheth it ſelfe to a ſtarre of leſſe greatnes.

So *Gynecia* her ſelfe bringing me to my Lodging, anone after I was inuited and brought downe to ſup with them in the gardein, a place not fairer in naturall ornaments, then artificiall inuentions: where, in a banquetting houſe among certaine pleaſant trees, whoſe heads ſeemed curled with the wrappings about of Vine-branches The table was ſet neere to an excellent water-worke; for by the caſting of the water in moſt cunning maner, it makes (with the ſhining of the Sunne vpon it) a perfect rainbow, not more pleaſant to the eye then to the mind, ſo ſenſibly to ſee the proofe of the heauenly *Iris*. There were birds alſo made ſo finely, that they did not onely deceiue the ſight with their figure, but the hearing with their ſongs; which the watrie inſtruments did make their gorge deliuer. The table at which we ſate, was round, which being faſt to the floore whereon we ſate, and that deuided from the reſt of the buildings (with turning a vice, which *Baſilius* at firſt did to make me ſport) the table, and we about the table, did all turne round, by meanes of water which ranne vnder; and carried it about as a Mille. But alas, what pleaſure did it to mee, to make diuers times the full circle round about, ſince *Philoclea* (being alſo ſet) was carried ſtill in equall diſtance from mee, and that onely my eyes did ouertake her: which when the table was ſtayed, and wee began to feede, dranke much more eagerlie of her beautie, then my mouth did of any other licour. And ſo was my common ſenſe deceiued (being chiefly bent to her) that as I dranke the wine, and withall ſtale a looke on her, me ſeemed I taſted her deliciouſneſſe. But alas, the one thirſte was much more inflamed, then the other quenched. Sometimes my eyes would lay themſelues open to receiue all the dartes ſhe did throwe, ſometimes cloze vp with admiration, as if with a contrary fancie, they would preſerue the riches of that ſight they had gotten, or caſt my liddes as curtaines ouer the image of beautie, her preſence had painted in them. True it is, that my Reaſon (now growen a ſeruant to paſſion) did yet often tell his maſter, that he ſhould more moderatly vſe his delight. But he, that of a rebell was become a Prince, diſdayned almoſt to allow him the place of a Counſeller: ſo that my ſenſes delights being too ſtrong for any other reſolution, I did euen looſe the raines vnto them: hoping, that (going for a woman) my lookes would paſſe, either vnmarked, or vnſuſpected.

Now thus I had (as me thought) well playd my firſt acte, aſſuring my ſelfe, that vnder that diſguiſment, I ſhould find opportunitie to reueale my ſelfe to the owner of my harte. But who would thinke it poſſible (though I feele it true) that in almoſt eight weekes ſpace, I haue liued here (hauing no more companie but her parents, and I being familiar, as being a woman, and watchfull, as being a louer) yet could neuer finde opportunitie to haue one minutes leaſure of priuate conference: the cauſe whereof is as ſtrange, as the effects are to me miſerable. And (alas) this it is.

At the firſt ſight that *Baſilius* had of me (I thinke *Cupid* hauing headed his arrows with my misfortune) he was ſtriken (taking me to be ſuch as I profeſſe) with great affection towards me, which ſince is growen to ſuch a doting loue, that (till I was faine to get this place, ſometimes to retire vnto freely) I was euen choaked with his tediouſnes. You neuer ſaw fourſcore yeares daunce vp and downe more liuely in a young Louer: now, as fine in his apparell, as if he would make me in loue with a cloake; and verſe for verſe with the ſharpeſt-witted Louer in *Arcadia*. Doo you not thinke that this is a ſallet of woormwood, while mine eyes feede vpon the *Ambroſia* of *Philocleas* beauty. But this is not all; no this is not the worſt; for he (good man) were eaſy enough to be dealt with: but (as I thinke) Loue and miſcheefe hauing made a wager, which ſhould haue moſt power in me, haue ſet *Gynecia* alſo on ſuch a fire towardes me, as will neuer (I feare) be quenched but with my deſtruction. For ſhe (being a woman of excellent witte, and of ſtrong working thoughts) whether ſhe ſuſpected me by my ouer-vehement ſhowers of affection to *Philoclea* (which loue forced me vnwiſely to vtter, while hope of my maske fooliſhly incouraged me) or that ſhe hath take ſome other marke of me, that I am not a woman: or what deuill it is hath reuealed it vnto her, I know not; but ſo it is, that all her countenances, words and geſtures, are euen miſerable portraitures of a deſperate affection. Whereby a man may learne, that theſe auoydings of companie, doo but make the paſſions more violent, when they meete with fitte ſubiects. Truely it were a notable dumb ſhew of *Cupids* kingdome, to ſee my eyes (languiſhing with ouer-vehement longing) direct themſelues to *Philoclea*: and *Baſilius* as buſie about me as a Bee, and indeed as cumberſome; making ſuch vehement ſuits to me, who neither could if I would; nor would if I could, helpe him: while the terrible witte of *Gynecia*, carried with the beere of violent loue, runnes thorow vs all. And ſo ielious is ſhe of my loue to her daughter, that I could neuer yet beginne to opē my mouth to the vneuitable *Philoclea*, but that her vnwiſhed preſence gaue my tale a concluſion, before it had a beginning. And ſurely if I be not deceiued, I ſee ſuch ſhewes of liking, and (if I bee acquainted with paſſions) of almoſt a paſſionate liking in the heauenly *Philoclea*, towardes me, that I may hope her eares would not abhorre my diſcourſe. And for good *Baſilius*, hee thought it beſt to haue lodged vs together, but that the eternall hatefulnes of my deſtinie, made *Gynecias* ielouſie ſtoppe that, and all other my bleſſings. Yet muſt I confeſſe, that one way her loue doth me pleaſure: for ſince it was my fooliſh fortune, or vnfortunate follie, to bee knowen by her, that keepes her from bewraying mee to *Baſilius*. And thus (my *Muſidorus*) you haue my Tragedie played vnto you by my ſelfe, which I pray the gods may not in deede prooue a Tragedie. And there with he ended, making a full point of a hartie ſigh.

Muſidorus recommended to his beſt diſcourſe, all which *Pyrocles* had told him. But therein he found ſuch intricateneſſe, that he could ſee no way to lead him out of the maze; yet perceauing his affection ſo groūded, that ſtriuing againſt it, did rather anger then heale the wound, and rather call his friendſhippe in queſtion, then giue place to any friendly counſell. Well (ſaid he) deare coſin, ſince it hath pleaſed the gods to mingle your other excellencies with this humor of loue, yet happie it is, that your loue is imployed vpon ſo rare a woman: for certainly, a noble cauſe dooth eaſe much a grieuous caſe. But as it ſtands now, nothing vexeth me, as that I cannot ſee wherein I can be ſeruiſable vnto you. I deſire no greater ſeruice of you (anſwered *Pyrocles*) thē that you remayn ſecretly in this country, & ſome-times come to this

this place; either late in the night, or early in the morning, where you ſhall haue my key to enter, bicauſe as my fortune, eyther amends or empaires. I may declare it vnto you, and haue your counſell and furtheraunce: and hereby I will of purpoſe leade her, that is the prayſe, and yet the ſtaine of all womankinde, that you may haue ſo good a view, as to allowe my iudgement: and as I can get the moſt conuenient time, I will come vnto you; for though by reaſon of yonder wood you cannot ſee the Lodge; it is harde at hande. But now, (ſayd ſhe) it is time for me to leaue you, and towardes euening we will walke out of purpoſe hetherward, therefore keepe your ſelfe cloſe in that time. But *Muſidorus* bethinking him ſelfe that his horſe might happen to bewray them, thought it beſt to returne for that day, to a village not farre of, and diſpatching his horſe in ſome ſort, the next day early to come a foote thither, and ſo to keepe that courſe afterward, which *Pyrocles* very well liked of. Now farewell deere couſin (ſaid he) from me, no more *Pyrocles*, nor *Daiphantus* now, but *Zelmane*: *Zelmane* is my name, *Zelmane* is my title, *Zelmane* is the onely hope of my aduauncement. And with that word going out, and ſeeing that the coaſt was cleare, *Zelmane* diſmiſſed *Muſidorus*, who departed as full of care to helpe his friend, as before he was to diſſwade him.

Zelmane returned to the Lodge, where (inflamed by *Philoclea*, watched by *Gynecia*, and tired by *Baſilius*) ſhe was like a horſe, deſirous to runne, and miſerablie ſpurred, but ſo ſhort raind, as he cannot ſtirre forward: *Zelmane* ſought occaſion to ſpeake with *Philoclea*; *Baſilius* with *Zelmane*; and *Gynecia* hindered them all. If *Philoclea* happned to ſigh (and ſigh ſhe did often) as if that ſigh were to be wayted on, *Zelmane* ſighed alſo; whereto *Baſilius* and *Gynecia* ſoone made vp foure parts of ſorrow. Their affection increaſed their conuerſation; and their conuerſation increaſed their affection. The reſpect borne bred due ceremonies; but the affection ſhined ſo through them, that the ceremonies ſeemed not ceremonious. *Zelmanes* eyes were (like children before ſweet meate) eager, but fearefull of their ill-pleaſing gouernors. Time in one inſtant, ſeeming both ſhort, and long vnto them: ſhort, in the pleaſingnes of ſuch preſence: long, in the ſtay of their deſires.

But *Zelmane* fayled not to intice them all many times abroad, becauſe ſhe was deſirous her friend *Muſidorus* (neere whom of purpoſe ſhe led them) might haue full ſight of them. Sometimes angling to a little Riuer neere hand, which for the moiſture it beſtowed vpon rootes of ſome flouriſhing Trees, was rewarded with their ſhadowe. There would they ſit downe, and pretie wagers be made betweene *Pamela* and *Philoclea*, which could ſooneſt beguile ſilly fiſhes; while *Zelmane* proteſted, that the fit pray for them was hartes of Princes. She alſo had an angle in her hand; but the taker was ſo taken, that ſhe had forgotten taking. *Baſilius* in the meane time would be the cooke himſelfe of what was ſo caught, and *Gynecia* ſit ſtill, but with no ſtill penſifneſſe. Now ſhe brought them to ſee a ſeeled Doue, who the blinder ſhe was, the higher ſhe ſtraue. Another time a Kite, which hauing a gut cunningly pulled out of her, and ſo let flie, cauſed all the Kites in that quarter, who (as oftentimes the world is deceaued) thinking her proſperous, when indeede ſhe was wounded, made the poore Kite find, that opinion of riches may well be dangerous.

But theſe recreations were interrupted by a delight of more gallant ſhew; for one euening as *Baſilius* returned from hauing forced his thoughts to pleaſe themſelues in ſuch ſmall conqueſts, there came a ſhepheard, who brought him word that a Gentle-

a Gentleman deſired leaue to do a meſſage from his Lord vnto him. *Baſilius* granted; whereupon the Gentleman came, and after the dutifull ceremonies obſerued, in his maiſters name tolde him, that he was ſent from *Phalantus* of *Corinth*, to craue licence, that as he had done in many other courts, ſo he might in his preſence defie all *Arcadian* Knights in the behalfe of his miſtres beautie, who would beſides, her ſelfe in perſon be preſent, to giue euident proofe what his launce ſhould affirme. The conditions of his chalenge were, that the defendant ſhould bring his miſtreſſe picture, which being ſet by the image of *Arteſia* (ſo was the miſtreſſe of *Phalantus* named) who in ſixe courſes ſhould haue better of the other, in the iudgement of *Baſilius*, with him both the honors and the pictures ſhould remaine. *Baſilius* (though he had retired himſelfe into that ſolitarie dwelling, with intention to auoid, rather then to accept any matters of drawing company; yet becauſe he would entertaine *Zelmane*, (that ſhe might not thinke the time ſo gainefull to him, loſſe to her) graunted him to pitch his tent for three dayes, not farre from the lodge, and to proclayme his chalenge, that what *Arcadian* Knight (for none els but vpon his perill was licenſed to come) would defende what he honored againſt *Phalantus*, ſhould haue the like freedome of acceſſe and returne.

This obteyned and publiſhed, *Zelmane* being deſirous to learne what this *Phalantus* was, hauing neuer knowne him further then by report of his good iuſting, in ſomuch as he was commonly called, The faire man of armes, *Baſilius* told her that he had had occaſion by one very inward with him, to knowe in part the diſcourſe of his life, which was, that he was baſtard-brother to the faire *Helen* Queene of *Corinth*, and deerly eſteemed of her for his exceeding good parts, being honorablie courteous, and wrongleſly valiaunt, conſiderately pleaſant in conuerſation, and an excellent courtier without vnfaithfulnes; who (finding his ſiſters vnperſwadeable melancholy, thorow the loue of *Amphialus*) had for a time left her court, and gone into *Laconia*: where in the warre againſt the *Helots*, he had gotten the reputation of one, that both durſt and knew. But as it was rather choiſe then nature, that led him to matters of armes, ſo as ſoone as the ſpur of honor ceaſed, he willingly reſted in peaceable delightes, being beloued in all companies for his louely qualities, and (as a man may terme it) winning cherefulnes, whereby to the Prince and Court of *Laconia*, none was more agreable then *Phalantus*: and he not giuen greatly to ſtruggle with his owne diſpoſition, followed the gentle currant of it, hauing a fortune ſufficient to content, and he content with a ſufficient fortune. But in that court he ſawe, and was acquainted with this *Arteſia*, whoſe beautie he now defends, became her ſeruant, ſayd himſelfe, and perchaunce thought himſelfe her louer. But certainly, ſaid *Baſilius*) many times it falles out, that theſe young companions make themſelues beleeue they loue at the firſt liking of a likely beautie; louing, becauſe they will loue for want of other buſineſſe, not becauſe they feele indeed that diuine power, which makes the heart finde a reaſon in paſſion: and ſo (God knowes) as inconſtantly leaue vpon the next chaunce that beautie caſtes before them. So therefore taking loue vppon him like a faſhion, he courted this Ladie *Arteſia*, who was as fit to paie him in his owne monie as might be. For ſhe thinking ſhe did wrong to her beautie if ſhe were not prowde of it, called her diſdaine of him chaſtitie, and placed her honour in little ſetting by his honouring her: determining neuer to marrie, but him, whome ſhe thought worthie of her: and that was one, in whome all worthineſſe were harboured. And to this

conceipt

conceipt not only nature had bent her, but the bringing vp ſhe receaued at my ſiſter in lawe *Cecropia*, had confirmed her: who hauing in her widowhood taken this young *Arteſia* into her charge; becauſe her Father had bene a deare friend of her dead husbandes, had taught her to thinke that there is no wiſdome but in including both heauen and earth in ones ſelfe: and that loue, courteſie, gratefulneſſe, friendſhip, and all other vertues are rather to be taken on, then taken in ones ſelfe: And ſo good a diſciple ſhe found of her, that liking the fruits of her owne planting, ſhe was content (if ſo her ſonne could haue liked of it) to haue wiſhed her in mariage to my Nephew *Amphialus*. But I thinke that deſire hath loſt ſome of his heate, ſince ſhe hath knowne, that ſuch a Queene as *Helen* is, doth offer ſo great a price as a Kingdome, to buie his fauour; for if I be not deceaued in my good ſiſter *Cecropia*, ſhe thinks no face ſo beautifull, as that which lookes vnder a Crowne. But *Arteſia* indeede liked well of my Nephew *Amphialus*; for I can neuer deeme that loue, which in hauty harts proceeds of a deſire onely to pleaſe, and as it were, peacock themſelues; but yet ſhe hath ſhewed vehemencie of deſire that way, I thinke, becauſe all her deſires be vehement, in ſo much that ſhe hath both placed her only brother (a fine youth called *Iſmenus*) to be his ſquire, and her ſelfe is content to waite vpon my ſiſter, till ſhe may ſee the vttermoſt what ſhe may worke in *Amphialus*: who being of a melancholie (though I muſt ſay truly courteous and noble) mind, ſeemes to loue nothing leſſe then Loue: and of late hauing through ſome aduenture, or inward miſcontentment, withdrawne himſelfe from any bodies knowledge, where he is: *Arteſia* the eaſier condiſcended to goe to the court of *Laconia*, whether ſhe was ſent for by the Kings wife, to whome ſhe is ſomewhat allied.

And there after the war of the *Helots*, this Knight *Phalantus*, (at leaſt for tongue-delight) made him ſelfe her ſeruaunt, and ſhe ſo little caring, as not to ſhowe miſlike thereof, was content onely to be noted to haue a notable ſeruaunt. For truely one in my court neerely acquainted with him, within theſe few dayes made me a pleaſaunt deſcription of their loue, while he with cheerefull lookes would ſpeake ſorowfull words, vſing the phraſe of his affection in ſo high a ſtile, that *Mercurie* would not haue wooed *Venus* with more magnificent Eloquence: but els neyther in behauiour, nor action, accuſing in himſelfe anie great trouble in minde, whether he ſped or no. And ſhe of the other ſide, well finding how little it was, and not caring for more, yet taught him, that often it falleth out but a fooliſh wittineſſe, to ſpeake more then one thinkes.

For ſhe made earneſt benefite of his ieſt, forcing him in reſpect of his profeſſion, to doo her ſuch ſeruice, as were both cumberſome and coſtly vnto him, while he ſtill thought he went beyond her, becauſe his harte did not commit the idolatrie. So that laſtlie, ſhe (I thinke) hauing in minde to make the fame of her beautie an oratour for her to *Amphialus*, (perſwading her ſelfe perhaps, that it might fall out in him, as it doth in ſome that haue delightfull meate before them, and haue no ſtomacke to it, before other folkes prayſe it) ſhee tooke the aduauntage one daye vppon *Phalantus* vnconſcionable prayſinges of her, and certaine caſt-awaie vowes, howe much hee would doo for her ſake, to arreſt his woord aſſoone as it was out of his mouth, and by the vertue thereof to charge him to goe with her thorow all the courts of *Greece*, and with the chalenge now made, to giue her beauty the principality ouer all other. *Phalantus* was entrapped, and ſaw round about him, but could not get out. Exceedingly perplexed he was (as he confeſt

confeſt to him that tolde mee the tale) not for doubt hee had of him ſelfe (for indeede he had little cauſe, being accounted, with his Launce eſpecially (whereupon the challenge is to be tryed) as perfect as any that *Greece* knoweth; but becauſe he feared to offend his ſiſter *Helen*, and withall (as he ſaid) he could not ſo much beleeue his loue, but that he muſt thinke in his hart (whatſoeuer his mouth affirmed) that both ſhe, my daughters, & the faire *Parthenia* (wife to a moſt noble Gentleman, my wiues neere kinſman) might far better put in their clayme for that prerogatiue. But his promiſe had bound him prentice, and therefore it was now better with willingnes to purchaſe thankes, then with a diſcontented doing to haue the paine, and not the reward: and therefore went on, as his faith, rather then loue, did lead him. And now hath he already paſſed the courts of *Laconia*, *Elis*, *Argos* & *Corinth*: and (as many times it happens) that a good pleader maks a bad cauſe to preuaile; ſo hath his Lawnce brought captiues to the triumph of *Arteſias* beautie, ſuch, as though *Arteſia* be amõg the faireſt, yet in that cõpany were to haue the preheminẽce: for in thoſe courts many knights (that had bene in other far countries) defended ſuch as they had ſene, & liked in their trauaile: but their defẽce had ben ſuch; as they had forfaited the pictures of their Ladies, to giue a forced falſe teſtimonie to *Arteſias* excellencie. And now laſtly is he come hether where he hath leaue to trye his fortune. But I aſſure you, if I thought it not in dew and true conſideration an iniurious ſeruice and churliſh curteſie, to put the danger of ſo noble a title in the deciding of ſuch a dangerles combat, I would make yong maſter *Phalantus* know, that your eyes can ſharpen a blunt Launce, and that age, which my gray haires (onely gotten by the louing care of others) make ſeeme more then it is, hath not diminiſhed in me the power to protect an vndeniable verity. With that hee buſtled vp himſelfe, as though his heart would faine haue walked abroad. *Zelmane* with an inwarde ſmiling gaue him outward thanks, deſiring him to reſerue his force for worthier cauſes. So paſſing their time according to their woont, they wayted for the comming of *Phalantus*, who the next morning hauing alredy cauſed his tents to be pitched, neere to a faire tree hard by the Lodge, had vppon the tree made a ſhield to be hanged vp, which the defendant ſhould ſtrike, that woulde call him to the mainteyning his challendge. The *Impreſa* in the ſhield; was a heauen full of ſtarres, with a ſpeech ſignifiyng, that it was *the beauty which gaue it the praiſe.*

Himſelfe came in next after a triumphant chariot, made of Carnation veluet inriched with purle and pearle, wherein *Arteſia* ſat, drawne by foure winged horſes with artificiall flaming mouths, and fiery winges, as if ſhe had newly borrowed them of *Phœbus*. Before her marched, two after two, certaine footemen pleaſantly attired, who betweene them held one picture after another of them, that by *Phalantus* well running had loſt the prize in the race of beauty, and at euery pace they ſtayed, turning the pictures to each ſide, ſo leaſurely, that with perfect iudgement they might be diſcerned. The firſt that came in (following the order of the time wherein they had bene wonne) was the picture of *Andromana*, Queene of *Iberia*; whom a *Laconian* Knight hauing ſometime (and with ſpeciall fauour) ſerued, (though ſome yeares ſince retourned home) with more gratefulnes then good fortune defended. But therein *Fortune* had borrowed witte; for indeede ſhe was not comparable to *Arteſia*; not becauſe ſhe was a good deale elder (for time had not yet beene able to impouerish her ſtore thereof) but an exceeding red haire with ſmall eyes, did (like ill companions) diſgrace the other aſſembly of moſt commendable beauties.

Next

Next after her was borne the counterfaite of the princeſſe of *Elis*, a Lady that taught the beholders no other point of beauty, but this, that as lyking is, not alwaies the child of beauty, ſo whatſoeuer liketh; is beautyfull; for in that viſage there was neither Maieſtie, grace, fauour, nor faireneſſe; yet ſhe wanted not a ſeruaunt that woulde haue made her fairer then the faire *Arteſia*. But he wrote her praiſes with his helmet in the duſt, and left her picture to be as true a witnes of his ouerthrow, as his running was of her beauty.

After her was the goodly *Artaxia*, great Q. of *Armenia*, a Lady vpon whom nature beſtowed, and well placed her moſt delightfull coulours; and withall, had proportioned her without any fault, quickly to be diſcouered by the ſenſes, yet altogether ſeemed not to make vp that harmony, that *Cupid* delights in, the reaſon whereof might ſeeme a manniſh countenance, which ouerthrew that louely ſweetenes, the nobleſt power of womankinde, farre fitter to preuaile by parley, then by battell.

Of a farre contrary conſideration was the repreſentation of her that next followed, which was *Erona* Queene of *Licia*, who though of ſo browne a haire, as no man ſhould haue iniuried it to haue called it blacke, and that in the mixture of her cheeks the white did ſo much ouercome the redde (though what was, was very pure) that it came neare to palenes, and that her face was a thought longer then the exacte *Symmetrians* perhaps would allow; yet loue plaid his part ſo well, in euerie part, that it caught holde of the iudgement, before it could iudge, making it firſt loue, and after acknowledge it faire, for there was a certaine delicacie, which in yeelding, conquered; and with a pitifull looke made one finde cauſe to craue helpe himſelfe.

After her came two Ladies, of noble, but not of royall birth: the former was named *Baccha*, who though very faire, and of a fatnes rather to allure, then to miſlike, yet her breſts ouer-familiarly laide open, with a made countenaunce about her mouth, betweene ſimpring and ſmyling, her head bowed ſomewhat downe ſeemed to languiſh with ouer-much idlenes, and with an inuiting look caſt vpwarde; diſſwaded with too much perſwading, while hope might ſeem to ouerrunne deſire.

The other (whoſe name was written *Leucippe*) was of a fine daintines of beauty, her face carying in it a ſober ſimplicitie; like one that could do much good, and ment no hurt, her eyes hauing in them ſuch a cheerefulnes, as nature ſeemed to ſmile in them: though her mouth and cheekes obeyed to that prety demurenes which the more one markte, the more one woulde iudge the poore ſoule apte to beleue; and therefore the more pitie to deceiue her.

Next came the Queene of *Laconia*, one that ſemed borne in the confines of beauties kingdome: for all her lineaments were neither perfect poſſeſſioners thereof, nor abſolute ſtrangers thereto. but ſhe was a Queene, and therefore beautifull.

But ſhe that followed, conquered indeed with being conquered; and might wel haue made all the beholders waite vpō her triumph, while her ſelfe were led captiue. It was the excellētly-faire Queene *Helen*, whoſe Iacinth haire courled by nature, but intercurled by arte (like a fine brooke through goldē ſādes) had a rope of faire pearle which now hiding, now hidden by the haire, did as it were play at faſt and looſe, each with other, mutually giuing & receiuing richnes. In her face ſo much beauty & fauour expreſſed, as if *Helen* had not bene knowen, ſome would rather haue iudged it the painters exerciſe, to ſhew what he could do, thē the conterfaiting of any liuing patterne: for no fault the moſt fault finding wit could haue found, if it were not, that

to the reſt of the body the face was ſomewhat too little: but that little was ſuch a ſparke of beauty, as was able to enflame a world of loue. for euery thing was full of a choyce finenes, that if it wanted any thing in maieſtie, it ſupplied it, with increaſe, in pleaſure; and if at the firſt it ſtrake not admiration, it rauiſhed with delight. And no indifferent ſoule there was, which if it could reſiſt frō ſubiecting it ſelfe to make it his princeſſe, that would not lōg to haue ſuch a playfellow. As for her attire, it was coſtly and curious, though the look (fixt with more ſadnes then it ſemed nature had beſtowed to any that knew her fortune) bewraied, that as ſhe vſed thoſe ornaments, not for her ſelfe, but to preuaile with another ſo ſhe feared, that all would not ſerue. Of a farre differing (though eſteemed equall) beautie, was the faire *Parthenia*, who next wayted on *Arteſias* triumph, though farre better ſhe might haue ſitte in the throne. For in her euery thing was goodly, and ſtately; yet ſo, that it might ſeeme that great-mindednes was but the auncient-bearer to the humblenes. For her great graie eye, which might ſeeme full of her own beautie:, a large, and exceedingly faire forhead, with all the reſt of her face and body, caſt in the mould of Noblenes; was yet ſo attired, as might ſhew, the miſtres thought it either not to deſerue, or not to neede any exquiſite decking, hauing no adorning but cleanlines; and ſo farre from all arte, that it was full of careleſneſſe: vnleſſe that careleſneſſe it ſelfe (in ſpite of it ſelfe) grewe artificiall. But *Baſilius* coulde not abſtaine from praiſing *Parthenia*, as the perfect picture of a womanly vertue, and wiuely faithfulnes: telling withall *Zelmane*, how he had vnderſtoode, that when in the court of *Laconia*, her picture (maintained by a certaine *Sycionian* Knight) was loſt, thorow want, rather of valour, then iuſtice: her husband (the famous *Argalus*) would in a chafe haue gone and redeemed it with a new triall. But ſhee (more ſporting then ſorrowing for her vndeſerued champion) tolde her husbande, ſhee deſired to bee beautifull in no bodies eye but his; and that ſhee would rather marre her face as euill as euer it was, then that it ſhould be a cauſe to make *Argalus* put on armour. Then woulde *Baſilius* haue tolde *Zelmane* that which ſhe already knew, of the rare triall of that coupled affection: but the next picture made their mouthes giue place to their eyes.

It was of a young mayd, which ſate pulling out a thorne out of a Lambes foote, with her looke ſo attentiue vppon it, as if that little foote coulde haue bene the circle of her thoughts, her apparell ſo poore, as it had nothing but the inſide to adorne it; a ſhephooke lying by her with a bottle vpon it. But with all that pouertie, beauty plaid the prince, and commanded as many harts as the greateſt Queene there did. Her beautie and her eſtate made her quicklie to be knowne to be the faire ſhepheardeſſe, *Vrania*, whom a rich knight called *Lacemon*, farre in loue with her, had vnluckely defended.

The laſt of all in place, becauſe laſt in the time of her being captiue, was *Zelmane*, daughter to the King *Plexirtus*: who at the firſt ſight ſeemed to haue ſome reſembling of *Philoclea*, but with more marking (comparing it to the preſent *Philoclea*, who indeed had no paragon but her ſiſter) they might ſee, it was but ſuch a likeneſſe as an vnperfect glaſſe doth giue; aunſwerable enough in ſome feitures and colors, but erring in others. But *Zelmane* ſighing, turning to *Baſilius*, Alas ſir (ſaid ſhe) here be ſome pictures which might better become the tombes of their Miſtreſſes, thē the triumphe of *Arteſia*. It is true ſweeteſt Lady (ſaide *Baſilius*) ſome of them bee dead, and ſome other captiue: But that hath happened ſo late, as it may bee the

Knightes

Knightes that defended their beauty, knew not ſo much: without we will ſay (as in ſome harts I know it would fall out) that death it ſelfe could not blot out the image which loue hath engrauen in them. But diuers beſides theſe (ſaid *Baſilius*) hath *Phalantus* woon, but he leaues the reſt, carying onely ſuch, who either for greatnes of eſtate, or of beauty, may iuſtly glorifie the glory of *Arteſias* triumph.

Thus talked *Baſilius* with *Zelmane*, glad to make any matter ſubiect to ſpeake of, with his miſtreſſe, while *Phalantus* in this pompous maner, brought *Arteſia* with her gentlewomen, into one Tent, by which he had another: where they both wayted who would firſt ſtrike vpon the ſhielde, while *Baſilius* the Iudge appointed ſticklers and troumpets, to whom the other ſhould obey. But non that day appeared, nor the next, till all ready it had conſumed halfe his allowance of light; but then there came in a knight, proteſting himſelfe as contrarie to him in minde, as he was in apparrell. For *Phalantus* was all in white, hauing in his baſes, and capariſon imbroidered a wauing water: at each ſide whereof hee had nettings caſt ouer, in which were diuers fiſhes naturally made, and ſo pretily, that as the horſe ſtirred, the fiſhes ſeemed to ſtriue, and leape in the nette.

But the other knight by name *Neſtor*, by birth an *Arcadian*, & in affection vowed to the faire Shepherdeſſe, was all in black, with fire burning both vpō his armour and horſe. His *impreſa* in his ſhield, was a fire made of Iuniper, with this word, *More eaſie, and more ſweete*. But this hote knight was cooled with a fall, which at the third courſe he receiued of *Phalantus*, leauing his picture to keepe companie with the other of the ſame ſtampe; hee going away remedileſly chafing at his rebuke. The next was *Polycetes*, greatly eſteemed in *Arcadia*, for deedes he had done in armes: and much ſpoken of for the honourable loue he had long borne to *Gynecia*; which *Baſilius* himſelfe was content, not onely to ſuffer, but to be delighted with; he carried it in ſo honorable and open plainnes, ſetting to his loue no other marke, then to do her faithfull ſeruice. But neither her faire picture, nor his faire running, could warrant him from ouerthrow, and her from becomming as then the laſt of *Arteſias* victories: a thing *Gynecias* vertues would little haue recked at another time, nor then, if *Zelmane* had not ſeene it. But her champion went away aſmuch diſcomforted, as diſcomfited. Then *Telamon* for *Polexena* and *Eurileon* for *Elpine*, and *Leon* for *Zoana*; all braue Knights, all faire Ladies, with their going downe, lifted vp the ballance of his praiſe for actiuitie, and hers for fairenes.

Vpon whoſe loſſe as the beholders were talking, there comes into the place where they ranne, a ſhepheard ſtripling (for his height made him more then a boy, and his face would not allow him a man) brown of complexion (whether by nature or by the Suns familiaritie) but very louely with all; for the reſt ſo perfectly proportioned, that Nature ſhewed, ſhee dooth not like men. who ſlubber vp matters of meane account. And well might his proportion be iudged; for he had nothing vpon him but a paire of ſloppes, and vpon his bodie a Gote-skinne, which hee caſt ouer his ſhoulder doing all things with ſo pretie a grace, that it ſeemed ignorance could not make him do a miſſe, becauſe he had a hart to do well, holding in his right hand a long ſtaffe, & ſo cōming with a looke ful of amiable fiercenes as in whō choller could not take away the ſweetnes, hee came towards the king, and making a reuerence (which in him was comely becauſe it was kindly) My liege Lord (ſaid he) I pray you heare a few words; for my heart wil break if I ſay not my mind to you

I ſee here the picture of *Vrania*, which (I cannot tell how, nor why) theſe men when they fall downe, they ſay is not ſo faire as yonder gay woman. But pray God, I may neuer ſee my olde mother aliue, if I think ſhe be any more match to *Vrania*, then a Goate is to a fine Lambe; or then the Dog that keepes our flock at home, is like your white Greihounde, that pulled downe the Stagge laſt day.

And therefore I pray you let me be dreſt as they be, and my hart giues me, I ſhall tumble him on the earth: for indeede hee might aſwell ſay, that a Couſlip is as white as a Lillie: or els I care not let him come with his great ſtaffe, and I with this in my hand, and you ſhall ſee what I can doo to him. *Baſilius* ſawe it was the fine ſhepheard *Lalus*, whom once he had afore him in Paſtorall ſportes, and had greatly delighted in his wit full of prety ſimplicitie, and therefore laughing at his earneſtneſſe, he bad him be content, ſince hee ſawe the pictures of ſo great Queenes, were faine to follow their champions fortune. But *Lalus* (euen weeping ripe) went among the reſt, longing to ſee ſome bodie that would reuenge *Vranias* wronge; and praying hartely for euery bodie that ran againſt *Phalantus*, then beginning to feele pouerty, that he could not ſet him ſelfe to that triall. But by and by, euen when the Sunne (like a noble harte) began to ſhew his greateſt countenaunce in his loweſt eſtate, there came in a Knight, called *Phebilus*, a Gentleman of that country, for whom hatefull fortune had borrowed the dart of Loue, to make him miſerable by the ſight of *Philoclea*. For he had euen from her in fancie loued her, and was ſtriken by her, before ſhee was able to knowe what quiuer of arrowes her eyes caried; but he loued and diſpaired; and the more hee diſpaired, the more hee loued. He ſawe his owne vnworthines, and thereby made her excellencie haue more terrible aſpect vpon him: he was ſo ſecrete therein, as not daring to be open, that to no creature he euer ſpake of it, but his hart made ſuch ſilent complaintes within it ſelfe, that while all his ſenſes were attentiue thereto, cunning iudges might perceaue his minde: ſo that hee was knowne to loue though hee denied, or rather was the better knowne, becauſe hee denied it. His armour and his attire was of a Sea couler, his *Impreſa*, the fiſh called *Sepia*, which being in the nette caſtes a blacke inke about it ſelfe, that in the darkeneſſe thereof it may eſcape: his worde was, *Not ſo*. *Philocleas* picture with almoſt an idolatrous magnificence was borne in by him. But ſtraight ielouſie was a harbinger for diſdaine in *Zelmanes* harte, when ſhee ſawe any (but her ſelfe) ſhoulde bee auowed a champion for *Philoclea*: in ſomuch that ſhe wiſht his ſhame, till ſhee ſawe him ſhamed: for at the ſecond courſe he was ſtriken quite from out of the ſaddle, ſo full of griefe, and rage withall, that he would faine with the ſworde haue reuenged it: but that being contrary to the order ſet downe, *Baſilius* would not ſuffer; ſo that wiſhing him ſelfe in the bottome of the earth, hee went his way, leauing *Zelmane* no leſſe angry with his loſſe, then ſhe would haue bene with his victory. For if ſhe thought before a riuals prayſe would haue angred her, her Ladies diſgrace did make her much more forget what ſhe then thought, while that paſſion raigned ſo much the more, as ſhee ſawe a pretie bluſh in *Philocleas* cheekes bewray a modeſt diſcontentment. But the night commaunded truce for thoſe ſportes, and *Phalantus* (though intreated) would not leaue *Arteſia*, who in no caſe would come into the houſe, hauing (as it were) ſuckte of *Cecropias* breath a mortall miſlike againſt *Baſilius*.

But the night meaſured by the ſhort ell of ſleepe, was ſoone paſt ouer, and the next morning had giuen the watchfull ſtars leaue to take their reſt, when a trumpet

pet ſummoned *Baſilius* to play his iudges parte: which he did, taking his wife and daughters with him; *Zelmane* hauing lockt her doore, ſo as they would not trouble her for that time: for already there was a Knight in the fielde, readie to proue *Helen* of *Corinth* had receaued great iniury, both by the erring iudgement of the challenger, and the vnlucky weakeneſſe of her former defender. The newe Knight was quickly knowne to be *Clitophon* (*Kalanders* ſonne of *Baſilius* his ſiſter) by his armour, which all guilt, was ſo well handled, that it ſhewed like a glittering ſande and grauell, enterlaced with ſiluer riuers: his deuice hee had put in the picture of *Helen* which hee defended. It was the *Ermion* with a ſpeach that ſignified, *Rather dead then ſpotted.* But in that armour ſince hee had parted from *Helen* (who woulde no longer his companie, finding him to enter into termes of affection,) hee had performed ſo honourable actions, (ſtill ſeeking for his two friends by the names of *Palladius* and *Daiphantus*,) that though his face were couered, his being was diſcouered, which yet *Baſilius* (which had brought him vp in his court) woulde not ſeeme to do; but glad to ſee triall of him, of whom he had heard very well, he commaunded the trumpets to ſound; to which the two braue Knights obeying, they performed their courſes, breaking their ſix ſtaues, with ſo good, both skill in the hitting, and grace in the maner, that it bred ſome difficulty in the iudgement. But *Baſilius* in the ende gaue ſentence againſt *Clitophon*, becauſe *Phalantus* had broken more ſtaues vpon the head and that once *Clitophon* had receiued ſuch a blowe, that hee had loſt the raines of his horſe, with his head well nie touching the croper of the horſe. But *Clitophon* was ſo angry with the iudgemēt, (where in he thought he had receiued wrong) that he omitted his duty to his Prince, and vncle; and ſodainly went his way ſtill in the queſt of them, whom as then he had left by ſeeking: and ſo yeelded the field to the next commer.

who comming in about two houres after, was no leſſe marked then all the reſt before, becauſe he had nothing worth the marking. For he had neither picture, nor deuice, his armour of as olda faſhion (beſides the ruſtie pooreneſſe,) that it might better ſeeme a monument of his graundfathers courage: about his middle he had in ſteede of baſes, a long cloak of ſilke, which as vnhandſomely, as it needes muſt, became the wearer: ſo that all that lookt on, meaſured his length on the earth alreadie, ſince hee had to meete one who had beene victorious of ſo many gallants. But hee went on towardes the ſhielde, and with a ſober grace ſtrake it; but as he let his ſworde fall vpon it, another Knight, all in blacke came ruſtling in, who ſtrake the ſhielde almoſt aſſoone as hee, and ſo ſtrongly, that hee brake the ſhielde in two: the ill appointed Knight (forſo the beholders called him) angrie with that, (as hee accounted,) inſolent iniurie to himſelfe, hit him ſuch a ſound blowe, that they that looked on ſaide, it well became a rude arme. The other aunſwered him againe in the ſame caſe, ſo that Launces were put to ſilence, the ſwords were ſo buſie.

But *Phalantus* angry of this defacing his ſhield, came vpon the blacke Knight, and with the pommell of his ſworde ſet fire to his eyes, which preſently was reuenged, not onely by the Blacke, but the ill apparelled Knight, who diſdained another ſhould enter into his quarrell, ſo as, who euer ſawe a matachin daunce to imitate fighting, this was a fight that did imitate the matachin: for they being but three that fought, euerie one had two aduerſaries, ſtriking him, who ſtrooke the third, and reuenging perhaps that of him, which he had receaued of the other.

But *Baſilius* riſing himſelfe came to parte them, the ſticklers authoritie ſcarſlie able to perſwade cholerike hearers; and parte them he did.

But before he could determine, comes in a fourth, halting on foote, who complained to *Baſilius*, demaunding iuſtice on the blacke Knight, for hauing by force taken away the picture of *Pamela* from him, whiche in little forme hee ware in a Tablet, and couered with ſilke had faſtened it to his Helmet, purpoſing for want of a bigger, to paragon the little one with *Arteſias* length, not doubting but euen in that little quantitie, the excellencie of that would ſhine thorowe the weakeneſſe of the other: as the ſmalleſt ſtarre doth thorow the whole Element of fire. And by the way he had met with this blacke Knight, who had (as hee ſaide) robbed him of it. The iniurie ſeemed grieuous, but when it came fully to be examined, it was found, that the halting Knight meeting the other, asking the cauſe of his going thetherward, and finding it was to defende *Pamelas* diuine beautie againſt *Arteſias*, with a prowde iollitie commaunded him to leaue that quarrell onely for him, who was onely worthy to enter into it. But the blacke Knight obeying no ſuch commandements, they fell to ſuch a bickering, that hee gat a halting, and loſt his picture. This vnderſtoode by *Baſilius*, he told him hee was now fitter to looke to his owne bodie, then an others picture: and ſo (vncomforted therein) ſent him away to learne of *Æſculapius* that he was not fit for *Venus*. But then the queſtion ariſing who ſhould be the former againſt *Phalantus*, of the blacke, or the ill apparelled Knight (who now had gotten the reputation of ſome ſturdy loute, hee had ſo well defended himſelfe) of the one ſide', was, alleged the hauing a picture which the other wanted: of the other ſide, the firſt ſtriking the ſhield; but the concluſion was, that the ill apparelled Knight ſhould haue the precedence, if he deliuered the figure of his miſtreſſe to *Phalantus*; who asking him for it, Certainely (ſaid he) her liueliеſt picture, (if you could ſee it) is in my hart, and the beſt compariſon I could make of her, is of the Sunne and of all the other heauenly beauties. But becauſe perhappes all eyes cannot taſte the Diuinitie of her beautie, and would rather be dazeled, then taught by the light, if it bee not clowded by ſome meaner thing; know you then, that I defend that ſame Ladie, whoſe image *Phebilus* ſo feebly loſt yeſternight, and in ſteede of an other (if you ouercome mee) you ſhall haue mee your ſlaue to carrie that image in your miſtreſſe triumphe. *Phalantus* eaſilie agreed to the bargaine, which alreadie he made his owne.

But when it came to the triall, the ill apparelled Knight chooſing out the greateſt ſtaues in all the ſtore, at the firſt courſe gaue his head ſuch a remembraunce, that he loſt almoſt his remembraunce, he himſelfe receyuing the incounter of *Phalantus* without any extraordinarie motion. And at the ſeconde gaue him ſuch a counterbuffe, that becauſe *Phalantus* was ſo perfite a horſeman, as not to bee driuen from the ſaddle, the ſaddle with broken girthes was driuen from the horſe: *Phalantus* remaining angrie and amazed, becauſe now being come almoſt to the laſt of his promiſed enterpriſe, that diſgrace befell him, which he had neuer before knowne.

But the victorie being by the iudges giuen, and the trumpets witneſſed to the ill by apparelled Knight; *Phalantus* diſgrace was ingrieued in lieu of cõfort of *Arteſia* who telling him ſhe neuer lookt for other, bad him ſeeke ſome other miſtreſſe. He excuſing himſelfe, and turning ouer the fault to Fortune, Then let that be your ill Fortune too (ſaide ſhe) that you haue loſt me.

Nay

Nay truely Madame (ſaid *Phalantus*) it ſhall not be ſo: for I thinke the loſſe of ſuch a Miſtreſſe will prooue a great gaine: and ſo concluded; to the ſport of *Baſilius*, to ſee young folkes loue, that came in maskt with ſo great pompe, goe out with ſo little conſtancie. But *Phalantus* firſt profeſſing great ſeruice to *Baſilius* for his curteous intermitting his ſolitary courſe for his ſake, would yet conduct *Arteſia* to the caſtle of *Cecropia*, whether ſhe deſired to goe: vowing in himſelfe, that neither hart, nor mouth-loue, ſhould euer any more intangle him. And with that reſolution he left the company. Whence all being diſmiſſed (among whom the black Knight went away repining at his luck, that had kept him from winning the honor, as he knew he ſhould haue done, to the picture of *Pamela*) the ill apparelled Knight (who was only deſired to ſtay, becauſe *Baſilius* meant to ſhew him to *Zelmane*) puld off his Helmet, and then was knowen himſelfe to be *Zelmane*: who that morning (as ſhe told) while the others were buſie, had ſtolne out to the Princes ſtable, which was a mile off from the Lodge, had gotten a horſe (they knowing it was *Baſilius* pleaſure ſhe ſhould be obeyed) and borrowing that homely armour for want of a better, had come vpon the ſpur to redeeme *Philoclea's* picture, which ſhe ſaid, ſhe could not beare, (being one of that little wilderneſſe-company) ſhould be in captiuitie, if the cunning ſhe had learned in her countrye of the noble *Amazons*, could withſtand it: and vnder that pretext faine ſhe would haue giuen a ſecret paſport to her affection. But this act painted at one inſtant redneſſe in *Philoclea's* face, and paleneſſe in *Gynecia's*, but brought forth no other countenances but of admiration, no ſpeeches but of commendations: all theſe few (beſides loue) thinking they honoured themſelues, in honouring ſo accompliſhed a perſon as *Zelmane*: whom dayly they ſought with ſome or other ſports to delight, for which purpoſe *Baſilius* had in a houſe not farre off, ſeruants, who though they came not vncalled, yet at call were redye.

And ſo many daies were ſpent, and many waies vſed, while *Zelmane* was like one that ſtoode in a tree waiting a good occaſion to ſhoot, and *Gynecia* a blauncher, which kept the deareſt deere from her. But the day being come, on which according to an apointed courſe, the ſheapheards were to aſſemble, and make their paſtorall ſports afore *Baſilius*: *Zelmane* (fearing, leſt many eyes, and comming diuers waies, might hap to ſpy *Muſidorus*) went out to warne him thereof.

But before ſhe could come to the Arbour, ſhe ſawe walking from her-ward, a man in ſheapperdiſh apparrell who being in the ſight of the Lodge it might ſeeme he was allowed there. A long cloke he had on, but that caſt vnder his right arme, wherein he held a ſheephooke, ſo finely wrought, that it gaue a brauery to pouerty; and his rayments, though they were meane, yet receiued they hanſomnes by the grace of the wearer; though he himſelfe went but a kinde of languiſhing pace, with his eies ſometimes caſt vp to heauen, as though his fancies ſtraue to mount higher; ſometimes throwne downe to the ground, as if the earth could not beare the burthen of his ſorrowes; at length, with a lamentable tune, he ſong theſe fewe verſes.

Come ſhepheards weedes, become your maſters minde:
Teld outward ſhew, what inward change he tryes:
Nor be abaſht, ſince ſuch a gueſt you finde,
Whoſe ſtrongeſt hope in your weake comfort lyes.

Come ſhepheards weedes, attend my woefull cryes:
Diſuſe your ſelues from ſweete Menalcas *voice:*
For other be thoſe tunes which ſorrow tyes,
From thoſe cleere notes which freely may reioyce.
Then power out plaint, and in one word ſay this:
Helples his plaint, who ſpoyles himſelfe of bliſſe.

And hauing ended, he ſtrake himſelfe on the breſt; ſaying, O miſerable wretch, whether do thy deſtenies guide thee? The voice made *Zelmane* haſten her pace to ouertake him: which hauing done, ſhe plainly perceaued that it was her deare friend *Muſidorus*, whereat maruailing not a little, ſhe demaunded of him, whether the Goddeſſe of thoſe woods had ſuch a powre to transforme euery body, or whether, as in all enterpriſes elſe he had done, he meant thus to match her in this newe alteration. Alas, (ſaid *Muſidorus*) what ſhall I ſay, who am loth to ſay, and yet faine would haue ſaid? I find indeed, that all is but lip-wiſdome, which wants experience. I now (woe is me) do try what loue can doo. O *Zelmane*, who will reſiſt it, muſt either haue no wit, or put out his eyes? can any man reſiſt his creation? certainely by loue we are made, and to loue we are made. Beaſts only cannot diſcerne beauty, and let them be in the role of Beaſts that doo not honor it. The perfect friendſhip *Zelmane* bare him, and the great pitie ſhe (by good triall) had of ſuch caſes, could not keepe her from ſmiling at him, remembring how vehemently he had cryed out againſt the folly of louers. And therefore a litle to puniſh him, Why how now deere couſin (ſaid ſhe) you that were laſt day ſo hie in the Pulpit againſt louers, are you now become ſo meane an auditor? Remember that loue is a paſſion; and that a worthie mans reaſon muſt euer haue the maſterhood. I recant, I recant (cryed *Muſidorus*,) and withall falling downe proſtrate, O thou celeſtiall, or infernall ſpirit of Loue, or what other heauenly or helliſh title thou liſt to haue (for effects of both I finde in my ſelfe) haue compaſſion of me, and let thy glory be as great in pardoning them that be ſubmitted to thee, as in conquering thoſe that were rebellious. No, no ſaide *Zelmane*, I ſee you well enough: you make but an enterlude of my miſhaps, and doo but counterfaite thus, to make me ſee the deformitie of my paſſions: but take heede, that this ieſt do not one day turne to earneſt. Now I beſeech thee (ſaid *Muſidorus* taking her faſt by the hand) euen for the truth of our friendſhip, of which (if I be not altogether an vnhappy man) thou haſt ſome rememberance, and by thoſe ſecret flames which (I know) haue likewiſe neerely touched thee; make no ieſt of that, which hath ſo erneſtly pearced me thorow, nor let that be light to thee, which is to me ſo burdenous, that I am not able to beare it. *Muſidorus* both in words and behauiour, did ſo liuely deliuer out his inward griefe, that *Zelmane* found indeede, he was thorowly wounded: but there roſe a new ielouſy in her minde, leſt it might be with *Philoclea*, by whome, as *Zelmane* thought, in right all hartes and eyes ſhould be inherited. And therefore deſirous to be cleered of that doubt, *Muſidorus* ſhortly (as in haſt and full of paſſionate perplexednes,) thus recounted his caſe vnto her.

The day (ſaid he) I parted from you, I being in mind to returne to a towne, from whence I came hether, my horſe being before tired, would ſcarce beare me a mile hence: where being benighted, the light of a candle (I ſaw a good way off) guided me to a young ſhepheards houſe, by name *Menalcas*, who ſeing me to be a ſtraying

ſtranger,

ſtranger, with the right honeſt hoſpitalitie which ſeemes to be harboured in the *Arcadian* breſts, and though not with curious coſtlines, yet with cleanly ſufficiencie, entertained me: and hauing by talke with him, found the manner of the countrie, ſomething more in particular, then I had by *Kalanders* report, I agreed to ſoiourne with him in ſecret, which he faithfully promiſed to obſerue. And ſo hether to your arbour diuers times repaired: and here by your meanes had the ſight (O that it had neuer bene ſo, nay, O that it might euer be ſo) of the Goddeſſe, who in a definite compaſſe can ſet forth infinite beauty. All this while *Zelmane* was racked with iealouſie. But he went on, For (ſaide he) I lying cloſe, and in truth thinking of you, and ſaying thus to my ſelfe, O ſweet *Pyrocles*, how art thou bewitched? where is thy vertue? where is the vſe of thy reaſon? how much am I inferior to thee in the ſtate of the mind? And yet know I, that all the heauens cannot bring me to ſuch thraldome. Scarcely, thinke I, had I ſpoken this word, whē the Ladies came foorth; at which ſight, I thinke the very words returned backe againe to ſtrike my ſoule; at leaſt, an vnmeaſurable ſting I felt in my ſelfe, that I had ſpokē ſuch words. At which ſight? ſaid *Zelmane*, not able to beare him any longer. O (ſaid *Muſidorus*) I know your ſuſpition; No, no, baniſh all ſuch feare, it was, it is, and muſt be *Pamela*: Then all is ſafe (ſayd *Zelmane*) proceede, deare *Muſidorus*. I will not (ſaid he) impute it to my late ſolitarie life (which yet is prone to affections) nor, to the much thinking of you (though that cald the conſideration of loue into my mind, which before I euer neglected) nor to the exaltation of *Venus*; nor reuenge of *Cupid*; but euen to her, who is the Planet, nay, the Goddeſſe, againſt which, the onely ſhield muſt be my Sepulchre. When I firſt ſaw her, I was preſently ſtriken, and I (like a fooliſh child, that when any thing hits him, will ſtrike himſelfe againe vpon it) would needs looke againe; as though I would perſwade mine eyes, that they were deceiued. But alas, well haue I found, that Loue to a yeelding hart is a king; but to a reſiſting, is a tyrant. The more with arguments I ſhaked the ſtake, which he had planted in the ground of my harte, the deeper ſtill it ſanke into it. But what meane I to ſpeake of the cauſes of my loue, which is as impoſſible to deſcribe, as to meaſure the backſide of heauen? Let this word ſuffice, I loue.

And that you may know I doo ſo, it was I that came in black armour to defende her picture, where I was both preuented, and beaten by you. And ſo, I that waited here to do you ſeruice, haue now my ſelfe moſt need of ſuccor. But whereupon got you your ſelfe this aparrell? ſaid *Zelmane*. I had forgotten to tell you (ſaid *Muſidorus*) though that were one principall matter of my ſpeech; ſo much am I now maſter of my owne minde. But thus it happened: being returned to *Menalcas* houſe, full of tormenting deſire, after a while faynting vnder the weight, my courage ſtird vp my wit to ſeeke for ſome releefe, before I yeelded to periſh. At laſt this came into my head, that very euening, that I had to no purpoſe laſt vſed my horſe and armour. I tolde *Menalcas*, that I was a *Theſſalian* Gentle-man, who by miſchaunce hauing killed a great fauorit of the Prince of that country, was purſued ſo cruelly, that in no place, but either by fauour, or corruption, they would obtaine my deſtruction; and that therefore I was determined (till the fury of my perſecutors might be aſſwaged) to diſguiſe my ſelfe among the ſhephards of *Arcadia*, and (if it were poſſible) to be one of them that were allowed the Princes preſence; Becauſe if the woorſt ſhould fall, that I were diſcouered, yet hauing gotten the acquaintance of the Prince, it might happen to moue his hart to protect me. *Menalcas* (being of an honeſt diſpoſition)

ſition) pitied my caſe, which my face through my inward torment made credible; and ſo (I giuing him largely for it) let me haue this rayment, inſtructing me in all the particularities, touching himſelfe, or my ſelfe, which I deſired to know: yet not truſting ſo much to his conſtancie, as that I would lay my life, and life of my life, vpon it, I hired him to goe into *Theſſalia* to a friend of mine, and to deliuer him a letter from me; coniuring him to bring me as ſpeedy an anſwere as he could, becauſe it imported me greatly to know, whether certaine of my friends did yet poſſeſſe any fauour, whoſe interceſſions I might vſe for my reſtitution. He willingly tooke my letter, which being well ſealed, indeed conteyned other matter. For I wrote to my truſtie ſeruant *Calodoulus* (whome you know) that aſſoone as he had deliuered the letter, he ſhould keepe him priſoner in his houſe, not ſuffering him to haue conference with any body, till he knew my further pleaſure: in all other reſpects that he ſhould vſe him as my brother. And thus is *Menalcas* gone, and I here a poore ſhepheard; more proud of this eſtate, then of any kingdome: ſo manifeſt it is, that the higheſt point outward things can bring one vnto, is the contentment of the mind: with which, no eſtate; without which, all eſtates be miſerable. Now haue I choſen this day, becauſe (as *Menalcas* told me) the other ſhepheards are called to make their ſports, and hope that you will with your credite, finde meanes to get me allowed among them. You nēēd not doubt (anſwered *Zelmane*) but that I will be your good miſtreſſe: marrie the beſt way of dealing muſt be by *Dametas*, who ſince his blunt braine hath perceiued ſome fauour the Prince dooth beare vnto me (as without doubt the moſt ſeruile flatterie is lodged moſt eaſilie in the groſſeſt capacitie; for their ordinarie conceite draweth a yeelding to their greaters, and then haue they not wit to diſcerne the right degrees of duetie) is much more ſeruiceable vnto me, then I can finde any cauſe to wiſh him. And therefore diſpaire not to winne him: for euery preſent occaſion will catch his ſenſes, and his ſenſes are maſters of his fillie mind; onely reuerence him, and reward him, and with that bridle and ſaddle you ſhall well ride him. O heauen and earth (ſaid *Muſidorus*) to what a paſſe are our mindes brought, that from the right line of vertue, are wryed to theſe crooked ſhifts? But ô Loue, it is thou that dooſt it: thou changeſt name vpon name; thou diſguiſeſt our bodies, and disfigureſt our mindes. But in deed thou haſt reaſon, for though the wayes be foule, the iourneys end is moſt faire and honourable.

No more ſweete *Muſidorus* (ſaid *Zelmane*) of theſe philoſophies; for here comes the very perſon of *Dametas*. And ſo he did in deed, with a ſword by his ſide, a forreſt-bill on his neck, and a chopping-knife vnder his girdle: in which well prouided ſort he had euer gone, ſince the feare *Zelmane* had put him in. But he no ſooner ſawe her, but with head and armes he laid his reuerence afore her; inough to haue made any man forſweare all courteſie. And then in *Baſilius* name, he did inuite her to walke downe to the place, where that day they were to haue the Paſtoralles.

But when he ſpied *Muſidorus* to be none of the ſhepheards allowed in that place, he would faine haue perſwaded himſelfe to vtter ſome anger, but that he durſt not; yet muttering, and champing, as though his cudde troubled him; he gaue occaſion to *Muſidorus* to come neare him, and feine this tale of his owne life: That he was a younger brother of the ſhepheard *Menalcas*, by name *Dorus*, ſent by his father in his tender age to *Athens*, there to learne ſome cunning more then ordinarie,

ordinarie, that he might be the better liked of the Prince: and that after his fathers death, his brother *Menalcas* (latelie gone thether to fetch him home) was alſo deceaſed: where (vpon his death) he had charged him to ſeeke the ſeruice of *Dametas*, and to be wholy, and euer guyded by him; as one in whoſe iudgement and integritie, the Prince had ſingular confidence. For token whereof, he gaue to *Dametas* a good ſumme of golde in redy coine, which *Menalcas* had bequeathed vnto him, vpon condition he ſhould receiue this poore *Dorus* into his ſeruice, that his mind and manners might grow the better by his dayly example. *Dametas*, that of all manners of ſtile could beſt conceiue of golden eloquence, being withall tickled by *Muſidorus* prayſes, had his brayne ſo turned, that he became ſlaue to that, which he, that ſued to be his ſeruant, offered to giue him: yet for countenance ſake, he ſeemed very ſqueimiſh, in reſpect of the charge he had of the Princeſſe *Pamela*. But ſuch was the ſecrete operation of the golde, helped with the perſwaſion of the Amazon *Zelmane*, (who ſayde it was pittie ſo handſome a young man ſhould be any where els, then with ſo good a maſter) that in the ende he agreed (if that day he behaued himſelfe ſo to the lyking of *Baſilius*, as he might be contented) that then he would receiue him into his ſeruice.

And thus went they to the Lodge, where they found *Gynecia* and her daughters ready to go to the field, to delight themſelues there a while, vntill the ſhepheards comming: whether alſo taking *Zelmane* with them, as they went, *Dametas* told them of *Dorus*, and deſired he might be accepted there that day, in ſteed of his brother *Menalcas*. As for *Baſilius*, he ſtaied behind to bring the ſhepherds, with whome he meant to confer, to breed the better *Zelmanes* liking (which he onely regarded) while the other beautifull band came to the faire field, appointed for the ſhepherdiſh paſtimes. It was indeed a place of delight; for thorow the middeſt of it, there ran a ſweete brooke, which did both hold the eye open with her azure ſtreames, and yet ſeeke to cloſe the eie with the purling noiſe it made vpon the pibble ſtones it ran ouer: the field it ſelfe being ſet in ſome places with roſes, and in all the reſt conſtantly preſeruing a floriſhing greene; the Roſes added ſuch a ruddy ſhew vnto it, as though the field were baſhfull at his owne beautie: about it (as if it had bene to incloſe a *Theater*) grew ſuch ſort of trees, as eyther excellency of fruit, ſtatelines of grouth, continuall greennes, or poeticall fancies haue made at any time famous. In moſt part of which there had bene framed by art ſuch pleaſant arbors, that (one anſwering another) they became a gallery aloft from tree to tree almoſt round about, which below gaue a perfect ſhadow, a pleaſant refuge then from the cholericke looke of *Phœbus*.

In this place while *Gynecia* walked hard by them, carying many vnquiet contentions about her, the Ladies ſate them downe, inquiring diuerſe queſtions of the ſhepheard *Dorus*; who (keeping his eie ſtill vpon *Pamela*) anſwered with ſuch a trembling voice, and abaſhed countenance, and oftentimes ſo far from the matter, that it was ſome ſport to the young Ladies, thinking it want of education, which made him ſo diſcountenaunced with vnwoonted preſence. But *Zelmane* that ſaw in him the glaſſe of her owne miſerie, taking the hand of *Philoclea*, and with burning kiſſes ſetting it cloſe to her lips (as if it ſhould ſtand there like a hand in the margine of a Booke, to note ſome ſaying worthy to be marked) began to ſpeake theſe words. O Loue, ſince thou art ſo changeable in mens eſtates, how art thou ſo conſtant in their torments? when ſodainly there came out of a wood a monſtrous Lion,

with

with a ſhe Beare not far from him, of litle leſſe fiercenes, which (as they gheſt) hauing bene hunted in Foreſts far off, were by chaunce come thether, where before ſuch beaſtes had neuer bene ſeene. Then care, not feare; or feare, not for themſelues, altered ſome thing the countenances of the two Louers, but ſo, as any man might perceiue, was rather an aſſembling of powers, then diſmaiednes of courage. *Philoclea* no ſooner eſpied the Lion, but that obeying the commandement of feare, ſhe lept vp, and ran to the lodge-ward, as faſt as her delicate legs could carrie her, while *Dorus* drew *Pamela* behind a tree, where ſhe ſtood quaking like the Partridge, on which the Hawke is euen ready to ſeaze. But the Lion (ſeing *Philoclea* run away) bent his race to her-ward, and was ready to ſeaze him ſelfe on the pray, when *Zelmane* (to whome daunger then was a cauſe of dreadleſnes, all the compoſition of her elements being nothing but fierie) with ſwiftneſſe of deſire croſt him, and with force of affection ſtrake him ſuch a blow vpon his chine, that ſhe opened all his body: wherewith the valiant beaſt turning vpon her with open iawes, ſhe gaue him ſuch a thruſt thorow his breſt, that all the Lion could do, was with his paw to teare of the mantle and ſleeue of *Zelmane*, with a little ſcratch, rather then a wound; his death-blow hauing taken away the effect of his force. But there withall he fell downe, and gaue *Zelmane* leaſure to take of his head, to carrie it for a preſent to her Ladie *Philoclea*: who all this while (not knowing what was done behind her) kept on her courſe, like *Arethuſa* when ſhe ran from *Alpheus*; her light apparell being carried vp with the winde, that much of thoſe beauties ſhe would at another time haue willingly hidden, was preſented to the ſight of the twiſe wounded *Zelmane*. Which made *Zelmane* not folow her ouer haſtily, leſt ſhe ſhould too ſoone depriue her ſelfe of that pleaſure: But carying the Lions head in her hand, did not fully ouertake her, till they came to the preſence of *Baſilius*. Neither were they long there, but that *Gynecia* came thether alſo: who had bene in ſuch a traunce of muſing, that *Zelmane* was fighting with the Lion, before ſhe knew of any Lions comming: but then affection reſiſting, and the ſoone ending of the fight preuenting all extremitie of feare, ſhe marked *Zelmanes* fighting. And when the Lions head was of, as *Zelmane* ran after *Philoclea*, ſo ſhe could not find in her hart but run after *Zelmane*: ſo that it was a new ſight, Fortune had prepared to thoſe woods, to ſee theſe great perſonages thus runne one after the other: each carried forward with an inward violence: *Philoclea* with ſuch feare, that ſhe thought ſhe was ſtill in the Lions mouth: *Zelmane* with an eager and impatient delight; *Gynecia* with wings of Loue, flying ſhe neither knew, nor cared to know whether. But now, being all come before *Baſilius* amazed with this ſight, and feare hauing ſuch poſſeſſion in the faire *Philoclea*, that her bloud durſt not yet to come to her face, to take away the name of paleneſſe from her moſt pure whitenes, *Zelmane* kneeled downe, and preſenting the Lions head vnto her. Only Ladie (ſaid ſhe) here ſee you the puniſhment of that vnnaturall beaſt, which contrary to his owne kind would haue wronged Princes bloud, guided with ſuch traiterous eies, as durſt rebell againſt your beauty. Happy am I, and my beautie both (anſwered the ſweete *Philoclea* then bluſhing, for feare had bequeathed his roome to his kinſman baſhfulnes) that you excellent *Amazon*, were there to teach him good manners. And euen thankes to that beautie (anſwered *Zelmane*) which can giue an edge to the blunteſt ſwords. There *Philoclea* told her father, how it had hapned: but as ſhe had turned her eyes in her tale to *Zelmane*, ſhe perceiued ſome bloud vpō *Zelmanes* ſhoulder, ſo that ſtarting with the louely

grace

grace of pitty, ſhe ſhewed it to her Father and mother: who, as the nurſe ſometimes with ouer-much kiſſing may forget to giue the babe ſucke, ſo had they with too much delighting, in beholding and prayſing *Zelmane*, left of to marke whether ſhe needed ſuccour. But then they ran both vnto her, like a father & mother to an onely childe, and (though *Zelmane* aſſured them it was nothing) would needes ſee it; *Gynecia* hauing skill in ſurgery, an arte in thoſe daies much eſteemed, becauſe it ſerued to vertuous courage, which euen Ladies would (euer with the contempt of cowardes) ſeeme to cheriſh. But looking vpon it (which gaue more inward bleeding wounds to *Zelmane*, for ſhe might ſometimes feele *Philoclea's* touch, whiles ſhe helped her mother) ſhe found it was indeed of no importance: yet applied ſhee a pretious baulme vnto it, of power to heale a greater griefe.

But euen then, and not before, they remembred *Pamela*, and therefore *Zelmane* (thinking of her friend *Dorus*) was running back to be ſatisfied, when they might all ſee *Pamela* comming between *Dorus* and *Dametas*, hauing in her hand the paw of a Beare, which the ſhepheard *Dorus* had newly preſented vnto her, deſiring her to accept it, as of ſuch a beaſt, which though ſhe deſerued death for her preſumption, yet was her witt to be eſteemed, ſince ſhe could make ſo ſweet a choice. *Dametas* for his part came piping and dauncing, the merieſt man in a pariſh. But when he came ſo neere, as he might be heard of *Baſilius*, hee would needs breake thorow his eares with this ioyfull ſong of their good ſucceſſe,

NOw thanked be the great God Pan,
which thus preſerues my loued life:
Thanked be I that keepe a man,
who ended hath this bloodie ſtrife:
For if my man muſt praiſes haue,
what then muſt I that keepe the knaue?

For as the Moone the eie doth pleaſe,
with gentle beames not hurting ſight:
Yet hath ſir Sunne the greateſt praiſe,
becauſe from him doth come her light:
So if my man muſt praiſes haue,
what then muſt I that keepe the knaue?

Being all now come together, and all deſirous to know each others aduẽtures, *Pamelas* noble hart would needs gratefully make known the valiãt mean of her ſafety which (directing her ſpeach to her mother) ſhe did in this mãner. As ſoone (ſaid ſhe) as ye were all runne away, and that I hoped to bee in ſafetie, there came out of the ſame woods a foule horrible Beare, which (fearing belike to deale while the Lion was preſent, as ſoone as he was gone) came furiouſly towardes the place where I was, and this young ſhepheard left alone by me; I truly (not guilty of any wiſedom which ſince they lay to my charge, becauſe they ſay, it is the beſt refuge againſt that beaſt, but euen pure feare bringing forth that effect of wiſedome) fell downe flat of my face, needing not counterfait being dead for indeed I was litle better. But this yong ſhepheard with a wonderfull courage hauing no other weapon, but that knife you ſee ſtanding before the place where I lay, ſo behaued himſelfe that the firſt

 fight

ſight I had (when I thought my ſelfe already neare *Charons* ferry,) was the ſhepheard ſhewing me his bloudy knife in token of victory. I pray you (ſaid *Zelmane*, ſpeaking to *Dorus*, whoſe valour ſhe was carefull to haue manifeſted) in what ſorte, ſo ill weaponed, could you atchiue this enterpriſe? Noble Ladie (ſaide *Dorus*) the manner of theſe beaſtes fighting with any man, is to ſtande vp vpon their hinder feete: and ſo this did, and being ready to giue me a ſhrewd imbracement, I thinke, the God *Pan*, (euer carefull of the chiefe bleſſings of *Arcadia*) guided my hand ſo iuſt to the hart of the beaſt, that neither ſhe could once touch me, nor (which is the only matter in this worthy remembrance) breed any danger to the Princeſſe. For my part, I am rather (withall ſubiected humblenes) to thanke her excellencies, ſince the duety thereunto gaue me harte to ſaue my ſelfe, then to receiue thankes for a deede which was her onely inſpiring. And this *Dorus* ſpake, keeping affection as much as he could, backe from comming into his eyes and geſtures. But *Zelmane* (that had the ſame Character in her heart) could eaſily diſcipher it, and therefore to keepe him the longer in ſpeach, deſired to vnderſtand the concluſion of the matter; and how the honeſt *Dametas* was eſcaped. Nay (ſayd *Pamela*) none ſhall take that office from my ſelfe, being ſo much bound to him as I am, for my education. And with that word (ſcorne borrowing the countenance of myrth) ſomewhat ſhee ſmiled, and thus ſpake on? When (ſaid ſhe) *Dorus* made me aſſuredly perceiue, that all cauſe of feare was paſſed (the truth is) I was aſhamed to finde my ſelfe alone with this ſhepheard: and therefore looking about me, if I could ſee any bodie; at length wee both perceiued the gentle *Dametas*, lying with his head and breaſt as farre as hee could thruſt himſelfe into a buſh, drawing vp his legges as cloſe vnto him as hee coulde: for, like a man of a very kinde nature, ſoone to take pittie of himſelfe, hee was full reſolued not to ſee his owne death. And when this ſheephearde puſhed him, bidding him to be of good cheere; it was a great while, ere we coulde perſwade him, that *Dorus* was not the beare: ſo that he was faine to pull him out by the heeles, and ſhew him the beaſt, as deade as he could wiſh it: which you may beleeue me, was a very ioyfull ſight vnto him. But then he forgate all courteſie, for he fell vpon the beaſt, giuing it many a manfull wound: ſwearing by much, it was not well ſuch beaſts ſhould be ſuffered in a common welth. And then my gouernour, as full of ioy, as before of feare came dauncing and ſinging before as euen now you ſaw him. Well wel (ſaid *Baſilius*) I haue not choſen *Dametas* for his fighting, nor for his diſcourſing, but for his plainneſſe & honeſtie, & therin I know he wil not deceaue me. But then he told *Pamela* (not ſo much becauſe ſhe ſhould know it, as becauſe he would tell it) the wonderfull act *Zelmane* had perfourmed, which *Gynecia* likewiſe ſpake off, both in ſuch extremitie of praiſing, as was eaſie to be ſeene, the conſtruction of their ſpeach might beſt be made by the Grammer rules of affectiō. *Baſilius* told with what a gallant grace ſhee ranne with the Lyons head in her hand, like another *Pallas* with the ſpoiles of *Gorgon*. *Gynecia* ſware, ſhee ſawe the very face of the young *Hercules* killing the *Nemean* Liō, & al with a grateful aſſent cōfirmed the ſame praiſes: only poore *Dorus* (though of equal deſert, yet not proceeding of equal eſtate) ſhould haue bene left forgottē, had not *Zelmane* again with great admiratiō begun to ſpeake of him; asking, whether it were the faſhion or no, in *Arcadia*, that ſhepherds ſhoulde performe ſuch valorous enterpriſes.

This *Baſilius* (hauing the quicke ſence of a louer) tooke, as though his Miſtres had giuen him a ſecret reprehenſion, that he had not ſhewed more gratefulneſſe to

Dorus

Dorus; and therefore (as nymblie as he could) enquired of his eſtate, adding promiſe of great rewards: among the reſt, offering to him, if hee would exerciſe his courage in ſouldierie, he would commit ſome charge vnto him vnder his Lieutenant *Philanax*. But *Dorus* (whoſe ambition clymed by another ſtayre) hauing firſt anſwered touching his eſtate, that he was brother to the ſhepheard *Menalcas*; who among other, was wont to reſort to the Princes preſence, and excuſed his going to ſouldierie, by the vnaptneſſe he found in himſelfe that way: he told *Baſilius*, that his brother in his laſt teſtament had willed him to ſerue *Dametas*; and therefore (for due obedience thereunto) he would thinke his ſeruice greatly rewarded, if hee might obtaine by that meane to liue in the ſight of his Prince, and yet practiſe his owne choſen vocation. *Baſilius* (liking well his goodly ſhape and handſome manner) charged *Dametas* to receiue him like a ſonne into his houſe: ſaying, that his valour, and *Dametas* truth would be good bulwarkes againſt ſuch miſchiefes, as (hee ſticked not to ſay) were threatned to his daughter *Pamela*.

Dametas, no whit out of countenance with all that had bene ſaid (becauſe he had no worſe to fall into then his owne) accepted *Dorus*: and withall telling *Baſilius*, that ſome of the ſhepheards were come; demaunded in what place hee would ſee their ſports: who firſt curious to know whether it were not more requiſite for *Zelmanes* hurte to reſt, then ſit vp at thoſe paſtimes; and ſhe (that felt no wound but one) earneſtly deſiring to haue the Paſtorals, *Baſilius* commanded it ſhould bee at the gate of the lodge: where the throne of the Prince being (according to the auncient manner) he made *Zelmane* ſit betweene him and his wife therein, who thought her ſelfe betweene drowning and burning: & the two young Ladies of either ſide the throne and ſo prepared their eyes and eares to be delighted by the ſhepheards.

But before all of them were aſſembled to begin their ſports, there came a fellow, who being out of breath (or ſeeming ſo to be for haſte) with humble haſtines tolde *Baſilius*, that his Miſtres, the Lady *Cecropia*, had ſent him to excuſe the miſchance of her beaſtes ranging in that dangerous ſort, being happened by the folly of the keeper; who thinking himſelfe able to rule them, had caried them abroad, and ſo was deceiued: whom yet (if *Baſilius* would puniſh for it) ſhe was readie to deliuer. *Baſilius* made no other anſwere, but that his Miſtres if ſhe had any more ſuch beaſtes, ſhould cauſe them to be killed: and then hee told his wife and *Zelmane* of it, becauſe they ſhould not feare thoſe woods; as though they harbored ſuch beaſts, where the like had neuer bene ſeene. But *Gynecia* tooke a further conceit of it miſtruſting greatly *Cecropia*, becauſe ſhe had heard much of the diuelliſh wickedneſſe of her heart, and that particularly ſhe did her beſt to bring vp her ſonne *Amphialus* (being brothers ſonne to *Baſilius*) to aſpire to the crowne, as next heire male after *Baſilius*; and therefore ſaw no reaſon, but that ſhe might coniecture, it proceeded rather of ſome miſchieuous practiſe, than of miſſortune. Yet did ſhee onely vtter her doubt to her daughters, thinking, ſince the worſt was paſt, ſhee would attend a further occaſion, leaſt ouer much haſte might ſeeme to proceede of the ordinarie miſlike betweene ſiſters in Lawe: onely they maruelled, that *Baſilius* looked no further into it, who (good man) thought ſo much of his late conceiued common wealth, that all other matters were but digreſſions vnto him. But the ſhepheards were ready, and with well handling themſelues, called their ſenſes to attend their paſtimes,

The firſt Ecloges.

Baſilius, becauſe *Zelmane* ſo would haue it, vſed the artificiall day of torches, to lighten the ſportes their inuentions could miniſter. And becauſe many of the ſhepheardes were but newlie come, hee did in a gentle manner chaſtiſe their negligence with making them (for that night) the Torchbearers; and the others, he willed with all freedome of ſpeech and behauiour, to keepe their accuſtomed method. Which while they prepared to do, *Dametas*, who much diſdayned (ſince his late authority) all his old companions, brought his ſeruant *Dorus* in good acquaintance and allowance of them; and himſelf ſtood like a directer ouer them, with nodding, gaping, winking, or ſtamping ſhewing how he did like, or miſlike thoſe things he did not vnderſtand. The firſt ſports the ſhepheards ſhewed, wear ful of ſuch leapes and gambols, as being accorded to the pipe (which they bare in their mouthes, euen as they daunced) made a right picture of their chiefe God *Pan*, and his companions the *Satyres*. Then would they caſt away their Pipes; and holding hand in hand daunce as it were in a braule, by the only cadence of their voices, which they would vſe in ſinging ſome ſhort coplets, whereto the one halfe beginning, the other halfe ſhould anſwere. as the one halfe ſaying.

We loue, and haue our loues rewarded

The others would anſwere.

We loue, and are no whit regarded,

The firſt againe.

We finde moſte ſweete affections ſnare.

With like tune it ſhould be as in a quire ſent backe againe,

That ſweete, but ſower diſpairefull care.

A third time likewiſe thus:

Who can diſpaire, whom hope doth beare?

The anſwere:

And who can hope that feeles deſpaire?

Then all ioyning their voyces, and dauncing a faſter meaſure, they would conclude with ſome ſuch wordes:

As without breath, no pipe doth mone:
No muſicke kindlye without loue.

Hauing thus varied both their ſongs and daunces into diuers ſorts of inuentions; their laſt ſport was one of them to prouoke an other to a more large expreſſing of his paſſions: which *Thyrſis* (accounted one of the beſt ſingers amongſt them) hauing marked in *Dorus* dauncing no leſſe good grace & hanſome behauiour, then extreame tokens of a troubled mind; began firſt with his Pipe, and then with his voice, thus to chalenge *Dorus*, and was by him anſwered in the vnder-written ſorte.

Thyrſis and Dorus.

Thyrſis. *Come* Dorus, *come, let ſongs thy ſorrowes ſignifie*
And if for want of vſe thy minde aſhamed is,

That

That very ſhame with loues high title dignifie.
No ſtile is held for baſe, where loue well named is:
Each eare ſuckes vp the words, a true loue ſcattereth,
And plaine ſpeach oft, then quaint phraſe better framed is.

Dorus. Nightingales ſeldome ſing, the Pie ſtill chattereth
The wood cries moſt, before it throughly kindled be,
Deadly wounds inward bleed, each ſleight ſore mattereth.
Hardly they heard, which by good hunters ſingled be.
Shallow brookes murmure moſt, deep ſilent ſlide away,
Nor true loue loues his loues with others mingled be.

Thyrſis. If thou wilt not be ſeene, thy face goe hide away,
Be none of vs, or els maintaine our faſhion:
Who frownes at others feaſtes, doth better bide away.
But if thou haſt a loue, in that loues paſſion,
I challenge thee by ſhew of her perfection,
Which of vs two deſerueth moſt compaſſion.

Dorus. Thy challenge great, but greater my protection:
Sing then, and ſee (for now thou haſt inflamed me)
Thy health too meane a match for my infection.
No though the heau'ns for high attempts haue blamed me,
Yet high is my attempt. O Muſe hiſtorifie
Her praiſe, whoſe praiſe to learne your skill hath framed me.

Thyrſis. Muſe holde your peace: but thou my God Pan glorifie
My Kalas gifies: who with all good gifts filled.
Thy pipe, ô Pan, ſhall help, though I ſing ſo rilie
A heape of ſweetes ſhe is, where nothing ſpilled is;
Who though ſhe be no Bee, yet full of honie is:
A Lillie field, with plowe of Roſe which tilled is.
Milde as a Lambe, more daintie then a Conie is:
Her eyes my eyeſight is, her conuerſation
More gladde to me, then to a miſer monie is.
What coye account ſhe makes of eſtimation?
How nice to touch? how all her ſpeeches peized be?
A Nimph thus turnde, but mended in tranſlation.

Dorus. Such Kala is: but ah my fancies raiſed be
In one, whoſe name to name were high preſumption,
Since vertues all, to make her title, pleaſed be
O happie Gods, which by inward aſſumption
Enioy her ſoule, in bodies faire poſſeſſion,
And keepe it ioynde, fearing your ſeates conſumption.
How oft with rayne of teares skies make confeſſion,
Their dwellers rapt with ſight of her perfection

From heau'nly throne to her heau'n vſe digreſſion?
Of beſt things then what world can yeeld confection
To liken her? decke yours with your compariſon:
She is her ſelfe, of beſt things the collection.

Thyrſis. *How oft my dolefull Sire cried to me, tarrie ſonne*
When firſt he ſpied my loue? how oft he ſaid to me,
Thou art no ſouldier fitt for Cupids *garriſon?*
My ſonne, keepe this, that my long toyle hath laide to me:
Loue well thine owne: me thinkes woolles, whitenes paſſeth all:
I neuer found long loue ſuch wealth hath paide to me.
This wind he ſpent: but when my Kala *glaſſeth all*
My ſight in her faire limmes I then aſſure my ſelfe,
Not rotten ſheepe, but high crownes ſhe ſurpaſſeth all.
Can I be poore, that her golde haire procure my ſelfe?
Want I white wooll, whoſe eyes her white skinne garniſhed?
Till I get her, ſhall I to keepe enure my ſelfe?

Dorus. *How oft, when reaſon ſaw, loue of her harniſed*
With armour of my hart he cried, O vanitie
To ſet a pearle in ſteele ſo meanly varniſhed?
Looke to thy ſelfe reach not beyond humanitie.
Her minde, beames, ſtate, farre from thy weake wings baniſhed:
And loue which louer hurts is inhumanitie
Thus Reaſon ſaid: but ſhe came, Reaſon vaniſhed;
Her eyes ſo maiſtering me, that ſuch obiection
Seem'd but to ſpoyle the foode of thoughts long famiſhed,
Her peereles height my minde to high erection
Drawes vp; and if hope fayling end liues pleaſure,
Of fayrer death how can I make election?

Thyrſis. *Once my well waiting eyes eſpied my treaſure,*
With ſleeues turnde vp, looſe hair, and breſt enlarged,
Her fathers corne (mouing her fair limmes) meaſure.
O cried I, of ſo meane worke be diſcharged:
Meaſure my caſe, how by thy beauties filling
With ſeed of woes my hart brimme full is charged.
Thy father bids thee ſaue, and chides for ſpilling.
Saue then my ſoule, ſpill not my thoughts well heaped,
No louely praiſe was euer got by killing.
Theſe bolde words ſhe did beare, this fruite I reaped,
That ſhe, whoſe looke alone might make me bleſſed,
Did ſmile on me and then away ſhe leaped.

Dorus. *Once, O ſweete once, I ſaw with dread oppreſſed*
Her whom I dread: ſo that with proſtrate lying
Her length the earth in Loues chiefe clothing dreſſed.

I ſaw that riches fall, and fell a crying;
Let not dead earth enioy ſo deare a couer,
But deck therwith my ſoule for your ſake dying.
Lay all your feare vpon your fearefull leuer:
Shine eyes on me, that both our liues be guarded;
So I your ſight, you ſhall your ſelues recouer.
I cried and was with open rayes rewarded:
But ſtraight they fledd, ſummond by cruell honor,
Thyrſis. Honor, the cauſe deſart is not regarded.

This mayde, thus made for ioyes, ô Pan bemone her,
That without loue ſhe ſpends her yeares of loue:
So faire a field would well become an owner.
And if enchantment can a hard hart moue,
Teach me what circle may acquaint her ſprite,
Affections charmes in my behalfe to proue.
The circle is my (round about her) ſight,
The power I will inuoke dwelles in her eyes:
Dorus. My charme ſhould be ſhe haunt me day and night.

Farre other caſe, ô Muſe, my ſorrow tries,
Bent to ſuch one in whome my ſelfe muſt ſay,
Nothing can mend that point that in her lies.
What circle then in ſo rare force beares ſway?
Whoſe ſprite all ſprites can foile, raiſe, damne, or ſaue:
No charme holdes hir but well poſſeſſe ſhe may,
Poſſeſſe ſhe doth, and makes my ſoule her ſlaue:
My eyes the bandes, my thoughts the fatall knot.
Thyrſis. No thrall like them that inward bondage haue.

Kala at length conclude my lingring lotte:
Diſdaine mę not, although I be not faire.
Who is an heir of many hundreth ſheep
Doth beawties keep which neuer ſunne can burne,
Nor ſtormes doo turne: fairnes ſerues oft to wealth.
Yet all my health I place in your good will.
Which if you will (ô doo) beſtow on me,
Such as you ſee, ſuch ſtill you ſhall me finde,
Conſtant and kind, my ſheep your foode ſhall breed,
Their wooll your weede, I will you muſique yeeld
In flowrie field, and as the day begins
With twentie ginnes we will the ſmall birds take,
And paſtimes make, as nature things hath made.
But when in ſhade we meete of mirtle bowes,
Then loue allowes, our pleaſures to enrich,
The thought of which doth paſſe all worldlie pelfe.

Dorus. *Lady your ſelfe whome neither name I dare,*
And titles are but ſpots to ſuch a worth,
Heare plaints come forth from dungeon of my mind.
The nobleſt kinde reiects not others woes.
I haue no ſhewes of wealth: my wealth is you,
My beauties hewe your beames, my health your deeds;
My minde for weeds your vertues liuerie weares.
My foode is teares; my tunes wamenting yeeld:
Diſpaire my fielde; the flowers ſpirits warrs:
My day new cares; my ginnes my daily ſight,
In which doe light ſmall birds of thoughts orethrowne:
My paſtimes none: time paſſeth on my fall.
Nature made all but me of dolours made
I find no ſhade, but where my Sunne doth burne:
No place to turne; without, within it fries:
Nor helpe by life or death who liuing dyes.

Thyrſis. *But if my* Kala *thus my ſute denyes,*
Which ſo much reaſon beares:
Let crowes pick out mine eyes which too much ſawe.
If ſhee ſtill hate loues lawe,
My earthy mould, doth melt in watrye teares.

Dorus. *My earthy mould doth melt in watrye teares,*
And they againe reſolue,
To aire of ſighes, ſighes to the hartes fire turne
Which doth to aſhes burne.
Thus doth my life within it ſelfe diſſolue.

Thyrſis. *Thus doth my life within it ſelfe diſſolue*
That I growe like the beaſte,
Which beares the bytt a weaker force doth guide,
Yet patient muſt abide.
Such weight it hath which once is full poſſeſt.

Dorus. *Such weight it hath which once is full poſſeſt*
That I become a viſion,
Which hath in others head his only being
And liues in fancie ſeing.
O wretched ſtate of man in ſelfe diuiſion!

Thyrſis. *O wretched ſtate of man in ſelfe diuiſion*
O well thou ſaieſt! a feeling declaration
Thy toong hath made of Cupids *deepe inciſion.*
But now hoarſe voyce, doth faile this occupation,
And others long to tell their loues condicion.
Of ſinging thou haſt got the reputation.

Dorus. *Of ſinging thou haſt got the reputation*
Good Thyrſis *mine, I yeld to thy abilitie;*
My hart doth ſeek an other eſtimation.
But ah my Muſe, I would thou hadſt facilitie
To worke my goddeſſe, ſo by thy inuention,
On me to caſt thoſe eyes where ſhine nobilitie:
Seene and vnknowne, hearde, but without attention.

Dorus did ſo well in anſwering *Thyrſis*, that euery one deſired to heare him ſing ſomething alone. Seing therfore a Lute lying vnder the Princeſſe *Pamelas* feete glad to haue ſuch an errand to approch her, he came, but came with a diſmaied grace, all his bloud ſtirred betwixt feare and deſire. And playing vpon it with ſuch ſweetenes, as euery bodie wondered to ſee ſuch skill in a ſhepeheard, he ſang vnto it with a ſorrowing voice theſe Elegiake verſes:

Dorus. *-- Fortune, Nature, Loue, long haue contended about me,*
Which ſhould moſt miſeries, caſt on a worme that I am.
-- Fortune thus gan ſay; miſery and misfortune is all one,
And of misfortune, fortune hath only the gift.
-- With ſtrong foes on land, on ſeas with contrary tempeſts
Still doo I croſſe this wretch, what ſo he taketh in hand.
-- Tuſh, tuſh, ſaid nature, this is all but a trifle, a mans ſelfe
Giues happs or miſhapps, euen as he ordreth his hearte.
-- But ſo his humor I frame, in a mould of choller aduſted,
That the delights of life ſhall be to him dolorouſe.
-- Loue ſmiled, and thus ſaid; Want ioynd to deſire is vnhappy.
But if he nought do deſire, what can Heraclitus *aile?*
-- None but I, workes by deſire: by deſire haue I kindled in his ſoule
Infernall agonies vnto a bewtye diuine,
-- Where thou poore nature left'ſt all thy due glory, to fortune
Her vertue is ſoueraine, fortune a vaſſal of hers.
-- Nature abaſht went back: fortune bluſht: yet ſhe replide thus:
And eu'n in that loue, ſhall I reſerue him a ſpite.
-- Thus, thus, alas! wofull in nature, vnhappy by fortune,
But moſt wretched I am, now loue awakes my deſire.

Dorus when he had ſoong this, hauing had all the while a free beholding of the faire *Pamela* (who could well haue ſpared ſuch honor, and defended the aſſault he gaue vnto hir face with bringing a faire ſtaine of ſhamefaſtnes vnto it) let fall his armes, and remained ſo faſtened in his thoughts, as if *Pamela* had graffed him there to growe in continuall imagination. But *Zelmane* eſpying it, and fearing he ſhould too much forget himſelfe, ſhe came to him, and tooke out of his hand the Lute, and laying faſt hold of *Philocleas* face with her eyes, ſhe ſoong theſe *Sapphikes* ſpeaking as it were to hir owne hope.

If mine eyes can ſpeake to doo harty errande,
Or mine eyes language ſhe doo hap to iudge of,

So that eyes meſſage be of her receaued,
Hope we do liue yet.
But if eyes faile then, when I moſt doo need them,
Or if eyes language be not vnto her knowne,
So that eyes meſſage doo returne reiected,
Hope we doo both dye.
Yet dying, and dead, doo we ſing her honour;
So become our tombes monuments of her praiſe;
So becomes our loſſe the triumph of her gaine;
Hers be the glory.
If the ſpheares ſenſeleſſe doo yet hold a muſique,
If the Swannes ſweet voice be not heard, but at death,
If the mute timber when it hath the life loſt,
Yeldeth a Lutes tune:
Are then humane mindes priuiledg'd ſo meanly
As that hateſull death can abridge them of powre
With the vowe of truth to record to all worlds
That we be her ſpoiles?
Thus not ending, ends the due praiſe of her praiſe:
Fleſhly vaile conſumes; but a ſoule hath his life,
Which is held in loue; loue it is, that hath ioynd
Life to this our ſoule.
But if eyes can ſpeake to doo harty errand,
Or mine eyes language ſhe doo hap to iudge of,
So that eyes meſſage be of her receaued,
Hope we do liue yet.

Great was the pleaſure of *Baſilius*, and greater would haue bene *Gynecias*, but that ſhe found too well it was intended to her daughter, As for *Philoclea* ſhe was ſwetely rauiſhed withall. When *Dorus* deſiring in a ſecret maner to ſpeake of their caſes, as perchance the parties intended might take ſome light of it, making lowe reuerence to *Zelmane*, began this prouoking ſong in hexameter verſe vnto her. Wherevnto ſhe ſoone finding whither his words were directed (in like tune and verſe) anſwered as foloweth:

Dorus. Zelmane.

Dorus. *Lady reſerud by the heau'ns to do paſtors company honnor,*
Ioyning your ſweete voice to the rurall muſe of a deſerte,
Here you fully do finde this ſtrange operation of loue,
How to the woods loue runnes as well as rydes to the Pallace,
Neither he beares reuerence to a Prince nor pittie to begger,
But (like a point in midſt of a circle) is ſtill of a neerneſſe,
All to a leſſon he draw's, nether hills nor caues can auoide him.

Zelmane. *Worthy ſhepeheard by my ſong to my ſelfe all fauor is happned,*
That to the ſacred Muſe my anoyes ſomewhat be reuealed,

Sacred

Sacred Muſe, who in one contaynes what nine do in all them.
But ô happy be you, which ſafe from fyry reflection
Of Phœbus violence in ſhade of ſweet Cyparissus,
Or pleaſant mirtell, may teach th'vnfortunate Echo
In theſe woods to reſounde the renowmed name of a goddeſſe.
Happy be you that may to the ſaint, your onely Idea,
(Although ſimply atyrde) your manly affection vtter.
Happy be thoſe miſhapps which iuſtly proportion holding
Giue right ſound to the eares, and enter aright to the iudgement,
But wretched be the ſoules, which vaild in a contrary ſubiect:
How much more we do loue, ſo the leſſe our loues be beleeued.
What skill ſaleth a ſoare of a wrong infirmity iudged?
What can iuſtice auaile, to a man that tells not his owne caſe?
You though feares do abaſh, in you ſtill poſsible hopes be:
Nature againſt we do ſeeme to rebell, ſeeme fooles in a vaine ſute.
But ſo vnheard, condemn'd, kept thence we do ſeeke to abide in,
Selfe-loſt in wandring, baniſhed that place we doe come from,
What meane is there, alas, we can hope our loſſe to recouer?
What place is there left, we may hope our woes to recomfort?
Vnto the heau'ns? our wings be too ſhort: earth thinks vs a burden.
Aire we do ſtill with ſighes encreaſe, to the fire? we do want none.
And yet his outward heate our teares would quench, but an inward
Fire no liquor can coo'le: Neptunes realme would not auaile vs.
Happy ſhepheard, with thanks to the Gods, ſtill thinke to be thankfull;
That to thy aduauncement their wiſdomes haue thee abaſed.

Dorus. Vnto the Gods with a thanckfull heart all thankes I do render,
That to my aduauncement their wiſdomes haue me abaſed.
But yet, alas! O but yet alas! our happs be but hard happs,
Which muſt frame contempt to the fitteſt purchaſe of honnour.
Well may a Paſtor plaine, but alas his plaints be not eſteem'de
Silly ſhepheards poore pype, when his harſh ſound teſtifi's anguiſh,
Into the faire looker on, paſtime, not paſsion, enters.
And to the woods or brookes, who do make ſuch dreery recitall
What be the pangs they beare, and whence thoſe pangs be derined,
Pleaſd to receaue that name by rebounding anſwere of Echo,
May hope therby to eaſe their inward horrible anguiſh,
When trees daunce to the pype, and ſwift ſtreames ſtay by the muſicke,
Or when an Echo begins vnmou'd to ſing them a loue ſong.
Say then what vantage do we get, by the trade of a Paſtor?
(Since no eſtates be ſo baſe, but loue vouchſafeth his arrow,
Since no refuge doth ſerue from woundes we do carry about vs,
Since outward pleaſures be but halting helpes to decayd ſoules)
Saue that dayly we may diſcerne what fire we do burne in.
Farre more happy be you, whoſe greatnes gets a free acceſſe,
Whoſe faire bodily gifts are fram'd moſt louely to each ey.
Vertue you haue, of vertue you haue left proofe to the whole world.

And vertue is grateſull with bewty and richnes adorned,
Neither doubt you awhit, time will your paſsion vtter.
Hardly remains fyer hid, where skill is bent to the hiding,
But in a minde that would his flames ſhould not be repreſſed,
Nature worketh enough with a ſmall help for the reuealing.
Giue therefore to the Muſe great praiſe in whoſe very likenes
You doo approch to the fruite your onely deſir's be to gather.

Zelmane. *Firſt ſhall ſertill grounds not yeeld increaſe of a good ſeed:*
Firſt the riuers ſhall ceaſſe to repay their ſtudds to the Occean:
Firſt may a truſty Greyhounde transforme himſelfe to a Tigre:
Firſt ſhall vertue be vice, and bewty be counted a blemiſhe,
Ere that I leaue with ſong of praiſe her praiſe to ſolemnize,
Her praiſe, whence to the world all praiſe hath his only beginning:
But yet well I doo finde each man moſt wiſe in his owne caſe.
None can ſpeake of a wound with skill, if he haue not a wound felt.
Great to thee my ſtate ſeemes, thy ſtate is bleſt by my iudgement:
And yet neither of vs great or bleſt deemeth his owne ſelfe.
For yet (weigh this alas!) great is not great to the greater.
What iudge you doth a hillecke ſhew, by the lofty Olympus?
Such my minute greatnes, doth ſeeme compar'd to the greateſt.
When Cedars to the ground fall downe by the weight of an emmott,
Or when a rich rubies iuſt price be the worth of a walnut,
Or to the Sun *for wonders ſeeme ſmall ſparks of a candle:*
Then by my high Cedar, rich Ruby, *and only ſhining* Sunne,
Vertue, richeſſe, beawties of mine ſhall great be reputed.
Oh no, no, worthy ſhepeheard, worth can neuer enter a title, (worth,
Where proofes iuſtly do teach, thus matcht, ſuch worth to be nought
Let not a puppet abuſe thy ſprite, Kings Crownes do not helpe them
From the cruell headache, nor ſhooes of golde doo the gowt heale,
And precious couches full oft are ſhak't with a feauer.
If then a boddily euill in a beddily gloze be not hidden,
Shall ſuch morning deaws be an eaſe to the heate of a loues fire?

Dorus. *O glittring miſeries of man, if this be the fortune*
Of thoſe fortune lulls? ſo ſmall reſt reſts in a kingdome?
What maruaile tho a Prince transforme himſelfe to a Paſtor?
Come from marble bowres many times the gay harber of anguiſh,
Vnto a ſilly caban, though weake, yet ſtronger againſt woes.
Now by thy words I begin, moſt famous Lady, to gather
Comfort into my ſoule I do finde, I do find what a bleſsing
Is chaunced to my life, that from ſuch muddy abundance
Of carking agonies (to ſtates which ſtill be adherent)
Deſteny keepes me aloofe, for if all this ſtate to thy vertue
Ioyn'd, by thy beauty adorn'd be no meanes theſe greeſes to aboliſh:
If neither by that helpe, thou canſt clime vp to thy fancie,
Nor yet fancy ſo dreſt do receiue mere plauſible hearing:

Then do I thinke in deed, that better it is to be priuate
In ſorrows torments, then, tyed to the pompes of a pallace,
Nurſe inwarde maladyes, which haue not ſcope to be breath'd out.
But perforce diſgeſt, all bitter ioyces of horror
In ſilence, from a mans owne ſelfe with company robbed.
Better yet do I liue, that though by my thoughts I be plunged
Into my liues bondage, yet may disburden a paſſion
(Oppreſt with ruinouſe conceites) by the helpe of an outcrye:
Not limited to a whiſpringe note, the Lament of a Courtier.
But ſometimes to the woods ſomtimes to the heau'n do decyphire
With bolde clamor vnheard, vnmarckt, what I ſeeke what I ſuffer:
And when I meete theſe trees, in the earths faire liuory clothed,
Eaſe I do feele (ſuch eaſe as falls to one wholy diſeaſed)
For that I finde in them parte of my ſtate repreſented.
Lawrell ſhew's what I ſeeke, by the Mirre is ſhow'd how I ſeeke it,
Oliue paintes me the peace that I muſt aſpire to by the conqueſt:
Mirtle makes my requeſt, my requeſt is crown'd with a willowe?
Cyprus promiſeth helpe, but a helpe where comes no recomforte
Sweete Iuniper, ſaith this, thoh I burne, yet I burne in a ſweete fire.
Evve doth make me thinke what kind of bow the boy holdeth
Which ſhootes ſtrongly with out any noyſe and deadly without ſmarte.
Firr trees great and greene, fixt on a hye hill but a barrein,
Lyke to my noble thoughtes, ſtill new, well plac'd, to me fruteles.
Figge that yeeldes moſt pleaſante fru'te, his ſhaddow is hurtefull
Thus be her giftes moſt ſweet, thus more danger to be neere her,
Now in a palme when I marke, how he doth riſe vnder a burden,
And may I not (ſay I then) gett vp though griefs be ſo weightie?
Pine is a maſte to a ſhippe, to my ſhippe ſhall hope for a maſte ſerue,
Pine is hye, hope is as hie, ſharpe leau'd, ſharpe yet be my hopes buddes.
Elme embraſte by a vine, embracing fancy reuiueth
Popler changeth his hew from a riſing ſunne to a ſetting:
Thus to my ſonne do I yeeld, ſuch lookes her beames do aforde me
Olde aged oke cutt downe, of newe works ſerues to the building:
So my deſires by my feare, cutt downe, be the frames of her honour.
As ſhe makes ſpeares which ſhieldes do reſiſt, her force no repulſe takes:
Palmes do reioyce to be ioynd by the match of a male to a female,
And ſhall ſenſiue things be ſo ſenceleſſe as to reſiſt ſence?
Thus be my thoughts diſperſt, thus thinking nurſeth a thinking,
Thus both trees and each thing ells, be the bookes of a fancy.
But to the Cedar Queene of woods when I lifte my beteard eyes,
Then do I ſhape to my ſelfe that forme which raign's ſo within me,
And thinke ther ſhe do dwell & heare what plants I do vtter:
When that noble toppe doth nodd, I beleeue ſhe ſalutes me,
When by the winde it maketh a noyſe, I do thinke ſhe doth anſwer:
Then kneling to the ground, oft thus do I ſpeake to that Image:
Onely Iuell, O only Iuell, which only deſerueſt
That mens harts be thy ſeate and endleſſe fame be thy ſeruant,

O deſcende for a while, from this greate height to behold me,
But nought els do, behold (elſe is nought worth the beholding)
Saue what a worke, by thy ſelfe is wrought: & ſince I am altred
Thus by thy worke, diſdaine not that which is by thy ſelfe done.
In meane caues oft treaſure abides, to an hoſtry a king comes.
And ſo behinde foule clowdes full oft faire ſtarres do ly hidden.

Zelmane. *Hardy ſhepheard, ſuch as thy meritts, ſuch may be her inſight*
Iuſtely to graunt thee rewarde, ſuch enuie I beare to thy fortune.
But to my ſelfe what wiſh can I make for a ſalue to my ſorrowes,
Whom both nature ſeemes to debarr from meanes to be helped,
And if a meane were found, fortune th'whole courſe of it hinders.
This plag'de how can I frame to my ſoare any hope of amendemente?
Whence may I ſhow to my minde any light of poſſible eſcape?
Bownd & bownd by ſo noble bandes, as loth to be vnbownd,
Iaylor I am to my ſelfe, priſon & priſoner to myne owne ſelfe.
Yet be my hopes thus plaſt, here fix'd lines all my recomforte,
That that deare Dyamond, *where wiſdome holdeth a ſure ſeate,*
Whoſe force had ſuch force ſo to tranſforme, nay to reforme me,
Will at length perceaue theſe flames by her beames to be kindled,
And will pitty the wound feſtred ſo ſtrangely within me.
O be it ſo, graunte ſuch an euent, O Gods, that euent giue.
And for a ſure ſacrifice I do dayly oblation offer
Of mine owne harte, where thoughts be the temple, ſighte is a aultar.
But ceaſſe worthy ſhepheard, nowe ceaſſe we to weery the heavers
With monefull melodies, for enough our greefes be reuealed,
If by the partic ment our meanings rightly be marked,
And ſorrow's do require ſome reſpitt vnto the ſences.

What exclaming praiſes *Baſilius* gaue to this Ecloge any man may gheſſe, that knowes loue is better then a paire of ſpectacles to make euery thing ſeeme greater which is ſene through it: and then is neuer tongue tied where fitt commendation (whereof womankinde is ſo likerouſe) is offered vnto it. But before any other came in to ſupplie the place, *Zelmane* hauing heard ſome of the ſhepheards by chaunce name *Strephon* and *Klaius*, ſuppoſing thereby they had bene preſent, was deſirous both to heare them for the fame of their frindly loue, and to know them, for their kindeneſſe towardes her beſt loued frinde. Much grieued was *Baſilius*, that any deſire of his miſtreſſe ſhould bee vnſatiſfied, and therefore to repreſent them vnto hir (aſwell as in their abſence it might be) he commaunded on *Lamon*, who had at large ſett down their country paſtimes and firſt loue to *Vrania* to ſing the whole diſcourſe which he did in this manner.

A Shepheards tale no height of ſtile deſires
To raiſe in words what in effect is lowe:
A plaining ſonge plaine-ſinging voice requires,
For warbling notes from inward chearing flow.
I then, whoſe burd'ned breſt but thus aſpires

Of shepheards two the seely case to show,
Nede not the stately Muses helpe inuoke
For creeping rimes, which often sighings choke.
But you, ô you, that thinke not teares to deare
To spend for harms, although they touch you not:
And deigne to deeme your neighbors mischefe neare,
Although they be of meaner parents gott:
You I inuite with easie eares to heare
The poore-clad truth of loues wrong-ordred lot.
Who may be glad, be glad you be not such:
Who share in woe, weygh others haue as much.
Ther was (ô seldome blessed word of was!)
A paire of frends, or rather one cal'd two,
Train'd in the life which on short-bitten grasse
In shine or storme must sett the doubted shoe:
He, that the other in some yeares did passe,
And in those gifts that years distribute doe,
Was Klaius cald, (ah Klaius, wofull wight!)
The later borne, yet too soone, Strephon hight.
Epeirus high, was honest Klaius nēst,
To Strephon Æoles land first breathing lent:
But Eāst & Weāst were ioin'd by frendships hest.
As Strephons eare & heart to Klaius bent:
So Klaius soule did in his Strephon rēst.
Still both their flocks flocking togither went,
As if they would of owners humour be,
And eke their pipes did well, as frends agree.
Klaius for skill of hearb's & shepheards art
Among the wisēst was accounted wise,
Yet not so wise, as of vnstained harte:
Strephon was yonge, yet markt with humble eies
How elder rul'd their flocks, & cur'd their smart,
So that the graue did not his words despise.
Both free of minde, both did clear-dealing loue,
And both had skill in verse their voice to moue.
Their chearfull minds, till pois'ned was their cheare,
The honēst sports of earthy lodging proue;
Now for a clod-like hare in fourm they peere,
Now bolt & cudgill squirrels leape do moue.
Now the ambitiouse Larke with mirror cleare
They catch, while he (foole!) to himself makes loue:
And now at keels they trie a harmles chaunce,
And now their curr they teach to fetch & daunce.
When mery May first early calls the morne,
With mery maids a mayeng they do go,
Then do they pull from sharpe & niggard thorne
The plenteous sweets, (can sweets so sharply grow?)

Then ſome grene gowns are by the laſſes worne
In chaſteſt plaies, till home they walke a rowe,
While daunce about the may-pole is begun,
When, if nede were, they could at quintain run:
While thus they ran a low, but leueld race,
While thus they liu'd, (this was indede a life)
With nature pleaſ'd, content with preſent caſe.
Free of proud feares, braue begg'ry, ſmiling ſtrife
Of clime-fall Court, the enuy-hatching place:
While thoſe reſtles deſires in great men rife
To viſite ſo low folkes did much disdaine,
This while, though poore, they in themſelues did raigne.
One day (ô day, that ſhin'de to make them darke!)
While they did ward ſun-beames with ſhady bay,
And Klaius taking for his yongling carke,
(Leſt greedy eies to them might challenge lay)
Buſy with oker did their ſhoulders marke,
(His marke a Piller was deuoid of ſtay,
As bragging that free of all paſſions mone
Well might he others beare, but leane to none)
Strephon with leany twiggs of Laurell tree
A garland made on temples for to weare,
For he then choſen was the dignitie
Of village-Lord that whitſontide to beare:
And full, poore foole of boyiſh brauery
With triumphs ſhews would ſhew he nought did feare.
But fore-accounting oft makes builders miſſe,
They found, they felt, they had no leaſe of bliſſe.
For ere that either had his purpoſe done,
Behold (beholding well it doth deſerue)
They ſaw a maid who thitherward did runne,
To catch hir ſparrow which from hir did ſwerue,
As ſhe a black-ſilke cap on him begunne
To ſett, for foile of his milke-white to ſerue.
She chirping ran, he peeping flew away,
Till hard by them both he & ſhe did ſtay.
Well for to ſee they kept themſelues vnſene,
And ſaw this faireſt maid of fairer minde,
By, fortune meare, in Nature borne a Queene,
How well apaid ſhe was hir bir de to finde:
How tenderly hir tender hands betweene
In iuory cage ſhe did the micher binde:
How roſy moiſt ned lipps about his beake
Mouing, ſhe ſeem'd at once to kiſſe, & ſpeake.
Chaſtned but thus, & thus his leſſon tought
The happy wretch ſhe putt into hir breaſt,
Which to their eies the bowles of Venus brought,

For they ſeem'd made euen of skie-mettall beſt,
And that the bias of hir bloud was wrought.
Betwixt them two the peeper tooke his neſt,
Where ſnugging well he well appear'd content
So to haue done amiſſe, ſo to be ſhent.
This done, but done with captiue-killing grace,
Each motion ſeeming ſhott from beauties bow,
With length laid downe ſhe deckt the lonely place.
Proud grew the graſſe that vnder hir did growe,
The trees ſpred out their armes to ſhade hir face,
But ſhe on elbow lean'd with ſigh's did ſhow
No graſſe, no trees, nor yet hir ſparrow might
To long-perplexed minde breed long delight.
She troubled was (alas that it mought be!)
With tedious brawlings of her parents deare,
Who would haue hir in will & worde agree
To wedd Antaxius their neighbour neare.
A heardman rich of much account was he
In whome no euill did raigne, nor good appeare.
In ſome ſuch one ſhe lik'd not his deſire,
Faine would be free, but dreadeth parents ire.
Kindly, ſweete ſoule, ſhe did vnkindnes take
That bagged baggage of a miſers mudd,
Should price of hir, as in a market, make.
But golde can guild a rotten piece of wood,
To yeeld ſhe found hir noble heart did ake:
To ſtriue ſhe fear'd how it with vertue ſtoode.
This doubting clouds ore-caſting heau'nly braine,
At length in rowes of Kiſſe-cheeke teares they raine.
Cupid the wagg, that lately conquer'd had
Wiſe Counſellors, ſtout Captaines puiſſant Kings,
And ti'de them faſt to leade his triumph badd,
Glutted with them now plaies with meaneſt things.
So oft in feaſts with coſtly chaunges cladd
To crammed mawes a ſpratt new Stomake brings.
So Lords with ſport of Stagg & Hearon full
Sometimes we vſe ſmall birds from neſts do pull.
So now for pray theſe ſhepheards two he tooke
Whoſe mettall ſtiff he knew he could not bende
With hear-ſay, pictures, or a window looke,
With one good daunce, or letter finely pend,
That were in Court a well proportion'd hooke,
Where piercing witts do quickly apprehend,
Their ſences rude plaine obiects only moue,
And ſo muſt ſee great cauſe before they loue.
Therfore Loue arm'd in hir now takes the fielde,
Making hir beames his brauery & might:

Hir hands which pierc'd the ſoules ſean'n-double ſhield,
Were now his darts leauing his wonted fight.
Braue creſt to him hir ſcorn-gold haire did yeeld,
His compleat harneis was hir pureſt white.
But fearing leſt all white might ſeeme too good,
In cheeks & lipps the Tyran threatens bloud.
Beſides this force within hir eies he kept
A fire, to burne the priſoners he gaines,
Whoſe boiling heat encreaſed as ſhe wept:
For eu'n in forge colde water fire maintaines.
Thus proud & fierce vnto the hearts he ſtept
Of them poore ſoules: & cutting Reaſons raines,
Made them his owne before they had it wiſt.
But if they had, could ſhephookes this reſiſt?
Klaius ſtreight felt, & groned at the blowe,
And cal'd, now wounded, purpoſe to his aide:
Strephon, fond boy, delighted did not knowe,
That it was Loue that ſhin'de in ſhining maid:
But lickrous, Poiſon'd, faine to her would goe,
If him new-learned manners had not ſtai'd.
For then Vrania homeward did ariſe,
Leauing in paine their wel-fed hungry eies.
She went, they ſtaid; or rightly for to ſay,
She ſtaid in them, they went in thought with hyr:
Klaius in deede would faine haue puld away
This mote from out his eye, this inward burre,
And now, proud Rebell gan for to gainſay
The leſſon which but late he learn'd too furre:
Meaning with abſence to refreſh the thought
To which hir preſence ſuch a feauer brought.
Strephon did leape with ioy & iolitie,
Thinking it iuſt more therein to delight
Then in good Dog, faire field, or ſhading tree.
So haue I ſene trim bookes in veluet dight
With golden leaues, & painted babery
Of ſeely boies pleaſe vnacquainted ſight:
But when the rod began to play his part,
Faine would, but could not fly from golden ſmart.
He quickly learn'd Vrania was her name,
And ſtreight for failing, grau'd it in his heart:
He knew hir haunt, & haunted in the ſame,
And taught his ſhepe hir ſhepe in food to thwart.
Which ſoone as it did batefull queſtion frame,
He might on knees confeſſe his faulty part,
And yeeld himſelfe vnto hir puniſhment,
While nought but game, the ſelfe-hurt wanton ment.
Nay eu'n vnto hir home he oft would go,

Where bold and hurtles many play he tries,
Her parents liking well it ſhould be ſo,
For ſimple goodnes ſhined in his eyes.
There did he make hir laugh in ſpite of woe,
So as good thoughts of him in all ariſe,
While into none doubt of his loue did ſinke,
For not himſelfe to be in loue did thinke.
But glad Deſire, his late emboſom'd gueſt,
Yet but a babe, with milke of Sight he nurſt:
Deſire the more he ſuckt, more ſought the breſt,
Like dropſy folke ſtill drinke to be a thyrſt.
Till one faire eau'n an howr ere Sun did reſt,
Who then in Lions caue did enter fyrſt,
By neighbors prai'd ſhe went abroad therby.
At Barly brake hir ſwete ſwift ſoot to trie.
Neuer the earth on his round ſhoulders bare
A maid train'd vp from high or low degree,
That in her doings better could compare
Mirth with reſpect, few words with curteſy,
A careles comelines with comely care,
Self-gard with mildnes, Sport with Maieſty:
Which made hir yeeld to deck this ſhepheards band,
And ſtill, beleue me, Strephon was at hand.
A field they goe, where many lookers be,
And thou ſeke-ſorow Klaius them among:
In dede thou ſaid'ſt it was thy frend to ſee
Strephon, whoſe abſence ſeem'd vnto thee long,
While moſt with hir he leſſe did kepe with thee.
No, no, it was in ſpite of wiſdomes ſong
Which abſence wiſht: loue plai'd a victors part:
The heau'n-loue lodeſtone drew thy iron hart.
Then couples three be ſtreight allotted there,
They of both ends the middle two doe flie,
The two that in mid place, Hell called were,
Muſt ſtriue with waiting foot, and watching eye
To catch of them, and them to hell to beare,
That they, aſwell as they, Hell may ſupplie:
Like ſome which ſeeke to ſalue their blotted name
With others blott, till all do taſt of ſhame.
There may you ſee, ſoone as the middle two
Do coupled towards either couple make,
They falſe and fearfull do their hands vndoe,
Brother his brother, frend doth frend forſake,
Heeding himſelfe, cares not how fellow doe,
But of a ſtraunger mutuall help doth take:
As periur'd cowards in aduerſity
With ſight of feare from frends to fremb'd do flie.

Theſe ſports ſhepheards deuiz'd ſuch faults to ſhow.
Geron, *though olde yet gameſome, kept one ende*
With Coſma, *for whoſe loue* Pas *paſt in woe.*
Faire Nous *with* Pas *the lott to hell did ſende:*
Pas *thought it hell, while he was* Coſma *fro.*
At other end Vran *did* Strephon *lend*
Her happy-making hand, of whome one looke
From Nous *and* Coſma *all their beauty tooke.*
The play began: Pas *durſt not* Coſma *chace,*
But did entend next bout with her to meete,
So he with Nous *to* Geron *turn'd their race,*
With whome to ioyne faſt ran Vrania *ſweet:*
But light-legd Pas *had gott the middle ſpace.*
Geron *ſtraue hard, but aged were his feet,*
And therfore finding force now faint to be,
He thought gray haires afforded ſubtletie.
And ſo when Pas *hand-reached him to take,*
The ſox on knees and elbowes tombled downe:
Pas *could not ſtay, but ouer him did rake,*
And crown'd the earth with his firſt touching crowne:
His heels grow'n proud did ſeme at heau'n to ſhake.
But Nous *that ſlipt from* Pas, *did catch the clowne.*
So laughing all, yet Pas *to eaſe ſome dell*
Geron *with* Vran *were condemn'd to hell.*
Coſma *this while to* Strephon *ſafely came,*
And all to ſecond barly-brake are bent:
The two in hell did toward Coſma *frame,*
Who ſhould to Pas, *but they would her preuent.*
Pas *mad with fall, and madder with the ſhame,*
Moſt mad with beames which he thought Coſma *ſent,*
With ſuch mad haſte he did to Coſma *goe,*
That to hir breaſt he gaue a noyſome blowe.
She quick, and proud, and who did Pas *deſpiſe,*
Vp with hir fiſt, and tooke him on the face,
Another time, quoth ſhe, become more wiſe.
Thus Pas *did kiſſe hir hand with little grace,*
And each way luckles, yet in humble guiſe
Did hold hir faſt for feare of more diſgrace,
While Strephon *might with preatie* Nous *haue met,*
But all this while another courſe he fet.
For as Vrania *after* Coſma *ran,*
He rauiſhed with ſight how gracefully
She mou'd hir lims, and drew the aged man,
Leſt Nous *to coaſt the loued beauty ny.*
Nous *cri'de, and chaſ'd, but he no other can.*
Till Vran *ſeing* Pas *to* Coſma *fly,*
And Strephon *ſingle, turned after him.*

Strephon *ſo chas'd did ſeme in milke to ſwimme.*
He ran, but ran with eye ore ſhoulder caſt,
More marking hir, then how himſelfe did goe,
Like Numid *Lions by the hunters chas'd,*
Though they do fly, yet backwardly do glowe
With proud aſpect, diſdaining greater haſt.
What rage in them, that loue in him did ſhow.
But God giues them inſtinct the man to ſhun,
And he by law of Barly-brake muſt run.
But as his heate with running did augment,
Much more his ſight encreaſt his hote deſire:
So is in her the beſt of Nature ſpent,
The aire hir ſweete race mou'd doth blow the fire.
Hir feet be Purſeuants from Cupid *ſent,*
With whoſe fine ſtepps all loues and ioyes conſpire.
The hidden beauties ſeem'd in waite to lye,
To downe proud hearts that would not willing dye.
Thus, faſt he fled from her he follow'd ſore,
Still ſhunning Nous *to lengthen pleaſing race,*
Till that he ſpied old Geron *could no more,*
Then did he ſlack his loue-enſtructed pace.
So that Vrán, *whoſe arme old* Geron *bore,*
Laid hold on him with moſt lay-holding grace.
So caught, him ſeem'd he caught of ioyes the beſt,
And thought it heau'n ſo to be drawn to hell.
To hell he goes, and Nous *with him muſt dwell.*
Nous *ſware it was no right; for his default*
Who would be caught, that ſhe ſhould go to hell:
But ſo ſhe muſt. And now the third aſſault
Of Barly-brake among the ſix befell.
Pas Coſma *matcht, yet angry with his fault,*
The other and Geron *with* Vrán *garde.*
I thinke you thinke Strephon *bent thitherward.*
Nous *counſeld* Strephon Geron *to purſue,*
For he was olde, and eaſly would be cought:
But he drew hir as loue his fancy drew,
And ſo to take the gemme Vrania *ſought.*
While Geron *olde came ſafe to* Coſma *true,*
Though him to meete at all ſhe ſturred nought.
For Pas, *whither it were for feare, or loue,*
Mou'd not himſelfe, nor ſuffred hir to moue.
So they three did togither idly ſtay,
While deare Vrán, *whoſe courſe was* Pas *to meet,*
(He ſtaying thus) was faine abroad to ſtray
With larger round, to ſhun the following feet.
Strephon, *whoſe eies on hir back-parts did play,*
With loue drawne on, ſo faſt with pace vnmeet

Drew dainty Nous, that ſhe not able ſo
To runne, brake from his hands, and let him goe.
He ſingle thus, hop'd ſoone with hir to be,
Who nothing earthly, but of fire and aire,
Though with ſoft leggs, did run as faſt as he.
He thriſe reacht, thriſe deceiu'd, when hir to beare
He hopes, with dainty turns ſhe doth him flee.
So on the down's we ſee, neere Wilton faire,
A haſtned Hare from greedy Grayhound goe,
And paſt all hope his chapps to fruſtrate ſo.
But this ſtraunge race more ſtraunge conceits did yeeld:
Who victor ſeem'd, was to his ruine brought:
Who ſeem'd orethrown was miſtreſſe of the field:
She fled, and tooke: he folow'd, and was cought.
So haue I heard to pierce purſuing ſhield
By Parents train'd the Tartars wilde are tought,
With ſhafts ſhott out from their back-turned bow.
But, ah! hir dwts did farre more depely goe.
As Venus bird the white, ſwift, louely Doue
(O happy Doue that art compar'd to hir!)
Doth on hir wings hir vtmoſt ſwiftnes proue,
Finding the gripe of Falcon fierce not furr:
So did Vran, the narr the ſwifter moue,
(Yet beauty ſtill as faſt as ſhe did ſturre)
Till with long race deare ſhe was breathles brought,
And then the Phœnix feared to be cought.
Among the reſt that there did take delight
To ſee the ſportes of double-ſhining day,
And did the tribute of their wondring ſight
To Natures heir, the faire Vrania, pay,
I tolde you Klaius was the haples wight
Who earneſt found what they accounted play.
He did not there doe homage of his eies,
But on his eies his heart did ſacrifiſe.
With gazing looks, ſhort ſighs, vnſettled feet,
He ſtood, but turn'd, as Giroſol, to Sun:
His fancies ſtill did hir in half-way meet,
His ſoule did fly as ſhe was ſeen to run.
In ſum proud Boreas neuer ruled fleet
(Who Neptunes webb on daungers diſtaff ſpun)
With greater powr, then ſhe did make them wend
Each way, as ſhe, that ages praiſe, did bend.
Till ſpieng well ſhe welnigh weary was,
And ſurely taught by his loue-open eye,
His eye, that eu'n did marke hir troden graſſe,
That ſhe would faine the catch of Strephon flie,
Giuing his reaſon paſport for to paſſe

Whither it would, ſo it would let him dy,
He that before ſhund hir to ſhun ſuch harmes,
Now runnes, and takes hir in his clipping armes.
For with pretence from Strephon hir to garde,
He met hir full, but full of wareſulnes,
With inbow'd boſome well for hir prepar'd,
When Strephon curſing his owne backwardnes
Came to hir back, and ſo with double warde
Empriſon hir, who both them did poſſeſſe
As heart-bound ſlaues: and happy then embrace
Vertues proofe, fortunes victor, beauties place.
Hir race did not hir beauties beames augment,
For they were euer in the beſt degree,
But yet a ſetting foorth it ſome way lent:
As rubies luſtre, when they rubbed be.
The dainty dew on face and body went
As on ſweet flowrs when mornings drops we ſee.
Her breath then ſhort ſeem'd loth from home to pas,
Which more it mou'd, the more it ſweeter was.
Happy, ô happy! if they ſo might bide,
To ſee hir eies, with how true humblenes
They looked down to triumph ouer pride:
With how ſweet ſawes ſhe blam'd their ſawcines:
To feele the panting heart, which through hir ſyde
Did beate their hands, which durſt ſo neere to preſſe.
To ſee, to feele, to heare, to taſt, to know
More then, beſides hir, all the earth could ſhow.
But neuer did Medeas golden weed
On Creons child his peiſon ſooner throw,
Then thoſe delights through all their ſinews breed
A creeping ſerpentlike of mortall woe.
Till ſhe brake from their armes (although in deed
Going from them, from them ſhe cou'd not go)
And fare-welling the flocke did homeward wend,
And ſo that euen the barly-brake did end.
It ended, but the others woe began,
Began at leaſt to be conceiu'd as woe,
For then wiſe Klaius found no abſence can
Help him, who can no more hir ſight foregoe.
He found mans vertue is but part of man,
And part muſt folowe where whole man doth goe.
He found that Reaſons ſelf now reaſons found
To faſten knotts, which fancy firſt had bound.
So doth he yeeld, ſo takes he on his yoke,
Not knowing who did draw with him therin;
Strephon, poore youth, becauſe he ſaw no ſmoke
Did not conceiue what fire he had within.

But after this to greater rage it broke,
Till of his life it did full conqueſt win,
First killing mirth, then baniſhing all reſt,
Filling his eies with teares, with ſighs his breſt.
Then ſports grew paines, all talking tediouſe,
On thoughts he feeds, his lookes their figure chaunge,
The day ſeemes long, but night is odious,
No ſleeps, but dream's, no dream's, but viſions ſtraunge,
Till finding ſtill his euill encreaſing thus,
One day he with his flock abroad did raunge:
And comming where he hop'd to be alone,
Thus on a hillock ſet, he made his mone.
Alas! what weights are theſe that lode my heart!
I am as dull as winter-ſterued ſheep,
Tir'de as a iade in ouerloden carte,
Yet thoughts do flie, though I can ſcarcely creep.
All viſions ſeeme, at euery buſh I ſtart:
Drowſy am I, and yet can rarely ſlepe.
Sure I bewitched am, it is euen that:
Late neere a croſſe I met an ougly Cat.
For, but by charms, how fall theſe things on me,
That from thoſe eies where heau'nly apples bene,
Thoſe eies, which nothing like themſelues can ſee,
Of faire Vrania, fairer then a greene,
Proudly bedeckt in Aprills liuory,
A ſhot vnheard gaue me a wound vnſeene?
He was inuiſible that hurt me ſo,
And none vnuiſible, but Spirites, can goe.
When I ſee her, my ſinewes ſhake for feare,
And yet, deare ſoule, I know ſhe hurteth none:
Amid my flock with woe my voice I teare,
And, but bewitch'd, who to his flock would mone?
Her chery lipps, milke hands, and golden haire
I ſtill do ſee, though I be ſtill alone.
Now make me thinke that there is not a fende,
Who hid in Angels ſhape my life would ende.
The ſportes wherin I wonted to do well,
Come ſhe, and ſweet the aire with open breſt,
Then ſo I faile, when moſt I would do well,
That at me ſo amaz'd my fellowes ieſt:
Sometimes to her newes of my ſelfe to tell
I go about, but then is all my beſt
Wry words, and ſtam'ring, or els doltiſh dombe,
Say then, can this but of enchantment come?
Nay each thing is bewitcht to know my caſe:
The Nightingales for woe their ſongs refraine:
In riuer as I look'd my pining face,

As pin'd a face as mine I saw againe.
The courteous mountaines griev'd at my disgrace
Their snowy haire teare of in melting paine.
And now the dropping trees do wepe for me,
And now faire euenings blush my shame to see.
But you my pipe, whilome my chief delight,
Till straunge delight, delight to nothing ware;
And you my flock, care of my carefull sight,
While I was I, & so had cause to care;
And thou my dogg, whose truth & valiant might
Made wolues (not inward wolues) my ewes to spare;
Go you not from your master in his woe:
Let it suffise that he himselfe forgoe.
For though like waxe, this magique makes me waste,
Or like a Lambe whose dam away is fet,
(Stolne from her young by theeues vnchoosing hast)
He treble beas for helpe, but none can get:
Though thus, and worse, though now I am at last,
Of all the games that here ere now I met:
Do you remember still you once were mine,
Till my eies had their curse from blessed eine.
Be you with me while I vnheard do cry,
While I do score my losses on the winde,
While I in heart my will write ere I die.
In which by will, my will and wits I binde:
Still to be hers, about her eye to flie,
As this same sprite about my fancies blinde,
Doth daily haunt: but so, that mine become
As much more louing, as lesse cumbersome.
Alas! a cloud hath ouercast mine eies:
And yet I see her shine amid the cloud.
Alas! of ghostes I heare the gastly cries:
Yet there, me seemes, I heare her singing loud.
This song she singes in most commaunding wise:
Come shepheards boy, let now thy heart be bowd
To make it selfe to my least looke a slaue:
Leaue sheepe, leaue all, I will no piecing haue.
I will, I will, alas! alas! I will:
Wilt thou haue more? more haue, if more I be.
Away ragg'd rams, care I what murraine kill?
Out shreaking pipe made of some witched tree.
Go bawling curre, thy hungry mawe go fill,
On yond foule flocke belonging not to me.
With that his dogge he henst his flocke he curst:
With that (yet kissed first) his pipe he burst.
This said, this done, he rase euen tir'd with rest,
With heart as carefull, as with careless grace,

With shrinking legges, but with a swelling brest,
With eyes which threatned they would drowne his face,
Fearing the worst, not knowing what were best,
And giuing to his sight a wandring race,
He saw behind a bush where Klaius *sate:*
His well know'ne friend, but yet his vnknowne mate,
Klaius *the wretch, who lately yelden was*
To beare the bondes which Time nor wit could breake,
(With blushing soule at sight of iudgements glasse,
While guilty thoughts accus'd his Reason weake)
This morne alone to lonely walke did passe,
With in himselfe of hir deare selfe to speake,
Till Strephons *plaining voice him nearer dreiw,*
Where by his words his self-like cause he knew.
For hearing him so oft with wordes of woe
Vrania name, whose force he knew so well,
He quickly knew what witchcraft gaue the blow
Which made his Strephon *think himselfe in hell.*
Which when he did in perfect image show,
To his owne witt, thought vpon thought did swell,
Breeding huge stormes with in his inward parte,
Which thus breath'd out with earthquake of his hart.

As *Lamon* would haue proceded, *Basilius* knowing, by the wasting of the torches that the night also was farre wasted, and withall remembring *Zelmanes* hurt, asked hir whither she thought it not better to reserue the complaint of *Klaius* till an other day. Which she, perceiuing the song had alreadie worne out much time, and not knowing when *Lamon* would ende, being euen now stepping ouer to a new matter, though much delight ted with what was spoken, willingly agreed vnto. And so of all sides they went to recommend themselues to the elder brother of death.

The end of the first Booke.

THE

THE SECOND BOOKE OF THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA.

(:)

IN theſe paſtorall paſtimes a great number of daies were ſent to follow their flying predeceſſours, while the cup of poiſon (which was deepely taſted of this noble companie) had left no ſinewe of theirs without mortally ſearching into it; yet neuer manifeſting his venomous work, til once, that the night (parting away angry, that ſhe could di ſtill no more ſleepe into the eies of louers) had no ſooner giuen place to the breaking out of the morning light, and the Sunne beſtowed his beames vpon the tops of the mountaines, but that the woefull *Gynecia* (to whom reſt was no eaſe) had left her loathed lodging, and gotten her ſelfe into the ſolitary places thoſe deſerts were full of, going vp and downe with ſuch vnquiet motions, as a grieued and hopeles minde is wont to bring forth. There appeered vnto the eies of her iudgement the euils ſhe was like to run into, with ougly infamie waiting vpon them: ſhee felt the terrors of her owne conſcience: ſhee was guilty of a long exerciſed vertue, which made this vice the fuller of deformitie. The vttermoſt of the good ſhe could aſpire vnto, was a mortal woũd to her vexed ſpirits: and laſtly no ſmall part of her euils was, that ſhe was wiſe to ſee her euils. In ſo much, that hauing a great while throwne her countenaunce ghaſtly about her (as if ſhee had called all the powers of the world to be witneſſe of her wretched eſtate) at length caſting vp her watrie eyes to heauẽ, O Sunne (ſaid ſhe) whoſe vnſpotted light directs the ſteps of mortall mankind, art thou not aſhamed to impart the clearneſſe of thy preſence to ſuch a duſt-creeping worme as I am? O you heauens (which continually keepe the courſe allotted vnto you) can none of your influences preuaile ſo much vpon the miſerable *Gynecia*, as to make her preſerue a courſe ſo long imbraced by her? O deſerts, deſerts, how fit a gueſt am I for you, ſince my hart can people you with wild rauenous beaſtes, which in you are wanting? O Vertue, where dooſt thou hide thy ſelfe? What hideous thinge is this which doeth Eclips thee? Or is it true that thou weart neuer but a vaine name, and no eſſentiall thing, which haſt thus left thy profeſſed ſeruant, when ſhe had moſt need of thy louely preſence?

O imperfect proportiõ of reaſon, which can too much foreſee, & too little preuent. Alas, alas (ſaid ſhe) if there were but one hope for all my paines, or but one excuſe for all my faultineſſe. But wretch that I am, my torment is beyond all ſuccour, and my euill deſeruing doth exceed my euill fortune. For nothing els did my huſband take this ſtraunge reſolution to liue ſo ſolitarily: for nothing els haue the windes deliuered this ſtraunge gueſt to my country: for nothing els haue the deſtinies reſerued my life to this time, but that onely I (moſt wretched I) ſhould become a plague to my ſelfe, and a ſhame to womankind. Yet if my deſire (how vniuſt ſo euer it be) might take effect, though a thouſand deaths folowed it, and euery death were followed with a thouſand ſhames; yet ſhould not my ſepulcher receiue mee without ſome contentment. But alas, though ſure I am, that *Zelmane* is ſuch as can anſwer my loue; yet as ſure I am, that this diſgũiſing muſt needs come for ſome foretaken cõceipt. And then, wretched *Gynecia*, where canſt thou find any ſmall ground plot for hope to dwel vpon? No, no, it is *Philoclea* his hart is ſett vpõ: it is my daughter I haue borne to ſupplant me. But if it bee ſo, the life I haue giuen thee (vngratefull *Philoclea*) I will ſooner with theſe handes bereaue thee of, then my birth ſhall glory, ſhe hath bereaued me of my deſires. In ſhame there is no comfort, but to bee beyond all bounds of ſhame.

Hauing ſpoken thus, ſhe began to make a piteous war with hir faire haire, when ſhe might heare (not far frõ her) an extremely dolefull voice, but ſo ſuppreſſed with a kind of whiſpering note, that ſhe could not conceaue the wordes diſtinctly. But (as a lamentable tune is the ſweeteſt muſicke to a wofull mind) ſhee drewe thether neere-away, in hope to find ſome companiõ of her miſery. And as ſhe paced on, ſhe was ſtopped with a number of trees, ſo thickly placed together, that ſhe was afraide ſhee ſhould (with ruſhing thorow) ſtop the ſpeach of the lamentable partie, which ſhee was ſo deſirous to vnderſtand. And therefore ſetting her downe as ſoftlie as ſhe could (for ſhe was now in diſtaunce to heare) ſhe might firſt perceaue a Lute excellentlie well played vppon, and then the ſame dolefull voyce accompanyinge it with theſe verſes.

IN vaine, mine Eyes, you labour to amende
With flowing teares your fault of haſty ſight:
Since to my hart her ſhape you ſo did ſende;
That her I ſee, though you did loſe your light.

In vaine, my Hart, now you with ſight are burnd,
With ſighes you ſeeke to coole your hotte deſire:
Since ſighes (into mine inward fornace turnd)
For bellowes ſerue to kindle more the fire.

Reaſon, in vaine (now you haue loſt my hart)
My head you ſeeke, as to your ſtrongeſt forte:
Since there mine eyes haue played ſo falſe a parte,
That to your ſtrength your foes haue ſure reſorte.
Then ſince in vaine I find were all my ſtriſe,
To this ſtrange death I vainely yeeld my liſe.

The ending of the ſong ſerued but for a beginning of new plaints, as if the mind (oppreſſed with too heauy a burthē of cares) was faine to diſcharge it ſelf of al ſides, & as it were, paint out the hideouſnes of the paine in all ſortes of coulours. For the woſull perſon (as if the lute had euill ioined with the voice) threw it to the ground with ſuch like words: Alas, poore Lute, how much art thou deceiu'd to think, that in my miſeries thou couldſt eaſe my woes, as in my careles times thou was wont to pleaſe my fancies? The time is changed, my Lute, the time is changed; and no more did my ioyfull minde then receiue euery thing to a ioyful conſideration, then my carefull mind now makes ech thing taſt like the bitter iuyce of care. The evill is inward, my Lute, the euill is inward; which all thou dooſt, doth ſerue but to make me thinke more freely off. And alas, what is then thy harmony, but the ſweete meats of ſorrow? The diſcord of my thoughts, my Lute, doth ill agree to the concord of thy ſtrings; therefore be not aſhamed to leaue thy maſter, ſince hee is not afraide to forſake himſelfe.

And thus much ſpoke (in ſteede of a concluſion) was cloſed vp with ſo harty a groning, that *Gynecia* could not refraine to ſhew her ſelfe, thinking ſuch griefes could ſerue fitly for nothing, but her owne fortune. But as ſhe came into the little Arbour of this ſorrowful muſicke, her eyes met with the eyes of *Zelmane*, which was the party that thus had indited her ſelfe of miſerie: ſo that either of them remained cōfuſed with a ſodaine aſtoniſhment. *Zelmane* fearing, leaſt ſhe had heard ſome part of thoſe complaints, which ſhe had riſen vp that morning early of purpoſe, to breath out in ſecret to her ſelfe. But *Gynecia* a great while ſtood ſtill, with a kind of dull amaſement, looking ſtedfaſtly vpon her: at length returning to ſome vſe of her ſelfe, ſhe began to aske *Zelmane*, what cauſe carried her ſo early abroad? But as if the opening of her mouth to *Zelmane*, had opened ſome great flood-gate of ſorrow (whereof her heart could not abide the violēt iſſue) ſhe ſanke to the ground, with her hāds ouer her face crying vehemently, *Zelmane* helpe me, O *Zelmane* haue pittie on me. *Zelmane* ranne to her, maruelling what ſodaine ſickneſſe had thus poſſeſſed her: & beginning to aske her the cauſe of her paine, & offering her ſeruice to be imployed by her: *Gynecia* opening her eyes wildly vpon her, pricked with the flames of loue, & the torments of her owne conſcience; O *Zelmane*, *Zelmane*, (ſaid ſhe) dooſt thou offer me phiſicke, which art my only poyſon? Or wilt thou doo me ſeruice, which haſt alredy brought me into eternall ſlauerie? *Zelmane* then knowing well at what marke ſhee ſhot, yet loth to enter into it; Moſt excellēt Ladie (ſaid ſhe) you were beſt retire your ſelfe into your lodging, that you the better may paſſe this ſodaine fitte. Retire my ſelfe? (ſaid *Gynecia*) If I had retyred my ſelfe into my ſelfe, when thou to me (vnfortunate gueſt) cameſt to draw me from my ſelfe; bleſſed had I bene, & no neede had I had of this counſaile. But now alas, I am forced to flie to thee for ſuccour, whom I accuſe of all my hurt; & make thee iudge of my cauſe, who art the only author of my miſchiefe *Zelmane* the more aſtoniſhed, the more ſhe vnderſtood her; Madam (ſaid ſhe) whereof do you accuſe me, that I will not cleere my ſelfe? Or wherein may I ſteed you, that you may not command me? Alas, anſwered *Gynecia*, what ſhall I ſay more? Take pitty of me, O *Zelmane*, but not as *Zelmane*, and diſguiſe not with me in words, as I know thou dooſt in apparell.

Zelmane was much troubled with that worde, finding her ſelfe brought to this ſtreight. But as ſhe was thinking what to anſwere her; they might ſee olde *Baſilius* paſſe harde by them, without euer ſeeing them: complayning likewiſe of loue very

freſhly; and ending his complaint with this ſong, Loue hauing renewed both his inuention, and voyce.

Let not old age diſgrace my high deſire,
O heauenly ſoule, in humaine ſhape conteind:
Old wood in flam'de, doth yeeld the braueſt fire,
When yonger dooth in ſmoke his vertue ſpend.

Ne let white haires, which on my face doo grow,
Seeme to your eyes of a diſgracefull hewe:
Since whiteneſſe doth preſent the ſweeteſt ſhow,
Which makes all eyes doo homage vnto you.

Old age is wiſe and full of conſtant truth;
Old age well ſtayed from raunging humor liues:
Old age hath knowne what euer was in youth:
Old age orecome, the greater honour giues.
And to old age ſince you your ſelfe aſpire,
Let not old age diſgrace my high deſire.

Which being done, he looked verie curiouſly vpon himſelfe, ſomtimes fetching a little skippe, as if he had ſaide, his ſtrength had not yet forſaken him. But *Zelmane* hauing in this time gotten ſome leaſure to thinke for an anſwere; looking vpon *Gynecya*, as if ſhe thought ſhe did her ſome wrong: Madam (ſaid ſhe) I am not acquainted with thoſe words of diſguiſing, neither is it the profeſſion of an *Amazon*, neither are you a partie with whom it is to bee vſed. If my ſeruice may pleaſe you, imploy it, ſo long as you do me no wrong in miſiudgeing of mee. Alas *Zelmane* (ſaid *Gynecia*) I perceiue you know full little, howe percing the eyes are of a true louer. There is no one beame of thoſe thoughts you haue planted in me, but is able to diſcerne a greater cloude then you doo goe in. Seeke not to conceale your ſelfe further from mee, nor force not the paſſion of loue into violent extremities. Nowe was *Zelmane* brought to an exigent, when the king, turning his eyes that waye thorow the trees, perceiued his wife and miſtres togither: ſo that framing the moſt louely countenance hee could, hee came ſtraightway towardes them; and at the firſt word (thanking his wife for hauing entertained *Zelmane*,) deſired her ſhee woulde now returne into the lodge, becauſe hee had certaine matters of eſtate to impart to the Ladie *Zelmane*. The Queene (being nothing troubled with ielouſie in that point) obeyed the kinges commaundement; full of raging agonies and determinately bent, that as ſhe would ſeeke all louing meanes to winne *Zelmane*, ſo ſhe woulde ſtirre vp terrible tragedies, rather then faile of her intent. And ſo went ſhe from them to the lodge-ward, with ſuch a battaile in her thoughts, and ſo deadly an ouerthrow giuen to her beſt reſolutions, that euen her bodie (where the fielde was fought) was oppreſſed withall: making a languiſhing ſickeneſſe waite vpon the triumph of paſſion; which the more it preuailed in her, the more it made her ielouſie watchfull, both ouer her daughter, and *Zelmane*; hauing euer one of them entruſted to her owne eyes.

But as ſoone as *Baſilius* was ridde of his wiues preſence, falling downe on his knees

knees, O Lady (ſaide hee) which haſt onely had the power to ſtirre vp againe thoſe flames which had ſo long layne deade in mee; ſee in mee the power of your beautie, which can make olde age come to aske counſaile of youth; and a Prince vnconquered, to become a ſlaue to a ſtranger. And when you ſee that power of yours, loue that at leſt in me, ſince it is yours, although of me you ſee nothing to be loued. Worthy Prince (anſwered *Zelmane*, taking him vp from his kneeling) both your manner, and your ſpeech are ſo ſtraunge vnto me, as I know not how to anſwere it better then with ſilence. If ſilence pleaſe you (ſaid the king) it ſhall neuer diſpleaſe me, ſince my heart is wholly pledged to obey you: otherwiſe if you would vouchſafe mine eares ſuch happineſſe, as to heare you, they ſhall conuay your words to ſuch a mind, which is with the humbleſt degree of reuerence to receiue them. I diſdaine not to ſpeake to you (mightie Prince ſaid *Zelmane,*) but I diſdaine to ſpeake to any matter which may bring my honor into queſtion. And therewith, with a braue counterfeited ſcorne ſhe departed from the king; leauing him not ſo ſorie for his ſhort anſwere, as proud in himſelfe that he had broken the matter. And thus did the king (feeding his minde with thoſe thoughts) paſſe great time in writing verſes, and making more of himſelfe, then he was wont to doo: that with a little helpe, he would haue growne into a prettie kind of dotage.

But *Zelmane* being ridde of this louing, but little-loued company, Alas (ſaid ſhe) poore *Pyrocles*, was there euer one, but I, that had receiued wrong, and could blame no body? that hauing more then I deſire, am ſtill in want of that I woulde? Truly Loue, I muſt needes ſay thus much on thy behalfe; thou haſt imployed my loue there, where all loue is deſerued; and for recompence haſt ſent me more loue then euer I deſired. But what wilt thou doo *Pyrocles?* which way canſt thou finde to ridde thee of thy intricate troubles? To her whom I would be knowne to, I liue in darkeneſſe: and to her am reuealed, from whom I would be moſt ſecret. What ſhift ſhall I finde againſt the diligent loue of *Baſilius?* what ſhield againſt the violent paſſions of *Gynecia?* And if that be done, yet how am I the neerer to quench the fire that conſumes me? Well, well, ſweete *Philoclea*, my whole confidence muſt be builded in thy diuine ſpirit, which cannot be ignorant of the cruell wound I haue receiued by you.

But as ſicke folkes, when they are alone, thinke companie would relieue them, and yet hauing company do find it noyſome; changing willingly outward obiects, when indeed the euill is inward: So poore *Zelmane* was no more weery of *Baſilius*, then ſhe was of her ſelfe, when *Baſilius* was gone: and euer the more, the more ſhe turned her eyes to become her owne iudges. Tyred wherewith, ſhe longed to meete her friende *Dorus*; that vpon the ſhoulders of friendſhip ſhe might lay the burthen of ſorrow: and therefore went toward the other lodge: where among certaine Beeches ſhe found *Dorus*, apparelled in flanen, with a Goats skin caſt vpon him, and a garland of Laurell mixt with Cypres leaues on his head, wayting on his maſter *Dametas*, who at that time was teaching him how with his ſheephooke to catch a wanton Lambe, and how with the ſame to caſt a litle clod at any one that ſtrayed out of companie. And while *Dorus* was practiſing, one might ſee *Dametas* holding his hand vnder his girdle behind him, nodding from the waſt vpwards, and ſwearing he neuer knew man go more aukewardly to worke: and that they might talke of booke-learning what they would; but for his part, he neuer ſaw more vnfeatie fellowes, then great clearks were.

But *Zelmanes* comming ſaued *Dorus* from further chiding. And ſo ſhe beginning to ſpeake with him of the number of his maſters ſheepe, and which Prouince of *Arcadia* bare the fineſt wooll, drewe him on to follow her in ſuch countrie diſcourſes, till (being out of *Dametas* hearing) with ſuch vehemencie of paſſion, as though her hart would clime into her mouth, to take her tongues office, ſhe declared vnto him, vpon what briers the roſes of her affections grew: how time ſtill ſeemed to forget her, beſtowing no one houre of comfort vpon her; ſhe remaining ſtil in one plight of ill fortune, ſauing ſo much worſe, as continuance of euill doth in it ſelfe increaſe euill. Alas my *Dorus* (ſaid ſhe) thou ſeeſt how long and languiſhingly the weekes are paſt ouer vs ſince our laſt talking. And yet am I the ſame, miſerable I, that I was: onely ſtronger in longing, and weaker in hoping. Then fell ſhe to ſo pitifull a declaration of the inſupportablenes of her deſires, that *Dorus* eares (not able to ſhew what woundes that diſcourſe gaue vnto them) procured his eyes with teares to giue teſtimonie, how much they ſuffered for her ſuffering: till paſſion (a moſt cumberſome gueſt to it ſelfe) made *Zelmane* (the ſooner to ſhake it off) earneſtly intreate *Dorus*, that he alſo (with like freedome of diſcourſe) would beſtow a Mappe of his little world, vpon her; that ſhe might ſee, whether it were troubled with ſuch vnhabitable climes of colde deſpaires, and hot rages, as hers was. And ſo walking vnder a few Palme trees, (which being louing in their own nature, ſeemed to giue their ſhadow the willinglier, becauſe they held diſcourſe of loue) *Dorus* thus entred to the deſcription of his fortune. Alas (ſaid he) deare Coſin, that it hath pleaſed the high powers to throw vs to ſuch an eſtate, as the onely entercourſe of our true friendſhip, muſt be a bartring of miſeries. For my part, I muſt confeſſe indeede, that from a huge darkenes of ſorrowes, I am crept (I cannot ſay to a lightſomnes, but) to a certaine dawning, or rather, peeping out of ſome poſſibilitie of comfort: But woe is me, ſo farre from the marke of my deſires, that I rather thinke it ſuch a light, as comes through a ſmall hole to a dungeon, that the miſerable caitife may the better remember the light, of which he is depriued: or like a ſcholler, who is onely come to that degree of knowledge, to finde himſelfe vtterly ignorant. But thus ſtands it with me: After that by your meanes I was exalted to ſerue in yonder bleſſed lodge, for a while I had, in the furnace of my agonies, this refreſhing; that (becauſe of the ſeruice I had done in killing of the Beare) it pleaſed the Princeſſe (in whome indeede ſtatelines ſhines through courteſie) to let fall ſome gratious looke vpon me. Sometimes to ſee my exerciſes, ſometimes to heare my ſongs. For my part, my hart would not ſuffer me to omit any occaſion, whereby I might make the incomparable *Pamela*, ſee how much extraordinarie deuotion I bare to her ſeruice: and withall, ſtraue to appeare more worthy in her ſight; that ſmall deſert, ioyned to ſo great affection, might preuaile ſomething in the wiſeſt Ladie. But too well (alas) I found, that a ſhepheards ſeruice was but conſidered of as from a ſhepheard, and the acceptation limitted to no further proportion, then of a good ſeruant. And when my countenance had once giuen notice, that there lay affection vnder it, I ſawe ſtraight, Maieſty (ſitting in the throne of Beautie) drawe foorth ſuch a ſword of iuſt diſdaine, that I remayned as a man thunder-ſtriken; not daring, no not able, to behold that power. Now, to make my eſtate knowen, ſeemed againe impoſſible, by reaſon of the ſuſpitiouſnes of *Dametas*, *Miſo*, and my young Miſtreſſe, *Mopſa*. For, *Dametas* (according to the conſtitution of a dull head) thinkes no better way to ſhew himſelfe wiſe, then by ſuſpecting euery thing in his way.

Which

Which ſuſpition *Miſo* (for the hoggiſh ſhrewdneſſe of her braine) and *Mopſa* (for a very vnlikely enuie ſhe hath ſtumbled vpon, againſt the Princeſſes vnſpeakeable beautie) were very glad to execute. So that I (finding my ſeruice by this meanes lightlie regarded, my affection deſpiſed, and my ſelfe vnknowen) remayned no fuller of deſire, then voyd of counſell how to come to my deſire. Which (alas) if theſe trees could ſpeake, they might well witneſſe. For, many times haue I ſtoode here, bewailing my ſelfe vnto them: many times haue I, leaning to yonder Palme, admired the bleſſednes of it, that it could beare Loue without ſence of paine. Many times, when my maſters cattle came hether to chewe their cudde, in this freſh place, I might ſee the young Bull teſtifie his loue. But how? with proud lookes, and ioyfulnes. O wretched mankind (ſaid I then to my ſelfe) in whom wit (which ſhould be the gouerner of his welfare) becomes the traitor to his bleſſednes. Theſe beaſts, like children to nature, inherit her bleſſings quietly; we, like baſtards, are layd abroad, euen as foundlings to be trayned vp by griefe and ſorrow. Their mindes grudge not at their bodies comfort, nor their ſences are letted from enioying their obiects: we haue the impediments of honor, and the torments of conſcience. Truely in ſuch cogitations haue I ſomtimes ſo long ſtood, that me thought my feet began to grow into the ground, with ſuch a darkenes and heauines of minde, that I might eaſilie haue bene perſwaded to haue reſigned ouer my very eſſence. But Loue, (which one time layeth burthens, another time giueth wings) when I was at the loweſt of my downward thoughts, pulled vp my hart to remember, that nothing is atchieued before it be throughlie attempted; and that lying ſtill doth neuer goe forward: and that therefore it was time, now or neuer, to ſharpen my inuention, to pearce thorow the hardnes of this enterpriſe; neuer ceaſing to aſſemble all my conceites, one after the other, how to manifeſt both my mind and eſtate. Till at laſt, I lighted and reſolued on this way, which yet perchaunce you will thinke was a way rather to hide it. I began to counterfeite the extremeſt loue towards *Mopſa*, that might be: and as for the loue, ſo liuely it was indeed within me, (although to another ſubiect) that litle I needed to counterfait any notable demonſtrations of it: and ſo making a contrariety the place of my memory, in her fowlnes I beheld *Pamelas* fayreneſſe, ſtill looking on *Mopſa*, but thinking on *Pamela*; as if I ſawe my Sunne ſhine in a puddled water: I cryed out of nothing but *Mopſa*: to *Mopſa* my attendance was directed: to *Mopſa* the beſt fruites I could gather were brought: to *Mopſa* it ſeemed ſtill that mine eye conueyed my tongue. So that *Mopſa* was my ſaying; *Mopſa* was my ſinging; *Mopſa*, (that is onely ſuteable in laying a foule complexion vpon a filthy fauour, ſetting foorth both in ſluttiſhnes) ſhe was the load-ſtarre of my life, ſhe the bleſſing of mine eyes, ſhe the ouerthrowe of my deſires, and yet the recompence of my ouerthrowe; ſhe the ſweetneſſe of my hart, euen ſweetning the death, which her ſweetneſſe drew vpō me. In ſumme, what ſoeuer I thought of *Pamela*, that I ſaide of *Mopſa*; whereby as I gatte my maiſters good-will, who before ſpited me, fearing leſt I ſhould winne the Princeſſe fauour from him, ſo did the ſame make the Princeſſe the better content to allow me her preſence: whether indeede it were, that a certaine ſparke of noble indignation did riſe in her, not to ſuffer ſuch a baggage to winne away any thing of hers, how meanely ſoeuer ſhe reputed of it; or rather (as I thinke) my words being ſo paſſionate; and ſhooting ſo quite contrarie from the markes of *Mopſaes* worthineſſe, ſhe perceiued well enough, whither they were directed: and therfore

being

being ſo masked, ſhe was contented, as a ſporte of witte to attend them. Whereupon one day determining to finde ſome means to tell (as of a third perſon) the tale of mine owne loue, and eſtate, finding *Mopſa* (like a Cuckoo by a Nightingale) alone with *Pamela*, I came in vnto them, and with a face (I am ſure) full of clowdy fancies, tooke a harpe, and ſoong this ſong.

Since ſo mine eyes are ſubiect to your ſight,
That in your ſight they fixed haue my braine;
Since ſo my harte is filled with that light,
That onely light doth all my life maintaine;

Since in ſweete you all goods ſo richly raigne,
That where you are no wiſhed good can want;
Since ſo your liuing image liues in me,
That in my ſelfe your ſelfe true loue doth plant;
How can you him vnworthy then decree,
In whoſe chiefe parte your worthes implanted be?

The ſong being ended, which I had often broken of in the middeſt with grieuous ſighes, which ouertooke euery verſe I ſang, I let fall my harpe from me; and caſting my eye ſometime vpon *Mopſa*, but ſetling my ſight principally vpon *Pamela*, And is it the onely fortune moſt bewtifull *Mopſa* (ſaid I) of wretched *Dorus*, that fortune muſt be the meaſure of his mind? Am I onely he that becauſe I am in miſerie, more miſerie muſt be laid vpon me? muſt that which ſhould be cauſe of compaſſion, become an argument of cruelty againſt me? Alas excellent *Mopſa*, conſider, that a vertuous Prince requires the life of his meaneſt ſubiect, and the heauenly Sunne diſdaines not to giue light to the ſmalleſt worme. O *Mopſa*, *Mopſa*, if my hart could be as manifeſt to you, as it is vncomfortable to me, I doubt not the height of my thoughts ſhould well counteruaile the lowneſſe of my qualitie. Who hath not heard of the greatnes of your eſtate? who ſeeth not, that your eſtate is much excelled with that ſweet vniting of all beauties, which remaineth and dwelleth with you? who knowes not, that all theſe are but ornaments of that diuine ſparke within you, which being deſcended from heauen, could not els-where picke out ſo ſweete a manſion? But if you will knowe what is the bande that ought to knit all theſe excellencies together, it is a kinde mercyfulneſſe to ſuch a one, as is in his ſoule deuoted to thoſe perfections. *Mopſa* (who already had had a certaine ſmackring towards me) ſtood all this while with her hand ſometimes before her face, but moſt commonly with a certaine ſpeciall grace of her owne, wagging her lips, and grinning in ſteede of ſmiling: but all the words I could get of her, was, wrieng her waſte, and thruſting out her chinne, In faith you ieſt with me: you are a merry man indeede. But the euer-pleaſing *Pamela* (that well found the Comedie would be marred, if ſhe did not helpe *Mopſa* to her part) was content to vrge a little further of me. Maiſter *Dorus* (ſaid the faire *Pamela*) me thinks you blame your fortune very wrongfully, ſince the fault is not in Fortune, but in you that cannot frame your ſelfe to your fortune: and as wrongfully do require *Mopſa* to ſo great a diſparagement as to her Fathers ſeruaunt; ſince ſhe is not worthy to be loued, that hath not ſome feeling of her owne worthines. I ſtaied a good while after her words,

words, in hope ſhe would haue continued her ſpeech (ſo great a delight I receaued in hearing her) but ſeeing her ſay no further, (with a quaking all ouer my body) I thus anſwered her. Ladie, moſt worthie of all dutie, how falles it out that you in whom all vertue ſhines, will take the patronage of fortune, the onely rebellious handmaide againſt vertue? Eſpecially, ſince before your eyes, you haue a pittifull ſpectacle of her wickedneſſe, a forlorne creature, which muſt remaine not ſuch as I am, but ſuch as ſhe makes me, ſince ſhe muſt be the ballance of worthineſſe or diſparagement. Yet alas, if the condemned man (euen at his death) haue leaue to ſpeake, let my mortall wound purchaſe thus much conſideration; ſince the perfections are ſuch in the partie I loue, as the feeling of them cannot come into any vnnoble hart; ſhall that hart, which doth not onely feele them, but hath all the working of his life placed in them, ſhall that hart I ſaie, lifted vp to ſuch a height, be counted baſe? O let not an excellent ſpirit doo it ſelfe ſuch wrong, as to thinke, where it is placed, imbraced, and loued; there can be any vnworthineſſe, ſince the weakeſt miſt is not eaſilier driuen away by the Sunne, then that is chaſed away with ſo high thoughts. I will not denie (anſwered the gratious *Pamela*) but that the loue you beare to *Mopſa*, hath brought you to the conſideration of her vertues, and that conſideration may haue made you the more vertuous, and ſo the more worthie: But euen that then (you muſt confeſſe) you haue receiued of her, and ſo are rather gratefully to thanke her, then to preſſe any further, till you bring ſomething of your owne whereby to claime it. And truely *Dorus*, I muſt in *Mopſaes* behalfe ſay thus much to you, that if her beauties haue ſo ouertaken you, it becomes a true Loue to haue your harte more ſet vpon her good then your owne, & to beare a tenderer reſpect to her honour, then your ſatisfaction. Now by my hallidame, Madame (ſaid *Mopſa*, throwing a great number of ſheeps eyes vpon me) you haue euen touched mine owne minde to the quicke, forſooth. I (finding that the pollicie that I had vſed, had at leſt wiſe procured thus much happineſſe vnto me, as that I might euen in my Ladies preſence, diſcouer the ſore which had deepely feſtered within me, and that ſhe could better conceaue my reaſons applied to *Mopſa*, then ſhe would haue vouchſafed them, whileſt her ſelfe was a partie) thought good to purſue on my good beginning, vſing this fit occaſion of *Pamelaes* wit, and *Mopſaes* ignorance. Therefore with an humble pearcing eye, looking vpon *Pamela*, as if I had rather bene condemned by her mouth, then highly exalted by the other, turning my ſelfe to *Mopſa*, but keeping mine eye where it was, faire *Mopſa* (ſaid I) well doo I finde by the wiſe knitting together of your anſwere, that any diſputation I can vſe is aſmuch too weake, as I vnworthy. I find my loue ſhalbe proued no loue, without I leue to loue, being too vnfit a veſſell in whom ſo high thoughts ſhould be engraued. Yet ſince the Loue I beare you, hath ſo ioyned it ſelfe to the beſt part of my life, as the one can not depart, but that th'other will follow, before I ſeeke to obey you in making my laſt paſſage, let me know which is my vnworthines, either of mind, eſtate, or both? *Mopſa* was about to ſay, in neither; for her hart I thinke tumbled with ouermuch kindneſſe, when *Pamela* with a more fauourable countenance then before (finding how apt I was to fall into deſpaire) told me, I might therein haue anſwered my ſelfe; for beſides that it was graunted me, that the inward feeling of *Mopſaes* perfections had greatly beautified my minde, there was none could denie, but that my minde and bodie deſerued great allowance. But *Dorus* (ſayd ſhe) you muſt be

ſo

ſo farre maiſter of your loue, as to conſider, that ſince the iudgement of the world ſtands vpon matter of fortune, and that the ſexe of womankind of all other is moſt bound to haue regardfull eie to mens iudgements, it is not for vs to play the philoſophers, in ſeeking out your hidden vertues: ſince that, which in a wiſe prince would be counted wiſdome, in vs will be taken for a light-grounded affection: ſo is not one thing, one, done by diuers perſons. There is no man in a burning feuer feeles ſo great contentment in cold water greedily receiued (which aſſoone as the drinke ceaſeth, the rage reneweth) as poore I found my ſoule refreſhed with her ſweetly pronounced words; and newly, and more violently againe enflamed, aſſoone as ſhe had cloſed vp her delightfull ſpeech, with no leſſe well graced ſilence. But remembring in my ſelfe that aſwell the Souldier dieth which ſtandeth ſtill, as he that giues the braueſt onſet: and ſeeing that to the making vp of my fortune, there wanted nothing ſo much as the making knowne of mine eſtate, with a face well witneſſing how deeply my ſoule was poſſeſſed, and with the moſt ſubmiſſiue behauior, that a thralled hart could expreſſe, euen as my words had bene too thicke for my mouth, at length ſpake to this purpoſe. Alas, moſt worthy Princeſſe (ſaid I) and do not then your owne ſweet words ſufficiently teſtifie, that there was neuer man could haue a iuſter action againſt filthy fortune, then I, ſince all other things being granted me, her blindneſſe is my onely let? O heauenly God, I would either ſhe had ſuch eyes as were able to diſcerne my deſerts, or I were blind not to ſee the daily cauſe of my miſfortune. But yet (ſaid I) moſt honoured Lady, if my miſerable ſpeeches haue not already cloied you, and that the verie preſence of ſuch a wretch become not hatefull in your eyes: let me reply thus much further againſt my mortall ſentence, by telling you a ſtorie, which happened in this ſame country long ſince (for woes make the ſhorteſt time ſeeme long) whereby you ſhall ſee that my eſtate is not ſo contemptible, but that a Prince hath bene content to take the like vpon him, and by that onely hath aſpired to enioy a mightie Princeſſe. *Pamela* gratiouſly harkened, and I told my tale in this ſort.

In the countrie of *Theſſalia*, (alas why name I that accurſed country, which brings forth nothing, but matters for tragedies? but name it I muſt) in *Theſſalia* (I ſay) there was (well may I ſay, there was) a Prince (no, no Prince, whome bondage wholly poſſeſſed; but yet accounted a Prince, and) named *Muſidorus*. O *Muſidorus*, *Muſidorus*; but to what ſerue exclamations, where there are no eares to receiue the ſound? This *Muſidorus*, being yet in the tendreſt age, his worthy father paied to nature (with a violent death) her laſt duties, leauing his childe to the faith of his friends, and the proofe of time: death gaue him not ſuch pangs as the foreſight-full care he had of his ſilly ſucceſſour. And yet if in his foreſight he could haue ſeene ſo much, happie was that good Prince in his timely departure, which barred him from the knowledge of his ſonnes miſeries, which his knowledge could neither haue preuented, nor relieued. The young *Muſidorus* (being thus, as for the firſt pledge of the deſtenies good will, depriued of his principall ſtay) was yet for ſome yeares after (as if the ſtarres would breath themſelues for a greater miſchiefe) lulled vp in as much good luck, as the heedfull loue of his dolefull mother, and the floriſhing eſtate of his country could breed vnto him.

But when the time now came, that miſerie ſeemed to be ripe for him, becauſe he had age to knowe miſery, I thinke there was a conſpiracy in all heauenly and earthly things, to frame fit occaſions to leade him vnto it. His people (to whom all forraine

matters in foretime were odious) beganne to wiſh in their beloued Prince, experience by trauaile: his deare mother (whoſe eyes were held open, onely with the ioy of looking vpon him) did now diſpenſe with the comfort of her widowhead life, deſiring the ſame her ſubiectes did, for the increaſe of her ſonnes worthineſſe. And hereto did *Muſidorus* owne vertue (ſee how vertue can bee a miniſter to miſchiefe) ſufficiently prouoke him: for indeed thus much I muſt ſay for him, although the likeneſſe of our miſhaps makes me preſume to patterne my ſelfe vnto him) that well-doing was at that time his ſcope, from which no fāint pleaſure could with-hold him. But the preſent occaſion which did knit al this together, was his vncle the king of *Macedon*; who hauing lately before gotten ſuch victories, as were beyond expectation, did at this time ſend both for the Prince his ſonne (brought vp together, to auoid the warres, with *Muſidorus*) and for *Muſidorus* himſelfe, that his ioy might be the more full, hauing ſuch partakers of it. But alas, to what a ſea of miſeries my plaintfull toong doth lead me; & thus out of breath, rather with that I thought, then that I ſaid, I ſtayed my ſpeech, til *Pamela* ſhewing by countenāce that ſuch was her pleaſure, I thus continued it. Theſe two young Princes to ſatiſfie the king, tooke their way by ſea, towards *Thrace*, whether they would needs go with a Nauie to ſuccour him: he being at that time before *Bizantium* with a mighty Army beſeeging it; wher at that time his court was. But whē the cōſpired heauens had gotten this Subiect of their wrath vpō ſo fit a place as the ſea was, they ſtreight began to breath out in boyſtrous winds ſome part of their malice againſt him; ſo that with the loſſe of al his Nauie, he only with the Prince his coſin, were caſt a land, farre off from the place whether their deſires would haue guided them. O cruell windsin your vnconſiderate rages, why either began you this furie, or why did you not end it in his end? But your cruelty was ſuch, as you would ſpare his life for many deathfull torměts. To tell you what pittiful miſhaps fel to the young Prince of *Macedon* his coſē I ſhould too much fill your eares with ſtrange horrors; neither will I ſtay vpō thoſe laborſome aduentures, nor loathſome miſaduentures to which, and through which his fortune & courage cōducted him; My ſpeach haſteneth it ſelfe to come to the ful-point of *Muſidorus* infortunes. For as wee find the moſt peſtilent diſeaſes do gather into themſelues all the infirmities with which the body before was annoyed; ſo did his laſt miſery embrace in the extremitie of it ſelfe all his former miſchiefes.

Arcadia, Arcadia was the place prepared to be the ſtage of his endleſſe ouer-throw. *Arcadia* was, (alas wel might I ſay it is) the charmed circle, wher all his ſpirits for euer ſhould be enchaūted. For here (& no where els) did his infected eyes make his mind know, what power heauenly beauty hath to throw it down to helliſh agonies. Here, here did he ſee the *Arcadian* Kings eldeſt daughter in whom he forthwith placed ſo all his hopes of ioy, and ioyfull parts of his heart, that he left in himſelfe nothing, but a maze of longing, and a dungeon of ſorrow. But alas what can ſaying make them beleue, whom ſeeing cannot perſwade? Thoſe paines muſt be felt before they cā be vnderſtood; no outward vtterance can command a conceipt. Such vvas as then the ſtate of the King, as it vvas no time by direct meanes to ſeeke her. And ſuch vvas the ſtate of his captiued vvill, as he could delay no time of ſeeking her.

In this intangled caſe, he cloathed himſelfe in a ſhepheards vveede, that vnder the baſeneſſe of that forme, he might at leſt haue free acceſſe to feed his eyes vvith that, vvhich ſhould at length eate vp his hart. In vvhich doing, thus much vvithout doubt he hath manifeſted, that this eſtate is not alvvayes to be reiected, ſince vnder that vaile there may be hidden things to be eſteemed. And if he might vvith

taking on a ſhepherds looke caſt vp his eyes to the faireſt Princeſſe Nature in that time created; the like, nay the ſame deſire of mine neede no more to be diſdained, or held for diſgracefull. But now alas mine eyes waxe dimme, my toong beginnes to falter, and my hart to want force to helpe, either with the feeling remembrance I haue, in what heape of miſeries the caitiſe Prince lay at this time buried. Pardon therefore moſt excellent Princeſſe, if I cut off the courſe of my dolorous tale, ſince if I be vnderſtood, I haue ſaide enough, for the defence of my baſeneſſe; and for that which after might befal to that patterne of ill fortune, (the matters are too monſtrous for my capacitie) his hatefull deſtinies muſt beſt declare their owne workemanſhip.

Thus hauing deliuered my tale in this perplexed manner, to the end the Princeſſe might iudge that hee ment himſelfe, who ſpake ſo feelingly; her aunſwere was both ſtrange, and in ſome reſpect comfortable. For would you thinke it? ſhee hath heard heretofore of vs both, by meanes of the valiant Prince *Plangus*, and particularly of our caſting away: which ſhe (following my owne ſtile) thus delicately brought foorth. You haue told (ſaid ſhe) *Dorus*, a prettie tale; but you are much deceiued in the latter end of it. For the prince *Muſidorus* with his coſen *Pyrocles* did both periſh vpon the coaſt of *Laconia*; as a noble gentleman, called *Plangus* (who was well acquainted with the hiſtorie) did aſſure my father. O how that ſpeach of hers did poure ioyes in my hart? ô bleſſed name (thought I) of mine, ſince thou haſt bene in that toong, and paſſed through thoſe lips, though I can neuer hope to approch them. As for *Pyrocles* (ſaid I) I will not denie it, but that he is periſhed: (which I ſaid, leaſt ſooner ſuſpition might ariſe of your being here, then your ſelfe would haue it) and yet affirmed no lye vnto her, ſince I onely ſaid, I would not deny it. But for *Muſidorus* (ſaid I) I perceiue indeed you haue either heard or read the ſtory of that vnhappy Prince; for this was the verie obiection, which that peereleſſe Princeſſe did make vnto him, when he ſought to appeare ſuch as he was before her wiſdome: and thus as I haue read it faire written in the certaintie of my knowledge he might anſwere her, that indeed the ſhip wherein he came, by a treaſon was periſhed, and therefore that *Plangus* might eaſily be deceaued: but that he himſelfe was caſt vpon the coaſt of *Laconia*, where hee was taken vp by a couple of ſhepheardes, who liued in thoſe dayes famous; for that both louing one faire maide, they yet remained conſtant frinds; one of whoſe ſongs not long ſince was ſong before you by the ſhepheard *Lamon*, and brought by them to a noble-mans houſe, neere *Mantinea*, whoſe ſonne had a little before his mariage, bene taken priſoner, and by the helpe of this Prince, *Muſidorus* (though naming himſelfe by an other name) was deliuered. Now theſe circumlocutions I did vſe, becauſe of the one ſide I knewe the Princeſſe would knowe well the parties I ment; and of the other, if I ſhould haue named *Strephon*, *Claius*, *Kalander*, and *Clitophon*, perhappes it would haue rubd ſome coniecture into the heauie heade of Miſtreſſe *Mopſa*.

And therefore (ſaid I) moſt diuine Lady, he iuſtly was thus to argue againſt ſuch ſuſpitions; that the Prince might eaſily by thoſe parties be ſatisfied, that vpon that wrack ſuch a one was taken vp: and therefore that *Plangus* might well erre, who knew not of anies taking vp againe that hee that was ſo preſerued, brought good tokens to be one of the two, chiefe of that wracked companie: which two ſince *Plangus* knew to be *Muſidorus* and *Pyrocles*, hee muſt needes bee one of them, although (as I ſaide) vpon a foretaken vowe, he was otherwiſe at that time called. Beſides, the

Princeſſe

Princeſſe muſt needes iudge, that no leſſe then a Prince durſt vndertake ſuch an enterpriſe, which (though he might gette the fauour of the Princeſſe) he conld neuer defend with leſſe then a Princes power, againſt the force of *Arcadia*. Laſtly, (ſaide he) for a certaine demonſtration, he preſumed to ſhew vnto the Princeſſe a marke he had on his face, as I might (ſaid I) ſhew this of my neck to the rare *Mopſa:* and withall, ſhewed my necke to them both, where (as you know) there is a redde ſpotte, bearing figure (as they tell me) of a Lyons pawe, that ſhee may aſcertaine her ſelfe, that Iam *Menalcas* brother. And ſo did he, beſeeching her to ſend ſome one ſhe might truſt, into *Thſſalia*, ſecretly to bee aduertiſed, whether the age, the complexion, and particularly that notable ſigne, did not fully agree with their Prince *Muſidorus*. Doo you not know further (ſaide ſhe, with a ſetled countenance, not accuſing any kind of inward motion) of that ſtorie. Alas no, (ſaid I) for euen here the Hiſtoriographer ſtopped, ſaying, The reſt belonged to Aſtrologie. And therewith, thinking her ſilent imaginations began to worke vpon ſomewhat, to mollifie them (as the nature of Muſick is to do) and withall, to ſhew what kinde of ſhepheard I was, I took vp my Harpe, and ſang theſe few verſes.

MY ſheepe are thoughts, which I both guide and ſerue:
Their paſture is faire hilles of fruitleſſe Loue:
On barren ſweetes they feede, and feeding ſterue:
I waile their lotte, but will not other proue.
My ſheepehooke is wanne hope, which all vpholdes:
My weedes, Deſire, cut out in endleſſe foldes.
What wooll my ſheepe ſhall beare, whiles thus they liue,
In you it is, you muſt the iudgement giue.

And then, partly to bring *Mopſa* againe to the matter (leſt ſhe ſhould too much take heed to our diſcourſes) but principally, if it were poſſible, to gather ſome comfort out of her anſweares, I kneeled downe to the Princeſſe, and humblie beſought her to moue *Mopſa* in my behalfe, that ſhe would vnarme her noble hart of that ſteely reſiſtance againſt the ſweet blowes of Loue: that ſince all her parts were decked with ſome particular ornament; her face with beautie, her head with wiſdome, her eyes with maieſtie, her countenance with gracefulnes, her lippes with louelines, her tongue with victorie; that ſhee woulde make her hart the throne of pitie, being the moſt excellent rayment of the moſt excellent part.

Pamela, without ſhew either of fauour or diſdaine, either of heeding or neglecting what I had ſaid, turned her ſpeech to *Mopſa*, and with ſuch a voice and action, as might ſhewe ſhee ſpake of a matter which little did concerne her, Take heede to your ſelfe (ſaide ſhee) *Mopſa*, for your ſhepheard can ſpeake well: but truely, if he doo fully proue himſelfe ſuch as he ſaith, I mean, the honeſt ſhepheard *Menalchas* his brother, and heire I knowe no reaſon why you ſhoulde thinke ſcorne of him. *Mopſa* though (in my conſcience) ſhee were euen then farre ſpent towards me, yet ſhe anſwered her, that for all my queint ſpeeches, ſhee woulde keepe her honeſtie cloſe inough: And that as for the way of matrimony, ſhee woulde ſteppe neuer a foote further, till my Maiſter her father had ſpoken the whole word him ſelfe, no ſhee woulde not. But euer and anon turning her muzzell toward me, ſhee threwe ſuch a proſpect vpon mee, as might well haue giuen a ſurfet to any

weake louers ſtomacke. But Lord what a foole am I, to mingle that driuels ſpeeches among my noble thoughts? but becauſe ſhee was an Actor in this Tragedie, to geue you a full knowledge, and to leaue nothing (that I can remember) vnrepeated.

Now the Princeſſe being about to withdrawe her ſelfe from vs, I tooke a Iewell made in the figure of a Crab-fiſh, which, becauſe it lookes one way and goes another, I thought it did fitly patterne out my looking to *Mopſa*, but bending to *Pamela*: The word about it was, *By force, not choice*; and ſtill kneeling, beſought the Princeſſe that ſhe would vouchſafe to giue it *Mopſa*, and with the bleſſednes of her hande to make acceptable vnto her that toye which I had founde, followinge of late an acquaintaunce of mine at the plowe. For (ſaid I) as the earth was turned vp, the plowe-ſhare lighted vpon a great ſtone: we puld that vp, and ſo found both that, and ſome other prety thinges which we had deuided betwixt vs.

Mopſa was benummed with ioy when the Princeſſe gaue it her: but in the Princeſſe I could finde no apprehenſion of what I either ſaid or did, but with a calme careleſneſſe letting each thing ſlide, iuſtly as we doo by their ſpeeches, (who neither in matter nor perſon doo any way belong vnto vs) which kinde of colde temper, mixt with that lightning of her naturall maieſtie, is of all others moſt terrible vnto me: for yet if I found ſhe contemned mee, I would deſperatly labour both in fortune and vertue to ouercome it; if ſhe onely miſdoubted me, I were in heauen; for quickly I woulde bring ſufficient aſſurance: laſtly, if ſhee hated me, yet I ſhoulde know what paſſion to deale with; and either with infinitenes of deſert I woulde take away the fewell from that fire; or if nothing would ſerue, then I vvould giue her my hart-bloud to quench it. But this cruell quietnes, neither retiring to miſlike nor proceeding to fauour; gratious, but gratious ſtill after one manner; all her courteſies hauing this engrauen in them, that what is done, is for vertues ſake, not for the parties (euer keeping her courſe like the Sun, who neither for our prayſes, nor curſes, will ſpurre or ſtoppe his horſes). This (I ſay) heauenlynes of hers. (for how ſo euer my miſerie is I cannot but ſo entitle it) is ſo impoſſible to reach vnto, that I almoſt begin to ſubmitte my ſelfe to the tyrannie of deſpaire, not knowing any way of perſwaſion, where wiſdome ſeemes to be vnſenſible. I haue appeared to her eyes, like my ſelfe, by a deuice I vſed with my maſter, perſwading him, that we two might put on certaine rich apparrel I had prouided, and ſo practiſe ſome thing on horsback before *Pamela*, telling him, it was apparel I had gotten for playing well the part of a King in a Tragedie at *Athens*: my horſe indeed was it I had left at *Menalcas* houſe, and *Dametas* got one by friendſhip out of the Princes ſtable. But how ſoeuer I ſhowe, I am no baſe bodie, all I doo is but to beate a rocke and get ſome.

But as *Dorus* was about to tell further, *Dametas* (who came whiſtling, and counting vpō his fingers, how many loade of hay his ſeuenteen fat oxen eat vp in a yeare) deſired *Zelmane* from the King that ſhe would come into the lodge, where they ſtayed for her. Alas (ſaide *Dorus*, taking his leaue) the ſum is this, that you may well finde you haue beaten your ſorrow againſt ſuch a wall, which with the force of rebound may well make your ſorrow ſtronger. But *Zelmane* turning her ſpeach to *Dametas*, I ſhall grow (ſaide ſhee) skilfull in country matters, if I haue often conference with your ſeruaunt. In ſooth (anſwered *Dametas* with a graceleſſe skorne) the Lad may proue well enough, if hee ouerſoon thinke not too well of himſelfe, and will

beare

beare away that hee heareth of his elders. And therewith as they walked to the other lodge, to make *Zelmane* find ſhee might haue ſpent her time better with him, he began with a wilde Methode to runne ouer all the art of husbandrie: eſpecially imploying his tongue about well dunging of a fielde: while poore *Zelmane* yeelded her eares to thoſe tedious ſtrokes, not warding them ſo much as with any one anſwere, till they came to *Baſilius*, and *Gynecia*, who attended for her in a coach to carrie her abroad to ſee ſome ſportes prepared for her. *Baſilius*, and *Gynecia* ſitting in the one ende, placed her at the other, with her left ſide to *Philoclea*. *Zelmane* was moued in her minde, to haue kiſſed their feete for the fauour of ſo bleſſed a ſeate: for the narrowneſſe of the coach made them ioine from the foote to the ſhoulders very cloſe together; the truer touch whereof though it were barred by their enuious apparell, yet as a perfect Magnes, though but in an iuorie boxe will thorow the boxe ſende foorth his imbracing vertue to a beloued needle; ſo this imparadiſed neighbourhood made *Zelmanes* ſoule cleaue vnto her, both thorow the iuory caſe of her body, and the apparell which did ouer-clowd it. All the bloud of *Zelmanes* body ſtirring in her, as wine will do when ſuger is haſtely put into it, ſeeking to ſucke the ſweetnes of the beloued gueſt; her hart, like a lion new impriſoned, ſeeing him that reſtraines his libertie, before the grate; not panting, but ſtriuing violently (if it had bene poſſible) to haue leapt into the lappe of *Philoclea*. But *Dametas*, euen then proceeding from being maiſter of a carte, to bee doctor of a coach, not a little prowd in himſelfe, that his whippe at that time guided the rule of *Arcadia*, draue the coach (the couer whereof was made with ſuch ioints, that as they might (to auoid the weather) pull it vp cloſe when they liſted, ſo when they would they might put each ende downe, and remaine as diſcouered and open ſighted as on horſebacke) till vpon the ſide of the forreſt they had both greyhounds, ſpaniels, and hounds: whereof the firſt might ſeeme the Lordes, the ſecond the Gentlemen, and the laſt the Yeomen of dogges; a caſt of Merlins there was beſides, which flying of a gallant height ouer certaine buſhes, woulde beate the birdes (that roſe) downe vnto the buſhes, as Falcons will doo wilde-foule ouer a riuer. But the ſporte which for that daie *Baſilius* would principallie ſhewe to *Zelmane*, was the mountie at a Hearne, which getting vp on his wagling winges vvith paine, till he vvas come to ſome height, (as though the aire next to the earth vvere not fit for his great bodie to flie thorow) vvas now growen to diminiſh the ſight of himſelfe, and to giue example to great perſons, that the higher they be, the leſſe they ſhould ſhovv: vvhen a Ierfaulcon vvas caſt of after her, vvho ſtreight ſpying vvhere the pray vvas, fixing her eie vvith deſire, and guiding her vving by her eie, vſed no more ſtrength then induſtry. For as a good builder to a hie tower vvill not make his ſtayre vpright, but vvinding almoſt the full compaſſe about, that the ſteepnes be the more vnſenſible: ſo ſhee, ſeeing the tovvring of her purſued chaſe, vvent circkling, and compaſſing about, riſing ſo vvith the leſſe ſence of riſing; and yet finding that vvay ſcantly ſerue the greedines of her haſt, as an ambitious bodie vvill go far out of the direct vvay, to vvin to a point of height vvhich he deſires; ſo would ſhee (as it were) turne taile to the Heron, and flie quite out another way, but all was to returne in a higher pitch; which once gotten, ſhe would either beate with cruell aſſaults the Heron, who now was driuen to the beſt defence of force, ſince flight would not ſerue; or els claſping with him, come downe together, to be parted by the ouer-partiall beholders.

Diuers of which flights *Baſilius* ſhewing to *Zelmane*, thus was the richeſſe of the time ſpent, and the day deceaſſed before it was thought of, till night like a degenerating ſucceſſour made his departure the better remembred. And therefore (ſo conſtrained) they willed *Dametas* to driue homeward, who (halfe ſleeping, halfe muſing about the mending of a wine-preſſe) guided the horſes ſo ill, that the wheele comming ouer a great ſtub of a tree, it ouerturned the coach. Which though it fell violently vpon the ſide where *Zelmane* and *Gynecia* ſat, yet for *Zelmanes* part, ſhe would haue bene glad of the fall, which made her beare the ſweete burthen of *Philoclea*, but that ſhee feared ſhee might receaue ſome hurt. But indeede neither ſhee did, nor any of the reſt, by reaſon they kept their armes and legs within the coach, ſauing *Gynecia*, who with the onely bruze of the fall had her ſhoulder put out of ioinct; which though by one of the Faulkeners cunning, it was ſet well againe, yet with much paine was ſhe brought to the lodge; and paine (fetching his ordinary companion, a feuer with him draue her to entertaine them both in her bedde.

But neither was the feuer of ſuch impatient heate, as the inwarde plague-ſore of her affection, nor the paine halfe ſo noyſome, as the iealouſie ſhee conceaued of her daughter *Philoclea*, leſt this time of her ſickneſſe might giue apt occaſion to *Zelmane*, whom ſhee miſdoubted. Therefore ſhe called *Philoclea* to her, and though it were late in the night, commaũded her in her eare to go to the other lodge, and ſend *Miſo* to her, with whom ſhe would ſpeak, and ſhee lie with her ſiſter *Pamela*. The meane while *Gynecia* kept *Zelmane* with her, becauſe ſhe would be ſure, ſhe ſhould be out of the lodge, before ſhe licenced *Zelmane*. *Philoclea* not skild in any thing better then obedience, went quietly downe; and the Moone then full (not thinking skorne to be a torch-bearer to ſuch beautie) guided her ſteppes, whoſe motions beare a mind which bare in it ſelfe farre more ſtirring motions. And alas (ſweete *Philoclea*) how hath my penne til now forgot thy paſſions, ſince to thy memorie principally all this long matter is intended? pardon the ſlacknes to come to thoſe woes, which hauing cauſed in others, thou didſt feele in thy ſelfe.

The ſweete minded *Philoclea* was in their degree of wel doing, to whom the not knowing of euill ſerueth for a ground of vertue, and hold their inward powers in better forme with an vnſpotted ſimplicitie, then many, who rather cunningly ſeeke to know what goodnes is, then willingly take into themſelues the following of it. But as that ſweet and ſimple breath of heauenly goodneſſe, is the eaſier to bee altered, becauſe it hath not paſſed through the worldlie wickedneſſe, nor feelingly found the euill, that euill caries with it; ſo now the Ladie *Philoclea* (whoſe eyes and ſenſes had receaued nothing, but according as the naturall courſe of each thing required; whoſe tender youth had obediently liued vnder her parents beheſts, without framing out of her owne will the fore-choſing of any thing) when now ſhee came to appoint, wherein her iudgement was to be practized, in knowing faultines by his firſt tokens, ſhe was like a yong faune, who comming in the wind of the hunters, doth not know whether it be a thing or no to bee eſchewed; whereof at this time ſhe began to get a coſtly experience. For after that *Zelmane* had a while liued in the lodge with her, and that her onely being a noble ſtraunger had bred a kind of heedfull attention; her comming to that lonely place (where ſhe had no body but her parents) a willingnes of conuerſation; her wit & behauiour, a liking and ſilent admiration; at length the excellency of her naturall gifts, ioined with the extreme ſhewes ſhe made of moſt deuout honouring *Philoclea*, (carying thus in one perſon

the

the only two bands of good will, louelines and louingnes) brought forth in her hart a yeelding to a moſt friendly affection; which when it had gotten ſo full poſſeſſion of the keies of her mind, that it would receaue no meſſage from her ſenſes, without that affection were the interpreter; then ſtreight grew an exceeding delight ſtill to be with her, with an vnmeaſurable liking of all that *Zelmane* did: matters being ſo turned in her, that where at firſt, liking her manners did breed good-will, now good-will became the chiefe cauſe of liking her manners: ſo that within a while *Zelmane* was not prized for her demeanure, but the demeanure was prized becauſe it was *Zelmanes*. Then followed that moſt naturall effect of conforming ones ſelfe to that, which ſhe did like, and not onely wiſhing to be her ſelfe ſuch an other in all things, but to ground an imitation vpon ſo much an eſteemed authoritie: ſo that the next degree was to marke all *Zelmanes* dooings, ſpeeches, and faſhions, and to take them into her ſelfe, as a patterne of worthie proceeding. Which when once it was enacted, not onely by the comminaltie of Paſſions, but agreed vnto by her moſt noble Thoughts, and that by Reaſon it ſelfe (not yet experienced in the iſſues of ſuch matters) had granted his royall aſſent; then Friendſhip (a diligent officer) tooke care to ſee the ſtatute thorowly obſerued. Then grew on that not onely ſhe did imitate the ſobernes of her countenance, the gracefulneſſe of her ſpeech, but euen their particular geſtures: ſo that as *Zelmane* did often eye her, ſhe would often eye *Zelmane*; and as *Zelmanes* eyes would deliuer a ſubmiſſiue, but vehement deſire in their looke, ſhe, though as yet ſhe had not the deſire in her, yet ſhould her eyes anſwere in like pearcing kindneſſe of a looke. *Zelmane* as much as *Gynecias* iealouſie would ſuffer, deſired to be neere *Philoclea*; *Philoclea*, as much as *Gynecias* iealouſie would ſuffer, deſired to be neere *Zelmane*. If *Zelmane* tooke her hand, and ſoftly ſtrained it, ſhe alſo (thinking the knots of friendſhip ought to be mutuall) would (with a ſweete faſtnes) ſhew ſhe was loth to part from it. And if *Zelmane* ſighed, ſhe would ſigh alſo; when *Zelmane* was ſad, ſhe deemed it wiſdome, and therefore ſhe would be ſad too. *Zelmanes* languiſhing countenance with croſt armes, and ſometimes caſt-vp eyes, ſhe thought to haue an excellent grace: and therefore ſhe alſo willingly put on the ſame countenance: till at the laſt (poore ſoule, ere ſhe were aware) ſhe accepted not onely the badge, but the ſeruice; not only the ſigne, but the paſſion ſignified. For whether it were, that her wit in continuance did finde, that *Zelmanes* friendſhip was full of impatient deſire, hauing more then ordinarie limits, and therfore ſhe was content to ſecond *Zelmane*, though her ſelfe knew not the limits; or that in truth, true-loue (well conſidered) haue an infectiue power. At laſt ſhe fell in acquaintance with loues harbinger, wiſhing. Firſt ſhe would wiſh, that they two might liue all their liues together, like two of *Dianas* Nimphes. But that wiſh, ſhe thought not ſufficient, becauſe ſhe knew, there would be more Nimphes beſides them, who alſo would haue their part in *Zelmane*. Then would ſhe wiſh, that ſhe were her ſiſter, that ſuch a naturall band might make her more ſpeciall to her. But againſt that, ſhe conſidered, that though being her ſiſter, if ſhe happened to be married, ſhe ſhould be robbed of her. Then growne bolder, ſhe would wiſh either her ſelfe, or *Zelmane* a man, that there might ſucceed a bleſſed marriage betwixt them. But when that wiſh had once diſplaied his enſigne in her minde, then followed whole ſquadrons of longings, that ſo it might be, with a maine battaile of miſlikings, and repynings againſt their creation, that ſo it was not. Then dreames by night began to bring more vnto her, then ſhe durſt wiſh by day,

where-out making did make her know her ſelfe the better by the image of thoſe fancies. But as ſome diſeaſes when they are eaſie to be cured, they are hard to be knowne, but when they grow eaſie to be knowne, they are almoſt impoſſible to be cured: ſo the ſweete *Philoclea*, while ſhe might preuent it, ſhe did not feele it, now ſhe felt it, when it was paſt preuenting; like a riuer, no rampiers being built againſt it, till alreadie it haue ouerflowed. For now indeed, Loue puld off his maske, and ſhewed his face vnto her, and told her plainly, that ſhee was his priſoner. Then needed ſhe no more paint her face with paſſions; for paſſions ſhone thorow her face; Then her roſie coulor was often encreaſed with extraordinarie bluſhing: and ſo another time, perfect whitneſſe deſcended to a degree of paleneſſe; now hot, then cold, deſiring ſhe knewe not what, nor how, if ſhe knew what. Then her minde (though too late) by the ſmart was brought to thinke of the diſeaſe, and her owne proofe taught her to know her mothers minde; which (as no error giues ſo ſtrong aſſault, as that which comes armed in the authoritie of a parent) ſo greatly fortified her deſires, to ſee, that her mother had the like deſires. And the more iealous her mother was, the more ſhe thought the Iewell precious, which was with ſo many lookes garded. But that preuailing ſo farre, as to keepe the two louers from priuate conference, then began ſhe to feele the ſweetneſſe of a louers ſolitarineſſe, when freely with words and geſtures, as if *Zelmane* were preſent, ſhee might giue paſſage to her thoughts, and ſo as it were vtter out ſome ſmoke of thoſe flames, wherewith elſe ſhe was not only burned, but ſmothered. As this night, that going from the one lodge to the other by her mothers commandement, with dolefull geſtures and vncertaine paces, ſhee did willingly accept the times offer, to be a while alone: ſo that going a little aſide into the wood; where manie times before ſhe had delighted to walke, her eyes were ſaluted with a tuft of trees, ſo cloſe ſet together, as with the ſhade the moone gaue thorow it, it might breede a fearefull kinde of deuotion to looke vpon it. But true thoughts of loue baniſhed all vaine fancie of ſuperſtition. Full well ſhe did both remember and like the place; for there had ſhe often with their ſhade beguiled *Phœbus* of looking vpon her: There had ſhe enioyed her ſelfe often, while ſhe was miſtreſſe of her ſelfe, and had no other thoughts, but ſuch as might ariſe out of quiet ſenſes.

But the principall cauſe that inuited her remembrance, was a goodly white marble ſtone, that ſhould ſeeme had bene dedicated in ancient time to the *Siluan* gods: which ſhe finding there a fewe dayes before *Zelmanes* comming, had written theſe words vpon it, as a teſtimonie of her mind, againſt the ſuſpition her captiuitie made her thinke ſhe liued in. The writing was this.

You liuing powres encloſed in ſtately ſhrine
Of growing trees: you rurall Gods that wield
Your ſcepters here, if to your eares diuine
A voice may come, which troubled ſoule doth yeld:
This vowe receaue, this vowe ô Gods maintaine;
My virgin life no ſpotted thought ſhall ſtaine.

Thou pureſt ſtone, whoſe pureneſſe doth preſent
My pureſt minde; whoſe temper hard doth ſhowe
My tempred hart; by thee my promiſe ſent

Vnto my ſelfe let after-liuers know.
No fancy mine, nor others wrong ſuſpect
Make me, ô vertuous Shame, thy lawes neglect.

O Chaſtitie, the chiefe of heauenly lightes,
Which makſt vs moſt immortall ſhape to weare,
Holde thou my hart, eſtabliſh thou my ſprights;
To onely thee my conſtant courſe I beare.
Till ſpotleſſe ſoule vnto thy boſome flye,
Such life to leade, ſuch death I vow to dye.

But now that her memorie ſerued as an accuſer of her change, and that her own hand-writing was there, to beare teſtimony againſt her fall; ſhe went in among thoſe few trees, ſo cloſed in the toppes together, as they might ſeeme a little chappell: and there might ſhe by the help of the moone-light perceiue the goodly ſtone, which ſerued as an altar in that wooddie deuotion. But neither the light was enough to reade the words, and the inke was alreadie foreworne, and in many places blotted: which as ſhe perceaued, Alas (ſaid ſhe) faire Marble, which neuer receiuedſt ſpot but by my writing, well do theſe blots become a blotted writer. But pardon her which did not diſſemble then, although ſhe haue chaunged ſince. Enioy, enioy the glorie of thy nature, which can ſo conſtantly beare the markes of my inconſtancie. And herewith hiding her eyes with her ſoft hand, there came into her head certaine verſes, which if ſhe had had preſent commoditie, ſhe would haue adioyned as a retractation to the other. They were to this effect.

MY words, in hope to blaze my ſtedfaſt minde,
This marble choſe, as of like temper knowne:
But loe, my words defaſte, my fancies blinde,
Blots to the ſtone, ſhames to my ſelfe I finde:
And witneſſe am, how ill agree in one,
A womans hand with conſtant marble ſtone.

My words full weake, the marble full of might;
My words in ſtore, the marble all alone;
My words blacke inke, the marble kindly white;
My words vnſeene, the marble ſtill in ſight,
May witneſſe beare, how ill agree in one,
A womans hand, with conſtant marble ſtone.

But ſeeing ſhe could not ſee meanes to ioyne as then this recantation to the former vowe, (laying all her faire length vnder one of the trees) for a while ſhe did nothing but turne vp and downe, as if ſhe had hoped to turne away the fancie that maſtred her, and hid her face, as if ſhe could haue hidden her ſelfe from her owne fancies. At length with a whiſpring note to her ſelfe; O me vnfortunate wretch (ſaid ſhe) what poyſonous heates be theſe, which thus torment me? How hath the ſight of this ſtrange gueſt inuaded my ſoule? Alas, what entrance found this deſire, or what ſtrength had it thus to conquer me? Then, a cloud paſſing betweene

tweene her ſight and the moone, O *Diana* (ſaid ſhe) I would either the cloud that now hides the light of my vertue would as eaſily paſſe away, as you will quickly ouercome this let; or els that you were for euer thus darkned, to ſerue for an excuſe of my outragious folly. Then looking to the ſtarres, which had perfitly as then beautified the cleere skie: My parents (ſaid ſhe) haue told me, that in theſe faire heauenly bodies, there are great hidden deities, which haue their working in the ebbing and flowing of our eſtates. If it be ſo, then (O you Stars) iudge rightly of me, and if I haue with wicked intent made my ſelfe a pray to fancie, or if by any idle luſtes I framed my hart fit for ſuch an impreſſion, then let this plague dayly encreaſe in me, till my name be made odious to womankind. But if extreame and vnreſiſtable violence haue oppreſſed me, who will euer do any of you ſacrifice (ô you Starres) if you do not ſuccour me. No, no, you will not help me. No, no, you can not help me: Sinne muſt be the mother, and ſhame the daughter of my affection. And yet are theſe but childiſh obiections (ſimple *Philoclea*) it is the impoſſibilitie that dooth torment me: for, vnlawfull deſires are puniſhed after the effect of enioying; but vnpoſſible deſires are puniſhed in the deſire it ſelfe. O then, ô tenne times vnhappie that I am, ſince where in all other hope kindleth loue; in me deſpaire ſhould be the bellowes of my affection: and of all deſpaires the moſt miſerable, which is drawen from impoſſibilitie. The moſt couetous man longs not to get riches out of a ground which neuer can beare any thing; Why? becauſe it is impoſſible. The moſt ambitious wight vexeth not his wits to clime into heauen; Why? becauſe it is impoſſible. Alas then, ô Loue, why dooſt thou in thy beautifull ſampler ſet ſuch a worke for my Deſire to take out, which is as much impoſſible? And yet alas, why doo I thus condemne my Fortune, before I heare what ſhe can ſay for her ſelfe? What doo I, fillie wench, knowe what Loue hath prepared for mee? Doo I not ſee my mother, as well, at leſt as furiouſlie as my ſelfe, loue *Zelmane*? And ſhould I be wiſer then my mother? Either ſhe ſees a poſſibilitie in that which I thinke impoſſible, or els impoſſible loues neede not misbecome me. And doo I not ſee *Zelmane* (who doth not thinke a thought which is not firſt wayed by wiſdome and vertue) doth not ſhe vouchſafe to loue me with like ardour? I ſee it, her eyes depoſe it to be true; what then? and if ſhe can loue poore me, ſhall I thinke ſcorne to loue ſuch a woman as *Zelmane*? Away then all vaine examinations of why and how. Thou loueſt me, excellent *Zelmane*, and I loue thee: and with that, embraſing the very ground whereon ſhe lay, ſhe ſaid to her ſelfe (for euen to her ſelfe ſhe was aſhamed to ſpeake it out in words) O my *Zelmane*, gouerne and direct me: for I am wholy giuen ouer vnto thee.

In this depth of muzes, and diuers ſorts of diſcourſes, would ſhe rauingly haue remained, but that *Dametas* and *Miſo* (who were round about to ſeeke her, vnderſtanding ſhe was to come to their lodge that night) came hard by her; *Dametas* ſaying, That he would not deale in other bodies matters; but for his part, he did not like that maides ſhould once ſtirre out of their fathers houſes, but if it were to milke a cow, or ſaue a chicken from a kites foot, or ſome ſuch other matter of importance. And *Miſo* ſwearing that if it were her daughter *Mopſa*, ſhe would giue her a leſſon for walking ſo late, that ſhould make her keepe within dores for one fortnight. But their iangling made *Philoclea* riſe, and pretending as though ſhe had done it but to ſport with them, went with them (after ſhe had willed *Miſo* to waite vpon her mother) to the lodge; where (being now accuſtomed by her parents diſcipline, as well

as her ſiſter, to ſerue her ſelfe) ſhe went alone vp to *Pamelas* chamber: where meaning to delight her eies, and ioy her thoughts with the ſweet conuerſation of her beloued ſiſter, ſhe found her (though it were in the time that the wings of night doth blow ſleep moſt willingly into mortall creatures) ſitting in a chaire, lying backward, with her head almoſt ouer the back of it, and looking vpon a wax-candle which burnt before her; in one hand holding a letter, in the other her hand-kerchiefe, which had lately dronke vp the teares of her eyes, leauing in ſteed of them, crimſen circles, like redde flakes in the element, when the weather is hotteſt. Which *Philoclea* finding (for her eyes had learned to know the badges of ſorow) ſhe earneſtlie intreated to know the cauſe thereof, that either ſhe might comfort, or accompanie her dolefull humor. But *Pamela*, rather ſeeming ſorie that ſhe had perceiued ſo much, then willing to open any further, O my *Pamela* (ſaid *Philoclea*) who are to me a ſiſter in nature, a mother in counſell, a Princeſſe by the law of our countrey, and which name (me thinke) of all other is the deareſt, a friend by my choice and your fauour, what meanes this baniſhing me from your counſels? Do you loue your ſorrowe ſo well, as to grudge me part of it? Or doo you thinke I ſhall not loue a ſad *Pamela*, ſo well as a ioyfull? Or be my eares vnworthie, or my tongue ſuſpected? What is it (my ſiſter) that you ſhould conceale from your ſiſter, yea and ſeruant *Philoclea*? Theſe words wanne no further of *Pamela*, but that telling her they might talke better as they lay together, they impoueriſhed their cloathes to inrich their bed, which for that night might well ſcorne the ſhrine of *Venus*: and there cheriſhing one another with deare, though chaſte embracements; with ſweet, though cold kiſſes; it might ſeeme that Loue was come to play him there without darte; or that weerie of his owne fires, he was there to refreſh himſelfe betweene their ſweete-breathing lippes. But *Philoclea* earneſtly againe intreated *Pamela* to open her griefe; who (drawing the curtaine, that the candle might not complaine of her bluſhing) was ready to ſpeake: but the breath almoſt formed into words, was againe ſtopt by her, and turned into ſighes. But at laſt, I pray you (ſaid ſhe) ſweete *Philoclea*, let vs talke of ſome other thing: and tell me whether you did euer ſee any thing ſo amended as our Paſtorall ſports be, ſince that *Dorus* came hether? O Loue, how farre thou ſeeſt with blind eyes? *Philoclea* had ſtraight found her, and therefore to draw out more, In deed (ſaid ſhe) I haue often wondred to my ſelfe how ſuch excellencies could be in ſo meane a perſon; but belike Fortune was afraide to lay her treaſures, where they ſhould be ſtaind with ſo many perfections: onely I maruaile how he can frame himſelfe to hide ſo rare giftes vnder ſuch a block as *Dametas*. Ah (ſaid *Pamela*) if you knew the cauſe: but no more doo I neither; and to ſay the trueth: but Lord, how are we falne to talke of this fellow? and yet indeed if you were ſometimes with me to marke him, while *Dametas* reades his ruſticke lecture vnto him (how to feede his beaſtes before noone, where to ſhade them in the extreame heate, how to make the manger hanſome for his oxen, when to vſe the goade, and when the voice: giuing him rules of a heardman, though he pretend to make him a ſhepheard) to ſee all the while with what a grace (which ſeemes to ſet a crowne vpon his baſe eſtate) he can deſcend to thoſe poore matters, certainly you would: but to what ſerues this? no doubt we were better ſleepe then talke of theſe idle matters. Ah my *Pamela* (ſaid *Philoclea*) I haue caught you, the conſtancy of your wit was not wont to bring forth ſuch diſiointed ſpeeches: you loue, diſſemble no further. It is true (ſaid *Pamela*) now you haue it; and with leſſe

adoo

adoo ſhould, if my hart could haue thought thoſe words ſuteable for my mouth. But indeed (my *Philoclea*) take heed: for I thinke Vertue it ſelfe is no armour of proofe againſt affection. Therefore learne by my example. Alas thought *Philoclea* to her ſelfe, your ſheares come too late to clip the birds wings that already is flowne away. But then *Pamela* being once ſet in the ſtreame of her loue, went away amaine withall, telling her how his noble qualities had drawne her liking towardes him; but yet euer waying his meanenes, and ſo held continually in due limits; till ſeeking many meanes to ſpeake with her, and euer kept from it (as well becauſe ſhe ſhund it, ſeing and diſdaining his mind, as becauſe of her iealous iaylours) he had at length vſed the fineſt pollicie that might be in counterfaiting loue to *Mopſa*, and ſaying to *Mopſa* what ſoeuer he would haue her know: and in how paſſionate manner he had told his owne tale in a third perſon, making poore *Mopſa* beleeue, that it was a matter fallen out many ages before. And in the end, becauſe you ſhall know my teares come not, neither of repentance nor miſery, who thinke you, is my *Dorus* fallen out to be? euen the Prince *Muſidorus*, famous ouer all *Aſia*, for his heroicall enterpriſes, of whom you remember how much good the ſtraunger *Plangus* told my father; he not being drowned (as *Plangus* thought) though his couſin *Pyrocles* indeed periſhed. Ah my ſiſter, if you had heard his words, or ſeene his geſtures, when he made me know what, and to whom his loue was, you would haue matched in your ſelfe (thoſe two rarely matched together) pittie and delight. Tell me dear ſiſter (for the Gods are my witneſſes I deſire to do vertuouſly) can I without the deteſtable ſtaine of vngrateſulneſſe abſtaine from louing him, who (far exceeding the beautifulneſſe of his ſhape with the beautifulneſſe of his minde, and the greatneſſe of his eſtate with the greatneſſe of his actes) is content ſo to abaſe him ſelfe, as to become *Dametas* ſeruaunt for my ſake? you will ſay, but how know I him to be *Muſidorus*, ſince the handmaid of wiſdome is ſlow beliefe? That conſideration did not want in me: for the nature of deſire it ſelfe is no eaſier to receiue beliefe, then it is hard to ground beliefe. For as deſire is glad to embrace the firſt ſhew of comfort, ſo is deſire deſirous of perfect aſſurance: and that haue I had of him, not onely by neceſſary arguments to any of common ſenſe, but by ſufficient demonſtrations. Laſtly he would haue me ſend to *Theſſalia*: but truly I am not as now in mind to do my honorable Loue ſo much wrong, as ſo far to ſuſpect him: yet poore ſoule knowes he no other, but that I doo both ſuſpect, neglect, yea and deteſt him. For euery day he finds one way or other to ſet forth himſelfe vnto me, but all are rewarded with like coldneſſe of acceptation.

A few daies ſince, he and *Dametas* had furniſhed themſelues very richly to run at the ring before me. O how mad a ſight it was to ſee *Dametas*, like rich Tiſſew furd with lambe-skins? But ô how well it did with *Dorus*, to ſee with what a grace hee preſented himſelfe before me on horſeback, making maieſtie wait vpon humblenes? how at the firſt, ſtanding ſtill with his eies bent vpon me, as though his motions were chained to my looke, he ſo ſtaid till I cauſed *Mopſa* bid him do ſomething vpō his horſe: which no ſooner ſaid, but (with a kinde rather of quick geſture, then ſhew of violence) you might ſee him come towards me, beating the ground in ſo due time, as no dancer can obſerue better meaſure. If you remember the ſhip we ſaw once, when the Sea went hie vpon the coaſt of *Argos*; ſo went the beaſt: But he (as if Centaurlike he had bene one peece with the horſe) was no more moued, then one is with the going of his owne legs: and in effect ſo did he command him, as his

his owne limmes: for though he had both ſpurres and wand, they ſeemed rather markes of ſoueraintie, then inſtruments of puniſhment; his hande and legge (with moſt pleaſing grace) commanding without threatning, and rather remembring thē chaſtiſing, at leſt if ſometimes he did, it was ſo ſtollen, as neither our eies could diſcerne it, nor the horſe with any change did complaine of it: he euer going ſo iuſt with the horſe, either foorth right, or turning, that it ſeemed as he borrowed the horſes body, ſo he lent the horſe his minde: in the turning one might perceiue the bridle-hande ſomething gently ſtirre, but indeede ſo gently, as it did rather diſtill vertue, then vſe violence. Him ſelfe (which mee thinkes is ſtraunge) ſhewing at one inſtant both ſteadines and nimblenes; ſometimes making him turne cloſe to the grounde, like a cat, when ſcratchingly ſhe wheeles about after a mouſe: ſomtimes with a little more riſing before, now like a Rauen leaping from ridge to ridge, then like one of *Dametas* kiddes bounde ouer the hillockes: and all ſo done, as neither the luſty kinde ſhewed any roughneſſe, nor the eaſier any idleneſſe: but ſtill like a well obeyed maiſter, whoſe becke is enough for a diſcipline, euer concluding each thing hee did with his face to me-wardes, as if thence came not onely the beginning, but ending of his motions. The ſport was to ſe *Dametas*, how he was toſt from the ſaddle to the mane of the horſe, and thence to the grounde, giuing his gay apparell almoſt as foule an outſide, as it had an inſide. But as before hee had euer ſaide, he wanted but horſe and apparell to be as braue a courtier as the beſt, ſo now bruſed with proofe, he proclaimed it a folly for a man of wiſedome, to put himſelfe vnder the tuition of a beaſt; ſo as *Dorus* was faine alone to take the Ringe. Wherein truely at leſt my womaniſhe eies could not diſcerne, but that taking his ſtaffe from his thigh, the deſcending it a little downe, the getting of it vp into the reſt, the letting of the pointe fall, and taking the Ring was but all one motion, at leſt (if they were diuers motions) they did ſo ſtealinglie ſlippe one into another, as the latter parte was euer in hande, before the eie coulde diſcerne the former was ended. Indeede *Dametas* found fault that he ſhewed no more ſtrength in ſhaking of his ſtaffe: but to my conceite the fine cleenes of bearing it was exceeding delightfull.

But how delightfull ſoeuer it was, my delight might well be in my ſoule, but it neuer went to looke out of the window to doo him any comfort. But how much more I founde reaſon to like him, the more I ſet all the ſtrength of minde to ſuppreſſe it, or at leſt to conceale it. Indeed I muſt confeſſe, that as ſome Phiſitions haue tolde me, that when one is colde outwardly, he is not inwardly; ſo truely the colde aſhes laid vpon my fire, did not take the nature of fire frō it. Ful often hath my breſt ſwollen with keeping my ſighes impriſoned; full often haue the teares, I draue backe from mine eies, turned backe to drown my hart. But alas what did that helpe poore *Dorus*? whoſe eies (being his diligent intelligencers) could carrie vnto him no other newes, but diſcōfortable. I thinke no day paſt, but by ſome one inuention he would appeare vnto me to teſtifie his loue. One time he daunced the Matachine daunce in armour (O with what a gracefull dexterity?) I thinke to make me ſee, that he had bin brought vp in ſuch exerciſes: an other time he perſwaded his maiſter (to make my time ſeeme ſhorter) in manner of a Dialogue, to play *Priamus* while he plaide *Paris*. Think (ſwet *Philoclea*) what a *Priamus* we had: but truly, my *Paris* was a *Paris*, & more thē a *Paris*: who while in a ſauage apparell, with naked necke, armes, & legs, he made loue to *Oenone*, you might wel ſee by his chaunged countenaunce, and true teares,

that he felte the parte he playde. Tell mee (ſweete *Philoclea*,) did you euer ſee ſuch a ſhephearde? tell mee, did you euer heare of ſuch a Prince? And then tell me, if a ſmall or vnworthy aſſaulte haue conquered mee. Truely I woulde hate my life, if I thought vanity led me. But ſince my parentes deale ſo cruelly with mee, it is time for me to truſt ſomething to my owne iudgement. Yet hetherto haue my lookes beene as I told you, which continuing after many of theſe his fruiteles trials, haue wrought ſuch change in him, as I tel you true (with that word ſhe laid her hād vpon her quaking ſide) I do not a little feare him. See what a letter this is (then drew ſhe the curtaine and tooke the letter from vnder the pillowe) which to day (with an afflicted humblenes) he deliuered me, pretending before *Mopſa*, that I ſhould read it vnto her, to mollifie (forſooth) her iron ſtomacke; with that ſhe read the letter containing thus much.

MOſt bleſſed paper, which ſhalt kiſſe that hād, where to all bleſſednes is in nature a ſeruant, do not yet diſdaine to cary with thee the woful words of a miſer now deſpairing: neither be afraide to appeare before her, bearing the baſe title of the ſender. For no ſooner ſhall that diuine hande touch thee, but that thy baſeneſſe ſhall be turned to moſte hie preferment. Therefore mourne boldly my Inke; for while ſhe lookes vppon you, your blackenes will ſhine: cry out boldly my Lamentation; for while ſhe reads you, your cries will be muſicke. Say then (O happie meſſenger of a moſt vnhappy meſſage) that the too ſoone borne, and too late dying creature, which dares not ſpeake, no not looke, no not ſcarcely thinke (as from his miſerable ſelfe, vnto her heauenly highneſſe) onely preſumes to deſire thee (in the time that her eies and voice doe exalt thee) to ſay, and in this manner to ſay, not from him, O no, that were not fitte, but of him. Thus much vnto her ſacred iudgement: O you, the onely honour to women, to men the onelie admiration, you that being armed by Loue, defie him that armed you, in this high eſtate wherein you haue placed mee, yet let me remember him to whom I am bound for bringing me to your preſence; and let me remember him, who (ſince he is yours, how mean ſo euer he be) it is reaſon you haue an accoūt of him. The wretch (yet your wretch) though with languiſhing ſteppes runnes faſt to his graue, and will you ſuffer a temple (how poorely-built ſoeuer, but yet a temple of your deitie) to be raſed? But he dieth: it is moſt true, he dieth; and he in whom you liue, to obey you, dieth. Wherof though he plaine, he doth not complaine: for it is a harme, but no wrong, which he hath receiued. He dies, becauſe in wofull language all his ſenſes tell him, that ſuch is your pleaſure: for ſince you will not that he liue, alas, alas, what followeth, what followeth of the moſt ruined *Dorus*, but his ende? Ende then, euill deſtinied *Dorus*, ende; and ende thou wofull letter, end; for it ſufficeth her wiſedom to know, that her heauenlie will ſhalbe accompliſhed.

O my *Philoclea*, is hee a perſon to write theſe wordes? and are theſe words lightly to bee regarded? But if you had ſeene, when with trembling hande hee had deliuered it, how hee went away, as if he had beene but the coffin that carried himſelfe to his ſepulcher. Two times I muſt confeſſe I was about to take curteſie into mine eies; but both times the former reſolution ſtopte the entrie of it: ſo that hee departed without obtaining any further kindeneſſe. But he was no ſooner out of the doore, but that I looked to the doore kindely; and truely

truely the feare of him euer ſince hath put me into ſuch perplexitie, as now you found me. Ah my *Pamela* (ſaide *Philoclea*) leaue ſorrow. The riuer of your teares will ſoone looſe his fountaine; it is in your hand as well to ſtich vp his life againe, as it was before to rent it. And ſo (though with ſelfe-grieued mind) ſhe comforted her ſiſter, till ſleepe came to bath himſelfe in *Pamelaes* faire weeping eyes.

Which when *Philoclea* found, wringing her hands, O me (ſaid ſhe) indeede the onely ſubiect of the deſtinies diſpleaſure, whoſe greateſt fortunatenes is more vnfortunate, then my ſiſters greateſt vnfortunateneſſe. Alas ſhee weepes becauſe ſhee would be no ſooner happy; I weepe becauſe I can neuer be happie; her teares flow form pittie; mine from being too farre lower then the reach of pittie. Yet doo I not enuie thee, deare *Pamela*, I do not enuy thee: only I could wiſh that being thy ſiſter in nature, I were not ſo farre off a kin in fortune.

But the darkeneſſe of ſorrow ouerſhadowing her mind, as the night did her eyes, they were both content to hide themſelues vnder the wings of ſleepe, till the next morning had almoſt loſt his name, before the two ſweet ſleeping ſiſters awaked frō dreames which flattered them with more cōfort, then their waking could, or would conſent vnto. For then they were called vp by *Miſo*; who hauing bene with *Gynecia*, had receiued commaundement to be continually with her daughters, and particularly not to let *Zelmane* and *Philoclea* haue any priuate conferēce, but that ſhe ſhould be preſent to heare what paſſed. *Miſo* hauing now her authoritie encreaſed, But cāe with skowling eyes to deliuer a ſlauering good morrow to the two Ladies, telling them, it was a ſhame for them to marre their complexions, yea and conditions to, with long lying a bedde: and that, when ſhee was of their age, ſhee trowed, ſhee would haue made a handkerchiefe by that time a day. The two ſweete Princes with a ſmilinge ſilence anſwered her entertainement, and obeiyng her direction, couered their daintie beauties with the glad clothes. But as ſoone as *Pamela* was readie (and ſooner ſhe was then her ſiſter) the agony of *Dorus* giuing a fit to her ſelfe, which the words of his letter (liuely imprinted in her minde) ſtill remembred her of, ſhe called to *Mopſa*, and willed her to fetch *Dorus* to ſpeake with her: becauſe (ſhe ſaid) ſhee woulde take further iudgement of him, before ſhee woulde moue *Dametas* to graunt her in mariage vnto him. *Mopſa* (as glad as of ſweet-meate to goe of ſuch an arrant) quickly returned with *Dorus* to *Pamela*, who entended both by ſpeaking with him to giue ſome comfort to his paſſionate harte, and withall to heare ſome parte of his life paſt; which although fame had alreadie deliuered vnto her, yet ſhe deſired in more particular certainties to haue it from ſo beloued an hiſtorian. Yet the ſweetneſſe of vertues diſpoſition iealous, euen ouer it ſelfe, ſuffred her not to enter abruptlie into queſtions of *Muſidorus* (whom ſhee was halfe aſhamed ſhe did loue ſo well, and more then halfe ſorie ſhe could loue no better) but thought beſt firſt to make her talke ariſe of *Pyrocles*, & his vertuous father: which thus ſhe did.

Dorus (ſaid ſhe) you told me the laſt day, that *Plangus* was deceaued in that he affirmed the Prince *Muſidorus* was drowned: but withall, you confeſſed his coſen *Pyrocles* periſhed; of whom certainly in that age there was a great loſſe, ſince (as I haue heard) he was a young Prince, of whom all men expected as much, as mans power could bring forth, and yet vertue promiſed for him, their expectation ſhould not be deceaued. Moſt excellent Ladie (ſaid *Dorus*) no expectation in others, nor hope in himſelfe could aſpire to a higher mark, then to bee thought worthy to be praiſed by

your iudgement,and made worthy to be praiſed by your mouth. But moſt ſure it is, that as his fame could by no means get ſo ſweet & noble an aire to flie in, as in your breath, ſo coulde not you (leauing your ſelfe aſide) finde in the worlde a fitter ſubiect of commendation; as noble, as a long ſucceſſion of roiall anceſtors, famous, and famous for victories could make him: of ſhape moſt louely, and yet of minde more louely; valiaunt, curteous, wiſe, what ſhould I ſay more? ſweete *Pyrocles*, excellent *Pyrocles*, what can my words but wrong thy perfections, which I would to God in ſome ſmall meaſure thou hadſt bequeathed to him that euer muſt haue thy vertues in admiration; that masked at leaſt in them, I might haue founde ſome more gratious acceptation? with that hee impriſoned his looke for a while vppon *Mopſa*, who thereuppon fell into a very wide ſmiling. Truely (ſaide *Pamela*) *Dorus* I like well your minde, that can raiſe it ſelfe out of ſo baſe a fortune, as yours is, to thinke of the imitating ſo excellent a Prince, as *Pyrocles* was. Who ſhootes at the midde day Sunne, though he bee ſure he ſhall neuer hit the marke; yet as ſure hee is, he ſhall ſhoote higher, then who aimes but at a buſhe. But I pray you *Dorus* (ſaide ſhee) tell me (ſince I perceiue you are well acquainted with that ſtorie) what Prince was that *Euarchus* father to *Pyrocles*, of whom ſo much fame goes, for his rightly roiall vertues, or by what waies he got that opinion. And then ſo deſcend to the cauſes of his ſending firſt away from him, and then to him for that excellent ſonne of his, with the diſcourſe of his life and loſſe: and therein you may (if you liſt) ſay ſomething of that fame *Muſidorus* his coſen, becauſe, they going together, the ſtorie of *Pyrocles* (which I onely deſire) may be the better vnderſtood.

Incomparable Lady (ſaid he) your commaundement doth not onely giue mee the wil, but the power to obey you, ſuch influence hath your excellencie. And firſt, for that famous King *Euarchus*, he was (at this time you ſpeake off) King of *Macedon*, a kingdom, which in elder time had ſuch a ſoueraintie ouer all the prouinces of *Greece*, that euen the particular kings therein did acknowledge (with more or leſſe degrees of homage) ſome kinde of fealtie thereunto: as among the reſt, euen this now moſt noble (and by you ennobled) kingdome of *Arcadia*. But he, when hee came to his crowne, finding by his latter anceſtors either negligence, or misfortune, that in ſome ages many of thoſe dueties had beene intermitted, woulde neuer ſtirre vp olde titles (how apparant ſoeuer) whereby the publike peace (with the loſſe of manie not guiltie ſoules) ſhoulde be broken; but contenting himſelfe to guide that ſhippe, wherin the heauens had placed him, ſhewed no leſſe magnanimitie in daungerleſſe deſpiſing, then others in daungerous affecting the multiplying of kingdomes: for the earth hath ſince borne enow bleeding witneſſes, that it was no want of true courage. Who as he was moſt wiſe to ſee what was beſt, and moſte iuſt in the perfourming what he ſaw, and temperate in abſtaining from any thing any way contrarie: ſo thinke I, no thought can imagine a greater heart to ſee and contemne daunger, where daunger would offer to make anie wrongfull threatning vppon him. A Prince, that indeede eſpeciallie meaſured his greatneſſe by his goodnes: & if for any thing he loued greatnes, it was, becauſe therein he might exerciſe his goodnes. A Prince of a goodly aſpect, and the more goodly by a graue maieſtie, wherewith his mind did decke his outward graces; ſtrong of bodie, and ſo much the ſtronger, as he by a well diſciplined exerciſe taught it both to do, and ſuffer. Of age ſo as he was about fifty yeares when his Nephew *Muſidorus* tooke on ſuch ſhepheardiſh apparell for the loue of the worlds paragon, as I now weare.

This

This King left Orphan both of father & mother, (whoſe father and grandfather likewiſe had died yong) he found his eſtate, when he came to the age (which allowed his authoritie) ſo disioynted euen in the nobleſt & ſtrongeſt lims of gouernment, that the name of a King was growne euen odious to the people, his authority hauing bin abuſed by thoſe great Lords, and litle kings: who in thoſe betweene times of raigning (by vniuſt fauouring thoſe that were partially theirs, and oppreſſing them that would defende their libertie againſt them had brought in (by a more felt then ſeene maner of proceeding) the worſt kind of *Oligarchie*; that is when men are gouerned in deede by a fewe, and yet are not taught to know what thoſe fewe, be, to whom they ſhould obey.

For they hauing the power of kings, but not the nature of kings, vſed the authority as men do their farms, of which they ſee within a yeere they ſhal go out: making the Kinges ſworde ſtrike whom they hated, the Kings purſe reward whom they loued: and (which is worſt of all) making the Royall countenaunce ſerue to vndermine the Royall ſouerainty. For the Subiectes could taſte no ſweeter fruites of hauing a King, then grieuous taxations to ſerue vaine purpoſes; Lawes made rather to finde faultes, then to preuent faults: the Court of a Prince rather deemed as a priuiledged place of vnbrideled licentiouſnes, then as the abiding of him, who as a father, ſhould giue a fatherly example vnto his people. Hence grew a very diſſolution of all eſtates, while the great men (by the nature of ambition neuer ſatisfied) grew factious among themſelues: and the vnderlinges, glad in deede to be vnderlinges to them they hated leſt, to preſerue them from ſuch they hated moſt. Men of vertue ſuppreſſed, leſt their ſhining ſhuld diſcouer the others filthines; and at lēgth vertue it ſelfe almoſt forgotten, when it had no hopefull end whereunto to be directed; olde men long nuſled in corruption, ſcorning them that would ſeeke reformation; young men very fault-finding, but very faultie: and ſo to new fangleneſſe both of manners, apparell, and each thing els, by the cuſtome of ſelfe-guiltie euill, glad to change though oft for a worſe; marchaundiſe abuſed, and ſo townes decaied for want of iuſt and naturall libertie; offices, euen of iudging ſoules, ſolde; publique defences neglected; and in ſumme, (leſt too long I trouble you) all awrie, and (which wried it to the moſt wrie courſe of all) witte abuſed, rather to faine reaſon why it ſhould be amiſſe, then how it ſhould be amended.

In this, and a much worſe plight then it is fitte to trouble your excellent eares withall, did the King *Euarchus* finde his eſtate, when he tooke vppon him the regiment: which by reaſon of the long ſtreame of abuſe, he was forced to eſtabliſh by ſome euen extreme ſeuerity, not ſo much for the very faultes themſelues, (which hee rather ſought to preuent then to puniſhe) as for the faultie ones; who ſtrong, euen in their faultes, ſcorned his youth, and coulde not learne to diſgeſt, that the man which they ſo long had vſed to maske their owne appetites, ſhoulde now be the reducer of them into order. But ſo ſoone as ſome fewe (but in deede notable) examples, had thundered a duety into the ſubiectes hearts, hee ſoone ſhewed, no baſenes of ſuſpition, nor the baſeſt baſenes of enuy, coulde any whit rule ſuch a Ruler. But then ſhined foorth indeede all loue among them, when an awfull feare, ingendred by iuſtice, did make that loue moſt louely: his firſt and principal care being to appear vnto his people, ſuch as he would haue them be, & to be ſuch as he appeared; making his life the example of his lawes, and his lawes as it were, his axioms ariſing out of his deedes. So that within ſmall time, he wanne a ſingular

loue in his people, and engraffed ſingular confidence. For how could they chuſe but loue him, whom they found ſo truely to loue them? He euen in reaſon diſdayning, that they that haue charge of beaſtes, ſhoulde loue their charge, and care for them; and that he that was to gouerne the moſt excellent creature, ſhould not loue ſo noble a charge. And therefore, where moſt Princes (ſeduced by flatterie to builde vpon falſe grounds of gouernment) make themſelues (as it were) an other thing from the people; and ſo count it gaine what they get from them: and (as if it were two counter-ballances, that their eſtate goes hieſt when the people goes loweſt) by a fallacie of argument thinking themſelues moſt Kinges, when the ſubiect is moſt baſely ſubiected: He cõtrariwiſe, vertuouſlie and wiſely acknowledging, that he with his people made all but one politike bodie, whereof himſelfe was the head; euen ſo cared for them, as he woulde for his owne limmes: neuer reſtrayning their libertie, without it ſtretched to licenciouſnes, nor pulling from them their goods, which they found were not imployed to the purchaſe of a greater good: but in all his actions ſhewing a delight in their wellfare, brought that to paſſe, that while by force he tooke nothing, by their loue he had all. In ſumme (peereleſſe Princeſſe) I might as eaſily ſette downe the whole Arte of gouernement, as to lay before your eyes the picture of his proceedings. But in ſuch ſorte hee flouriſhed in the ſweete comforte of dooing much good, when by an accaſion of leauing his Countrie, he was forced to bring foorth his vertue of magnanimitie, as before hee had done of iuſtice.

He had onely one ſiſter, a Ladie (leſt I ſhould too eaſilie fall to partiall prayſes of her) of whom it may be iuſtly ſaide, that ſhe was no vnfit branch to the noble ſtock whereof ſhe was come. Her he had giuen in mariage to *Dorilaus*, Prince of *Theſſalia*, not ſo much to make a frendſhip, as to confirm the frendſhip betweene their poſteritie, which betweene them, by the likenes of vertue, had beene long before made: for certainly, *Dorilaus*, could neede no amplifiers mouth for the higheſt point of praiſe. Who hath not heard (ſaid *Pamela*) of the valiant, wiſe, and iuſt *Dorilaus*, whoſe vnripe death doth yet (ſo many yeares ſince) draw teares from vertuous eyes? And indeede, my father is wont to ſpeake of nothing with greater admiration, then of the notable fri ndſhip (a rare thing in Princes, more rare betweene Princes) that ſo holily was obſerued to the laſt, of thoſe two excellent men. But (ſaid ſhe) go on I pray you. *Dorilaus* (ſaid he) hauing married his ſiſter, had his marriage in ſhort time bleſt (for ſo are folke woont to ſay, how vnhappie ſoeuer the children after grow) with a ſonne, whom they named *Muſidorus*: of whom I muſt needes firſt ſpeake before I come to *Pyrocles*; becauſe as he was borne firſt, ſo vpon his occaſion grew (as I may ſay accidentally) the others birth. For ſcarcely was *Muſidorus* made partaker of this oft-blinding light, when there were found numbers of Southſayers, who affirmed ſtrange and incredible thinges ſhould be performed by that childe; whether the heauens at that time liſted to play with ignorant mankinde, or that flatterie be ſo preſumptuous, as euen at times to borrow the face of Diuinitie. But certainly, ſo did the boldneſſe of their affirmation accompanie the greatneſſe of what they did affirm (euen deſcending to particularities, what kingdoms he ſhould ouercome) that the king of *Phrygia* (who ouer-ſuperſtitiouſly thought himſelfe touched in the matter) ſought by force to deſtroy the infant, to preuent his after-expectations: becauſe a skilfull man (hauing compared his natiuity with the child) ſo told him. Fooliſh man, either vainly fearing what was not to be feared, or not conſidering that if it were

were a worke of the ſuperiour powers, the heauens at length are neuer children. But ſo he did, and by the aid of the Kings of *Lydia* and *Crete* (ioining together their armies) inuaded *Theſſalia*, and brought *Dorilaus* to ſome behind-hand of fortune, when his faithfull friend and brother *Euarchus* came ſo mightily to his ſuccour, that with ſome enterchanging changes of fortune, they begat of a iuſt war, the beſt child, peace. In which time *Euarchus* made a croſſe mariage alſo with *Dorilaus* his ſiſter, and ſhortly left her with child of the famous *Pyrocles*, driuen to returne to the defence of his owne countrie, which in his abſence (helped with ſome of the ill contented nobilitie) the mighty King of *Thrace*, and his brother, King of *Pannonia*, had inuaded. The ſucceſſe of thoſe warres was too notable to be vnknowne to your eares, to which it ſeemes all worthy fame hath glory to come vnto. But there was *Dorilaus* (valiantly requiting his friends helpe) in a great battaile depriued of life, his obſequies being no more ſolemniſed by the teares of his partakers, then the bloud of his enimies; with ſo pearcing a ſorrow to the conſtant hart of *Euarchus*, that the newes of his ſons birth could lighten his countenance with no ſhew of comfort, although all the comfort that might be in a child, truth it ſelfe in him forthwith deliuered. For what fortune onely ſouthſayers foretold of *Muſidorus*, that all men might ſee prognoſticated in *Pyrocles*, both Heauens and Earth giuing tokens of the comming forth of an Heroicall vertue. The ſenate houſe of the planets was at no time ſo ſet, for the decreeing of perfection in a man, as at that time all folkes skilfull therein did acknowledge: onely loue was threatned, and promiſed to him, and ſo to his couſin, as both the tempeſt and hauen of their beſt yeares. But as death may haue preuented *Pyrocles*, ſo vnworthineſſe muſt be the death of *Muſidorus*.

But the mother of *Pyrocles* (ſhortly after her childe-birth) dying, was cauſe that *Euarchus* recommended the care of his only ſonne to his ſiſter; doing it the rather becauſe the warre continued in cruell heat, betwixt him and thoſe euill neighbours of his. In which meane time thoſe young Princes (the only comforters of that vertuous widow) grewe on ſo, that *Pyrocles* taught admiration to the hardeſt conceats: *Muſidorus* (perchaunce becauſe among his ſubiects) exceedingly beloued: and by the good order of *Euarchus* (well perfourmed by his ſiſter) they were ſo brought vp, that all the ſparkes of vertue, which nature had kindled in them, were ſo blowne to giue forth their vttermoſt heate that iuſtly it may be affirmed, they enflamed the affections of all that knew them. For almoſt before they could perfectly ſpeake, they began to receaue conceits not vnworthy of the beſt ſpeakers: excellent deuiſes being vſed, to make euen their ſports profitable; images of battailes, and fortifications being then deliuered to their memory, which after, their ſtronger iudgements might diſpenſe, the delight of tales being conuerted to the knowledge of all the ſtories of worthy Princes, both to moue them to do nobly, and teach them how to do nobly; the beautie of vertue ſtill being ſet before their eyes, and that taught them with far more diligent care, then Grammaticall rules, their bodies exerciſed in all abilities, both of doing and ſuffring, and their mindes acquainted by degrees with daungers; and in ſum, all bent to the making vp of princely mindes: no ſeruile feare vſed towards them, nor any other violent reſtraint, but ſtill as to Princes: ſo that a habite of commaunding was naturalized in them, and therefore the farther from Tyrannie: Nature hauing done ſo much for them in nothing, as that it made them Lords of truth, whereon all the other goods were builded.

Among which nothing I ſo much delight to recount, as the memorable friend-

ſhip that grew betwixt the two Princes, ſuch as made them more like then the likeneſſe of all other vertues, and made them more neere one to the other, then the neerenes of their bloud could aſpire vnto; which I think grew the faſter, and the faſter was tied betweene them, by reaſon that *Muſidorus* being elder by three or foure yeares, it was neither ſo great a difference in age as did take away the delight in ſocietie, and yet by the difference there was taken away the occaſion of childiſh contentions; till they had both paſt ouer the humour of ſuch contentions. For *Pyrocles* bare reuerence full of loue to *Muſidorus*, and *Muſidorus* had a delight full of loue in *Pyrocles*. *Muſidorus*, what he had learned either for body or minde, would teach it to *Pyrocles*; and *Pyrocles* was ſo glad to learne of none, as of *Muſidorus*: till *Pyrocles*, being come to ſixtene yeares of age, he ſeemed ſo to ouerrun his age in growth, ſtrength, and all things following it, that not *Muſidorus*, no nor any man liuing (I thinke) could performe any action, either on horſe, or foote, more ſtrongly, or deliuer that ſtrength more nimbly, or become the deliuery more gracefully, or employ all more vertuouſly. Which may well ſeeme wonderfull: but wonders are no wonders in a wonderfull ſubiect.

At which time vnderſtanding that the King *Euarchus*, after ſo many yeares warre, and the conqueſt of all *Pannonia*, and almoſt *Thrace*, had now brought the concluſion of all to the ſiege of *Bizantium* (to the raiſing of which ſiege great forces were made) they would needs fall to the practiſe of thoſe vertues, which they before learned. And therefore the mother of *Muſidorus* nobly yeelding ouer her owne affects to her childrens good (for a mother ſhe was in effect to them both) the rather that they might helpe her beloued brother, they brake off all delayes; which *Muſidorus* for his part thought already had deuoured too much of his good time, but that he had once graunted a boone (before he knew what it was) to his deere friend *Pyrocles*; that he would neuer ſeeke the aduentures of armes, vntill he might go with him: which hauing faſt bound his hart (a true ſlaue to faith) he had bid a tedious delay of following his owne humour for his friends ſake, till now being both ſent for by *Euarchus*, & finding *Pyrocles* able euery way to go thorow with that kinde of life, he was as deſirous for his ſake, as for his owne, to enter into it. So therefore preparing a nauie, that they might go like themſelues, and not only bring the comfort of their preſence, but of their power to their deere parent *Euarchus*, they recommended themſelues to the Sea, leauing the ſhore of *Theſſalia* full of teares and vowes; and were receiued thereon with ſo ſmooth and ſmiling a face, as if *Neptune* had as then learned falſely to fawne on Princes. The winde was like a ſeruaunt, wayting behind them ſo iuſt, that they might fill the ſailes as they liſted; and the beſt ſaylers ſhewing themſelues leſſe couetous of his liberalitie, ſo tempered it, that they all kept together like a beautifull flocke, which ſo well could obey their maiſters pipe: without ſometimes, to delight the Princes eies, ſome two or three of them would ſtriue, who could (either by the cunning of well ſpending the windes breath, or by the aduantageous building of their moouing houſes) leaue their fellowes behind them in the honour of ſpeed: while the two Princes had leaſure to ſee the practiſe of that, which before they had learned by bookes: to conſider the arte of catching the winde priſoner, to no other ende, but to runne away with it; to ſee how beautie, and vſe can ſo well agree together, that of all the trinckets, wherewith they are attired, there is not one but ſerues to ſome neceſſary purpoſe. And (ô Lord) to ſee the admirable power and noble effects of Loue, whereby

the

the ſeeming inſenſible Loadſtone, with a ſecret beauty (holding the ſpirit of iron in it) can draw that hard-harted thing vnto it, and (like a vertuous miſtreſſe) not onely make it bow it ſelfe, but with it make it aſpire to ſo high a Loue, as of the heauenly Poles; and thereby to bring foorth the nobleſt deeds, that the children of the Earth can boaſt of. And ſo the Princes delighting their conceats with confirming their knowledge, ſeing wherein the Sea-diſcipline differed from Land-ſeruice, they had for a day and almoſt a whole night, as pleaſing entertainement, as the falſeſt hart could giue to him he meanes worſt to.

But by that the next morning began a little to make a guilden ſhewe of a good meaning, there aroſe euen with the Sun, a vaile of darke cloudes before his face, which ſhortly (like inck powred into water) had blacked ouer all the face of heauen; preparing (as it were) a mournefull ſtage for a Tragedie to be plaied on. For forthwith the windes began to ſpeake lowder, and as in a tumultuous kingdome, to thinke themſelues fitteſt inſtruments of commaundement; and blowing whole ſtormes of hayle and raine vpon them, they were ſooner in daunger, then they could almoſt bethinke themſelues of chaunge. For then the traiterous Sea began to ſwell in pride againſt the afflicted Nauie, vnder which (while the heauen fauoured them) it had layne ſo calmely, making mountaines of it ſelfe, ouer which the toſſed and tottring ſhip ſhould clime, to be ſtreight carried downe againe to a pit of helliſh darkeneſſe; with ſuch cruell blowes againſt the ſides of the ſhippe (that which way ſoeuer it went, was ſtill in his malice) that there was left neither power to ſtay, nor way to eſcape. And ſhortly had it ſo diſſeuered the louing companie, which the daie before had tarried together, that moſt of them neuer met againe, but were ſwallowed vp in his neuer-ſatiſfied mouth. Some indeed (as ſince was knowne) after long wandring returned into *Theſſalia*; other recouered *Bizantium*, and ſerued *Euarchus* in his warre. But in the ſhip wherein the Princes were (now left as much alone as proud Lords be when fortune failes them) though they employed all induſtrie to ſaue themſelues, yet what they did was rather for dutie to nature, then hope to eſcape. So ougly a darkeneſſe, as if it would preuent the nights comming, vſurped the dayes right: which (accompanied ſometimes with thunders, alwayes with horrible noyſes of the chafing winds) made the maſters and pilots ſo aſtoniſhed, that they knew not how to direct, and if they knew they could ſcarcely (when they directed) heare their owne whiſtle. For the ſea ſtraue with the winds which ſhould be lowder, and the ſhrouds of the ſhip with a ghaſtfull noiſe to them that were in it, witneſſed, that their ruine was the wager of the others contention, and the heauen roaring out thunders the more amazed them, as hauing thoſe powers for enimies. Certainely there is no daunger carries with it more horror, then that which growes in thoſe floting kingdomes. For that dwelling place is vnnaturall to mankind, and then the terribleneſſe of the continuall motion, the deſolation of the far-being from comfort, the eye and the eare hauing ougly images euer before it, doth ſtill vex the minde, euen when it is beſt armed againſt it. But thus the day paſt (if that might be called a day) while the cunningeſt mariners were ſo conquered by the ſtorme, as they thought it beſt with ſtriken ſailes to yeeld to be gouerned by it: the valianteſt feeling inward diſmayedneſſe, and yet the fearefulleſt aſhamed fully to ſhewe it, ſeeing that the Princes (who were to parte from the greateſt fortunes) did in theyr countenances accuſe no point of feare, but encouraging them to doo what

might

might be done (putting their hands to euerie moſt painefull office) taught them at one inſtant to promiſe themſelues the beſt, and yet to deſpiſe the worſt. But ſo were they carryed by the tyrannie of the winde, and the treaſon of the ſea, all that night, which the elder it was, the more wayward it ſhewed it ſelfe towards them: till the next morning (knowne to be a morning better by the houre-glaſſe, then by the day cleereneſſe) hauing runne fortune as blindly, as it ſelfe euer was painted, leſt the concluſion ſhould not aunſwere to the reſt of the play, they were driuen vpon a rocke: which hidden with thoſe outragious waues, did, as it were, cloſely diſſemble his cruell mind, till with an vnbeleeued violence (but to them that haue tried it) the ſhippe ranne vpon it; and ſeeming willinger to periſh then to haue her courſe ſtayed, redoubled her blowes, till ſhe had broken her ſelfe in peeces; and as it were tearing out her owne bowels to feede the ſeas greedineſſe, left nothing within it but deſpaire of ſafetie, and expectation of a loathſome end. There was to be ſeene the diuerſe manner of minds in diſtreſſe: ſome ſate vpon the top of the poupe weeping and wailing, till the ſea ſwallowed them; ſome one more able to abide death, then feare of death, cut his owne throate to preuent drowning; ſome prayed, and there wanted not of them which curſed, as if the heauens could not be more angrie then they were. But a monſtrous crie begotten of manie roaring voices, was able to infect with feare a minde that had not preuented it with the power of reaſon.

But the Princes vſing the paſſions of fearing euill, and deſiring to eſcape, only to ſerue the rule of vertue, not to abandon ones ſelfe, lept to a ribbe of the ſhip, which broken from his fellowes, floted with more likelyhood to doo ſeruice, then any other limme of that ruinous bodie; vpon which there had gotten alreadie two brethren, well knowne ſeruants of theirs; and ſtreight they foure were carryed out of ſight, in that huge riſing of the ſea, from the reſt of the ſhip. But the peece they were on ſinking by little and little vnder them, not able to ſupport the weight of ſo manie, the brethren (the elder whereof was *Leucippus*, the younger *Nelſus*) ſhewed themſelues right faithfull and gratefull ſeruants vnto them; gratefull (I ſay) for this cauſe: Thoſe two gentlemen had bene taken priſoners in the great warre the king of *Phrygia* made vpon *Theſſalia*, in the time of *Muſidorus* his infancie; and hauing beene ſolde into another countrie (though peace fell after betweene theſe Realmes) could not be deliuered, becauſe of their valor knowne, but for a farre greater ſumme, then either all their friends were able, or the Dowager willing to make, in reſpect of the great expences her ſelfe and people had bene put to in thoſe warres; and ſo had they remained in priſon about thirteene yeares, when the two young Princes (hearing ſpeaches of their good deſerts) found meanes both by ſelling all the Iewels they had of great price, and by giuing vnder their hands great eſtates when they ſhould come to be Kings (which promiſes their vertue promiſed for them ſhould be kept) to get ſo much treaſure as redeemed them from captiuitie. This remembred, and kindly remembred by theſe two brothers, perchance helped by a naturall duetie to their Princes blood, they willingly left holde of the boord, committing themſelues to the ſeas rage, and euen when they mente to dye, themſelues praying for the Princes liues. It is true, that neither the paine nor daunger, ſo moued the Princes hartes as the tenderneſſe of that louing part, farre from glorie, hauing ſo few lookers on; farre from hope of reward, ſince themſelues were ſure to periſh.

But now of all the royall Nauie they lately had, they had left but one little peece of one ſhip, whereon they kept themſelues in all trueth, hauing enterchanged their cares, while either cared for other, ech comforting and councelling how to labour for the better, and to abide the worſe. But ſo fell it out, that as they were carryed by the tide (which there ſeconded by the ſtorme ran exceeding ſwiftly) *Muſidorus* ſeeing (as he thought) *Pyrocles* not well vpon the boord, as he would with his right hand haue helped him on better, he had no ſooner vnfaſtned his hold, but that a waue forcibly ſpoiled his weaker hand of hold; and ſo for a time parted thoſe friends, each crying to the other, but the noiſe of the ſea drowned their farewell. But *Pyrocles* (then careleſſe of death, if it had come by any meanes, but his owne) was ſhortly brought out of the ſeas furie to the lands comfort; when (in my conſcience I know) that comfort was but bitter vnto him. And bitter indeed it fell out euen in it ſelfe to be vnto him.

For being caſt on land much bruſed and beaten both with the Seas hard farewell, and the ſhores rude welcome; and euen almoſt deadly tired with the length of his vncomfortable labour, as he was walking vp to diſcouer ſome bodie, to whom he might goe for reliefe, there came ſtreight running vnto him certaine, who (as it was after knowne) by appointment watched (with manie others) in diuerſe places along the coaſt: who laide handes of him, and without either queſtioning with him, or ſhewing will to heare him, (like men fearefull to appeare curious) or which was worſe hauing no regard to the hard plight he was in (being ſo wet and weake) they carried him ſome miles thence, to a houſe of a principall officer of that countrie. Who with no more ciuilitie (though with much more buſines then thoſe vnder-fellowes had ſhewed) began in captious manner to put interrogatories vnto him. To which he (vnuſed to ſuch entertainment) did ſhortlie and plainely aunſwere, what he was, and how he came thither. But that no ſooner knowne, with numbers of armed men to garde him (for miſchiefe, not from miſchiefe) he was ſent to the Kings court, which as then was not aboue a dayes iourney off, with letters from that officer, containing his owne ſeruiceable diligence in diſcouering ſo great a perſonage; adding withall more then was true of his coniectures, becauſe he would endeare his owne ſeruice.

This country whereon he fell was *Phrygia*, and it was to the King thereof to whome he was ſent, a Prince of a melancholy conſtitution both of bodie & mind; wickedly ſad, euer muſing of horrible matters; ſuſpecting, or rather condemning all men of euill, becauſe his minde had no eye to eſpie goodneſſe: and therefore accuſing *Sycophantes*, of all men did beſt ſort to his nature; but therefore not ſeeming *Sycophantes*, becauſe of no euill they ſaid, they could bring any new or doubtfull thing vnto him, but ſuch as alreadie he had bene apt to determine; ſo as they came but as proofes of his wiſedome: fearefull and neuer ſecure; while the feare he had figured in his minde had any poſſibilitie of euent. A tode-like retyredneſſe, and cloſeneſſe of minde; nature teaching the odiouſneſſe of poyſon, and the daunger of odiouſneſſe. Yet while youth laſted in him, the exerciſes of that age, and his humour (not yet fullie diſcouered) made him ſomething the more frequentable, and leſſe daungerous. But after that yeares began to come on with ſome, though more ſeldome ſhewes of a bloudie nature, and that the prophecie of *Muſidorus* deſtenie came to his eares (deliuered vnto him, and receiued of him with the hardeſt interpretation, as though his ſubiects did delight in the hearing thereof.) Then

gaue

gaue he himſelfe indeede to the full currant of his diſpoſition, eſpecially after the warre of *Theſſalia*, wherein (though in trueth wrongly) he deemed, his vnſucceſſe proceeded of their vnwillingnes to haue him proſper: and then thinking himſelfe contemned, (knowing no countermine againſt contempt, but terror) began to let nothing paſſe which might beare the colour of a fault, without ſharp puniſhment: and when he wanted faults, excellencie grew a fault; and it was ſufficient to make one guiltie, that he had power to be guiltie. And as there is no humour, to which impudent pouertie cannot make it ſelfe ſeruiceable, ſo were there enow of thoſe of deſperate ambition, who would build their houſes vpon others ruines, which after ſhould fall by like practiſes. So as ſeruitude came mainly vpon that poore people, whoſe deedes were not onely puniſhed, but words corrected, and euen thoughts by ſome meane or other puld out of them: while ſuſpition bred the mind of crueltie, and the effects of crueltie ſtirred a new cauſe of ſuſpition. And in this plight (full of watchfull fearefulnes) did the ſtorme deliuer ſweete *Pyrocles* to the ſtormie minde of that Tyrant, all men that did ſuch wrong to ſo rare a ſtranger (whoſe countenaunce deſerued both pitie and admiration) condemning themſelues as much in their hearts, as they did brag in their forces.

But when this bloudy King knew what he was, and in what order he and his coſin *Muſidorus* (ſo much of him feared) were come out of *Theſſalia*, aſſuredly thinking (becauſe euer thinking the worſt) that thoſe forces were prouided againſt him; glad of the periſhing (as he thought) of *Muſidorus*, determined in publique ſort to put *Pyrocles* to death. For hauing quite loſt the way of noblenes, he ſtraue to clime to the height of terriblenes; and thinking to make all men adread, to make ſuch one an enemie, who would not ſpare, nor feare to kill ſo great a Prince; and laſtly, hauing nothing in him why to make him his friend, he thought, he woulde take him away, from being his enemie. The day was appointed, and all things appointed for that cruell blow, in ſo ſolemne an order, as if they would ſet foorth tyranny in moſt gorgeous decking. The Princely youth of inuincible valour, yet ſo vniuſtly ſubiected to ſuch outragious wrong, carrying himſelf in all his demeanure ſo conſtantly, abiding extremitie, that one might ſee it was the cutting away of the greateſt hope of the world, and deſtroying vertue in his ſweeteſt grouth.

But ſo it fell out that his death was preuented by a rare example of friendſhip in *Muſidorus*: who being almoſt drowned, had bene taken vp by a Fiſherman belonging to the kingdome of *Pontus*; and being there, and vnderſtanding the full diſcourſe (as Fame was very prodigall of ſo notable an accident) in what caſe *Pyrocles* was; learning withall, that his hate was farre more to him then to *Pyrocles*, hee found meanes to acquaint him ſelfe with a noble-man of that Countrie, to whome largely diſcouering what he was, he found him a moſt fit inſtrument to effectuate his deſire. For this noble-man had bene one, who in many warres had ſerued *Euarchus*, and had bene ſo mind-ſtriken by the beautie of vertue in that noble King, that (though not borne his Subiect) he euer profeſt himſelfe his ſeruaunt. His deſire therefore to him was, to keepe *Muſidorus* in a ſtrong Caſtle of his, and then to make the King of *Phrygia* vnderſtand, that if he would deliuer *Pyrocles*, *Muſidorus* would willingly put him ſelfe into his hands: knowing well, that how thirſtie ſo euer he was of *Pyrocles* bloud, he would rather drinke that of *Muſidorus*.

The Nobleman was loath to preſerue one by the loſſe of another, but time vrging reſolution: the importunitie of *Muſidorus* (who ſhewed a minde not to

ouer-liue

ouer-liue *Pyrocles*) with the affection he bare to *Euarchus*, ſo preuayled, that he carried this ſtrange offer of *Muſidorus*, which by that Tyrant was greedelie accepted.

And ſo vpon ſecuritie of both ſides, they were enterchanged. Where I may not omitte the worke of friendſhippe in *Pyrocles*, who both in ſpeache and countenance to *Muſidorus*, well ſhewed, that he thought himſelfe iniured, and not releeued by him: asking him, what he had euer ſeene in him, why he could not beare the extremities of mortall accidentes as well as any man? and why he ſhould enuie him the glorie of ſuffering death for his friendes cauſe, and (as it were) robbe him of his owne poſſeſſion? But in this notable contention, (where the conqueſt muſt be the conquerers deſtruction, and ſafetie the puniſhment of the conquered) *Muſidorus* preuayled: becauſe he was a more welcome praie to the vniuſt King, and as chearefully going towardes, as *Pyrocles* went frowardly fromward his death, he was deliuered to the King, who could not be inough ſure of him, without he fed his owne eies vpon one, whom he had begon to feare, as ſoone as the other began to be.

Yet becauſe he would in one acte, both make oſtentation of his owne felicitie (into whoſe hands his moſt feared enemie was fallen) and withall cut of ſuch hopes from his ſuſpected ſubiects (when they ſhould knowe certainly he was dead) with much more skilfull crueltie, and horrible ſolemnitie he cauſed each thing to be prepared for his triumph of tyrannie. And ſo the day being come, he was led foorth by many armed men (who often had beene the fortifiers of wickednes) to the place of execution: where comming with a minde comforted in that he had done ſuch ſeruice to *Pyrocles*, this ſtrange encounter he had.

The excelling *Pyrocles* was no ſooner deliuered by the kings ſeruants to a place of liberty, then he bent his witte and courage, (and what would not they bring to paſſe?) how ether to deliuer *Muſidorus*, or to periſh with him. And (finding he could get in that countrie no forces ſufficient by force to reſcue him) to bring himſelfe to die with him, (little hoping of better euent) he put himſelfe in poore rayment, and by the helpe of ſome few crownes he tooke of that noble-man, (who full of ſorrow, though not knowing the ſecrete of his intent, ſuffered him to goe in ſuch order from him) he (euen he, borne to the greateſt expectation, and of the greateſt bloud that any Prince might be) ſubmitted himſelfe to be ſeruant to the executioner that ſhould put to death *Muſidorus*: a farre notabler proofe of his friendſhip, conſidering the height of his minde, then any death could be. That bad officer not ſuſpecting him, being araied fit for ſuch an eſtate, and hauing his beautie hidden by many foule ſpots he artificially put vpon his face, gaue him leaue not onely to weare a ſworde himſelfe, but to beare his ſworde prepared for the iuſtified murther. And ſo *Pyrocles* taking his time, when *Muſidorus* was vpon the ſcaffold (ſeparated ſomewhat from the reſt, as allowed to ſay ſomething) he ſtept vnto him, and putting the ſworde into his hande not bound (a point of ciuility the officers vſed towards him, becauſe they doubted no ſuch enterpriſe) *Muſidorus* (ſaid he) die nobly. In truth, neuer man betweene ioy before knowledge what to be glad of, and feare after conſidering his caſe, had ſuch a confuſion of thoughts, as I had, when I ſaw *Pyrocles*, ſo neare me. But with that *Dorus* bluſhed, and *Pamela* ſmiled: and *Dorus* the more bluſhed at her ſmiling, and ſhe the more ſmiled at his bluſhing; becauſe he had (with the remembraunce of that plight he was in) forgotten in ſpeaking of himſelfe to vſe the third perſon. But *Muſidorus* turned againe her thoughts

from his cheekes to his tongue in this ſort: But (ſaid he) when they were with ſwordes in handes, not turning backs one to the other (for there they knew was no place of defence) but making it a preſeruation in not hoping to be preſerued, and now acknowledging themſelues ſubiect to death, meaning onely to do honour to their princely birth, they flew amongſt them all (for all were enimies) and had quickly either with flight or death, left none vpon the ſcaffold to annoy them. Wherein *Pyrocles* (the excellent *Pyrocles*) did ſuch wonders beyond beliefe, as was hable to leade *Muſidorus* to courage, though he had bene borne a coward. But indeed, iuſt rage and deſperate vertue did ſuch effects, that the popular ſort of the beholders began to be almoſt ſuperſtitiouſly amazed, as at effects beyond mortall power. But the King with angry threatnings from-out a window (where he was not aſhamed, the world ſhould behold him a beholder) commaunded his gard, and the reſt of his ſouldiers to haſten their death. But many of them loſt their bodies to looſe their ſoules, when the Princes grew almoſt ſo weary, as they were ready to be conquered with conquering.

But as they were ſtill fighting with weake armes, and ſtrong harts, it happened, that one of the ſouldiers (commaunded to go vp after his fellowes againſt the Princes) hauing receiued a light hurt, more wounded in his hart, went backe with as much diligence, as he came vp with modeſtie: which another of his fellowes ſeeing, to pike a thanke of the King, ſtrake him vpon the face, reuiling him, that ſo accompanied, he would runne away from ſo fewe. But he (as many times it falls out) onely valiant, when he was angrie, in reuenge thruſt him through: which with his death was ſtreight reuenged by a brother of his: and that againe requited by a fellow of the others. There began to be a great tumult amongſt the ſouldiers; which ſeene, and not vnderſtood by the people (vſed to feares but not vſed to be bolde in them) ſome began to crie treaſon; and that voice ſtreight multiplying it ſelfe, the King (O the cowardiſe of a guiltie conſcience) before any man ſet vpon him, fled away. Where-with a bruit (either by arte of ſome well meaning men, or by ſuch chaunce as ſuch things often fall out by) ran from one to the other, that the King was ſlaine; wherewith certaine yong men of the braueſt mindes, cried with lowde voice, Libertie; and encouraging the other Citizens to follow them, ſet vpon the garde, and ſouldiers as chiefe inſtruments of Tyrannie: and quickly, aided by the Princes, they had left none of them aliue, nor any other in the cittie, who they thought had in any ſort ſet his hand to the worke of their ſeruitude, and (God knowes) by the blindneſſe of rage, killing many guiltles perſons, either for affinity to the Tyrant, or enmitie to the tyrant-killers. But ſome of the wiſer (ſeeing that a popular licence is indeede the many-headed tyranny) preuailed with the reſt to make *Muſidorus* their chiefe: chooſing one of them (becauſe Princes) to defend them, and him becauſe elder and moſt hated of the Tyrant, and by him to be ruled: whom foorthwith they lifted vp, Fortune (I thinke) ſmiling at her worke therein, that a ſcaffold of execution ſhould grow a ſcaffold of coronation.

But by and by there came newes of more certaine truth, that the King was not dead, but fled to a ſtrong caſtle of his, neere hand, where he was gathering forces in all ſpeed poſſible to ſuppreſſe this mutinie. But now they had run themſelues too farre out of breath, to go backe againe the ſame career; and too well they knew the ſharpneſſe of his memorie to forget ſuch an iniury; therefore learning vertue of neceſſitie, they continued reſolute to obey *Muſidorus*. Who ſeing what forces

were

were in the citie, with them iſſued againſt the Tyrant, while they were in this heat; before practiſes might be vſed to diſſeuer them: and with them met the King, who likewiſe hoping little to preuaile by time, (knowing and finding his peoples hate) met him with little delay in the field: where him ſelfe was ſlaine by *Muſidorus*, after he had ſeene his onely ſonne (a Prince of great courage & beautie, but foſtred in bloud by his naughty Father) ſlaine by the hand of *Pyrocles*. This victory obteined, with great, and truly not vndeſerued honour to the two Princes, the whole eſtates of the country with one conſent, gaue the crowne and all other markes of ſoueraignte to *Muſidorus*; deſiring nothing more, then to liue vnder ſuch a gouernment, as they promiſed themſelues of him.

But he thinking it a greater greatnes to giue a kingdome, then get a kingdome; vnderſtanding that there was left of the bloud Roiall, and next to the ſucceſſion, an aged Gentleman of approued goodnes (who had gotten nothing by his couſins power, but danger from him, and odiouſnes for him) hauing paſt his time in modeſt ſecrecy, and aſmuch from entermedling in matters of gouernment, as the greatneſſe of his bloud would ſuffer him, did (after hauing receiued the full power to his owne hands) reſigne all to the noble-man: but with ſuch conditions, and cautions of the conditions, as might aſſure the people (with aſmuch aſſurance as worldly matters beare) that not onely that gouernour, of whom indeed they looked for all good, but the nature of the gouernment, ſhould be no way apt to decline to Tyranny.

This dooing ſet foorth no leſſe his magnificence, then the other act did his magnanimitie: ſo that greatly prayſed of all, and iuſtly beloued of the new King, who in all both wordes and behauiour proteſted him ſelfe their Tenaunt, and Liegeman, they were drawne thence to reuenge thoſe two ſeruants of theirs, of whoſe memorable faith, I told you (moſt excellent Princeſſe) in willingly giuing themſelues to be drowned for their ſakes: but drowned indeed they were not, but gat with painefull ſwimming vpon a rocke: from whence (after being come as neere famiſhing, as before drowning) the weather breaking vp, they were brought to the maine land of *Pontus*; the ſame country vpon which *Muſidorus* alſo was fallen, but not in ſo luckie a place.

For they were brought to the King of that country, a Tyrant alſo, not thorow ſuſpition, greedines, or reuengefulnes, as he of *Phrygia*, but (as I may terme it) of a wanton crueltie: inconſtant in his choiſe of friends, or rather neuer hauing a friend, but a playfellow; of whom when he was wearie, he could not otherwiſe rid himſelfe, then by killing them: giuing ſomtimes prodigally, not becauſe he loued them to whom he gaue, but becauſe he luſted to giue: puniſhing, not ſo much for hate or anger, as becauſe he felt not the ſmart of puniſhment: delighted to be flattered, at firſt for thoſe vertues which were not in him, at length making his vices vertues worthy the flattering: with like iudgement glorying, when he had happened to do a thing well, as when he had performed ſome notable miſchiefe.

He chanced at that time (for indeed long time none laſted with him) to haue next in vſe about him, a man of the moſt enuious diſpoſition, that (I think) euer infected the aire with his breath: whoſe eies could not looke right vpon any happie man, nor eares beare the burthen of any bodies praiſe: contrary to the natures of all other plagues, plagued with others well being; making happines the ground of his vnhappineſſe, & good news the argumēt of his ſorrow: in ſum, a man whoſe fauour

no man could winne, but by being miſerable. And ſo, becauſe theſe two faithfull ſeruants of theirs came in miſerable ſorte to that Courte, he was apte inough at firſt to fauour them; and the King vnderſtanding of their aduenture, (wherein they had ſhewed ſo conſtant a faith vnto their Lordes) ſuddainly falles to take a pride in making much of them, extolling them with infinite prayſes, and prayſing him ſelfe in his harte, in that he prayſed them. And by and by were they made great courtiers, and in the way of minions, when aduauncement (the moſt mortall offence to enuy) ſtirred vp their former friend, to ouerthrow his owne worke in them; taking occaſion vpon the knowledge (newly come to the court) of the late death of the King of *Phrygia* deſtroied by their two Lordes, who hauing bene a neere kinſman to this Prince of *Pontus*, by this enuious Councellour, partly with ſuſpition of practiſe, partly with glory of in-part reuenging his couſins death, the King was ſuddainly turned, (and euery turne with him was a downe-fall) to locke them vp in priſon, as ſeruaunts to his enimies, whom before he had neuer knowne, nor (till that time one of his owne ſubiects had entertained and dealt for them) did euer take heed of. But now earneſt in euery preſent humour, and making himſelfe braue in his liking, he was content to giue them iuſt cauſe of offence, when they had power to make iuſt reuenge. Yet did the Princes ſend vnto him before they entred into warre, deſiring their ſeruants liberty. But he ſwelling in their humblenes, (like a bubble blowne vp with a ſmall breath, broken with a great) forgetting, or neuer knowing humanitie, cauſed their heads to be ſtriken off, by the aduice of his enuious Councellor (who now hated them ſo much the more, as he foreſaw their happines in hauing ſuch, and ſo fortunate maſters) and ſent them with vnroyall reproches to *Muſidorus* and *Pyrocles*, as if they had done traiterouſly, and not heroically in killing his tyrannicall Coſen.

But that iniurie went beyond all degree of reconcilement; ſo that they making forces in *Phrygia* (a kingdome wholy at their commandement, by the loue of the people, and gratefulneſſe of the King) they entred his country; and wholy conquering it (with ſuch deeds as at leſt Fame ſaid were excellent) tooke the King; and by *Muſidorus* commaundement (*Pyrocles* hart more enclining to pitie) he was ſlaine vpon the tombe of their two true Seruants; which they cauſed to be made for them with royall expences, and notable workmanſhip to preſerue their dead liues. For his wicked Seruant he ſhould haue felt the like, or worſe, but that his harte brake euen to death with the beholding the honour done to their dead carcaſſes. There might *Pyrocles* quietly haue enioyed that crowne, by all the deſire of that people, moſt of whom had reuolted vnto him: but he, finding a ſiſter of the late Kings (a faire and well eſteemed Ladie) looking for nothing more, then to be oppreſſed with her brothers ruines, gaue her in marriage to the noble man his fathers old friend, and endowed them with the crowne of that kingdome. And not content with thoſe publike actions, of princely, and (as it were) gouerning vertue, they did (in that kingdome and ſome other neere about) diuers acts of particular trials, more famous, becauſe more perilous. For in that time thoſe regions were full both of cruell monſters, and monſtrous men: all which in ſhort time by priuate combats they deliuered the countries of.

Among the reſt, two brothers of huge both greatneſſe and force, therefore commonly called Giants, who kept themſelues in a caſtle ſeated vpon the top of a rocke, impregnable, becauſe there was no comming vnto it, but by one narrow path,

where

where one mans force was able to keepe downe an armie. Theſe brothers had a while ſerued the King of *Pontus*, and in all his affaires (eſpecially of war, whereunto they were onely apt) they had ſhewed, as vnconquered courage, ſo a rude faithfulnes: being men indeed by nature apter to the faults of rage, then of deceipt; not greatly ambitious, more then to be well and vprightly dealt with; rather impatient of iniury, then delighted with more then ordinary curteſies; and in iniuries more ſenſible of ſmart or loſſe, then of reproch or diſgrace. Theſe men being of this nature (and certainely Iewels to a wiſe man, conſidering what indeed wonders they were able to performe) yet were diſcarded by that vnworthy Prince, after many notable deſerts, as not worthy the holding. Which was the more euidēt to thē; becauſe it ſodainly fell from an exceſſe of fauor, which (many examples hauing taught them) neuer ſtopt his race till it came to an headlong ouerthrow: they ful of rage, retyred thēſelues vnto this caſtle. Where thinking nothing iuſter thē reuenge, nor more noble then the effects of anger, that (according to the nature) full of inward brauery and fiercenes, ſcarcely in the glaſſe of Reaſon, thinking it ſelfe faire, but when it is terrible, they immediately gaue themſelues to make all the countrie about them (ſubiect to that King) to ſmart for their Lords folly: not caring how innocent they were, but rather thinking the more innocent they were, the more it teſtified their ſpite, which they deſired to manifeſt. And with vſe of euill, growing more and more euill, they tooke delight in ſlaughter, and pleaſed themſelues in making others wracke the effect of their power: ſo that where in the time that they obeyed a maſter, their anger was a ſeruiceable power of the minde to doo publike good; ſo now vnbridled, and blinde iudge of it ſelfe, it made wickedneſſe violent, and praiſed it ſelfe in excellencie of miſchiefe; almoſt to the ruine of the countrie, not greatly regarded by their careleſſe and loueleſſe king. Till now theſe Princes finding them ſo fleſhed in crueltie, as not to be reclaimed, ſecretly vndertooke the matter alone: for accompanied they would not haue ſuffered them to haue mounted; and ſo thoſe great fellowes ſcornefully receiuing them, as fooliſh birds ſalne into their net, it pleaſed the eternall iuſtice to make them ſuffer death by their hands: and ſo they were manifoldly acknowledged the ſauers of that countrie.

It were the part of a verie idle Orator to ſet forth the numbers of wel-deuiſed honors done vnto them: But as high honor is not onely gotten and borne by paine, and daunger, but muſt be nurſt by the like, or els vaniſheth as ſoone as it appeares to the world: ſo the naturall hunger thereof (which was in *Pyrocles*) ſuffered him not to account a reſting ſeate of that, which euer either riſeth, or falleth, but ſtill to make one occaſion beget another; wherby his doings might ſend his praiſe to others mouthes to rebound againe true contentment to his ſpirit. And therefore hauing well eſtabliſhed thoſe kingdomes, vnder good gouernours, and rid them by their valure of ſuch giants and monſters, as before time armies were not able to ſubdue, they determined in vnknowne order to ſee more of the world, and to imploy thoſe gifts eſteemed rare in them, to the good of mankinde; and therefore would themſelues (vnderſtanding that the King *Euarchus* was paſſed all the cumber of his warres) goe priuately to ſeeke exerciſes of their vertue; thinking it not ſo worthy, to be brought to Heroycall effects by fortune, or neceſſitie, (like *Vlyſſes* and *Aeneas*) as by ones owne choice, and working. And ſo went they away from verie vnwilling people to leaue them, making time haſte it ſelfe to be a circumſtance of their honour, and one place witneſſe to another of the truth

of their doings. For ſcarcely were they out of the confines of *Pontus*, but that as they ridde alone armed, (for alone they went, one ſeruing the other) they mette an aduenture; which though not ſo notable for any great effect they perfourmed, yet worthy to be remembred for the vn-vſed examples therein, as well of true naturall goodnes, as of wretched vngratefulneſſe.

It was in the kingdome of *Galacia*, the ſeaſon being (as in the depth of winter) very cold, and as then ſodainely growne to ſo extreame and foule a ſtorme, that neuer any winter (I thinke) brought foorth a fowler child: ſo that the Princes were euen compelled by the haile, that the pride of the winde blew into their faces, to ſeeke ſome ſhrowding place which a certaine hollow rocke offering vnto them, they made it their ſhield againſt the tempeſts furie. And ſo ſtaying there, till the violence thereof was paſſed, they heard the ſpeach of a couple, who not perceiuing them (being hidde within that rude canapy) helde a ſtraunge and pitifull diſputation which made them ſteppe out; yet in ſuch ſort, as they might ſee vnſeene. There they perceaued an aged man, and a young, ſcarcely come to the age of a man, both poorely arayed, extreamely weather-beaten; the olde man blinde, the young man leading him: and yet through all thoſe miſeries, in both there ſeemed to appeare a kinde of nobleneſſe, not ſutable to that affliction. But the firſt words they heard, were theſe of the old man. Well *Leonatus* (ſaid he) ſince I cannot perſwade thee to leade mee to that which ſhould end my griefe, and thy trouble, let me now entreat thee to leaue me: feare not, my miſerie cannot be greater then it is, and nothing doth become me but miſerie; feare not the danger of my blind ſteps, I cannot fall worſe then I am. And doo not I pray thee, doo not obſtinately continue to infect thee with my wretchednes. But flie, flie from this region, onely worthy of me. Deare father (anſwered he) doo not take away from me the onely remnant of my happineſſe: while I haue power to doo you ſeruice, I am not wholly miſerable. Ah my ſonne (ſaid he, and with that he groned, as if ſorrow ſtraue to breake his harte,) how euill fits it me to haue ſuch a ſonne, and how much doth thy kindneſſe vpbraide my wickedneſſe? Theſe dolefull ſpeeches, and ſome others to like purpoſe (well ſhewing they had not bene borne to the fortune they were in,) moued the Princes to goe out vnto them, and aske the younger what they were? Sirs (anſwered he, with a good grace, and made the more agreable by a certaine noble kinde of pitiouſnes) I ſee well you are ſtraungers, that know not our miſerie ſo well here knowne, that no man dare know, but that we muſt be miſerable. In deede our ſtate is ſuch, as though nothing is ſo needfull vnto vs as pittie, yet nothing is more daungerous vnto vs, then to make our ſelues ſo knowne as may ſtirre pittie. But your preſence promiſeth, that cruelty ſhall not ouer-runne hate. And if it did, in truth our ſtate is ſoncke below the degree of feare.

This old man (whom I leade) was lately rightfull Prince of this countrie of *Paphlagonia*, by the hard-harted vngratefulnes of a ſonne of his, depriued, not onely of his kingdome (whereof no forraine forces were euer able to ſpoyle him) but of his ſight, the riches which Nature graunts to the pooreſt creatures. Whereby, and by other his vnnaturall dealings, he hath bin driuen to ſuch griefe, as euen now he would haue had me to haue led him to the toppe of this rocke, thence to caſt himſelfe headlong to death: and ſo would haue made me (who receiued my life of him) to be the worker of his deſtruction. But noble Gentlemen (ſaid he) if either

of

of you haue a father, and feele what duetifull affection is engraffed in a ſonnes hart, let me entreate you to conuay this afflicted Prince to ſome place of reſt and ſecuritie. Amongſt your worthie actes it ſhall be none of the leaſt, that a King, of ſuch might and fame, and ſo vniuſtlie oppreſſed, is in any ſort by you relieued.

But before they coulde make him aunſwere, his father began to ſpeake. Ah my ſonne (ſaid he) how euill an Hiſtorian are you, that leaue out the chiefe knot of all the diſcourſe? my wickednes, my wickednes. And if thou doeſt it to ſpare my ears, (the onely ſenſe now left mee proper for knowledge) aſſure thy ſelfe thou doeſt miſtake me. And I take witneſſe of that Sunne which you ſee (with that he caſt vp his blinde eies, as if he would hunt for light,) and wiſh my ſelfe in worſe caſe then I doe wiſh my ſelfe, which is as euill as may bee, if I ſpeake vntruely; that nothing is ſo welcome to my thoughts, as the publiſhing of my ſhame. Therefore know you Gentlemen (to whome from my heart I wiſh that it may not proue ſome ominous foretoken of misfortune to haue met with ſuch a miſer as I am) that whatſoeuer my ſonne (ô God, that truth bindes me to reproch him with the name of my ſon) hath ſaide, is true. But beſides thoſe truthes, this alſo is true, that hauing had in lawfull mariage, of a mother fitte to beare roiall children, this ſonne (ſuch a one as partly you ſee, and better ſhall knowe by my ſhort declaration) and ſo enioyed the expectations in the world of him, till he was growen to iuſtifie their expectations (ſo as I needed enuie no father for the chiefe comfort of mortalitie, to leaue an other ones-ſelfe after me) I was caried by a baſtard ſonne of mine (if at leaſt I bee bounde to beleeue the words of that baſe woman my concubine, his mother) firſt to miſlike, then to hate, laſtly to deſtroy, or to doo my beſt to deſtroy, this ſonne (I thinke you thinke) vndeſeruing deſtruction. What waies be vſed to bring me to it, if I ſhoulde tell you, I ſhoulde tediouſlie trouble you with as much poiſonous hypocriſie, deſperate fraude, ſmooth malice, hidden ambition, and ſmiling enuie, as in any liuing perſon could be harbored. But I liſt it not; no remembraunce, of naughtineſſe delightes me, bût mine owne; and me thinkes, the accuſing his trappes might in ſome manner excuſe my fault, which certainelie I loth to doo. But the concluſion is, that I gaue order to ſome ſeruauntes of mine, whome I thought as apte for ſuch charities as my ſelfe, to lead him out into a forreſt, and there to kill him.

But thoſe theeues (better natured to my ſonne then my ſelfe) ſpared his life, letting him goe, to learne to liue poorelie: which he did, giuing himſelfe to be a priuate ſouldier, in a countrey here by. But as hee was ready to be greatlie aduaunced for ſome noble peeces of ſeruice which he did, he heard newes of me: who (dronke in my affection to that vnlawfull and vnnaturall ſonne of mine) ſuffered my ſelfe ſo to be gouerned by him, that all fauours and puniſhments paſſed by him, all offices, and places of importance, diſtributed to his fauorites; ſo that ere I was aware, I had left my ſelfe nothing but the name of a King: which he ſhortly wearie of too, with manie indignities (if any thing may be called an indignitie, which was laide vppon me) threw me out of my ſeate, and put out my eies; and then (proud in his tirannie) let me goe, neither impriſoning, nor killing me: but rather delighting to make me feele my miſerie; miſerie in deede, if euer there were any; full of wretchedneſſe, fuller of diſgrace, and fulleſt of guiltines. And as he came to the crowne by ſo vniuſt meanes, as vniuſtlie he kept it, by force of ſtraunger ſouldiers in *Cittadels*, the neſtes of tirannie, and murderers of libertie; diſarming all his own countrimen, that no man durſt ſhew himſelfe a well-willer of mine; to ſay the truth (I thinke) few of

them being ſo (conſidering my cruell folly to my good ſonne, and fooliſh kindneſſe to my vnkinde baſtard:) but if there were any who felt a pitty of ſo great a fall, and had yet any ſparkes of vnſlaine ducty lefte in them towardes me; yet durſt they not ſhewe it, ſcarcely with giuing mee almes at their doores; which yet was the onely ſuſtenaunce of my diſtreſſed life, no body daring to ſhewe ſo much charitie, as to lende mee a hande to guide my darke ſteppes: Till this ſonne of mine (God knowes, woorthy of a more vertuous, and more fortunate father) forgetting my abhominable wronges, not recking daunger, and neglecting the preſent good way hee was in of doing himſelfe good, came hether to doo this kinde office you ſee him performe towardes me, to my vnſpeakeable griefe; not only becauſe his kindnes is a glaſſe euen to my blind eies, of my naughtines, but that aboue all griefes, it greeues me he ſhould deſperatlie aduenture the loſſe of his well deſeruing life for mine, that yet owe more to fortune for my deſerts, as if hee would cary mudde in a cheſt of chriſtall. For well I know, he that now raigneth, howe much ſo euer (and with good reaſon) he deſpiſeth me, of all men deſpiſed; yet hee will not let ſlippe any aduantage to make away him, whoſe iuſt title (ennobled by courage and goodnes) may one day ſhake the ſeate of a neuer ſecure tyrannie. And for this cauſe I craued of him to leade mee to the toppe of this rocke, indeede I muſt confeſſe, with meaning to free him from ſo Serpentine a companion as I am. But he finding what I purpoſed, onely therein ſince hee was borne, ſhewed himſelfe diſobedient vnto mee. And now gentlemen, you haue the true ſtorie, which I pray you publiſh to the world, that my miſchieuous proceedinges may bee the glorie of his filiall pietie, the onely reward now left for ſo great a merite. And if it may be, let me obtaine that of you, which my ſonne denies me: for neuer was there more pity in ſauing any, then in ending me; both becauſe therein my agonies ſhall ende, and ſo ſhall you preſerue this excellent young man, who els wilfully followes his owne ruine.

The matter in it ſelfe lamentable, lamentably expreſſed by the old Prince (which needed not take to himſelfe the geſtures of pitie, ſince his face coulde not put of the markes thereof) greatly moued the two Princes to compaſſion, which coulde not ſtay in ſuch harts as theirs without ſeeking remedie. But by and by the occaſion was preſented: for *Plexirtus* (ſo was the baſtard called) came thether with fortie horſe, onely of purpoſe to murder this brother; of whoſe comming he had ſoone aduertiſement, and thought no eyes of ſufficient credite in ſuch a matter, but his owne; and therefore came himſelfe to be actor, and ſpectator. And as ſoone as hee came, not regarding the weake (as hee thought) garde of but two men, commaunded ſome of his followers to ſet their handes to his, in the killing of *Leonatus*. But the young Prince (though not otherwiſe armed but with a ſworde) howe falſely ſoeuer he was dealt with by others, would not betray him ſelfe: but brauely drawing it out, made the death of the firſt that aſſayled him, warne his fellowes to come more warily after him. But then *Pyrocles* and *Muſidorus* were quickly become parties (ſo iuſt a defence deſeruing as much as old friendſhip) and ſo did behauethem among that companie (more iniurious, then valiant) that many of them loſt their liues for their wicked maiſter.

Yet perhaps had the number of them at laſt preuailed, if the King of *Pontus* (lately by them made ſo) had not come vnlooked for to their ſuccour. Who (hauing had a dreame which had fixt his imagination vehemently vpon ſome great daunger pre-

preſently to follow thoſe two Princes whom hee moſt dearely loued) was come in al haſt, following as wel as he could their track with a hundreth horſes in that countrie, which he thought (conſidering who then raigned) a fitte place inough to make the ſtage of any Tragedie.

But then the match had beene ſo ill made for *Plexirtus*, that his ill-led life, and worſe gotten honour ſhould haue tumbled together to deſtruction; had there not come in *Tydeus* and *Telenor*, with forty or fifty in their ſuite, to the defence of *Plexirtus*. Theſe two were brothers, of the nobleſt houſe of that country, brought vppe from their infancy with *Plexirtus*: men of ſuch proweſſe, as not to knowe feare in themſelues, and yet to teach it others that ſhoulde deale with them: for they had often made their liues triumph ouer moſt terrible daungers; neuer diſmaied, and euer fortunate; and truely no more ſetled in valure, then diſpoſed to goodnes and iuſtice, if either they had lighted on a better friend, or could haue learned to make friendſhip a childe, and not the father of Vertue. But bringing vp (rather then choiſe) hauing firſt knit their mindes vnto him, (indeede crafty inough, either to hide his faultes, or neuer to ſhewe them, but when they might pay home) they willingly helde out the courſe, rather to ſatisfie him, then all the worlde; and rather to be good friendes, then good men: ſo as though they did not like the euill hee did, yet they liked him that did the euill; and though not councellors of the offence, yet protectors of the offender. Now they hauing heard of this ſodaine going out, with ſo ſmall a company, in a countrey full of euill-wiſhing mindes toward him (though they knew not the cauſe) followed him; till they founde him in ſuch caſe as they were to venture their liues, or elſe he to looſe his: which they did with ſuch force of minde and bodie, that truely I may iuſtly ſay, *Pyrocles* and *Muſidorus* had neuer till then found any, that could make them ſo well repeate their hardeſt leſſon in the feates of armes. And briefly ſo they did, that if they ouercame not; yet were they not ouercome, but caried away that vngratefull maiſter of theirs to a place of ſecurity; howſoeuer the Princes laboured to the contrary. But this matter being thus farre begun, it became not the conſtancy of the Princes ſo to leaue it; but in all haſt making forces both in *Pontus* and *Phrigia*, they had in fewe daies, lefte him but onely that one ſtrong place where he was. For feare hauing beene the onely knot that had faſtned his people vnto him, that once vntied by a greater force, they all ſcattered from him; like ſo many birdes, whoſe cage had beene broken.

In which ſeaſon the blinde King (hauing in the chiefe cittie of his Realme, ſet the crown vppon his ſon *Leonatus* head) with many teares (both of ioy and ſorrow) ſetting forth to the whole people, his owne fault and his ſonnes vertue, after he had kiſt him, and forſt his ſonne to accept honour of him (as of his new-become ſubiect) euen in a moment died, as it ſhould ſeeme: his heart broken with vnkindenes and affliction, ſtretched ſo farre beyond his limits with this exceſſe of comfort, as it was able no longer to keepe ſafe his vitall ſpirites. But the new King (hauing no leſſe louingly performed all dueties to him dead, then aliue) purſued on the ſiege of his vnnaturall brother, aſmuch for the reuenge of his father, as for the eſtabliſhing of his owne quiet. In which ſiege truely I cannot but acknowledge the proweſſe of thoſe two brothers, then whome the Princes neuer found in all their trauaile two of greater hability to performe, nor of habler skil for conduct.

But *Plexirtus* finding, that if nothing elſe, famine would at laſt bring him to deſtruction, thought better by humblenes to creepe, where by pride he coulde not

march,

marche. For certainely ſo had nature formed him, and the exerciſe of craft conformed him to all turningnes of of ſleights, that though no man had leſſe goodnes in his ſoule then he, no man could better find the places whence arguments might grow of goodneſſe to another: though no man felt leſſe pitie, no man could tel better how to ſtir pitie: no man more impudent to deny, where proofes were not manifeſt; no man more ready to confeſſe with a repenting manner of aggrauating his owne euill, where denial would but make the fault fowler. Now he tooke this way that hauing gotten a paſport for one (that pretended he woulde put *Plexirtus* aliue into his hands) to ſpeake with the King his brother, he him ſelfe (though much againſt the minds of the valiant brothers, who rather wiſhed to die in braue defence) with a rope about his necke, barefooted, came to offer himſelfe to the diſcretion of *Leonatus*. Where what ſubmiſſion hee vſed, how cunningly in making greater the faulte he made the faultines the leſſe, how artificially he could ſet out the torments of his owne conſcience, with the burdenſome comber he had found of his ambitious deſires, how finely ſeeming to deſire nothing but death, as aſhamed to liue, he begd life, in the refuſing it, I am not cunning inough to be able to expreſſe: but ſo fell out of it, that though at firſt ſight *Leonatus* ſaw him with no other eie, then as the murderer of his father; and anger already began to paint reuenge in many colours, ere long he had not onely gotten pitie, but pardon, and if not an excuſe of the faulte paſt, yet an opinion of a future amendment: while the poore villaines (chiefe miniſters of his wickednes, now betraied by the author thereof,) were deliuered to many cruell ſorts of death; he ſo handling it, that it rather ſeemed, hee had more come into the defence of an vnremediable miſchiefe already committed, then that they had done it at firſt by his conſent.

In ſuch ſort the Princes left theſe reconciled brothers (*Plexirtus* in all his behauiour carying him in far lower degree of ſeruice, then the euer-noble nature of *Leonatus* would ſuffer him) and taking likewiſe their leaues of their good friend the King of *Pontus* (who returned to enioy their benefite, both of his wife and kingdome) they priuately went thence, hauing onely with them the two valiant brothers, who would needs accompanie them, through diuers places; they foure dooing actes more daungerous, though leſſe famous, becauſe they were but priuat chiualries: till hearing of the faire and vertuous Queene *Erona* of *Lycia*, beſieged by the puiſſant King of *Armenia*, they bent themſelues to her ſuccour, both becauſe the weaker (and weaker as being a Ladie,) and partly becauſe they heard the King of *Armenia* had in his company three of the moſt famous men liuing, for matters of armes, that were knowne to be in the worlde. Whereof one was the Prince *Plangus*, (whoſe name was ſweetned by your breath, peerleſſe Ladie, when the laſt daie it pleaſed you to mention him vnto me) the other two were two great Princes (though holding of him) *Barzanes* and *Euardes*, men of Giant-like bothe hugenes and force: in which two eſpecially, the truſt the King had of victorie, was repoſed. And of them, thoſe brothers *Tydeus* and *Telenor* (ſufficient iudges in warlike matters) ſpake ſo high commendations, that the two Princes had euen a youthfull longing to haue ſome triall of their vertue. And therefore as ſooneas they were entred into *Lycia* they ioyned themſelues with thē that faithfully ſerued the poore Queene, at that time beſieged: & ere long animated in ſuch ſort their almoſt ouerthrowne harts, that they went by force to relieue the towne, though they were depriued of a great part of their ſtrēgth by the parting of the two brothers, who were ſent for in all haſt to returne to their

old

old friend and maiſter, *Plexirtus*: who (willingly hood-winking themſelues from ſeeing his faultes, and binding themſelues to beleeue what he ſaid) often abuſed the vertue of courage to defend his fowle vice of iniuſtice. But now they were ſent for to aduaunce a conqueſt he was about; while *Pyrocles* and *Muſidorus* purſued the deliuerie of the Queene *Erona*.

I haue heard (ſaide *Pamela*) that parte of the ſtory of *Plangus* when hee paſſed through this country: therefore you may (if you liſt) paſſe ouer that warre of *Eronaes* quarrell, leſt if you ſpeake too much of warre matters, you ſhould wake *Mopſa*, which might happily breed a great broile. He looked, and ſaw that *Mopſa* indeede ſat ſwallowing of ſleepe with open mouth, making ſuch a noiſe withall, as no bodie could lay the ſtealing of a nappe to her charge. Whereupon, willing to vſe that occaſion, he kneeled downe, and with humble-hartednesſe, and hardy earneſtnes printed in his graces, Alas (ſaid he) diuine Lady, who haue wrought ſuch miracles in me, as to make a Prince (none of the baſeſt) to thinke all principalities baſe, in reſpect of the ſheephooke, which may hold him vp in your ſight; vouchſafe now at laſt to heare in direct words my humble ſute, while this dragon ſleepes, that keeps the golden fruite. If in my deſire I wiſh, or in my hopes aſpire, or in my imagination faine to my ſelfe any thing which may bee the leſt ſpot to that heauenly vertue, which ſhines in all your doings; I pray the eternall powers, that the words I ſpeake may be deadly poyſons, while they are in my mouth, and that all my hopes, all my deſires, all my imaginations, may onely worke their owne confuſion. But if loue, loue of you, loue of your vertues, ſeeke onely that fauour of you, which becommeth that gratefulnes, which cannot miſbecome your excellencie, O doo not: He would haue ſaid further, but *Pamela* calling aloud *Mopſa*, ſhe ſodainly ſtart vp, ſtaggering, and rubbing her eies, ran firſt out of the doore, and then backe to them, before ſhe knew how ſhe went out, or why ſhe came in againe: till at length, being fully come to her little ſelfe, ſhe asked *Pamela*, why ſhe had called her. For nothing (ſaid *Pamela*) but that you might heare ſome tales of your ſeruants telling and: therfore now (ſaid ſhe *Dorus* go on.

But as he (who found no ſo good ſacrifice, as obedience) was returning to the ſtory of himſelfe, *Philoclea* came in, and by and by after her, *Miſo*; ſo as for that time they were faine to let *Dorus* departe. But *Pamela* (delighted euen to preſerue in her memory, the words of ſo well a beloued ſpeaker) repeated the whole ſubſtance to her ſiſter, till their ſober dinner being come and gone, to recreate themſelues ſomething, (euen tyred with the noyſomnes of *Miſos* conuerſation) they determyned to goe (while the heate of the day laſted) to bath themſelues (ſuch being the manner of the *Arcadian* nymphes often to doo) in the riuer of *Ladon*, and take with them a Lute, meaning to delight them vnder ſome ſhadow. But they could not ſtir, but that *Miſo* with her daughter *Mopſa* was after them: and as it lay in their way to paſſe by the other lodge, *Zelmane* out of her window eſpied them, and ſo ſtale down after them: which ſhee might the better doo becauſe that *Gynecia* was ſicke, and *Baſilius* (that day being his birth-day) according to his maner, was buſie about his deuotions; and therefore ſhe went after, hoping to finde ſome time to ſpeake with *Philoclea*: but not a word could ſhee beginne, but that *Miſo* would bee one of the audience; ſo that ſhee was driuen to recommend thinking, ſpeaking, and all, to her eyes, who diligently perfourmed her truſt, till they came to the riuers ſide which of all the riuers of *Greece* had the price for excellent pureneſſe and ſweeteneſſe,

in

in ſo much as the verie bathing in it, was accounted exceeding healthfull. It ranne vpon ſo fine and delicate a ground, as one coulde not eaſely iudge, whether the Riuer did more waſh the grauell, or the grauell did purifie the Riuer; the Riuer not running forth right, but almoſt continually winding, as if the lower ſtreames would returne to their ſpring, or that the Riuer had a delight to play with it ſelfe. The banckes of either ſide ſeeming armes of the louing earth, that faine woulde embrace it; and the Riuer a wanton nymph which ſtill would ſlippe from it: either ſide of the bancke being fringed with moſt beautifull trees, which reſiſted the ſunnes dartes from ouer-much pearcing the naturall coldnes of the Riuer. There was the But among the reſt a goodly *Cypres*, who bowing her faire head ouer the water, it ſeemed ſhe looked into it, & dreſſed her greene lockes, by that rūning Riuer. There the Princeſſes determining to bathe thēſelus, though it was ſo priuiledged a place, vpō pain of death, as on bodie durſt preſume to come thither, yet for the more ſurety, they looked round about, and could ſee nōthing but a water ſpaniell, who came downe the riuer ſhewing that he hunted for a duck, & with a ſnuffling grace, diſdaining that his ſmelling force could not as well preuaile thorow the water, as thorow the aire; & therefore wayting with his eye, to ſee whether he could eſpie the duckes getting vp againe: but then a little below them failing of his purpoſe, he got out of the riuer, & ſhaking off the water (as great men do their friends, now he had no further cauſe to vſe it) inweeded himſelfe ſo, as the Ladies loſt the further marking his ſportfulneſſe: & inuiting *Zelmane* alſo to waſh her ſelfe with them, & ſhe excuſing her ſelfe with hauing takē a late cold, they begā by peece-meale to take away the eclipſing of their apparel.

Zelmane would haue put to her helping hand, but ſhe was taken with ſuch a quiuering, that ſhee thought it more wiſedome to leane her ſelfe to a tree and looke on, while *Miſo* and *Mopſa* (like a couple of foreſwat melters) were getting the pure ſiluer of their bodies out of the vre of their garments. But as the rayments went of to receaue kiſſes of the ground, *Zelmane* enuied the happineſſe of all, but of the ſmocke was euen iealous, and when that was taken away too, and that *Philoclea* remained (for her *Zelmane* onely marked) like a *Dyamon* taken from out the rocke, or rather like the Sun getting from vnder a cloud, and ſhewing his naked beames to the full vew, then was the beautie too much for a patient ſight, the delight too ſtrong for a ſtayed conceipt: ſo that *Zelmane* could not chooſe but runne, to touch, embrace and kiſſe her; But conſcience made her come to her ſelfe, and leaue *Philoclea*, who bluſhing, and withall ſmiling, making ſhamefaſtneſſe pleaſant, and pleaſure ſhamefaſt, tenderly moued her feete, vnwonted to feele the naked ground, till the touch of the cold water made a prettie kinde of ſhrugging come ouer her bodie, like the twinckling of the faireſt among the fixed ſtars. But the Riuer it ſelfe gaue way vnto her, ſo that ſhe was ſtreight breſt high; which was the deepeſt that there-about ſhee could be: & when cold *Ladon* had once fully imbraced them, himſelfe was no more ſo cold to thoſe Ladies, but as if his cold complexion had bene heated with loue, ſo ſeemed he to play about euery part he could touch.

Ah ſweete, now ſweeteſt *Ladon* (ſaid *Zelmane*) why doſt thou not ſlay thy courſe to haue more full taſt of thy happines? But the reaſon is manifeſt, the vpper ſtreames make ſuch haſte to haue their part of embracing, that the nether (though lothly) muſt needes giue place vnto them. O happie *Ladon*, within whom ſhee is, vpō whom her beautie fals, thorow whom her eye perceth. O happy *Ladon*, which

art

art n ow an vnperfect mirror of all perfection, canſt thou euer forget the bleſſednes of this impreſſion? if thou do, then let thy bed be turned from fine grauel, to weeds and m udde; if thou doo, let ſome vniuſt niggards make weres to ſpoile thy beauty; if thou do, let ſome greater riuer fall into thee, to take away the name of *Ladon*. Oh *Ladon*, happie *Ladon*, rather ſlide then run by her, leſt thou ſhouldeſt make her legs ſlippe from her; and then, O happy *Ladon*, who would then call thee, but the moſt curſed *Ladon*? But as the Ladies plaid them in the water, ſomtimes ſtriking it with their hands, the water (making lines in his face) ſeemed to ſmile at ſuch beating, and with twenty bubbles, not to be content to haue the picture of their face in large vpon him, but he would in ech of thoſe bubbles ſet forth the miniature of them.

But *Zelmane*, whoſe ſight was gaine-ſaid by nothing but the tranſparent vaile of *Ladon*, (like a chamber where a great fire is kept, though the fire be at one ſtay, yet with the continuance continually hath his heate encreaſed) had the coales of her affection ſo kindled with wonder, and blowne with delight, that now all her parts grudged, that her eyes ſhould doo more homage, then they, to the Princeſſe of them. In ſo much that taking vp the Lute, her wit began to be with a diuine furie inſpired; her voice would in ſo beloued an occaſion ſecond her wit; her hands accorded the Lutes muſicke to the voice; her panting hart daunced to the muſicke; while I thinke her feete did beate the time; while her bodie was the roome where it ſhould be celebrated; her ſoule the Queene which ſhould be delighted. And ſo togither went the vtterance and the inuention, that one might iudge, it was *Philocleas* beautie which did ſpeedily write it in her eyes; or the ſenſe thereof, which did word by word endite it in her minde, whereto ſhe (but as an organ) did onely lend vtterance. The ſong was to this purpoſe.

WHat toong can her perfections tell
In whoſe each part all pens may dwell?
Her haire fine threeds of fineſt gould
In curled knots mans thought to hold:
But that her fore-head ſayes in me
A whiter beautie you may ſee.
Whiter indeed; more white then ſnow,
Which on cold winters face doth grow.
That doth preſent thoſe euen browes,
Whoſe equall line their angles bowes,
Like to the Moone when after chaunge
Her horned head abroad doth raunge:
And arches be to heauenly lids,
Whoſe winke ech bold attempt forbids.
For the blacke ſtarres thoſe Spheares containe,
The matchleſſe paire, euen praiſe doth ſtaine.
No lampe, whoſe light by Art is got,
No Sunne, which ſhines, and ſeeth not,
Can liken them without all peere,
Saue one as much as other cleere:
Which onely thus vnhappie be,
Becauſe themſelues they cannot ſee.

Her cheekes with kindly claret ſpred.
Aurora *like new out of bed,*
Or like the freſh Queene-apples ſide,
Bluſhing at ſight of Phœbus *pride.*
Her noſe, her chinne pure iuorie weares:
No purer then the pretie eares.
So that therein appeares ſome blood,
Like wine and milke that mingled ſtood.
In whoſe Incirclets if ye gaze,
Your eyes may tread a Louers maze.
But with ſuch turnes the voice to ſtray,
No talke vntaught can finde the way.
The tippe no iewell needes to weare:
The tippe is iewell of the eare.
But who thoſe ruddie lippes can miſſe?
Which bleſſed ſtill themſelues doo kiſſe.
Rubies, Cherries, and Roſes new,
In worth, in taſte, in perfit hewe:
Which neuer part but that they ſhowe
Of pretious pearle the double rowe,
The ſecond ſweetly-fenced warde,
Her heau'nly-dewed tongue to garde.
Whence neuer word in vaine did flowe.
Faire vnder theſe doth ſtately growe,
The handle of this pretious worke,
The neck, in which ſtrange graces lurke.
Such be I thinke the ſumptuous towers
Which skill dooth make in Princes bowers.
So good a ſay inuites the eye,
A little downward to eſpie,
The liuelie cluſters of her breſts,
Of Venus *babe the wanton neſts:*
Like pomels round of Marble cleere:
Where azurde veines well mixt appeere.
With deareſt tops of porphyrie.
Betwixt theſe two a way doth lie,
Away more worthie beauties fame,
Then that which beares the Milkie *name.*
This leades into the ioyous field,
Which onely ſtill doth Lillies yeeld:
But Lillies ſuch whoſe natiue ſmell
The Indian odours doth excell.
Waſte it is calde, for it doth waſte
Mens lines, vntill it be imbraſte.
There may one ſee, and yet not ſee
Her ribbes in white all armed be.
More white then Neptunes *fomie face,*

When

When ſtrugling rocks he would imbrace.
In thoſe delights the wandring thought
Might of each ſide aſtray be brought,
But that her nauel doth vnite,
In curious circle, buſie ſight:
A daintie ſeale of virgin-waxe,
Where nothing but impreſsion lackes.
Her bellie then glad ſight doth fill,
Iuſtly entitled Cupids hill.
A hill moſt fitte for ſuch a maſter,
A ſpotleſſe mine of Alablaſter.
Like AlabLaſter faire and ſleeke,
But ſoft and ſupple ſatten like.
In that ſweete ſeate the Boy doth ſport:
Loath, I muſt leaue his chiefe reſort.
" For ſuch a vſe the world hath gotten,
" The beſt things ſtill muſt be forgotten.
Yet neuer ſhall my ſong omitte
Hir thighes, for Ouids ſong more fitte;
Which flanked with two ſugred flankes,
Lift vp their ſtately ſwelling bankes;
That Albion cliues in whitenes paſſe:
With hanches ſmooth as looking glaſſe.
But bow all knees, now of her knees
My tongue doth tell what fancie ſees.
The knottes of ioy, the gemmes of loue,
Whoſe motion makes all graces moue.
Whoſe bought incau'd doth yeeld ſuch ſight,
Like cunning Painter ſhadowing white.
The gartring place with child-like ſigne,
Shewes eaſie print in mettall fine.
But then againe the fleſh doth riſe
In her braue calues, like chriſtall skies.
Whoſe Atlas is a ſmalleſt ſmall,
More white then whiteſt bone of all.
Thereout ſteales out that round cleane foote
This noble Cedars pretious roote:
In ſhewe and ſent pale violets,
Whoſe ſteppe on earth all beautie ſets.
But back vnto her back, my Muſe,
Where Ledas ſwanne his feathers mewes,
Along whoſe ridge ſuch bones are met,
Like comfits round in marchpane ſet.
Her ſhoulders be like two white Doues,
Pearching within ſquare royall rooues,
Which leaded are with ſiluer skinne,
Paſsing the hate-ſpott Ermelin.

And thence thoſe armes deriued are;
The Phœnix *wings are not ſo rare*
For faultleſſe length, and ſtaineleſſe hewe,
Ah woe is me, my woes renewe;
Now courſe doth leade me to her hand,
Of my firſt loue the fatall band.
Where whitenes dooth for euer ſitte:
Nature *her ſelfe enameld it.*
For there with ſtrange compact dooth lie
Warme ſnow, moyſt pearle, ſoft iuorie.
There fall thoſe Saphir-coloured brookes,
Which conduit-like with curious crookes,
Sweete Ilands make in that ſweete land.
As for the fingers of the hand,
The bloudy ſhaftes of Cupids *warre,*
With amatiſts they headed are.
Thus hath each part his beauties part,
But how the Graces doo impart
To all her limmes a ſpeciall grace,
Becomming euery time and place.
Which doth euen beautie beautifie,
And moſt bewitch the wretched eye.
How all this is but a faire Inne
Of fairer gueſts, which dwell within.
Of whoſe high praiſe, and praiſefull bliſſe,
Goodnes the penne, heauen paper is.
The inke immortall fame dooth lende:
As I began, ſo muſt I ende.
No tongue can her perfections tell,
In whoſe each part all tongues may dwell.

But as *Zelmane* was comming to the latter end of her ſong, ſhe might ſee the ſame water-ſpaniell which before had hunted, come and fetch away one of *Philocleas* gloues; whoſe fine proportion, ſhewed well what a daintie gueſt was wont there to be lodged. It was a delight to *Zelmane*, to ſee that the dogge was therewith delighted, and ſo let him goe a little way withall, who quickly caried it out of ſight among certaine trees and buſhes, which were very cloſe together. But by and by he came againe, and amongſt the raiments (*Miſo* and *Mopſa* being preparing ſheets againſt their comming out) the dog lighted vpon a little booke of four or fiue leaues of paper, and was bearing that away too. But then *Zelmane* (not knowing what importance it might be of) ran after the dog, who going ſtreight to thoſe buſhes, ſhe might ſee the dog deliuer it to a Gentleman who ſecretly lay there. But ſhe haſtily cõming in, the Gentleman roſe vp, and with a courteous (though ſad) countenãce preſented himſelfe vnto her. *Zelmanes* eies ſtreight willed her minde to marke him: for ſhe thought, in her life ſhe had neuer ſeene a man of a more goodly preſence, in whom ſtrong making tooke not away delicacie, nor beautie fierceneſſe: being indeed ſuch a right manlike man, as Nature often erring, yet ſhewes ſhe would faine make.

make. But when ſhe had a while (not without admiration) vewed him, ſhe deſired him to deliuer backe the gloue and paper, becauſe they were the Ladie *Philocleas*; telling him withall, that ſhe would not willingly let them know of his cloſe lying in in that prohibited place, while they were bathing themſelues; becauſe ſhe knew they would be mortally offended withall. Faire Ladie (anſwered he) the worſt of the complaint is already paſſed, ſince I feele of my fault in my ſelfe the puniſhment. But for theſe things I aſſure you, it was my dogs wanton boldnes, not my preſumption. With that he gaue her backe the paper: But for the gloue (ſaid he) ſince it is my Ladie *Philocleas*, giue me leaue to keepe it, ſince my hart cannot perſuade it ſelfe to part from it. And I pray you tell the Lady (Lady indeed of all my deſires) that owes it, that I will direct my life to honour this gloue with ſeruing her. O villain (cried out *Zelmane*, madded with finding an vnlooked-for Riuall, and that he would make her a meſſenger) diſpatch (ſaid ſhe) and deliuer it, or by the life of her that owes it, I wil make thy ſoule (though too baſe a price) pay for it. And with that drew out her ſword, which (*Amazon*-like) ſhe euer ware about her. The Gentleman retired himſelf into an open place frō among the buſhes; and then drawing out his too, he offred to deliuer it vnto her, ſaying withall, God forbid I ſhould vſe my ſword againſt you, ſince (if I be not deceiued) you are the ſame famous *Amazon*, that both defended my Ladies iuſt title of beautie againſt the valiant *Phalantus*, and ſaued her life in killing the Lion: therefore I am rather to kiſſe your hands, with acknowledging my ſelfe bound to obey you. But this courteſie was worſe then a baſtonado to *Zelmane*: ſo that againe with ragefull eyes ſhe bad him defend himſelfe, for no leſſe then his life ſhould anſwere it. A hard caſe (ſaid he) to teach my ſword that leſſon, which hath euer vſed to turne it ſelfe to a ſhield in a Ladies preſence. But *Zelmane* harkening to no more words, began with ſuch wittie furie to purſue him with blowes and thruſts, that Nature and Vertue commanded the Gentleman to looke to his ſafetie. Yet ſtill courteſie, that ſeemed incorporate in his hart, would not be perſwaded by daunger to offer any offence, but only to ſtand vpon the beſt defenſiue gard he could; ſomtimes going backe, being content in that reſpect to take on the figure of cowardiſe; ſometime with ſtrong and well-met wards; ſometime cunning auoidings of his body; and ſomtimes faining ſome blows, which himſelf puld back before they needed to be withſtood. And ſo with play did he a good while fight againſt the fight of *Zelmane*, who (more ſpited with that curteſie, that one that did nothing ſhould be able to reſiſt her) burned away with choller any motions, which might grow out of her owne ſweet diſpoſition, determining to kill him if he fought no better; and ſo redoubling her blowes, draue the ſtranger to no other ſhift, then to warde, and go backe; at that time ſeeming the image of innocencie againſt violence. But at length he found, that both in publike and priuate reſpects, who ſtands onely vpon defence, ſtands vpon no defence: For *Zelmane* ſeeming to ſtrike at his head, and he going to warde it, withall ſtept backe as he was accuſtomed, ſhe ſtopt her blow in the aire, and ſuddenly turning the point, ranne full at his breaſt; ſo as he was driuen with the pommell of his ſworde (hauing no other weapon of defence) to beate it downe: but the thruſt was ſo ſtrong, that he could not ſo wholy beate it awaie, but that it met with his thigh, thorow which it ranne. But *Zelmane* retiring her ſworde, and ſeeing his bloud, victorious anger was conquered by the before-conquered pittie; and hartily ſorie, and euen aſhamed with her ſelfe ſhe was, conſidering how little he had done, who well ſhe found

could haue done more. In ſo much that ſhe ſaid, truly I am ſorie for your hurt, but your ſelfe gaue the cauſe, both in refuſing to deliuer the gloue, and yet not fighting as I knowe you could haue done. But (ſaide ſhee) becauſe I perceaue you diſdayne to fight with a woman, it may be before a yeare come about, you ſhall meete with a neere kinſman of mine, *Pyrocles* Prince of *Macedon*, and I giue you my worde, he for me ſhall maintaine this quarell againſt you. I would (anſwered *Amphialus*) I had many more ſuch hurtes to meete and know that worthy Prince, whoſe vertue I loue and admire, though my good deſtiny hath not bene to ſee his perſon.

But as they were ſo ſpeaking, the yong Ladies came, to whom *Mopſa* (curious in any thing, but her own good behauiour) hauing followed and ſeene *Zelmane* fighting, had cried, what ſhe had ſeene, while they were drying themſelues, and the water (with ſome drops) ſeemed to weepe, that it ſhould part from ſuch bodies. But they carefull of *Zelmane* (aſſuring themſelues that any *Arcadian* would beare reuerence to them) *Pamela* with a noble mind, and *Philoclea* with a louing (haſtily hiding the beauties, whereof Nature was prowde, and they aſhamed) they made quicke worke to come to ſaue *Zelmane*. But already they found them in talke, and *Zelmane* carefull of his wound. But whē they ſaw him they knew it was their couſin germain, the famous *Amphialus*; whom yet with a ſweete-graced bitternes they blamed for breaking their fathers commaundement, eſpecially while themſelues were in ſuch ſort retired. But he craued pardon, proteſting vnto them that he had onely bene to ſeeke ſolitary places, by an extreme melancholy that had a good while poſſeſt him, and guided to that place by his ſpaniell, where while the dog hunted in the riuer, he had withdrawne himſelfe to pacifie with ſleepe his ouerwatched eyes: till a dreame waked him, and made him ſee that whereof he had dreamed, and withall not obſcurely ſignified that he felt the ſmart of his owne doings. But *Philoclea* (that was euen iealous of her ſelfe for *Zelmane*) would needs haue her gloue, and not without ſo mighty a loure as that face could yeeld. As for *Zelmane* when ſhe knew, it was *Amphialus*, Lord *Amphialus* (ſaid ſhe) I haue long deſired to know you, heretofore I muſt confeſſe with more good will, but ſtill with honoring your vertue, though I loue not your perſon: and at this time I pray you let vs take care of your wound, vpon condition you ſhall hereafter promiſe, that a more knightly combat ſhalbe performed betweene vs. *Amphialus* anſwered in honorable ſort, but with ſuch excuſing himſelfe, that more and more accuſed his loue to *Philoclea*, and prouoked more hate in *Zelmane*. But *Mopſa* had already called certaine ſhepheards not far off (who knew and wel obſerued their limits) to come and helpe to carrie away *Amphialus*, whoſe wound ſuffered him not without daunger to ſtraine it: and ſo he leauing himſelfe with them, departed from them, faſter bleeding in his hart, then at his wound: which bound vp by the ſheetes, wherewith *Philoclea* had bene wrapped, made him thanke the wound, and bleſſe the ſword for that fauour.

He being gone, the Ladies (with mery anger talking, in what naked ſimplicitie their couſin had ſeene them) returned to the lodge-warde: yet thinking it too early (as long as they had any day) to breake off ſo pleaſing a company, with going to performe a cumberſome obedience, *Zelmane* inuited them to the little arbour, only reſerued for her, which they willingly did: and there ſitting, *Pamela* hauing a while made the lute in his language, ſhew how glad it was to be touched by her fingers,

Zelmane

Zelmane deliuered vp the paper, which *Amphialus* had at firſt yeelded vnto her: and ſeeing written vpon the backſide of it, the complaint of *Plangus*, remembring what *Dorus* had told her, and deſiring to know how much *Philoclea* knew of her eſtate, ſhe tooke occaſion in the preſenting of it, to aske whether it were any ſecret, or no. No truely (anſwered *Philoclea*) it is but euen an exerciſe of my fathers writing, vpon this occaſion: He was one day ſomwhile before your comming hether) walking abroade, hauing vs two with him, almoſt a mile hence; and croſſing a hie way, which comes from the cittie of *Megalopolis*, he ſaw this Gentleman, whoſe name is there written, one of the propreſt and beſt-graced men that euer I ſawe, being of middle age, and of a meane ſtature. Hee lay as then vnder a tree, while his ſeruaunts were getting freſh poſt-horſes for him. It might ſeeme he was tired with the extreme trauaile he had taken, and yet not ſo tyred, that hee forced to take any reſt; ſo haſty hee was vpon his iourney: and withall ſo ſorrowfull, that the very face thereof was painted in his face; which with pitifull motions, euen groanes, teares, and paſſionate talking to him ſelf, moued my Father to fal in talke with him: who at firſt not knowing him, anſwered him in ſuch a deſperate phraſe of griefe, that my Father afterward tooke a delight to ſet it downe in ſuch formeas you ſee: which if you read, what you doubt of, my ſiſter and I are hable to declare vnto you. *Zelmane* willingly opened the leaues, and read it, being written Dialogue-wiſe in this manner.

Plangus. Baſilius.

Plangus. *ALas how long this pilgrimage doth laſt?*
What greater ills haue now the heauens in ſtore,
To couple comming harmes with ſorrowes paſt?
Long ſince my voice is hoarce, and throte is ſore,
With cries to ſkies, and curſes to the ground,
But more I plaine, I feele my woes the more.
Ah where was firſt that cruell cunning found,
To frame of Earth a veſſell of the minde,
Where it ſhould be to ſelfe-deſtruction bound?
What needed ſo high ſprites ſuch manſions blind?
Or wrapt in fleſh what do they here obtaine,
But glorious name of wretched humaine-kind?
Balles to the ſtarres, and thralles to Fortunes raigne;
Turnd from themſelues, infected with their cage,
Where death is feard, and life is held with paine.
Like players pla'ſt to fill a filthy ſtage,
Where chaunge of thoughts one foole to other ſhewes,
And all but ieſts, ſaue onely ſorrowes rage,
The child feeles that; the man that feeling knowes,
With cries firſt borne, the preſage of his life,
Where wit but ſerues, to haue true taſt of woes.
A Shop of ſhame, a Booke where blots be rife
This bodie is: this bodie ſo compoſed,
As in it ſelfe to nouriſh mortall ſtrife,
So diuers be the Elements diſpoſed
In this weake worke, that it can neuer be

Made vniforme to any ſtate repoſed.
Griefe onely makes his wretched ſtate to ſee
(Euen like a toppe which nought but whipping moues)
This man, this talking beaſt, this walking tree.
Griefe is the ſtone which fineſt iudgement proues:
For who grieues not hath but a blockiſh braine,
Since cauſe of griefe no cauſe from life remoues.

Baſilius. How long wilt thou with moneſull muſicke ſtaine
The cheerefull notes theſe pleaſant places yeeld,
Where all good haps a perfect ſtate maintaine?

Plangus. Curſt be good haps, and curſt be they that build
Their hopes on haps, and do not make deſpaire
For all theſe certaine blowes the ſureſt ſhield.
Shall I that ſaw Eronaes ſhining haire
Torne with her hands, and thoſe ſame hands of ſnow
With loſſe of pureſt blood themſelues to teare?
Shall I that ſaw theſe breſts, where beauties flow,
Swelling with ſighes, made pale with mindes diſeaſe,
And ſaw thoſe eyes (thoſe Sonnes) ſuch ſhoures to ſhew,
Shall I, whoſe eares her mournefull words did ſeaze,
Her words in ſyrup laid of ſweeteſt breath,
Relent thoſe thoughts, which then did ſo diſpleaſe?
No, no: Deſpaire my dayly leſſon ſaith,
And ſaith, although I ſeeke my life to flie,
Plangus muſt liue to ſee Eronaes death,
Plangus muſt liue ſome helpe for her to trie
(Though in deſpaire) for Loue ſo forceth me;
Plangus doth liue, and ſhall Erona dye?
Erona dye? O heauen (if heauen there be)
Hath all thy whirling courſe ſo ſmall effect?
Serue all thy ſtarrie eyes this ſhame to ſee?
Let doltes in haſte ſome altars faire erect
To thoſe high powers, which idly ſit aboue,
And vertue do in greateſt need neglect.

Baſilius. O man, take heed, how thou the Gods do moue
To cauſefull wrath, which thou canſt not reſiſt.
Blaſphemous words the ſpeaker vaine do proue.
Alas while we are wrapt in foggie miſt
Of our ſelfe-loue (ſo paſſions do deceaue)
We thinke they hurt, when meſt they do aſſiſt.
To harme vs wormes ſhould that high Iuſtice leaue
His nature? nay, himſelfe: for ſo it is.
What glorie from our loſſe can he receaue?
But ſtill our dazeled eyes their way do miſſe,

While

While that we do at his ſweete ſcourge repine,
The kindly way to beate vs on to bliſſe.
If ſhe muſt dye, then hath ſhe paſt the line
Of lothſome dayes, whoſe loſſe how canſt thou mone,
That dooſt ſo well their miſeries define?
But ſuch we are with inward tempeſt blowne
Of windes quite contrarie in waues of will:
We mone that loſt, which had we did bemone.

Plangus. *And ſhall ſhe dye? ſhall cruell fier ſpill*
Thoſe beames that ſet ſo many harts on fire?
Hath ſhe not force euen death with loue to kill?
Nay euen cold Death enflamde with hot deſire
Her to enioy, where ioy it ſelfe is thrall,
Will ſpoile the earth of his moſt rich attire.
Thus Death becomes a riuall to vs all,
And hopes with foule embracements her to get,
In whoſe decay Vertues faire ſhrine muſt fall.
O Vertue weake, ſhall death his triumph ſet
Vpon thy ſpoiles, which neuer ſhould lye waſte?
Let Death firſt dye; be thou his worthy let.
By what eclipſe ſhall that Sonne be defaſte?
What myne hath erſt throwne downe ſo faire a tower?
What ſacriledge hath ſuch a ſaint diſgra'ſt?
The world the garden is, ſhe is the flower
That ſweetens all the place; ſhe is the gueſt
Of rareſt price, both heau'n and earth her bower.
And ſhall (o me) all this in aſhes reſt?
Alas, if you a Phœnix *new will haue*
Burnt by the Sunne, ſhe firſt muſt build her neſt.
But well you know, the gentle Sunne would ſaue
Such beames ſo like his owne, which might haue might
In him, the thoughts of Phaëtons *damme to graue.*
Therefore, alas, you vſe vile Vulcans *ſpight,*
Which nothing ſpares, to melt that Virgin-waxe
Which while it is, it is all Aſias *light.*
O Mars, *for what doth ſerue thy armed axe?*
To let that wit-old beaſt conſume in flames
Thy Venus *child, whoſe beautie* Venus *lackes?*
O Venus *(if her praiſe no enuy frames,*
In thy high minde) get her thy husbands grace.
" *Sweete ſpeaking oft a curriſh hart reclaimes.*
O eyes of mine, where once ſhe ſaw her face,
Her face which was more liuely in my hart;
O braine, where thought of her hath onely place;
O hand, which toucht her hand when we did part;
O lippes, that kiſt that hand with my teares ſprent;

O toonge, then dumbe, not daring tell my ſmart;
O ſoule whoſe loue in her is onely ſpent,
What ere you ſee, think, touch, kiſſe, ſpeake, or loue,
Let all for her, and vnto her be bent.

Baſilius. Thy wailing words do much my ſpirits moue,
They vttred are in ſuch a feeling faſhion,
That ſorrowes worke againſt my will I proue.
Me-thinkes I am partaker of thy paſsion,
And in thy caſe do glaſſe mine owne debilitie:
Selfe-guiltie folke moſt prone to feele compaſsion.
Yet Reaſon ſaith, Reaſon ſhould haue abilitie,
To hold theſe wordly things in ſuch proportion,
As let them come or go with euen facilitie.
But our Deſires tyrannicall extortion
Doth force vs there to ſet our chiefe delightfulnes,
Where but a baiting place is all our portion.
But ſtill, although we faile of perfect rightfulnes,
Seeke we to tame theſe childiſh ſuperfluities:
Let vs not winke though void of pureſt ſightfulnes.
For what can breed more peeuiſh incongruities,
Then man to yeeld to female lamentations?
Let vs ſome grammar learne of more congruities.

Plangus. If through mine eares pearce any conſolation
By wiſe diſcourſe, ſweete tunes, or Poets fiction;
If ought I ceaſe theſe hideous exclamations,
While that my ſoule, ſhe, ſhe liues in affliction;
Then let my life long time on earth maintained be,
To wretched me, the laſt worſt malediction.
Can I, that know her ſacred parts, reſtrained be
From any ioy? know fortunes vile diſplacing her,
In morall rules let raging woes contained be?
Can I forget, when they in priſon placing her,
With ſwelling hart in ſpite and due diſdainfulnes
She lay for dead, till I helpt with vnlaſing her?
Can I forget, from how much mourning plainfulnes
With Diamond in window-glaſſe ſhe graued,
Erona dye, and end this ougly painefulnes?
Can I forget in how ſtraunge phraſe ſhe craued
That quickly they would her burne, drowne, or ſmother,
As if by death ſhe onely might be ſaued?
Then let me eke forget one hand from other:
Let me forget that Plangus I am called:
Let me forget I am ſonne to my mother,
But if my memory muſt thus be thralled
To that ſtrange ſtroke which conquer'd all my ſenſes,

Can thoughts ſtill thinking ſo reſt vnappalled?

Baſilius. *Who ſtill doth ſeeke againſt him ſelfe offences,*
What pardon can auaile? or who imployes him
To hurt himſelfe, what ſhields can be defenſes?
Woe to poore man: ech outward thing annoyes him
In diuers kinds; yet as he were not filled,
He heapes in outward griefe, that moſt deſtroyes him.
Thus is our thought with paine for thiſtles tilled:
Thus be our nobleſt parts dryed vp with ſorrow:
Thus is our mind with too much minding ſpilled.
One day layes vp ſtuffe of griefe for the morrow:
And whoſe good haps do leaue him vnprouided,
Condoling cauſe of friendſhip he will borrow.
Betwixt the good and ſhade of good diuided,
We pittie deeme that which but weakenes is:
So are we from our high creation ſlided.
But Plangus *leſt I may your ſickneſſe miſſe*
Or rubbing hurt the ſore, I here doo end.
The aſſe did hurt when he did thinke to kiſſe.

When *Zelmane* had read it ouer, marueyling verie much of the ſpeeche of *Eronas* death, and therefore deſirous to know further of it, but more deſirous to heare *Philoclea* ſpeake, Moſt excellent Ladie (ſaide ſhe) one may be little the wiſer for reading this Dialogue, ſince it nether ſets foorth what this *Plangus* is, nor what *Erona* is, nor what the cauſe ſhould be which threatens her with death, and him with ſorow: therefore I woulde humbly craue to vnderſtand the particular diſcourſe thereof: becauſe (I muſt confeſſe) ſome thing in my trauaile I haue heard of this ſtrange matter, which I would be glad to finde by ſo ſweet an authoritie confirmed. The trueth is (anſwered *Philoclea*) that after hee knew my father to bee Prince of this countrie, while hee hoped to preuaile ſomething with him in a great requeſt hee made vnto him, hee was content to open fully the eſtate both of himſelfe, and of that Ladie; which with my ſiſters help (ſaid ſhe) who remembers it better then I, I will declare vnto you: and firſt of *Erona*, (being the chiefe Subiect of this diſcourſe) this ſtorie (with more teares and exclamations then I liſte to ſpende about it) hee recounted.

Of late there raigned a King in *Lydia*, who had for the bleſſing of his mariage, this onely daughter of his, *Erona*; a Princeſſe worthie for her beautie, as much praiſe, as beautie may be prayſe-worthy. This princeſſe *Erona*, being 19. yeeres of age, ſeeing the countrie of *Lydia* ſo much deuoted to *Cupid*, as that in euery place his naked pictures and images were ſuperſtitiouſly adored (ether moued thereunto by the eſteeming that could be no Godhead, which coulde breed wickednes, or the ſhamefaſt conſideration of ſuch nakednes) procured ſo much of her father, as vtterly to pull downe, and deface al thoſe ſtatues & pictures. Which how terribly he puniſhed (for to that the *Lydians* impute it) quickly after appeared.

For ſhe had not liued a yeare longer, whē ſhe was ſtriken with moſt obſtinate Loue, to a young man but of meane parentage, in her fathers court, named *Antiphilus*: ſo meane, as that hee was but the ſonne of her Nurſe, and by that meanes (without other

other deſert) became knowen of her. Now ſo cuill could ſhe conceale her fire, and ſo wilfully perſeuered ſhe in it, that her father offering her the mariage of the great *Tiridates*, king of *Armenia* (who deſired her more then the ioyes of heauen) ſhee for *Antiphilus* ſake refuſed it. Many wayes her father ſought to withdrawe her from it; ſometimes perſwaſions, ſometimes threatnings; once hiding *Antiphilus*, and giuing her to vnderſtand that he was fled the countrie: Laſtly, making a ſolemne execution to be done of another, vnder the name of *Antiphilus*, whom he kept in priſon. But nether ſhe liked perſwaſions, nor feared threateninges, nor changed for abſence: and when ſhe thought him dead, ſhe ſought all meanes (as well by poyſon as knife) to ſend her ſoule, at leaſt, to be maried in the eternall church with him. This ſo brake the tender fathers hart, that (leauing things as he found them) hee ſhortly after died. Then foorth with *Erona* (being ſeazed of the crowne, and arming her will with authoritie) ſought to aduance her affection to the holy title of matrimonie.

But before ſhe could accompliſh all the ſolemnities, ſhe was ouertaken with a war the King *Tiridates* made vpon her, only for her perſon; towards whom (for her ruine) Loue had kindled his cruel hart; indeed cruell and tyrannous: for (being far too ſtrong in the field) he ſpared not man, woman, and child, but (as though there could be found no foile to ſet foorth the extremitie of his loue, but extremity of hatred) wrote (as it were) the ſonets of his Loue, in the bloud, and tuned them in the cries of her ſubiects; although his faire ſiſter *Artaxia* (who would accompany him in the army) ſought all meanes to appeaſe his fury: till laſtly, he beſieged *Erona* in her beſt citie, vowing to winne her, or loſe his life. And now had he brought her to the point ether of a wofull conſent, or a ruinous deniall; when there came thether (following the courſe which Vertue and Fortune led them) two excellent young Princes, *Pyrocles* & *Muſidorus*, the one Prince of *Macedon*, the other of *Theſſalia*: two princes, as *Plangus* ſaid, (and he witneſſed his ſaying with ſighes and teares) the moſt accompliſhed both in body & minde, that the Sun euer lookt vpon. While *Philoclea* ſpake thoſe words, O ſweete wordes (thought *Zelmane* to herſelfe) which are not onely a praiſe to mee, but a praiſe to praiſe it ſelfe, which out of that mouth iſſueth.

Theſe 2. princes (ſaid *Philoclea*) aſwell to help the weaker (eſpecially being a Ladie) as ta ſaue a Greeke people from being ruined by ſuch, whom we call and count Barbarous, gathering to gether ſuch of the honeſteſt *Lycians*, as would venture their liues to ſuccour their Princeſſe: giuing order by a ſecret meſſage they ſent into the Citie, that they ſhould iſſue with al force at an appointed time; they ſet vpon *Tiridates* campe, with ſo well-guided a fiercenes, that being of both ſides aſſaulted, he was like to be ouerthrowen: but that this *Plangus* (being Generall of *Tiridates* horſ-men) eſpecially ayded by the two mightie men, *Euardes* and *Barzanes*, reſcued the foot-mē, euen almoſt defeated: but yet could not barre the Princes (with their ſuccoures both of men and victuall) to enter the Citie.

Which when *Tiridates* found would make the war long, (which length ſeemed to him worſe then a languiſhing conſumption) he made a challenge of three Princes in his retinue, againſt thoſe two Princes and *Antiphilus*: and that thereupon the quarrell ſhould be decided; with compact, that neither ſide ſhould helpe his fellow: but of whoſe ſide the more ouercame, with him the victorie ſhould remaine. *Antiphilus* (though *Erona* choſe rather to bide the brunt of warre, then venture him, yet) could not for ſhame refuſe the offer, eſpecially ſince the two ſtrangers that had

no

no intereſt in it, did willingly accept it: beſides that, he ſawe it like enough, that the people (werie of the miſeries of war) would rather giue him vp, if they ſaw him ſhrinke, then for his ſake venture their ruine: conſidering that the challengers were farre of greater worthineſſe then himſelfe. So it was agreed vpon; and againſt *Pyrocles* was *Euardes*, King of *Bithinia*; *Barzanes* of *Hircania*, againſt *Muſidorus*, two men, that thought the world ſcarſe able to reſiſt them: and againſt *Antiphilus* he placed this ſame *Plangus*, being his owne couſin germain, and ſonne to the King of *Iberia*. Now ſo it fell out that *Muſidorus* ſlewe *Barzanes*, and *Pyrocles Euardes*; which victory thoſe Princes eſteemed aboue all that euer they had: but of the other ſide *Plangus* tooke *Antiphilus* priſoner: vnder which colour (as if the matter had bene equall, though indeed it was not, the greater part being ouercome of his ſide) *Tiridates* continued his war: and to bring *Erona* to a compelled yeelding, ſent her word, that he would the third morrow after, before the walles of the towne ſtrike off *Antiphilus* head; without his ſuite in that ſpace were graunted: adding withall (becauſe he had heard of her deſperate affection) that if in the meane time ſhe did her ſelfe any hurt, what tortures could be deuiſed ſhould be layed vpon *Antiphilus*.

Then lo if *Cupid* be a God, or that the tyranny of our owne thoughts ſeeme as a God vnto vs. But whatſoeuer it was, then it did ſet foorth the miſerablenes of his effectes: ſhe being drawne to two cõtraries by one cauſe. For the loue of him commaunded her to yeeld to no other: the loue of him commaunded her to preſerue his life: which knot might well be cut, but vntied it could not be. So that Loue in her paſſions (like a right makebate) whiſpered to both ſides arguments of quarrell. What (ſaid he of the one ſide) dooſt thou loue *Antiphilus*, ô *Erona*? and ſhall *Tiridates* enioy thy bodie? with what eyes wilt thou looke vpon *Antiphilus*, when he ſhall know that an other poſſeſſeth thee? But if thou wilt do it, canſt thou do it? canſt thou force thy hart? Thinke with thy ſelfe, if this man haue thee, thou ſhalt neuer haue more part of *Antiphilus* then if he were dead. But thus much more, that the affection ſhalbe ſtill gnawing, and the remorſe ſtill preſent. Death perhaps will coole the rage of thy affection: where thus, thou ſhalt euer loue, and euer lacke. Thinke this beſide, if thou marrie *Tiridates*, *Antiphilus* is ſo excellent a man, that long he cannot be from being in ſome high place maried: canſt thou ſuffer that too? If an other kill him, he doth him the wrong: if thou abuſe thy body, thou dooſt him the wrong. His death is a worke of nature, and either now, or at another time he ſhal die. But it ſhalbe thy worke, thy ſhamefull worke, which is in thy power to ſhun, to make him liue to ſee thy faith falſified, and his bed defiled. But when Loue had well kindled that partie of her thoughts, then went he to the other ſide. What (ſaid he) O *Erona*, and is thy Loue of *Antiphilus* come to that point, as thou dooſt now make it a queſtion, whether he ſhall die, or no? O excellent affection, which for too much loue, will ſee his head off. Marke well the reaſons of the other ſide, and thou ſhalt ſee, it is but loue of thy ſelfe which ſo diſputeth. Thou canſt not abide *Tiridates*: this is but loue of thy ſelfe: thou ſhalt be aſhamed to looke vpon him afterward; this is but feare of ſhame, and loue of thy ſelfe: thou ſhalt want him as much then; this is but loue of thy ſelfe: he ſhalbe married; if he be well, why ſhould that grieue thee, but for loue of thy ſelfe? No, no, pronounce theſe words if thou canſt, let *Antiphilus* die. Then the images of each ſide ſtood before her vnderſtanding; one time ſhe thought ſhe ſaw *Antiphilus* dying: an other time ſhe thought *Antiphilus* ſawe her by *Tiridates* enioyed: twenty times calling for a ſeruaunt to carry

meſſage of yeelding, but before he came the minde was altered. She bluſht when ſhe conſidered the effect of granting; ſhe was pale, when ſhe remembred the fruits of denying. For weeping, ſighing, wringing her hands, and tearing her haire, were indifferent of both ſides. Eaſily ſhe would haue agreed to haue broken all diſputations with her owne death, but that the feare of *Antiphilus* furder torments ſtaied her. At length, euen the euening before the day apointed of his death, the determination of yeelding preuailed, eſpecially, growing vpon a meſſage of *Antiphilus*; who with all the coniuring termes he could deuiſe, beſought her to ſaue his life, vpon any conditions. But ſhe had no ſooner ſent her meſſenger to *Tiridates*, but her mind changed, and ſhe went to the two yong Princes, *Pyrocles* and *Muſidorus*, & falling downe at their feet, deſired them to try ſome way for her deliuerance; ſhewing her ſelfe reſolued, not to ouer-liue *Antiphilus*, nor yet to yeeld to *Tiridates*.

They that knew not what ſhe had done in priuate, prepared that night accordingly: & as ſometimes it fals out, that what is inconſtancy, ſeemes cunning; ſo did this change indeed ſtand in as good ſteed as a witty diſſimulation. For it made the King as reckles, as them diligent: ſo that in the dead time of the night, the Princes iſſued out of the towne; with whom ſhe would needs go, either to die her ſelfe, or reskew *Antiphilus*, hauing no armour, nor weapon, but affection. And I cannot tell you how, by what deuiſe (though *Plangus* at large deſcribed it) the concluſion was, the wonderfull valour of the two Princes ſo preuailed, that *Antiphilus* was ſuccoured, and the King ſlaine. *Plangus* was then the chiefe man left in the campe; and therefore ſeeing no other remedie, conueied in ſafety into her country *Artaxia*, now Queene of *Armenia*; who with true lamentations, made known to the world, that her new greatnes did no way comfort her in reſpect of her brothers loſſe, whom ſhe ſtudied all meanes poſſible to reuenge vpon euery one of the occaſioners, hauing (as ſhe thought) ouerthrowne her brother by a moſt abhominable treaſon. In ſomuch, that being at home, ſhe proclaimed great rewards to any priuate man, and her ſelfe in mariage to any Prince, that would deſtroy *Pyrocles* and *Muſidorus*. But thus was *Antiphilus* redeemed, and (though againſt the conſent of all her nobility) married to *Erona*; in which caſe the two Greeke Princes (being called away by an other aduenture) left them.

But now me thinkes as I haue read ſome Poets, who when they intend to tell ſome horrible matter, they bid men ſhun the hearing of it: ſo if I do not deſire you to ſtop your eares from me, yet may I wel deſire a breathing time, before I am to tell the execrable treaſon of *Antiphilus*, that brought her to this miſery; and withall wiſh you all, that from all mankind indeed you ſtop your eares. O moſt happy were we, if we did ſet our loues one vpon another. (And as ſhe ſpake that word, her cheekes in red letters writ more, then her tongue did ſpeake.) And therefore ſince I haue named *Plangus*, I pray you ſiſter (ſaid ſhe) helpe me with the reſt, for I haue held the ſtage long inough; and if it pleaſe you to make his fortune knowne, as I haue done *Eronas*, I will after take hart againe to go on with his falſhood; and ſo betweene vs both, my Ladie *Zelmane* ſhall vnderſtand both the cauſe and parties of this Lamentation. Nay I beſhrow me then (ſaid *Miſo*) I will none of that, I promiſe you, as long as I haue the gouernmēt, I wil firſt haue my tale, & then my Lady *Pamela*, my Lady *Zelmane*, & my daughter *Mopſa* (for *Mopſa* was then returned from *Amphialus*) may draw cuts, & the ſhorteſt cut ſpeake firſt. For I tell you, and this may be ſuffred, when you are married you will haue firſt, and laſt word of your husbands.

The

The Ladies laughed to ſee with what an eger earneſtneſſe ſhe looked, hauing threatning not onely in her Ferret eies, but while ſhe ſpake, her noſe ſeeming to threaten her chin, & her ſhaking lims one to threaten another. But there was no remedy, they muſt obey: and *Miſo* (ſitting on the ground with her knees vp, and her hands vpon her knees) tuning her voice with many a quauering cough, thus diſcourſed vnto them. I tell you true (ſaid ſhe) whatſoeuer you thinke of me, you will one day be as I am; & I, ſimple though I ſit here, thought once my pennie as good ſiluer, as ſome of you do: and if my father had not plaid the haſty foole (it is no lie I tell you) I might haue had an other-gaines husband, then *Dametas*. But let that paſſe, God amend him: and yet I ſpeake it not without good cauſe. You are full in your tittle tattlings of *Cupid*: here is *Cupid*, & there is *Cupid*. I will tell you now, what a good old womā told me, what an old wiſe man told her, what a great learned clerke told him, and gaue it him in writing; and here I haue it in my praier booke. I pray you (ſaid *Philoclea*) let vs ſee it, & read it. No haſt but good (ſaid *Miſo*) you ſhal firſt know how I came by it. I was a young girle of a ſeuen and twenty yeare old, & I could not go thorow the ſtreate of our village, but I might heare the young men talke; O the pretie little eies of *Miſo*; O the fine thin lips of *Miſo*; O the goodly fat hands of *Miſo*: beſides, how well a certaine wrying I had of my necke, became me. Then the one would wincke with one eye, and the other caſt daiſeys at me: I muſt confeſſe, ſeing ſo many amorous, it made me ſet vp my peacocks tayle with the hieſt. Which when this good old woman perceiued (O the good wold woman, well may the bones reſt of the good wold woman) ſhe cald me to her into her houſe. I remember full well it ſtood in the lane as you go to the Barbers ſhop, all the towne knew her, there was a great loſſe of her: ſhe called me to her, and taking firſt a ſoppe of wine to comfort her hart (it was of the ſame wine that comes out of *Candia*, which we pay ſo deere for now adaies, and in that good world was very good cheape) ſhe cald me to her; Minion ſaid ſhe, (indeed I was a pretie one in thoſe daies though I ſay it) I ſee a number of lads that loue you; Well (ſaid ſhe) I ſay no more: doo you know what Loue is? With that ſhe brought me into a corner, where there was painted a foule fiend I trow: for he had a paire of hornes like a Bull, his feete clouen, as many eyes vpon his bodie, as my gray-mare hath dappels, & for all the world ſo placed. This monſter ſat like a hangman vpon a paire of gallowes, in his right hand he was painted holding a crowne of Laurel, in his left hand a purſe of mony, & out of his mouth hong a lace of two faire pictures, of a man and a woman, and ſuch a countenance he ſhewed, as if he would perſwade folks by thoſe aluremēts to come thither & be hanged. I, like a tender harted wench, skriked out for feare of the diuell. Well (ſaid ſhe) this ſame is euen Loue: therefore do what thou liſt with all thoſe fellows, one after another; and it recks not much what they do to thee, ſo it be in ſecret; but vpō my charge, neuer loue none of them. Why mother (ſaid I) could ſuch a thing come frō the belly of the faire *Venus*? for a few dayes before, our (prieſt betweene him & me) had told me the whole ſtorie of *Venus*. Tuſh (ſaid ſhe) they are all deceaued: and therwith gaue me this Booke, which ſhe ſaid a great maker of ballets had giuen to an old painter, who for a litle pleaſure, had beſtowed both booke and picture of her. Reade there (ſaid ſhe) & thou ſhalt ſee that his mother was a cowe, and the falſe *Argus* his father. And ſo ſhe gaue me this Booke, and there now you may reade it. With that the remembrance of the good old woman, made her make ſuch a face to weepe, as if it were not ſorrow, it was the carkaſſe of ſorrow that appeared there.

But while her teares came out, like raine falling vpon durtie furrowes, the latter end of her praier booke was read among theſe Ladies, which contained this.

POore Painters oft with ſilly Poets ioyne,
To fill the world with ſtrange but vaine conceits:
One brings the ſtuffe, the other ſtamps the coine,
Which breedes nought elſe but gloſes of deceits.
Thus Painters Cupid *paint, thus Poets do*
A naked God, blinde young, with arrowes two.
Is he a God, that euer flies the light?
Or naked he, diſguis'd in all vntruth?
If he be blind, how hitteth he ſo right?
How is he young, that tam'd old Phœbus *youth?*
But arrowes two, and tipt with gold or leade?
Some hurt accuſe a third with horny head.
No, nothing ſo; an old falſe knaue he is
By Argus *got on* Io, *then a cow:*
What time for her Iuno *her* Ioue *did miſſe,*
And charge of her to Argus *did allow.*
Mercury *kill'd his falſe ſire for this act,*
His damme a beaſt was pardon'd beaſtly fact.
With fathers death, and mothers guiltie ſhame,
With Ioues *diſdaine at ſuch a riuals ſeed,*
The wretch compell'd a runnagate became,
And learn'd what ill a miſer ſtate doth breed,
To lye, to ſteale, to pry, and to accuſe,
Naught in himſelfe ech other to abuſe.
Yet beares he ſtill his parents ſtately gifts,
A horned head, clouen feete, and thouſand eyes,
Some gazing ſtill, ſome winking wilye ſhiftes,
With long large eares where neuer rumour dyes.
His horned head doth ſeeme the heauen to ſpight:
His clouen foote doth neuer treade aright.
Thus halfe a man, with man he dayly haunts,
Cloth'd in the ſhape which ſooneſt may deceaue:
Thus halfe a beaſt, ech beaſtly vice he plants,
In thoſe weake harts that his aduice receaue.
He proules ech place ſtil in new colours deckt,
Sucking ones ill, another to infect.
To narrow breſts he comes all wrapt in gaine:
To ſwelling harts he ſhines in honours fire:
To open eyes all beauties he doth raine;
Creeping to ech with flattering of deſire.
But for that Loue is worſt which rules the eyes,
Thereon his name, there his chiefe triumph lyes.
Millions of yeares this old driuell Cupid *liues;*
While ſtill more wretch, more wicked he doth proue:

Till

Till now at length that Ioue *him office giues,*
(At Iunos *ſuite who much did* Argus *loue)*
In this our world a hang-man for to be,
Of all thoſe fooles that will haue all they ſee.

The Ladies made ſport at the deſcription and ſtorie of *Cupid*. But *Zelmane* could ſcarce ſuffer thoſe blaſphemies (as ſhe tooke them) to be read, but humbly beſought *Pamela* ſhe would perfourme her ſiſters requeſt of the other part of the ſtorie. Noble Lady (anſwered ſhe, beautifying her face with a ſweete ſmiling, and the ſweetnes of her ſmiling with the beautie of her face) ſince I am borne a Princes daughter, let me not giue example of diſobedience. My gouerneſſe will haue vs draw cuts, and therefore I pray you let vs do ſo: and ſo perhaps it will light vpon you to entertaine this company with ſome ſtorie of your owne; and it is reaſon our eares ſhould be willinger to heare, as your tongue is abler to deliuer. I will thinke (anſwered *Zelmane*) excellent Princeſſe my tongue of ſome value, if it can procure your tongue thus much to fauour me. But *Pamela* pleaſantly perſiſting to haue fortune their iudge, they ſet hands, and *Mopſa* (though at the firſt for ſqueamiſhnes going vp and downe, with her head like a boate in a ſtorme) put to her golden gols among them, and blind Fortune (that ſaw not the coulor of them) gaue her the preheminence: and ſo being her time to ſpeake (wiping her mouth, as there was good cauſe) ſhe thus tumbled into her matter. In time paſt (ſayd ſhe) there was a King, the mightieſt man in all his country, that had by his wife, the faireſt daughter that euer did eate pappe. Now this King did keepe a great houſe, that euery body might come and take their meat freely. So one day, as his daughter was ſitting in her window, playing vpon a harpe, as ſweete as any Roſe; and combing her head with a combe all of precious ſtones, there came in a Knight into the court, vpon a goodly horſe, one haire of gold, and the other of ſiluer; *and ſo* the Knight caſting vp his eyes to the window, did fall into ſuch loue with her, that he grew not worth the bread he eate; till many a ſorry day going ouer his head, with Dayly Diligence and Griſly Grones, he wan her affection, ſo that they agreed to run away togither. *And ſo in May, when all true hartes reioyce*, they ſtale out of the Caſtel, without ſtaying ſo much as for their breakfaſt. Now forſooth, as they went togither, often all to kiſſing one another, the Knight told her, he was brought vp among the water Nymphes, who had ſo bewitched him, that if he were euer askt his name, he muſt preſently vaniſh away: and therefore charged her vpon his bleſſing, that ſhe neuer aske him what he was, nor whether he would. *And ſo* a great while ſhe kept his commandement; til once, paſſing through a cruell wildernes, as darke as pitch; her mouth ſo watred, that ſhe could not chooſe but aske him the queſtion. And then, he making the greeuouſeſt complaints that would haue melted a tree to haue heard them, vaniſht quite away: and ſhe lay downe, caſting forth as pitifull cries as any ſhrich-owle. But hauing laien ſo, (wet by the raine, & burnt by the Sun) fiue dayes, and fiue nights, ſhe gat vp and went ouer many a high hill, and many a deepe riuer; till ſhe came to an Aunts houſe of hers; and came, and cried to her for helpe: and ſhe for pittie gaue her a Nut, and bad her neuer open her Nut, till ſhe was come to the extremeſt miſery that euer tongue could ſpeake of. *And ſo* ſhe went, and ſhe went, and neuer reſted the euening, where ſhe went in the morning; till ſhe came to a ſecond Aunt; and ſhe gaue her another Nut.

Now good *Mopſa* (ſaid the ſweete *Philoclea*) I pray thee at my requeſt keepe this tale, till my marriage day, and I promiſe thee that the beſt gowne I weare that day ſhalbe thine. *Mopſa* was very glad of the bargaine, eſpecially that it ſhould grow a feſtiuall Tale: ſo that *Zelmane*, who deſired to finde the vttermoſt what theſe Ladies vnderſtood touching her ſelfe, and hauing vnderſtood the danger of *Erona* (of which before ſhe had neuer heard) purpoſing with her ſelfe (as ſoone as this purſuit ſhe now was in, was brought to any effect) to ſuccour her, entreated againe, that ſhe might know as well the ſtory of *Plangus*, as of *Erona*. *Philoclea* referred it to her ſiſters perfecter remembrance, who with ſo ſweet a voice, and ſo winning a grace, as in themſelues were of moſt forcible eloquence to procure attention, in this maner to their earneſt requeſt ſoone condiſcended.

The father of this Prince *Plangus* as yet liues, and is King of *Iberia*: a man (if the iudgement of *Plangus* may be accepted) of no wicked nature, nor willingly doing euill, without himſelfe miſtake the euill, ſeeing it diſguiſed vnder ſome forme of goodneſſe. This Prince, being married at the firſt to a Princeſſe (who both from her aunceſters, and in her ſelfe was worthy of him) by her had this ſonne, *Plangus*. Not long after whoſe birth, the Queene (as though ſhe had perfourmed the meſſage for which ſhe was ſent into the world) returned againe vnto her maker. The King (ſealing vp all thoughts of loue vnder the image of her memorie) remained a widdower many yeares after; recompencing the griefe of that diſioyning from her, in conioyning in himſelfe both a fatherly and a motherly care toward her onely child, *Plangus*. Who being growne to mans age, as our owne eies may iudge, could not but fertilly requite his fathers fatherly education.

This Prince (while yet the errors in his nature were excuſed by the greenenes of his youth, which tooke all the fault vpon it ſelfe) loued a priuate mans wife of the principall Citie of that Kingdome, if that may be called loue, which he rather did take into himſelfe willingly, then by which he was taken forcibly. It ſufficeth, that the yong mā perſwaded himſelf he loued her: ſhe being a womā beautifull enough, if it be poſſible, that the onely outſide can iuſtly entitle a beauty. But finding ſuch a chaſe as onely fledde to be caught, the young Prince brought his affection with her to that point, which ought to engraue remorſe in her hart, & to paint ſhame vpō her face. And ſo poſſeſt he his deſire without any interruption; he conſtantly fauouring her, and ſhe thinking, that the enameling of a Princes name, might hide the ſpots of a broken wedlock. But as I haue ſeene one that was ſick of a ſleeping diſeaſe, could not be made wake, but with pinching of him: ſo out of his ſinfull ſleepe his minde (vnworthie ſo to be loſt) was not to be cald to it ſelfe, but by a ſharpe accident. It fell out, that his many-times leauing of the court (in vndue times) began to be noted; and (as Princes eares be manifolde) from one to another came vnto the King; who (carefull of his onely ſonne) ſought, and found by his ſpies (the neceſſarie euill ſeruaunts to a King) what it was, whereby he was from his better delights ſo diuerted. Whereupon, the King (to giue his fault the greater blow) vſed ſuch meanes, by diſguiſing himſelfe, that he found them (her husband being abſent) in her houſe together: which he did, to make him the more feelingly aſhamed of it. And that way he tooke, laying threatnings vpon her, and vpon him reproaches. But the poore young Prince (deceiued with that young opinion, that if it be euer lawful to lie, it is for ones Louer,) employed all his wit to bring his father to a better opinion. And becauſe he might bende him from that (as he counted it) crooked

conceit

conceit of her he wreſted him, as much as he coulde poſſiblie, to the other ſide: not ſticking with prodigal proteſtations to ſet foorth her chaſtitie; not denying his own attempt, but thereby the more extolling her vertue. His Sophiſtrie preuayled, his father beleeued; and ſo beleeued, that ere long (though he were already ſtept into the winter of his age) he founde himſelfe warme in thoſe deſires, which were in his ſonne farre more excuſable. To be ſhort, he gaue himſelfe ouer vnto it; and (becauſe he would auoide the odious compariſon of a yong riuall) ſent away his ſonne with an armie, to the ſubduing of a Prouince lately rebelled againſt him, which he knew could not be a leſſe worke, then of three or foure yeares. Wherein he behaued him ſo worthilie, as euen to this country the fame thereof came, long before his owne comming: while yet his father had a ſpeedier ſucces, but in a far vnnobler conqueſt. For while *Plangus* was away, the old man (growing onely in age and affection) followed his ſuite with all meanes of vnhoneſt ſeruants, large promiſes, and each thing els that might help to counteruaile his owne vnlouelines.

And ſhe (whoſe husband about that time died) forgetting the abſent *Plangus*, or at leſt not hoping of him to obtaine ſo aſpiring a purpoſe, lefte no art vnuſed, which might keepe the line from breaking, whereat the fiſhe was alredy taken; not drawing him violently, but letting him play himſelfe vpon the hooke, which he had ſo greedily ſwalowed. For, accompanying her mourning garments with a dolefull countenaunce, yet neither forgetting handſomnes in her mourning garments, nor ſweetenes in her dolefull countenance; her wordes were euer ſeaſoned with ſighes; and any fauour ſhe ſhewed, bathed in teares, that affection might ſee cauſe of pity; and pity might perſwade cauſe of affection. And being growen ſkilful in his humors ſhe was no leſſe ſkilfull in applying his humors: neuer ſuffering his feare to fall to a deſpaire, nor his hope to haſten to an aſſurance: ſhee was content he ſhould thinke that ſhe loued him; and a certaine ſtolne looke ſhould ſometimes (as though it were againſt her will) bewray it: But if thereupon hee grewe bolde, hee ſtraight was encoũtered with a maſke of vertue. And that which ſeemeth moſt impoſſible vnto me, (for as neere as I can I repeate it as *Plangus* tolde it) ſhe could not only ſigh when ſhe would, as all can doo; & weep whẽ ſhe would, as (they ſay) ſome can doo; but (being moſt impudent in her heart) ſhe could, when ſhe would, teach her chekes bluſhing, & make ſhamefaſtnes the cloake of ſhameleſnes. In ſum, to leaue out many particularities which he recited, ſhe did not only vſe ſo the ſpurre, that his Deſire ran on, but ſo the bit, that it ran on euen in ſuch a careere as ſhe would haue it; that within a while the king, ſeing with no other eys but ſuch as ſhe gaue him, & thinking on other thoughts, but ſuch as ſhe taught him; hauing at the firſt liberal meaſure of fauors, thẽ ſhortned of thẽ, whẽ moſt his Deſire was inflam'd; he ſaw no other way but mariage to ſatisfie his longing, and her minde (as he thought) louing, but chaſtly louing. So that by the time *Plangus* returned from being notably victorious of the Rebels, he found his father, not onely maried, but alredy a father of a ſonne and a daughter by this woman. Which though *Plangus* (as he had euery way iuſt cauſe) was grieued at; yet did his griefe neuer bring foorth ether contemning of her, or repining at his father. But ſhe (who beſides ſhe was growen a mother, and a ſtepmother, did read in his eies her owne fault, and made his conſcience her guiltines) thought ſtill that his preſence caried her condemnation: ſo much the more, as that ſhe (vnchaſtly attempting his wonted fancies) found (for the reuerence of his fathers bed) a bitter refuſall; which breeding rather ſpite then ſhame in her, or if it were a ſhame, a ſhame not

of the fault, but of the repulſe, ſhe did not onely (as hating him) thirſt for a reuenge, but (as fearing harm form him) endeuoured to doo harme vnto him. Therefore did ſhe trie the vttermoſt of her wicked wit, how to ouerthrow him in the foundation of his ſtrength, which was, in the fauour of his father: which becauſe ſhe ſaw ſtrong both in nature and deſert, it required the more cunning how to vndermine it. And therefore (ſhunning the ordinary trade of hireling ſycophants) ſhee made her praiſes of him, to be accuſations; and her aduancing him, to be his ruine. For firſt with words (neerer admiration then liking) ſhe would extoll his excellencies, the goodlines of his ſhape, the power of his witte, the valiantnes of his courage, the fortunatenes of his ſucceſſes: ſo as the father might finde in her a ſingular loue towards him: nay, ſhee ſhunned not to kindle ſome fewe ſparkes of ielouſie in him. Thus hauing gotten an opinion in his father, that ſhee was farre from meaning miſchiefe to the ſonne, then fell ſhee to praiſe him with no leſſe vehemencie of affection, but with much more cunning of malice. For then ſhe ſets foorth the liberty of his mind the high flying of his thoughts, the fitneſſe in him to beare rule, the ſingular loue the Subiects bare him; that it was doubtfull, whether his wit were greater in winning their fauours, or his courage in imploying their fauours: that he was not borne to liue a ſubiect-life, each action of his bearing in it Maieſtie, ſuch a Kingly entertainement, ſuch a Kingly magnificence, ſuch a Kingly harte for enterpriſes: eſpecially remembring thoſe vertues, which in a ſucceſſor are no more honoured by the ſubiects, then ſuſpected of the Princes. Then would ſhee by putting-off obiections, bring in obiectiõs to her husbands head, already infected with ſuſpitiõ. Nay (would ſhe ſay) I dare take it vpon my death, that he is no ſuch ſonne, as many of like might haue bene, who loued greatnes ſo well, as to build their greatnes vpon their fathers ruine. Indeed Ambition, like Loue, can abide no lingring, and euer vrgeth on his owne ſucceſſes; hating no thing, but what may ſtop them. But the Gods forbid, we ſhould euer once dreame of any ſuch thing in him, who perhaps might be content, that you and the world ſhould know, what he can do: but the more power he hath to hurte, the more admirable is his praiſe, that he will not hurt. Then euer remembring to ſtrengthen the ſuſpition of his eſtate with priuate ielouſie of her loue, doing him exceſſiue honour whẽ he was in preſence, & repeating his pretie ſpeaches and graces in his abſence; beſides, cauſing him to be imployed in all ſuch dangerous matters, as ether he ſhould periſh in them, or if hee preuailed, they ſhould increaſe his glorie: which ſhe made a weapon to wound him, vntill ſhe found that ſuſpition began already to ſpeake for it ſelfe, and that her husbands eares were growne hungry of rumours, and his eies prying into euery accident.

Then tooke ſhe help to her of a ſeruant neere about her husband, whõ ſhe knew to be of a haſty ambition, and ſuch a one, who wanting true ſufficiencie to raiſe him, would make a ladder of any miſchiefe. Him ſhee vſeth to deale more plainely in alleaging cauſes of iealouſie, making him knowe the fitteſt times when her husband already was ſtirred that way. And ſo they two, with diuers wayes, nouriſhed one humour, like Muſitians, that ſinging diuers parts, make one muſicke. He ſometime with fearefull countenaunce would deſire the King to looke to himſelfe; for that all the court and Cittie were full of whiſperinges, and expectation of ſome ſoddaine change, vpon what ground himſelfe knew not. Another time hee would counſell the King to make much of his ſonne, and holde his fauour, for that it was too late now to keepe him vnder. Now ſeeming to feare himſelfe, becauſe

(he

(he ſaid) *Plangus* loued none of them that were great about his father. Laſtly, breaking with him directly (making a ſorrowful countenance, and an humble geſture beare falſe witneſſe for his true meaning) that he found, not onely ſouldiery, but people weary of his gouernment, and all their affections bent vpon *Plangus*. Both he and the Queene concurring in ſtrange dreames, and each thing elſe, that in a minde (already perplexed) might breed aſtoniſhment: ſo that within a while, all *Plangus* actions began to be tranſlated into the language of ſuſpition.

Which though *Plangus* found, yet could he not auoid, euen contraries being driuen to draw one yoke of argument: if he were magnificent, he ſpent much with an aſpiring intent: if he ſpared, hee heaped much with an aſpiring intent: if hee ſpake curteouſly, he angled the peoples harts: if he were ſilent he muſed vpon ſome daungerous plot. In ſumme, if hee could haue turned himſelfe to as many formes as *Proteus*, euery forme ſhould haue bene made hideous.

But ſo it fell out, that a meere trifle gaue them occaſion of further proceeding. The King one morning, going to a vineyard that lay a long the hill w here vpon his caſtle ſtood, he ſaw a vine-labourer, that finding a bowe broken, tooke a branch of the ſame bowe for want of another thing, and tied it about the place broken. The King asking the fellow what he did, Marry (ſaid he) I make the ſonne binde the father. This word (finding the King alredy ſuperſticious through ſuſpition) amazed him ſtreight, as a preſage of his owne fortune: ſo that, returning, and breaking with his wife how much he miſdoubted his eſtate, ſhe made ſuch gaine-ſaying anſweres as while they ſtraue, ſtraue to be ouercome. But euen while the doubtes moſt boiled, ſhe thus nouriſhed them.

She vnder-hand dealt with the principall men of that country, that at the great Parliament (which was then to bee held) they ſhould in the name of all the eſtates perſwade the King (being now ſtept deeply into old age) to make *Plangus*, his aſſociate in gouernment with him: aſſuring them, that not onely ſhe would ioine with them, but that the father himſelfe would take it kindly; charging them not to acquaint *Plangus* withall; for that perhaps it might be harmefull vnto him, if the King ſhould finde, that he were a party. They (who thought they might do it, not onely willingly, becauſe they loued him, and truely, becauſe ſuch indeed was the mind of the people, but ſafely becauſe ſhe who ruled the King was agreed thereto) accompliſhed her counſell: ſhe indeed keeping promiſe of vehement perſwading the ſame: which the more ſhe and they did, the more ſhee knew her husband woulde feare, and hate the cauſe of his feare. *Plangus* found this, and humbly proteſted againſt ſuch deſire, or will to accept. But the more hee proteſted, the more his father thought he diſſembled, accounting his integrity to be but a cũning face of falſhood: and therefore delaying the deſire of his ſubiects, attended ſome fit occaſion to lay hands vpon his ſonne: which his wife thus brought to paſſe.

She cauſed that ſame miniſter of hers to go vnto *Plangus*, and (enabling his words with great ſhew of faith, and endearing them with deſire of ſecreſie) to tell him, that he found his ruine conſpired by his ſtepmother, with certaine of the noble men of that country, the King himſelfe giuing his conſent, and that few daies ſhoulde paſſe before the putting it in practize: with all diſcouering the very truth indeede, with what cunning his ſtepmother had proceeded. This agreing with *Plangus* his owne opinion, made him giue him the better credit: yet not ſo far, as to flie out of his country (according to the naughty fellowes perſuaſion) but to attend, and to

ſee

ſee further. Whereupon the fellow (by the direction of his miſtreſſe) told him one day, that the ſame night about one of the clocke, the King had appointed to haue his wife, and thoſe noble men together, to deliberate of their manner of proceeding againſt *Plangus*: and therefore offered him, that if himſelfe would agree, hee woulde bring him into a place where hee ſhould heare all that paſſed; and ſo haue the more reaſon both to himſelfe, and to the world, to ſeeke his ſafetie. The poore *Plangus* (being ſubiect to that onely diſaduantage of honeſt harts, credulitie) was perſwaded by him: and arming himſelfe (becauſe of his late going) was cloſely conueied into the place appointed. In the meane time his ſtepmother, making al her geſtures cũningly counterfait a miſerable affliction, ſhe lay almoſt groueling on the flower of her chãber, not ſuffering any body to comfort her; vntill they calling for her husband, and he held of with long enquiry, at length, ſhe tolde him (euen almoſt crying out euery word) that ſhe was wery of her life, ſince ſhee was brought to that plunge, either to conceale her husbands murther, or accuſe her ſonne, who had euer beene more deare, then a ſonne vnto her. Then with many interruptions and exclamations ſhe tolde him, that her ſonne *Plangus* (ſolliciting her in the olde affection betweene them) had beſought her to put her helping hand to the death of the King; aſſuring her, that though all the lawes in the world were againſt it, he would marrie her when he were King.

She had not fully ſaid thus much, with many pitifull digreſſiõs, when in comes the ſame fellow, that brought *Plãgus*: & rũning himſelf out of breath, fell at the Kings feet, beſeeching him to ſaue himſelf; for that there was a man with a ſword drawen in the next roome. The King affrighted, wẽt out, & called his gard, who entring the place, foũd indeed *Plangus* with his ſword in his hand, but not naked, but ſtanding ſuſpiciouſly inough, to one already ſuſpicious. The King (thinking hee had put vp his ſworde becauſe of the noiſe) neuer tooke leaſure to heare his anſwer, but made him priſoner, meaning the next morning to put him to death in the market place.

But the day had no ſooner opened the eies & eares of his friends & followers, but that there was a little army of them, who came, & by force deliuered him; although numbers on the other ſide (abuſed with the fine framing of their report) took armes for the King. But *Plangus*, though he might haue vſed the force of his friends to reuenge his wrong, and get the crowne; yet the naturall loue of his father, and hate to make their ſuſpition ſeeme iuſt, cauſed him rather to chooſe a voluntarie exile, then to make his fathers death the purchaſe of his life: and therefore went he to *Tiridates*, whoſe mother was his fathers ſiſter, liuing in his Court eleuen or twelue yeares, euer hoping by his interceſſion, and his owne deſert, to recouer his fathers grace. At the end of which time, the warre of *Erona* happened, which my ſiſter with the cauſe thereof diſcourſed vnto you.

But his father had ſo deeply engraued the ſuſpition in his hart, that he thought his flight rather to proceed of a fearefull guiltines, then of an humble faithfulnes; and therefore continued his hate, with ſuch vehemencie, that he did euen hate his Nephew *Tiridates*, and afterwardes his neece *Artaxia*, becauſe in their Court hee receiued countenance, leauing no meanes vnattempted of deſtroying his ſon; among other, employing that wicked ſeruant of his, who vndertooke to empoyſon him. But his cunning diſguiſed him not ſo well, but that the watchful ſeruants of *Plangus* did diſcouer him. Whereupon the wretch was taken, & (before his well deſerued execution) by torture forced to confeſſe the particularities of this, which in generall I

haue

haue told you.

Which confeſſion autentically ſet downe (though *Tiridates* with ſolemne Embaſſage ſent it to the King) wrought no effect. For the King hauing put the reines of the gouernment into his wiues hande, neuer did ſo much as reade it; but ſent it ſtreight by her to be conſidered. So as they rather heaped more hatred vpon *Plangus*, for the death of their ſeruaunt. And now finding, that his abſence, and their reports had much diminiſhed the wauering peoples affection towardes *Plangus*, with aduauncing fit perſons for faction, and graunting great immunities to the commons, they preuailed ſo farre; as to cauſe the ſonne of the ſecond wife, called *Palladius*, to be proclaymed ſucceſſour, and *Plangus* quite excluded: ſo that *Plangus* was driuen to continue his ſeruing *Tiridates*, as hee did in the warre againſt *Erona*, and brought home *Artaxia*, as my ſiſter tolde you; when *Erona* by the treaſon of *Antiphilus*, But at that word ſhe ſtopped. For *Baſilius* (not able longer to abide their abſence) came ſodainly among them, and with ſmiling countenance (telling *Zelmane* hee was affraid ſhee had ſtollen away his daughters) inuited them to follow the Sunnes counſell in going then to their lodging; for indeed the Sun was readie to ſet. They yeelded, *Zelmane* meaning ſome other time to vnderſtand the ſtorie of *Antiphilus* treaſon, and *Eronas* daunger, whoſe cauſe ſhe greatly tendred. But *Miſo* had no ſooner eſpied *Baſilius*, but that as ſpitefully, as her rotten voice could vtter it, ſhe ſet foorth the ſawcineſſe of *Amphialus*. But *Baſilius* onely attended what *Zelmanes* opinion was, who though ſhe hated *Amphialus*, yet the nobilitie of her courage preuailed ouer it, and ſhee deſired he might be pardoned that youthfull error; conſidering the reputation he had, to be one of the beſt knights in the world; ſo as hereafter he gouerned himſelfe, as one remembring his fault. *Baſilius* giuing the infinite tearmes of praiſes to *Zelmanes* both valour in conquering, and pittifulneſſe in pardoning, commanded no more wordes to be made of it, ſince ſuch he thought was her pleaſure.

So brought he them vp to viſite his wife, where betweene her, and him, the poore *Zelmane* receaued a tedious entertainement; oppreſſed with being loued, almoſt as much, as with louing. *Baſilius* not ſo wiſe in couering his paſſion, coulde make his tong go almoſt no other pace, but to runne into thoſe immoderate praiſes, which the fooliſh Louer thinkes ſhort of his Miſtres, though they reach farre beyond the heauens. But *Gynecia* (whome womanly modeſtie did more outwardly bridle) yet did oftentimes vſe the aduantage of her ſexe in kiſſing *Zelmane*, as ſhee ſate vpon her bedde-ſide by her; which was but ſtill more and more ſweete incenſe, to caſt vpon the fire wherein her harte was ſacrificed: Once *Zelmane* coulde not ſtirre, but that, (as if they had bene poppets, whoſe motion ſtoode onely vpon her pleaſure) *Baſilius* with ſeruiceable ſteppes, *Gynecia* with greedie eyes would follow her. *Baſilius* mind *Gynecia* well knew, and could haue found in her hart to laugh at, if mirth could haue borne any proportion with her fortune. But all *Gynecias* actions were interpreted by *Baſilius*, as proceeding from iealouſie of his amorouſneſſe. *Zelmane* betwixt both (like the poore childe, whoſe father while he beates him, will make him beleeue it is for loue; or like the ſicke man, to whom the Phiſition ſweares, the ill-taſting wallowiſh medicine he profers, is of a good taſte) their loue was hatefull, their courteſie troubleſome, their preſence cauſe of her abſence thence, were not only her light, but her life conſiſted. Alas (thought ſhe to her ſelfe) Deare *Dorus*, what ods is there betweene thy deſtiny and mine? For thou haſt to doo in thy purſuite but with ſhep-

herdiſh

herdiſh folkes, who trouble thee with a little enuious care, and affected diligence. But I (beſides that I haue now *Miſo* the worſt of thy diuels, let looſe vpon me) am waited on by Princes, and watched by the two wakefull eyes of Loue and Iealouſie. Alas, incomparable *Philoclea*, thou euer ſeeſt me, but doſt neuer ſee me as I am: thou heareſt willingly all that I dare ſay, and I dare not ſay that which were moſt fit for thee to heare. Alas who euer but I was impriſoned in libertie, and baniſhed being ſtill preſent? To whom but me haue louers bene iaylours, & honour a captiuitie?

But the night comming on with her ſilent ſteps vpon them, they parted each frō other (if at leſt they could bee parted, of whom euery one did liue in another) and went about to flatter ſleepe with their beds, that diſdained to beſtow it ſelfe liberally vpon ſuch eies which by their will would euer be looking: and in leſt meaſure vpon *Gynecia*. who (when *Baſilius* after long toſſing was gotten a ſleepe, and the cheereful cōfort of the lights remoued from her) kneeling vp in her bed, began with a ſoft voice, and ſwolne hart, to renue the curſes of her birth; & then in a maner embracing her bed; Ah chaſteſt bed of mine (ſaid ſhe) which neuer heretofore couldſt accuſe me of one defiled thought, how canſt thou now receaue this deſaſtred chāgling? Happie, happie be they onely which bee not: and thy bleſſednes onely in this reſpect thou maieſt feele, that thou haſt no feeling. With that ſhe furiouſly tare off great part of her faire haire: Take here ô forgotten vertue (ſaide ſhee) this miſerable ſacrifice; while my ſoule was clothed with modeſtie, that was a comely ornament: now why ſhould nature crowne that head, which is ſo wicked, as her onely deſpaire is, ſhe cannot be enough wicked? More ſhe would haue ſaid, but that *Baſilius* (awaked with the noiſe) tooke her in his armes, and began to comfort her; the good-man thinking, it was all for a iealous loue of him: which humor if ſhe would a little haue maintained, perchance it might haue weakned his new conceaued fancies. But hee finding her anſwers wandring from the purpoſe, left her to her ſelfe (glad the next morning to take the aduantage of a ſleepe, which a little before day, ouer-watched with ſorrow, her teares had as it were ſealed vp in her eyes) to haue the more conference with *Zelmane*, who baited on this faſhion by theſe two louers, and euer kept for many meane to declare herſelfe, found in her ſelfe a dayly encreaſe of her violent deſires; like a riuer the more ſwelling, the more his current is ſtopped.

The chiefe recreation ſhe could finde in her anguiſh, was ſometime to viſite that place, where firſt ſhe was ſo happy as to ſee the cauſe of her vnhap. There would ſhe kiſſe the ground, and thanke the trees, bliſſe the aier, & doo dutifull reuerence to euery thing that ſhe thought did accompany her at their firſt meeting: then returne againe to her inward thoughts; ſometimes deſpaire darkning all her imaginations, ſometimes the actiue paſſion of Loue cheering and cleering her inuention, how to vnbar that comberſome hinderance of her two ill-matched louers, But this mourning *Baſilius* himſelf gaue her good occaſion to go beyond them. For hauing combd and trickt himſelfe more curiouſly, then any time fortie winters before, comming where *Zelmane* was, he found her giuen ouer to her muſical muſes, to the great pleaſure of the good old *Baſilius*, who retired himſelfe behinde a tree, while ſhe with a moſt ſweete voice did vtter theſe paſſionate verſes.

LOued I am, and yet complaine of Loue:
As louing not, accus'd in Loue I die.

When

When pittie moſt I craue, I cruell proue:
Still ſeeking Loue, loue found as much I flie.
Burnt in my ſelfe, I muſe at others fire:
What I call wrong, I doo the ſame, and more:
Bard of my will, I haue beyond deſire:
I waile for want, and yet am choke with ſtore.
This is thy worke, thou God for euer blinde:
Though thouſands old, a Boy entit'led ſtill.
Thus children doo the ſilly birds they finde,
With ſtroking hurt, and too much cramming kill.
Yet thus much Loue, O Loue, I craue of thee:
Let me be lou'd, or els not loued bee.

Baſilius made no great haſte from behind the tree, till he perceaued ſhe had fully ended her muſick. But then loth to looſe the pretious fruite of time, he preſented himſelfe vnto her, falling downe vpon both his knees, and holding vp his hands, as the old gouerneſſe of *Danae* is painted, when ſhe ſodainly ſaw the golden ſhoure, O heauenly woman, or earthly Goddeſſe (ſaid he) let not my preſence be odious vnto you, nor my humble ſuite ſeeme of ſmall weight in your eares. Vouchſafe your eies to deſcend vpon this miſerable old-man, whoſe life hath hitherto bene maintained but to ſerue as an encreaſe of your beautifull triumphs. You only haue ouerthrowne me, and in my bondage conſiſts my glory. Suffer not your owne worke to be deſpiſed of you: but looke vpon him with pittie, whoſe life ſerues for your praiſe. *Zelmane* (keeping a countenance aſcanſes ſhe vnderſtood him not) told him, It became her euill to ſuffer ſuch exceſſiue reuerence of him, but that it worſe became her to correct him, to whom ſhe owed duetie: that the opinion ſhe had of his wiſedome was ſuch, as made her eſteeme greatly of his words; but that the words themſelues ſounded ſo, as ſhe could not imagine what they might intend. Intend? (ſaid *Baſilius*, proud that that was brought in queſtion) what may they intend, but a refreſhing of my ſoule, and a ſwaging of my heat, and enioying thoſe your excellencies, wherein my life is vpheld, and my death threatned? *Zelmane* lifting vp her face as if ſhe had receaued a mortall iniurie of him. And is this the deuotion your ceremonies haue bene bent vnto? ſaid ſhe: Is it the diſdaine of my eſtate, or the opinion of my lightneſſe, that haue emboldned ſuch baſe fancies towards me? enioying quoth you? now little ioy come to them that yeeld to ſuch enioying. Poore *Baſilius* was ſo appalled, that his legges bowed vnder him; his eyes lookt as though he would gladly hide himſelfe; and his old blood going to his hart, a generall ſhaking all ouer his bodie poſſeſſed him. At length with a wanne mouth; he was about to giue a ſtammering anſwere, when it came into *Zelmanes* head by this deuiſe to make her profite of his folly; and therefore with a relented countenance, thus ſaid vnto him. Your words (mightie Prince) were vnfit either for me to heare, or you to ſpeake: but yet the large teſtimonie I ſee of your affection makes me willing to ſuppreſſe a great number of errors. Onely thus much I thinke good to ſay, that the ſame words in my Ladie *Philocleas* mouth, as from one woman to another (ſo as there were no other bodie by) might haue had a better grace; and perchance haue found a gentler receipt.

Baſilius (whoſe ſenſes by Deſire were held open, and conceipt was by Loue

quickned) heard ſcarcely halfe her anſwere out, but that (as if ſpeedie flight might ſaue his life) he turned away, and ran with all the ſpeede his bodie would ſuffer him, towards his daughter *Philoclea:* whom he found at that time duetifully watching by her mother, and *Miſo* curiouſlie watching her; hauing left *Mopſa* to doo the like ſeruice to *Pamela*. *Baſilius* foorthwith calling *Philoclea* aſide, (with all the coniuring words which Deſire could endite, and authoritie vtter) beſought her ſhe would preſerue his life, in whom her life was begonne; ſhe would ſaue his graye haires from rebuke, and his aged mind from deſpaire; that if ſhe were not cloyed with his companie, and that ſhe thought not the earth ouer-burdened with him, ſhe would coole his fierie griefe, which was to be done but by her breath. That in fine, whatſoeuer he was, he was nothing but what it pleaſed *Zelmane*; all the powers of his ſpirite depending of her: that if ſhe continued cruell, he could no more ſuſtaine his life, then the earth remaine fruitefull in the Sunnes continuall abſence. He concluded, ſhe ſhould in one payment requite all his deſerts: and that ſhe needed not diſdaine any ſeruice (though neuer ſo meane) which was warranted by the ſacred name of a father. *Philoclea* more glad then euer ſhe had knowen her ſelfe, that ſhe might by this occaſion, enioy the priuate conference of *Zelmane*, yet had ſo ſweete a feeling of vertue in her minde, that ſhe would not ſuffer a vile colour to be caſt ouer her faire thoughts; but with humble grace anſwered her father: That there needed neither promiſe nor perſwaſion to her, to make her doo her vttermoſt for her fathers ſeruice. That for *Zelmanes* fauour, ſhe would in all vertuous ſort ſeeke it towards him: and that as ſhe would not pearce further into his meaning, then himſelfe ſhould declare, ſo would ſhe interprete all his doings to be accompliſhed in goodnes: and therefore deſired, (if otherwiſe it were) that he would not impart it to her, who then ſhould be forced to beginne (by true obedience) a ſhew of diſobedience: rather perfourming his generall commandement, which had euer beene, to embrace vertue, then any new particular, ſprong out of paſſion, and contrarie to the former. *Baſilius* content to take that, ſince he could haue no more (thinking it a great point, if by her meanes, he could get but a more free acceſſe vnto *Zelmane*) allowed her reaſons, and tooke her proffer thankfully, deſiring only a ſpeedie returne of comfort. *Philoclea* was parting, and *Miſo* ſtreight behind her, like *Alecto* following *Proſerpina*. But *Baſilius* forced her to ſtay, though with much a doo, ſhe being ſharp-ſet vpon the fulfilling of a ſhrewde office, in ouer-looking *Philoclea:* and ſo ſaid to *Baſilius*, that ſhe did as ſhe was commanded, and could not anſwere it to *Gynecia*, if ſhe were any whit from *Philoclea:* telling him true, that he did euill to take her charge from her. But *Baſilius*, (ſwearing he would put out her eyes, if ſhe ſtird a foote to trouble his daughter) gaue her a ſtop for that while.

So away departed *Philoclea*, with a new field of fancies for her trauayling mind. For well ſhe ſawe, her father was growen her aduerſe partie, and yet her fortune ſuch, as ſhe muſt fauour her Riuall; and the fortune of that fortune ſuch, as neither that did hurt her, nor any contrarie meane helpe her.

But ſhe walkt but a little on, before ſhe ſaw *Zelmane* lying vpon a banke, with her face ſo bent ouer *Ladon*, that (her teares falling into the water) one might haue thought, that ſhe began meltingly to be metamorphoſed to the vnder-running riuer. But by and by, with ſpeech ſhe made knowen, as well that ſhe liued, as that ſhe ſorrowed. Faire ſtreames (ſaid ſhe) that do vouchſafe in your cleerenes to repreſent vnto me my blubbered face, let the tribute-offer of my teares vnto you,

procure

procure your ſtay a while with me, that I may beginne yet at laſt, to finde ſome thing that pities me: and that all things of comfort and pleaſure doo not flie away from me. But if the violence of your ſpring commaund you to haſte away, to pay your dueties to your great prince, the Sea, yet carrie with you theſe few wordes, and let the vttermoſt ends of the world know them. A loue more cleere then your ſelues, dedicated to a Loue (I feare) more cold then your ſelues, with the cleerenes layes a night of ſorow vpon me; and with the coldnes enflames a world of fire within me. With that ſhe tooke a willowe ſtick, and wrote in a ſandie banke theſe fewe verſes.

OVer theſe brookes truſting to eaſe mine eyes,
(Mine eyes euen great in labour with their teares)
I layde my face; my face wherein there lyes
Cluſters of clowdes, which no Sunne euer cleares.
In watry glaſſe my watrie eyes I ſee:
Sorrowes ill eaſde, where ſorrowes painted be.

My thoughts impriſonde in my ſecret woes,
With flamie breathes doo iſſue oft in ſound:
The ſound to this ſtrange aier no ſooner goes,
But that it dooth with Echoes *force rebound.*
And make me heare the plaints I would refraine:
Thus outward helps my inward griefe maintaine.

Now in this ſand I would diſcharge my minde,
And caſt from me part of my burdnous cares:
But in the ſand my tales foretolde I finde,
And ſee therein how well the writer fares.
Since ſtreame, aier, ſand, mine eyes and eares conſpire:
What hope to quench, where each thing blowes the fire?

And aſſoone as ſhe had written them (a new ſwarme of thoughts ſtinging her minde) ſhe was ready with her foot to giue the new-borne letters both death and buriall. But *Philoclea* (whoſe delight of hearing and ſeeing was before a ſtay from interrupting her) gaue her ſelf to be ſeen vnto her, with ſuch a lightning of Beauty vpon *Zelmane*, that neither ſhe could looke on, nor would looke off. At laſt *Philoclea* (hauing a little muſed how to cut the threede euen, betweene her owne hopeleſſe affection, and her fathers vnbrideled hope) with eyes, cheekes, and lips, (wherof each ſang their part, to make vp the harmonie of baſhfulneſſe) began to ſay, My Father to whom I owe my ſelf, and therfore, When *Zelmane* (making a womaniſh habite to be the Armour of her boldneſſe, giuing vp her life to the lips of *Philoclea*, and taking it againe by the ſweeteneſſe of thoſe kiſſes) humbly beſought her to keepe her ſpeach for a while within the Paradiſe of her minde. For well ſhe knew her fathers errand, who ſhould ſoone receiue a ſufficient anſwere. But now ſhe demaunded leaue not to looſe this long ſought-for commoditie of time, to eaſe her hart thus farre, that if in her agonies her deſtinie was to be condemned by *Philocleas* mouth, at leſt *Philoclea* might know, whom ſhe had condemned. *Philoclea* eaſily yeelded to graunt her owne deſire: and ſo making the greene banke

the ſituation,and the riuer the proſpect of the moſt beautifull buildings of Nature, *Zelmane* doubting how to beginne, though her thoughts already had runne to the ende, with a minde fearing the vnworthineſſe of euery word that ſhould be preſented to her eares, at length brought it forth in this manner.

Moſt beloued Ladie,the incomparable excellencies of your ſelfe, (waited-on by the greatneſſe of your eſtate) and the importaunce of the thing (whereon my life conſiſteth) doth require both many ceremonies before the beginning,and many circumſtaunces in the vttering my ſpeech, both bolde, and fearefull. But the ſmall opportunitie of enuious occaſion (by the malicious eie hatefull Loue doth caſt vpon me) and the extreme bent of my affection (which will eyther breake out in words, or breake my harte) compell me, not onely to embrace the ſmalleſt time, but to paſſe by the reſpects due vnto you, in reſpect of your poore caitifes life, who is now, or neuer to be preſerued. I doo therefore vowe vnto you, hereafter neuer more to omit all dutifull forme: doo you onely now vouchſafe to heare the matter of a minde moſt perplexed. If euer the ſound of Loue haue come to your eares, or if euer you haue vnderſtood, what force it hath had to conquere the ſtrongeſt hartes,and change the moſt ſetled eſtates: receiue here an example of thoſe ſtraunge Tragedies; one, that in himſelfe conteineth the particularities of all thoſe misfortunes: and from hencefoorth beleeue that ſuch a thing may be, ſince you ſhall ſee it is. You ſhall ſee (I ſay) a liuing image, and a preſent ſtorie of what Loue can doo, when he is bent to ruine.

But alas, whether goeſt thou my tongue? or how doth my harte conſent to aduenture the reuealing his neereſt touching ſecrete? But peace Feare, thou commeſt too late, when already the harme is taken. Therefore I ſay againe, O onely Princeſſe, attend here a miſerable miracle of affection. Behold here before your eyes *Pyrocles*, Prince of *Macedon*, whome you onely haue brought to this game of Fortune, and vnuſed *Metamorphoſis*: whome you onely haue made neglect his countrie, forget his Father, and laſtly, forſake to be *Pyrocles*: the ſame *Pyrocles*, who (you heard) was betrayed by being put in a ſhip, which being burned, *Pyrocles* was drowned. O moſt true preſage: for theſe traytors, my eyes, putting me into a ſhippe of Deſire, which dayly burneth, thoſe eyes (I ſay) which betraied me, will neuer leaue till they haue drowned me. But be not, be not, (moſt excellent Lady) you that Nature hath made to be the Load-ſtarre of comfort, be not the Rocke of ſhipwracke: you whome vertue hath made the Princeſſe of felicitie, be not the miniſter of ruine: you, whom my choyſe hath made the Goddeſſe of my ſafetie, O let not, let not, from you be powred vpon me deſtruction. Your faire face hath manie tokens in it of amazement at my words: thinke then what his amazement is,from whence they come: ſince no words can carry with them the life of the inward feeling. I deſire, that my deſire may be waied in the ballances of Honour, and let Vertue hold them. For if the higheſt Loue in no baſe perſon may aſpire to grace, then may I hope your beautie will not be without pittie. If otherwiſe you be (alas but let it neuer be ſo) reſolued, yet ſhall not my death be comfortles, receiuing it by your ſentence.

The ioy which wrought into *Pygmalions* minde, while he found his beloued image was ſofter,and warmer in his folded armes, till at length it accompliſhed his gladnes with a perfect womans ſhape (ſtill beautified with the former perfections) was euen ſuch, as by each degree of *Zelmanes* words creepingly entred into *Philo-*

clea:

cles: till her pleasure was fully made vp with the manifesting of his being; which was such as in hope did ouer-come Hope. Yet Doubt would faine haue playd his parte in her minde, and cald in question, how she should be assured that *Zelmane* was *Pyrocles*. But Loue streight stood vp and deposed, that a lie could not come from the mouth of *Zelmane*. Besides, a certaine sparke of honour, which rose in her well-disposed minde, made her feare to be alone with him, with whome alone she desired to be (with all the other contradictions growing in those minds, which neither absolutely clime the rocke of Vertue, nor freely sinke into the sea of Vanitie) but that sparke soone gaue place, or at lest gaue no more light in her minde, then a candle doth in the Sunnes presence. But euen sicke with a surfet of ioy, and fearefull of she knewe not what (as he that newly findes huge treasures, doubts whether he sleepe or no; or like a fearefull Deere, which then lookes most about, when he comes to the best feede) with a shrugging kinde of tremor through all her principall partes, she gaue these affectionate words for answere. Alas, how painefull a thing it is to a deuided minde to make a well-ioyned answere? how hard it is to bring inward shame to outward confession? and what handsomnes trow you can be obserued in that speeche, which is made one knowes not to whom? Shall I say ô *Zelmane?* Alas your words be against it. Shall I say Prince *Pyrocles?* wretch that I am, your shew is manifest against it. But this, this I may well say; If I had continued as I ought, *Philoclea*, you had either neuer bene, or euer bene *Zelmane:* you had either neuer attempted this change, set on with hope, or neuer discouered it, stopt with despaire. But I feare me, my behauiour ill gouerned, gaue you the first comfort: I feare me, my affection ill hid, hath giuen you this last assurance: I feare indeed, the weakenesse of my gouernment before, made you thinke such a maske would be gratefull vnto me: and my weaker gouernment since, makes you to pull off the visar. What shall I doo then? shall I seeke far-fetched inuentions? shall I labour to lay marble coulours ouer my ruinous thoughts? or rather, though the purenes of my virgin-minde be stained, let me keepe the true simplicitie of my word. True it is, alas, too true it is, ô *Zelmane* (for so I loue to call thee, since in that name my loue first began, and in the shade of that name my loue shall best lie hidden,) that euen while so thou wert, (what eye bewitched me I know not) my passions were fitter to desire, then to be desired. Shall I say then, I am sory, or that my loue must be turned to hate, since thou art turned to *Pyrocles?* how may that wel be, since when thou wert *Zelmane*, the despaire thou mightest not be thus, did most torment me. Thou hast then the victorie: vse it with vertue. Thy vertue wan me; with vertue preserue me. Doost thou loue me? keepe me then still worthy to be beloued.

Then held she her tongue, and cast downe a self-accusing looke, finding, that in her selfe she had (as it were) shot out of the bow of her affection, a more quick opening of her minde, then she minded to haue done. But *Pyrocles* so caried vp with ioy, that he did not enuy the Gods felicitie, presented her with some iewels of right princely value, as some little tokens of his loue, and qualitie: and withall shewed her letters from his father King *Euarchus*, vnto him, which euen in the Sea had amongst his iewels bene preserued. But little needed those proofes to one, who would haue fallen out with herselfe, rather then make any contrarie coniectures to *Zelmane* speeches; so that with such imbracements, as it seemed their soules desired to meete, and their harts to kisse, as their mouthes did: which faine *Pyrocles* would haue sealed with the chiefe armes of his desire, but *Philoclea* commaunded

the contrary; and yet they paſſed the promiſe of mariage.

And then at *Philocleas* entreaty, who was willing to purloine all occaſions of remayning with *Zelmane*, ſhe told her the ſtorie of her life, from the time of their departing from *Erona*, for the reſt ſhe had already vnderſtood of her ſiſter. For (ſaide ſhe) I haue vnderſtood, how you firſt in the companie of your Noble couſin *Muſidorus* parted from *Theſſalia*, and of diuers aduentures, which with no more daunger then glory you paſſed through, till your comming to the ſuccour of the Queene *Erona*; and the ende of that warre (you might perceiue by my ſelfe) I had vnderſtood of the Prince *Plangus*. But what ſince was the courſe of your doings, vntill you came, after ſo many victories, to make a conqueſt of poore me, that I know not, the fame thereof hauing rather ſhewed it by pieces; then deliuered any full forme of it. Therefore, deere *Pyrocles* (for what can mine eares be ſo ſweetly fed with as to heare you of you) be liberall vnto me of thoſe things which haue made you indeede pretious to the worlde, and now doubt not to tell of your perils; for ſince I haue you here out of them, euen the remembrance of them is pleaſaunt. *Pyrocles* eaſily perceiued ſhe was content with kindneſſe, to put off occaſion of further kindneſſe; wherein Loue ſhewed himſelfe a cowardly boy, that durſt not attempt for feare of offending. But rather Loue prooued himſelfe valiant, that durſt with the ſworde of reuerent dutie gaine-ſtand the force of ſo many enraged deſires. But ſo it was, that though he knewe this diſcourſe was to entertaine him from a more ſtreight parley, yet he durſt not but kiſſe his rod, and gladly make much of that entertainement which ſhe allotted vnto him: and therefore with a deſirous ſigh chaſtning his breſt for too much deſiring, Sweete Princeſſe of my life (ſaid he) what Trophees, what Triumph, what Monuments, what Hiſtories might euer make my fame yeeld ſo ſweete a Muſicke to my eares, as that it pleaſeth you to lend your minde to the knowledge of any thing touching *Pyrocles*, onely therefore of value, becauſe he is your *Pyrocles*? And therefore grow I now ſo proud, as to thinke it worth the hearing, ſince you vouchſafe to giue it the hearing. Therefore (onely height of my hope) vouchſafe to know, that after the death of *Tiridates*, and ſetling *Erona* in her gouernment; for ſetled we left her, howſoeuer ſince (as I perceiued by your ſpeech the laſt day) the vngratefull treaſon of her ill-choſen husband ouerthrew her (a thing in trueth neuer till this time by me either heard, or ſuſpected) for who could thinke without hauing ſuch a minde as *Antiphilus*, that ſo great a beautie as *Eronas* (indeed excellent) could not haue held his affection? ſo great goodnes could not haue bound gratefulneſſe? and ſo high aduancement could not haue ſatisfied his ambition? But therefore true it is, that wickedneſſe may well be compared to a bottomleſſe pit, into which it is farre eaſier to keepe ones ſelfe from falling, then being fallen, to giue ones ſelfe any ſtay from falling infinitely. But for my Coſen, and me, vpon this cauſe we parted from *Erona*.

Euardes (the braue and mighty Prince, whom it was my fortune to kill in the combat for *Erona*) had three Nephewes, ſonnes to a ſiſter of his; all three ſet among the foremoſt rancks of Fame for great minds to attempt, and great force to perfourme what they did attempt; eſpecially the eldeſt, by name *Anaxius*; to whom all men would willingly haue yeelded the height of praiſe, but that his nature was ſuch, as to beſtow it vpon himſelfe, before any could giue it. For of ſo vnſupportable a pride he was, that where his deeds might wel ſtir enuie, his demeanor

did

did rather breed diſdaine. And if it bee true that the *Gyants* euer made war againſt heauen, he had bene a fit enſigne-bearer for that company. For nothing ſeemed hard to him, though impoſſible; and nothing vniuſt, while his liking was his iuſtice. Now he in theſe wars had flatly refuſed his aid; becauſe he could not brooke, that the worthy Prince *Plangus* was by his coſen *Tiridates* preferred before him. For allowing no other weights, but the ſword and ſpeare in iudging of deſert, how-much he eſteemed himſelfe before *Plangus* in that, ſo much would he haue had his allowance in his ſeruice.

But now that he vnderſtood that his vncle was ſlaine by me, I think rather ſcorne that any ſhould kil his vncle, then any kindneſſe (an vn-vſed gueſt to an arrogant ſoule) made him ſeeke his reuenge; I muſt confeſſe in manner gallant enough. For he ſent a challenge vnto me to meete him at a place appointed, in the confines of the kingdome of *Lycia*; where he would proue vpon me, that I had by ſome trecherie ouercome his vncle, whom els many hundreds ſuch as I, could not haue withſtood. Youth and ſucceſſe made mee willing enough to accept any ſuch bargaine; eſpecially, becauſe I had heard that your coſen *Amphialus* (who for ſome yeares hath vniuerſally borne the name of the beſt Knight in the world) had diuers times fought with him, and neuer bene able to maſter him; but ſo had left him, that euery man thought *Anaxius* in that one vertue of curteſie far ſhort of him, in all other his match; *Anaxius* ſtill deeming himſelfe for his ſuperiour. Therefore to him I would goe, and I would needs goe alone, becauſe ſo I vnderſtood for certaine, he was; and (I muſt confeſſe) deſirous to do ſomething without the company of the incomparable Prince *Muſidorus*, becauſe in my hart I acknowledge that I owed more to his preſence, then to any thing in my ſelfe, whatſoeuer before I had done. For of him indeed (as of any worldly cauſe) I muſt grant, as receiued, what euer there is, or may be good in me. He taught me by word, and beſt by example, giuing mee in him ſo liuely an Image of vertue, as ignorance could not caſt ſuch miſt ouer mine eyes, as not to ſee, and to loue it, and all with ſuch deare friendſhip and care, as (ô heauen) how can my life euer requite vnto him? which made me indeed finde in my ſelfe ſuch a kind of depending vpon him, as without him I found a weakeneſſe, and a miſtruſtfulnes of my ſelfe, as one ſtrayed from his beſt ſtrength, when at any time I miſt him. Which humour perceiuing to ouer-rule me, I ſtraue againſt it; not that I was vnwilling to depend vpon him in iudgement, but by weakeneſſe I would not; which though it held me to him, made me vnworthy of him. Therefore I deſired his leaue, and obtained it: ſuch confidence he had in me, preferring my reputation before his owne tenderneſſe; and ſo priuately went from him, hee determining (as after I knew) in ſecret maner, not to be far from the place, where we appointed to meete, to preuent any foule play that might be offered vnto me. Full loth was *Erona* to let vs depart from her, (as it were) forefeeling the harmes which after fel to her. But I, (ridde fully from thoſe combers of kindneſſe, and halfe a dayes iorney in my way toward *Anaxius*) met an aduēture, which (though in it ſelf of ſmal importance) I wil tel you at large, becauſe by the occaſion thereof I was brought to as great comber and danger, as lightly any might eſcape.

As I paſt through a Laund (ech ſide whereof was ſo bordred both with high tymber trees, and copſes of farre more humble growth, that it might eaſily bring a ſolitarie minde to looke for no other companions then the wild burgeſſes of the forreſt) I heard certaine cries, which comming by pawſes to mine eares from within

the wood of the right hand, made mee well aſſured by the greatneſſe of the crie, it was the voice of a man, though it were a verie vnmanlike voice, ſo to crie. But making mine eare my guide, I left not many trees behinde me, before I ſawe at the bottome of one of them a gentle-man bound (with many garters) hand & foot, ſo as well he might tomble and toſſe, but neither runne nor reſiſt he coulde. Vpon him (like ſo many Eagles vpon an Oxe) were nine Gentle-women; truely ſuch, as one might wel enough ſay, they were hanſome. Eche of them held bodkins in their handes, wherewith they continually pricked him, hauing bene before-hand vnarmed of any defence from the waſt vpward, but onely of his ſhirte: ſo as the poore man wept and bled, cried and praied, while they ſported themſelues in his paine, and delighted in his praiers, as the argumentes of their victorie.

I was moued to compaſſion, and ſo much the more that hee ſtraight cald to me for ſuccour, deſiring me at leſt to kill him, to deliuer him from thoſe tormenters. But before my-ſelfe could reſolue, much leſſe any other tell what I would reſolue, there came in cholericke haſt towards me about ſeuen or eight knights; the foremoſt of which willed me to get me away, & not to trouble the Ladies, while they were taking their due reuenge, but with ſo ouer-maſtring a maner of pride, as truly my heart could not brooke it: and therefore (anſwering them, that howe I woulde haue defended him from the Ladies I knew not, but from them I would) I began a combat firſt with him particularly, and after his death with the others (that had leſſe good maners) ioyntly. But ſuch was the ende of it, that I kept the fielde with the death of ſome, and flight of others. In ſo much as the women (afraid, what angrie victorie would bring forth) ran all away; ſauing onely one; who was ſo fleſht in malice, that neyther during, nor after the fight, ſhe gaue anie truce to her crueltie, but ſtill vſed the little inſtrument of her great ſpight, to the well-witneſt paine of the impatient patient: and was now about to put out his eyes, which all this while were ſpared, becauſe they ſhould doe him the diſcomfort of ſeeing who preuayled ouer him. When I came in, and after much adoe, brought her to ſome conference, (for ſometime it was before ſhe would harken, more before ſhe would ſpeake; and moſt, before ſhee would in her ſpeeche leaue off the ſharpe remembrance of her bodkin) but at length when I puld off my head-peece, and humbled entreated her pardon, or knowledge why ſhe was cruell; out of breath more with choller (which increaſed in his owne exerciſe) then with the paine ſhe tooke, much to this purpoſe ſhe gaue her griefe vnto my knowledge. Gentleman (ſaid ſhe) much it is againſt my will to forbeare any time the executing of my iuſt reuenge vpon this naughtie creature, a man in nothing, but in deceiuing women; But becauſe I ſee you are yoong, and like enough to haue the power (if you would haue the mind) to do much more miſchief, then he, I am content vpō this bad ſubiect to read a lecture to your vertue.

This man called *Pamphilus*, in birth I muſt confeſſe is noble (but what is that to him, if it ſhalbe a ſtaine to his dead aunceſtors to haue left ſuch an offſpring:) in ſhape as you ſee not vncomely (indeed the fit maske of his diſguiſed falſhood) in conuerſation wittily pleaſant, and pleaſantly gameſome; his eyes full of merie ſimplicitie, his wordes of heartie companableneſſe; and ſuch a one, whoſe head one would not thinke ſo ſtaied, as to thinke miſchieuouſly: delighted in all ſuch things, which by imparting the delight to thers, makes the vſer therof welcome; as, Muſick, Daunſing, Hunting, Feaſting, Riding, and ſuch like. And to conclude, ſuch a one, as who can keepe him at armes end, need neuer wiſh a better companion. But vnder

der theſe qualities lies ſuch a poyſonous addar as I wil tell you. For by thoſe gifts of Nature and Fortune (being in all places acceptable) he creepes, nay (to ſay truely) he flies ſo into the fauour of poore ſillie womē, that I would be too much aſhamed to confeſſe, if I had not reuenge in my hande, as well as ſhame in my cheekes. For his hart being wholy delighted in deceiuing vs, we could neuer be warned, but rather one bird caught, ſerued for a ſtale to bring in more. For the more he gat, the more ſtill he ſhewed, that he (as it were) gaue away to his new miſtreſſe, when hee betrayed his promiſes to the former. The cunning of his flatterie, the readines of his teares, the infinitenes of his vowes, were but among the weakeſt threedes of his nette. But the ſtirring our owne paſſions, and by the entrance of them, to make himſelfe Lord of our forces; there lay his Maſters part of cunning, making vs now iealous, now enuious, now proud of what we had, deſirous of more; now giuing one the triumph, to ſee him that was Prince of many, Subiect to her; now with an eſtranged looke, making her feare the loſſe of that minde. which indeede could neuer be had: neuer ceaſing humblenes and diligence, till he had imbarked vs in ſome ſuch diſaduantage, as wee could not returne dryſhod; and then ſuddenly a tyrant, but a craftie tyrant. For ſo would hee vſe his imperiouſnes, that we had a delightfull feare & an awe which made vs loath to loſe our hope. And, which is ſtrangeſt (when ſometimes with late repentance I thinke of it) I muſt confeſſe, euen in the greateſt tempeſt of my iudgement was I neuer driuen to thinke him excellent, and yet ſo could ſet my minde, both to get and keepe him, as though therein had laien my felicitie: like them I haue ſeene play at the ball, growe extremely earneſt, who ſhould haue the ball, and yet euery one knew it was but a ball. But in end, the bitter ſauce of the ſport was, that wee had ether our hartes broken with ſorrow, or our eſtates ſpoyled with being at his direction, or our honours for euer loſt, partly by her owne faults, but principally by his faultie vſing of our faults. For neuer was there man that could with more ſcornefull eyes beholde her, at whoſe feete he had lately laine, nor with a more vnmanlike brauerie vſe his tongue to her diſgrace, which lately had ſong Sonets of her praiſes: being ſo naturally inconſtant, as I maruell his ſoule findes not ſome way to kill his bodie, whereto it had beene ſo long vnited. For ſo hath he dealt with vs (vnhappie fooles,) as we could neuer tell, whether hee made greater haſte after he once liked, to enioy, or after he once enioyed, to forſake. But making a glorie of his owne ſhame, it delighted him to bee challenged of vnkindeneſſe: it was a triumph vnto him to haue his mercie called for: and hee thought the freſh colours of his beautie were painted in nothing ſo well, as in the ruines of his Louers: yet ſo farre had we engaged our ſelues, (vnfortunate ſoules) that we liſted not complaine, ſince our complaints could not but carrie the greateſt accuſation to our ſelues. But euerie of vs (each for her ſelfe,) laboured all meanes how to recouer him, while he rather daily ſent vs companions of our deceipt, then euer returned in any ſound and faithfull manner. Till at length he concluded all his wronges with betrothing himſelfe to one (I muſt confeſſe) worthie to be liked, if any worthineſſe might excuſe ſo vnworthie a changeableneſſe; leauing vs nothing but remorſe for what was paſt, and diſpaire of what might followe. Then in deede the common iniurie made vs all ioyne in fellowſhipp, who till that time, had employed our endeuours one againſt the other. For wee thought nothing was a more condemning of vs, then the iuſtifiing of his loue to her by mariage: then Deſpaire made Feare valiant, and Reuenge gaue Shame countenance: whereupon, we (that you ſaw here)

deuiſed

deuiſed how to get him among vs alone: which hee (ſuſpecting no ſuch matter of them, whom he had by often abuſes he thought made tame to be ſtill abuſed) eaſily gaue vs opportunitie to do.

And a man may ſee, euen in this, how ſoone Rulers grow proud, and in theyr pride fooliſh: he came with ſuch an authoritie among vs, as if the Planets had done inough for vs, that by vs once he had beene delighted. And when wee began in courteous maner, one after the other, to lay his vnkindnes vnto him, he ſeeing himſelfe confronted by ſo many (like a reſolute Orator,) went not to deniall, but to iuſtifie his cruell falſhood, and al with ſuch ieſtes, and diſdainfull paſſages, that if the iniurie coulde not bee made greater, yet were our conceites made the apter to apprehend it.

Among other of his anſweres (forſooth) I ſhall neuer forget, howe hee woulde proue it was no inconſtancie to chaunge from one loue to another, but a great conſtancie; and contrarie, that which we call conſtancie, to be moſt chaungeable. For (ſaid he) I euer loued my delight, and delighted alwaies in what was Louely: and where-ſoeuer I found occaſion to obtaine that, I conſtantly followed it. But theſe conſtant fooles you ſpeake of, though their Miſtres growe by ſickneſſe foule, or by fortune miſerable, yet ſtill will loue her, and ſo commit the abſurdeſt inconſtancie that may be, in changing their loue from faireneſſe to fouleneſſe, and from loulineſſe to his contrarie; like one not content to leaue a friend, but will ſtreight giue ouer himſelfe to his mortall enemie: where I (whome you call inconſtant) am euer conſtant; to Beautie, in others; and Delight in my ſelfe. And ſo in this iolly ſcoffing brauerie he went ouer vs all, ſaying, He left one, becauſe ſhe was ouerwaiward: another, becauſe ſhe was too ſoone wonne: a third, becauſe ſhe was not merrie inough: a fourth, becauſe ſhe was ouer-gameſome: the fifth, becauſe ſhee was growne with griefe ſubiect to ſickneſſe: the ſixt becauſe ſhe was ſo fooliſh, as to be ielous of him: the ſeuenth, becauſe ſhee had refuſed to carrie a letter for him, to another that he loued: the eight, becauſe ſhe was not ſecret, the ninth, becauſe ſhe was not liberall: but to me, who am named *Dido*, (and indeede haue mette with a falſe *Æneas*) to me, I ſay, (ô the vngratefull villanie) he could finde no other fault to obiect, but that (perdie) he met with many fayrer.

But when he had thus plaide the careleſſe Prince, we (hauing thoſe ſeruants of ours in readines, whom you lately ſo manfully ouercame) laide holde of him; beginning at firſt but that trifling reuenge, in which you foũd vs buſie; but meaning afterwardes to haue mangled him ſo, as ſhould haue loſt his credit for euer abuſing more. but as you haue made my fellowes flie away, ſo for my part the greatneſſe of his wrong ouerſhadowes in my iudgement the greatneſſe of any daunger. For was it not inough for him, to haue deceiued me, and through the deceipt abuſed mee, and after the abuſe forſaken me, but that hee muſt now, of all the company, and before all the company lay want of beautie to my charge? Many fairer? I trow euen in your iudgement, Sir, (if your eies do not beguile me) not many fairer; and I know (whoſoeuer ſaies the contrary) there are not many fairer. And of whom ſhould I receiue this reproch, but of him, who hath beſt cauſe to know there are not many fairer? And therefore how-ſoeuer my fellowes pardon his iniuries, for my parte I will euer remember, and remember to reuenge this ſcorne of all ſcornes. With that ſhe to him afreſh; and ſurely would haue put out his eies (who lay mute for ſhame, if hee did not ſometimes crie for feare) if I had not lept from my horſe, and mingling

ling force with intreaty, ſtaied her furie.

But, while I was perſwading her to meekenes, comes a number of his friends, to whom he forthwith cried, that they ſhould kill that woman, that had thus betraied and diſgraced him. But then I was faine to forſake the enſigne; vnder which I had before ſerued, and to ſpend my vttermoſt force in the protecting of the Ladie; which ſo well preuailed for her, that in ende there was a faithfull peace promiſed of all ſids. And ſo I leauing her in a place of ſecuritie (as ſhe thought) went on my iourney towards *Anaxius*, for whom I was faine to ſtay two daies in the apointed place, he diſdaining to waite for me, till he was ſure I were there.

I did patientlie abide his angrie pleaſure, till about that ſpace of tyme he came (indeede, according to promiſe) alone: and (that I may not ſay too little, becauſe he is wont to ſay too much) like a man, whoſe courage was apt to clime ouer any daunger. And aſſoone as euer he came neere me, in fit diſtaunce for his purpoſe, he with much fury, (but with fury skilfully guided) ran vpon me; which I (in the beſt ſort I could) reſiſted, hauing kept my ſelfe ready for him, becauſe I had vnderſtood, that he obſerued few complements in matter of armes, but ſuch as a proud anger did indite vnto him. And ſo putting our horſes into a full careere, we hit each other vpon the head with our Launces: I think he felte my blowe, for my parte (I muſt confeſſe) I neuer receiued the like: but I thinke though my ſenſes were aſtoniſhed, my mind forced them to quicken themſelues, becauſe I had learned of him, how little fauour he is woont to ſhow in any matter of aduantage. And indeede hee was turned, and comming vpon me with his ſworde drawne, both our ſtaues hauing beene broken at that encounter. But I was ſo ready to anſwere him, that truely I knowe not who gaue the firſt blowe. But whoſoeuer gaue the firſt, was quickly ſeconded by the ſecond. And indeed (excellenteſt Ladie) I muſt ſay truly, for a time it was well fought betweene vs; he vndoubtedly being of ſingular valour, (I would to God, it were not abaſed by his too much loftineſſe) but as by the occaſion of the combate, winning and looſing ground, we chaunged places, his horſe happened to come vpon the point of the brokē ſpeare, which fallen to the ground chaunced to ſtand vpward ſo as it lighting vpon his hart, the horſe died. He driuen to diſmount, threatned, if I did not the like, to do as much for my horſe, as Fortune had done for his. But whether for that, or becauſe I would not be beholding to Fortune for any part of the victorie, I deſcended. So began our foote-fight in ſuch ſort that we were well entred to bloud of both ſides, when there comes by, that vnconſtant *Pamphilus*, whom I had deliuered (eaſie to be knowne, for he was bare faced) with a doſen armed men after him; but before him he had *Dido* (that Ladie, who had moſt ſharpely puniſhed him) riding vpon a palfery, he following her with moſt vnmanlike crueltie; beating her with wandes he had in his hande, ſhe crying for ſenſe of paine, or hope of ſuccour: which was ſo pittifull a ſight vnto me, that it mooued me to require *Anaxius* to deferre our combate, till an other day, and now to performe the duties of Knighthood in helping this diſtreſſed Ladie. But hee that diſdaines to obey any thing but his paſſion (which hee cals his minde) bad mee leaue of that thought; but when hee had killed mee, hee woulde then (perhaps) go too her ſuccour. But I well finding the fight would bee long betweene vs (longing in my hart too deliuer the poore *Dido*) giuing him ſo great a blowe, as ſomwhat ſtaied him, to terme it a right) I flatly ran away from him towarde my horſe, who trotting after the companie, in in mine armour I was put to ſome paine, but that vſe made mee nimble vnto it. But as I followed my horſe, *Anaxius* followed mee: but his prowde harte did ſo diſ

daine

daine that exerciſe, that I had quickly ouer-run him, and ouer-taken my horſe; being (I muſt confeſſe) aſhamed to ſee a number of country folks, who happened to paſſe thereby, who hallowed & howted after me as at the arranteſt coward, that euer ſhewed his ſhoulders to his enemie. But when I had leapt on my horſe (with ſuch ſpeedy agility, that they all cried, O ſee how feare giues him wings) I turned to *Anaxius*, & aloud promiſed him to returne thether again, as ſoone as I had relieued the iniuried Ladie. But he railing at me, with all the baſe wordes angry contempt could endite; I ſaid no more, but, *Anaxius*, aſſure thy ſelfe, I neither feare thy force, nor thy opinion. And ſo vſing no weapon of a Knight as at that time, but my ſpurres, I ranne in my knowledge after *Pamphilus*, but in all their conceipts from *Anaxius*, which as far as I could heare, I might well heare teſtified with ſuch laughters and games, that I was ſome few times moued to turne backe againe.

But the Ladies miſery ouer-balanced my reputation ſo that after her I went, and with ſix houres hard riding (through ſo wild places, as it was rather the cunning of my horſe ſometimes, then of my ſelfe, ſo rightly to hit the way) I ouergat them a little before night, neere to an old il-fauoured caſtle, the place where I perceiued they meant to performe their vnknightly errand. For there they began to ſtrip her of her clothes, when I came in among them, and running through the firſt with a launce, the iuſtneſſe of the cauſe ſo enhabled me againſt the reſt (falſe-harted in their owne wrong doing) that I had, in as ſhort time almoſt as I had bene fighting with onely *Anaxius*, deliuered her from thoſe iniurious wretches: moſt of whom carried newes to the other world, that amongſt men ſecret wronges are not alwaies left vnpuniſhed. As for *Pamphilus*, he hauing once ſeene, & (as it ſhould ſeeme) remembred me, euen from the beginning began to be in the rereward, and before they had left fighting, he was too far of to giue them thanks for their paines. But when I had deliuered to the Ladie a full libertie, both in effect, and in opinion, (for ſome time it was before ſhe coulde aſſure her ſelfe ſhee was out of their handes, who had layd ſo vehement apprehenſion of death vpon her) ſhe then tolde me, how as ſhee was returning toward her fathers, weakely accompanied (as too ſoone truſting to the falſhood of reconcilement) *Pamphilus* had ſet vpon her, and killing thoſe that that were with her, carried her ſelfe by ſuch force, and with ſuch manner as I had ſeene, to this place, where he meant in cruell and ſhamefull manner to kill her, in the ſight of her owne Father; to whom he had already ſent worde of it, that out of his caſtle windowe (for this caſtle, ſhe ſaide, was his) hee might haue the proſpect of his onely childes deſtruction, if my comming, whom (ſhe ſaide) he feared (as ſoone as hee knewe mee by the armour) had not warraunted her from that neere approching crueltie. I was glad I had done ſo good a deede for a Gentlewoman not vnhandſome, whome before I had in like ſorte helped. But the night beginning to perſwade ſome retiring place, the Gentlewoman, euen out of countenaunce before ſhe began her ſpeach, much after this manner inuited mee to lodge that night with her father.

Sir (ſaid ſhe) how much I owe you, can be but abaſed by wordes, ſince the life I haue, I holde it now the ſecond time of you: and therefore neede not offer ſeruice vnto you, but onely to remember you, that I am your ſeruaunt: and I would, my being ſo, might any way yeeld any ſmall contentment vnto you. Now onely I can but deſire you to harbour your ſelfe this night in this caſtle; becauſe the time requires it; and in truth this countrie is very daungerous for murthering

theeues,

theeues, to truſt a ſleeping life among them. And yet I muſt confeſſe, that as the loue I beare you makes me thus inuite you, ſo the ſame loue makes me aſhamed to bring you to a place, where you ſhalbe ſo (not ſpoken by ceremony but by truth) miſerably entertained. With that ſhe tolde me, that though ſhe ſpake of her father (whom ſhe named *Chremes*) ſhe would hide no truth from me, which was in ſumme, that as he was of all that region the man of greateſt poſſeſsions, and riches, ſo was he either by nature, or an euill receiued opinion, giuen to ſparing, in ſo vnmeaſurable ſorte, that he did not onelye barre him ſelfe from the delightfull, but almoſt from the neceſſarie vſe thereof; ſcarſely allowing him ſelfe fitte ſuſtenance of life, rather then he would ſpende of thoſe goods, for whoſe ſake onely he ſeemed to ioye in life. Which extreame dealing (deſcending from himſelfe vpon her) had driuen her to put her ſelfe with a great Lady of that countrie, by which occaſion ſhe had ſtumbled vpon ſuch miſchances, as were little for the honour either of her, or her familie. But ſo wiſe had he ſhewed himſelfe therein, as while he found his daughter maintained without his coſt, he was content to be deafe to any noiſe of infamie: which though it had wronged her much more then ſhe deſerued, yet ſhe could not denie, but ſhe was driuen therby to receaue more then decent fauours. She concluded, that there at leaſt I ſhould be free from iniuries, and ſhould be aſſured to her-wards to abound as much in the true cauſes of welcomes, as I ſhould finde want of the effects thereof.

I, who had acquainted my ſelfe to meaſure the delicacie of foode and reſt, by hunger and wearineſſe, at that time well ſtored of both, did not abide long entreatie; but went with her to the Caſtle: which I found of good ſtrength, hauing a great mote rounde about it; the worke of a noble Gentleman, of whoſe vnthriftie ſonne he had bought it. The bridge drawne vp, where we were faine to crie a good while before we coulde haue anſweare, and to diſpute a good while before anſweare would bee brought to acceptance. At length a willingneſſe, rather then a ioye to receaue his daughter, whome he had lately ſeene ſo neere death, and an opinion brought into his head by courſe, becauſe he heard himſelfe called a Father; rather then any kindneſſe that hee found in his owne harte, made him take vs in; for my part by that time growne ſo wearie of ſuch entertainement, that no regard of my ſelfe, but onely the importunitie of his daughter made me enter. Where I was met with this *Chremes*, a driueling old fellow, leane, ſhaking both of head and hands, alredie halfe earth, and yet then moſt greedie of Earth: who ſcarcely would giue me thankes for what I had done, for feare I ſuppoſe, that thankefulneſſe might haue an introduction of reward. But with a hollow voice, giuing me a falſe welcome, I might perceaue in his eye to his daughter, that it was hard to ſay, whether the diſpleaſure of her company did not ouer-way the pleaſure of her owne comming. But on he brought me, into ſo bare a houſe, that it was the picture of miſerable happineſſe, and rich beggerie (ſerued onely by a company of ruſticall villaines, full of ſweate and duſt, not one of them other, then a labourer) in ſumme (as he counted it) profitable drudgerie: and all preparations both for foode and lodging ſuch, as would make one deteſt nigardneſſe, it is ſo fluttiſh a vice. His talke of nothing but of his pouertie, for feare belike leſt I ſhould haue proued a young borrower. In ſumme, ſuch a man, as any enemy could not wiſh him worſe then to be himſelfe. But there that night bid I the burthen of being a tedious gueſt to a loathſome hoſt; ouer-hearing him ſometimes

times bitterlye warne his daughter of bringing ſuch coſtlye mates vnder his roofe: which ſhe grieuing at, deſired much to know my name, I thinke partlye of kindneſſe to remember who had done ſome-thing for her, and partlye becauſe ſhe aſſured her ſelfe I was ſuch a one as would make enen his miſer-minde contented, with what he had done. And accordingly ſhe demaunded my name, and eſtate, with ſuch earneſtneſſe, that I whom Loue had not as then ſo robbed me of my ſelfe, as to be another then I am, told her directly my name and condition: whereof ſhe was no more gladde then her father, as I might well perceaue by ſome ill fauoured cheerefulneſſe, which then firſt began to wrinckle it ſelfe in his face.

But the cauſes of their ioyes were farre different; for as the ſhepheard and the butcher both may looke vpon one ſheepe with pleaſing conceipts, but the ſhepheard with minde to profit himſelfe by preſeruing, the butcher with killing him: So ſhe reioyced to finde that mine own benefits had tyed me to be her friend, who was a Prince of ſuch greatneſſe, and louingly reioyced: but his ioye grew, (as I to my danger after perceiued) by the occaſion of the Queene *Artaxias* ſetting my head to ſale, for hauing ſlaine her brother *Tiridates*; which being the ſumme of an hundreth thouſand crownes (to whoſoeuer brought me aliue into her hands) that olde wretch, (who had ouer-liued all good nature) though he had lying idly by him much more then that, yet aboue all things louing money, for monies owne ſake determined to betray me, ſo well deſeruing of him for to haue that which he was determined neuer to vſe. And ſo knowing that the next morning I was reſolued to go to the place where I had left *Anaxius*, he ſent in all ſpeed to a Captaine of a Garriſon neere by; which though it belonged to the King of *Iberia*, (yet knowing the Captaines humor to delight ſo in riotous ſpending as he cared not how he came by the meanes to maintaine it) doubted not that to be halfe with him in the gaine, he would playe his quarters part in the treaſon. And therefore that night agreeing of the fitteſt places where they might ſurpriſe me the morning, the olde caitiffe was growne ſo ceremonious, as he would needs accompanie me ſome myles in my way; a ſufficient token to me, if Nature had made me apte to ſuſpect; ſince a churles curteſie rarely comes but either for gaine, or falſhood. But I ſuffered him to ſtumble into that point of good manner: to which purpoſe he came out with all his clownes, horſt vpon ſuch cart-iades, and ſo furniſhed, as in good faith I thought with my ſelfe, if that were thrift, I wiſht none of my freends or ſubiects euer to thriue. As for his daughter (the gentle *Dido*) ſhe would alſo (but in my conſcience with a farre better minde) prolong the time of farewell, as long as he.

And ſo we went on togither: he ſo old in wickednes, that he could looke me in the face, and freely talke with me, whoſe life he had alreadie contracted for: till comming into the falling of a way which ledde vs into a place, of each-ſide whereof men might eaſilye keepe themſelues vndiſcouered, I was encompaſſed ſodainly by a great troupe of enemies both of horſe and foote, who willed me to yeelde my ſelfe to the Queene *Artaxia*. But they could not haue vſed worſe eloquence to haue perſwaded my yeelding, then that; I knowing the little good will *Artaxia* bare me. And therefore making neceſſitie and iuſtice my beſt ſword and ſhielde, I vſed the other weapons I had as well as I could; I am ſure to the little eaſe of a good number, who truſting to their number more then to their valure,

valure,and valewing money higher then equitie, felt, that guiltleſneſſe is not alwayes with eaſe oppreſſed. As for *Chremes*, he withdrew himſelfe,yet ſo guilding his wicked conceipts with his hope of gaine,that he was content to be a beholder, how I ſhould be taken to make his pray.

But I was growne ſo wearie, that I ſupported my ſelfe more with anger then ſtrength, when the moſt excellent *Muſidorus* came to my ſuccour;who hauing followed my trace as well as he could, after he found I had left the fight with *Anaxius*, came to the niggards Caſtell, where he found all burnd and ſpoiled by the countrie people, who bare mortall hatred to that couetous man,and now tooke the time, when the caſtell was left almoſt without garde, to come in, and leaue monuments of their malice therein: which *Muſidorus* not ſtaying either to further, or impeache, came vpon the ſpurre after me (becauſe with one voice many tolde him, that if I were in his company,it was for no good meant vnto me) and in this extremitie found me. But when I ſaw that Coſen of mine,me thought my life was doubled, and where before I thought of a noble death,I now thought of a noble victorie. For who can feare that hath *Muſidorus* by him? who, what he did there for me, how many he killed, not ſtraunger for the number then for the ſtraunge blowes wherwith he ſent them to a wel-deſerued death,might well delight me to ſpeak off, but I ſhould ſo holde you too long in euery particular. But in trueth,there if euer,and euer,if euer any man,did *Muſidorus* ſhew himſelfe ſecond to none in able valour.

Yet what the vnmeaſurable exceſſe of their number woulde haue done in the ende I knowe not, but the triall thereof was cutte off by the chaunceable comming thither of the King of *Iberia*,that ſame father of the worthy *Plangus*, whom it hath pleaſed you ſometimes to mention: who, (not yeelding ouer to olde age his countrie delights,eſpecially of hauking) was at that time (following a Merline) brought to ſee this iniurie offred vnto vs: and hauing great numbers of Courtiers waiting vpon him,was ſtraight known by the ſouldiers that aſſaulted vs, to be their King,and ſo moſt of them with-drew themſelues.

He by his authoritie knowing of the Captaines owne conſtrained confeſſion what was the motiue of this miſchieuous practiſe; miſliking much ſuch violence ſhould be offred in his countrie to men of our ranke? but chiefelye diſdaining it ſhould be done in reſpect of his Niece,whom (I muſt confeſſe wrongfully) he hated,becauſe he interpreted that her brother and ſhe had maintained his ſonne *Plangus* againſt him, cauſed the Captaines head preſently to be ſtriken off, and the old bad *Chremes* to be hanged: though truely for my part,I earneſtly laboured for his life, becauſe I had eaten of his bread. But one thing was notable for a concluſion of his miſerable life,that neither the death of his daughter,who(alas poore Gentlewoman was by chaunce ſlaine among his clownes, while ſhe ouerboldelye for her weake ſex ſought to hold them from me,nor yet his own ſhamefull end was ſo much in his mouth as he was ledde to execution, as the loſſe of his goods, and burning of his houſe: which often,with more laughter then teares of the hearers, he made pittifull exclamations vpon.

This iuſtice thus done,and we deliuered,the King indeed in royall ſorte inuited vs to his Court,not farre thence: in all pointes entertaining vs ſo, as truelye I muſt euer acknowledge a beholdingnes vnto him:although the ſtreame of it fel out not to be ſo ſweet as the ſpring,For after ſome daies being there (curing our ſelues of

ſuch wounds as we had receiued, while I, cauſing diligent ſearch to be made of *Anaxius*, could learne thing, but that he was goneno out of the countrie, boaſting in euerye place how hehad made me run away) we were brought to receaue the fauour of acquaintance with this Queene *Andromana*, whom the Princeſſe *Pamela* did in ſo liuelye colours deſcribe the laſt day, as ſtill me thinkes the figure thereof poſſeſſeth mine eyes confirmed by the knowledge my ſelfe had.

And therefore I ſhall neede the leſſe to make you know what kinde of woman ſhe was; but this onely, that firſt with the raines of affection, and after with the very vſe ofdirecting, ſhe had made her ſelfe ſo abſolute a maiſter of her huſbands minde, that a while he would not, and after, he could not tell how to gouern without being gouerned by her: but finding an eaſe in not vnderſtanding, let looſe his thoughts wholy to pleaſure, entruſting to her the entire conduct of all his royall affaires. A thing that may luckely fall out to him that hath the bleſſing, to match with ſome Heroicall minded Lady. But in him it was neither guided by wiſdome, nor followed by Fortune, but therby was ſlipt inſenſiblie into ſuch an eſtate, that he liued at her vndiſcreete diſcretion: all his ſubiectes hauing by ſome yeares learned ſo to hope for good, and feare of harm, onely from her, that it ſhould haue needed a ſtronger vertue then his, to haue vnwound ſo deeply an entred vice. So that either not ſtriuing (becauſe he was contented) or contented (becauſe he would not ſtriue) he ſcarcely knew what was done in his owne chamber, but as it pleaſed her Inſtruments to frame the relation.

Now we being brought knowen vnto her (the time that we ſpent in curing ſome very dangerous wounds) after once we were acquainted, (and acquainted we were ſooner then our ſelues expected) ſhe continually almoſt haunted vs, till (and it was not long a dooing) we diſcouered a moſt violent bent of affection: and that ſo ſtrangely, that we might well ſee, an euill minde in authoritie, dooth not onely follow the ſway of the deſires already within it, but frames to it ſelfe new deſires, not before thought of. For, with equall ardour ſhe affected vs both: & ſo did her greatnes diſdaine ſhamefaſtnes, that ſhe was content to acknowledge it to both. For, (hauing many times torne the vaile of modeſtie) it ſeemed, for a laſt delight, that ſhe delighted in infamy: which often ſhe had vſed to her husbands ſhame, filling all mens eares (but his) with his reproch; while he hoodwinkt with kindenes) leſt of all men knew who ſtrake him. But her firſt degree was, by ſetting forth her beauties, (truely in nature not to be miſliked, but as much aduanced to the eye, as abaſed to the iudgement by art) thereby to bring vs (as willingly-caught fiſhes) to bite at her baite. And thereto had ſhe that ſcutchion of her deſires ſupported by certaine badly-diligent miniſters, who often cloyed our eares with her praiſes, and would needs teach vs a way of felicitie by ſeeking her fauour. But when ſhe found, that we were as deafe to thē as dumb to her; thē ſhe liſted no lōger ſtay in the ſuburbs of her fooliſh deſires, but directly entred vpon thē; making her ſelf an impudent ſuter, authorizing her ſelfe very much with making vs ſee that all fauor and power in that realm, ſo depēded vpon her, that now (being in her hands) we were ether to keep, or loſe our liberty, at her diſcretion; which yet a while ſhe ſo tempted, as that we might rather ſuſpect, thē ſhe threaten. But when our woundes grew ſo, as that they gaue vs leaue to trauell, and that ſhe found we were purpoſed to vſe all meanes we could to depart thence, ſhe (with more and more importunatenes) craued, which in all good maners was either of vs to be deſired, or not granted. Truely (moſt faire and euerye

way

way excellẽt Lady) you would haue wõdred to haue ſeen, how before vs ſhe would conſes the contention in her own mind between that louely (indeed moſt loucly e) broũnes of *Muſidorus* his face, & this colour of mine, which ſhe (in the deceiuable ſtile of affection) would intitle beautifull: how her eyes wandred like a glutton at a feaſt) from the one to the other; and how her words would begin half of the ſentẽce to *Muſidorus*, & end the other half to *Pyrocles*: not aſhamed (ſeeing the friendſhip betweene vs) to deſire either of vs to be a mediator to the other; as if we ſhould haue played one requeſt at Tennis between vs: and often wiſhing that ſhe might be the angle, where the lines of our friendſhip might meet; and be the knot which might tie our harts together. Which proceeding of hers I do the more largely ſet before you (moſt deare Lady) becauſe by the foile therof, you may ſee the noblenes of my deſire to you, and the warrantablenes of your fauour to me.

At that *Philoclea* ſmiled, with a little nod. But (ſaid *Pyrocles*) when ſhe perceiued no hope by ſuite to preuaile, then (perſwaded by the rage of affection, and encouraged by daring to doo any thing) ſhe founde meanes to haue vs accuſed to the King, as though we went about ſome practiſe to ouerthrowe him in his owne eſtate. Which becauſe of the ſtraunge ſucceſſes we had had in the Kingdomes of *Phrigia*, *Pontus* & *Galatia*) ſeemed not vnlikely to him, who (but ſkimming any thing that came before him) was diſciplined to leaue the through-handling of all, to his gentle wife: who foorthwith cauſed vs to be put in priſon, hauing (while we ſlept) depriued vs of our armes: a priſon, indeede iniurious, becauſe a priſon, but els well teſtifying affection becauſe in all reſpects as commodious, as a priſon might be: and indeede ſo placed, as ſhe might at all houres (not ſeene by many, though ſhe cared not much how many had ſeen her) come vnto vs. Then fell ſhe to fauſe her deſires with threatnings, ſo that we were in a great perplexitie, reſtrained to ſo vnworthie a bondage, and yet reſtrained by loue, which (I cannot tell how (in noble mindes, by a certain duety, claimes an anſwering. And how much that loue might moue vs, ſo much, and more that faultines of her minde remoued vs; her beauty being balanced by her ſhameleſnes. But that which did (as it were) tie vs in captiuitie, was, that to graunt, had ben wickedly iniurious to him, that had ſaued our liues: and to accuſe a Lady that loued vs, of her loue vnto vs, we eſteemed almoſt as diſhonorable: and but by one of thoſe waies we ſawe no likelyhood of going out of that place, where the words would be iniurious to your eares, which ſhould expres the manner of her ſuite: while yet many times earneſtnes died her cheekes with the colour of ſhamefaſtnes; and wanton languiſhing borrowed of her eyes the down-caſt looke of modeſtie. But we in the mean time farre from louing her, and often aſſuring her, that we would not ſo recompence her huſbandes ſauing of our liues; to ſuch a ridiculous degree of truſting her, ſhe had brought him, that ſhe cauſed him ſend vs worde, that vpon our liues, we ſhould doo whatſoeuer ſhe commaunded vs: good man, not knowing any other, but that all her pleaſures were directed to the preſeruation of his eſtate. But when that made vs rather pittie, then obey his folly, then fell ſhe to ſeruile entreating vs, as though force could haue bene the ſchoole of Loue, or that an honeſt courage would not rather ſtriue againſt, then yeeld to iniurie. All which yet could not make vs accuſe her, though it made vs almoſt pine away for ſpight, to looſe any of our time in ſo troubleſome an idleneſſe.

But while we were thus full of wearineſſe of what was paſt, and doubt of what

was to follow, Loue (that I thinke in the courſe of my life hath a ſpot ſometimes to poyſon me with roſes, ſometimes to heale me with wormewood) brought forth a remedy vnto vs: which though it helped me out of that diſtres, alas the cõcluſion was ſuch, as I muſt euer while I liue, think it worſe then a wracke, ſo to haue bene preſerued. This King by this Queene had a ſonne of tender age, but of great expectation, brought vp in the hope of themſelues, and already acceptation of the inconſtant people, as ſucceſſour of his fathers crowne: wherof he was as worthy, conſidering his partes, as vnworthie, in reſpect of the wrong was thereby done againſt the moſt noble *Plangus*: whoſe great deſertes now either forgotten, or vngratefully remembred, all men ſet their ſayles with the fauourable winde, which blewe on the fortune of this young Prince, perchaunce not in their harts, but ſurely not in their mouths, now giuing *Plangus* (who ſome yeares before was their only champion) the poore comfort of calamitie, pittie. This youth therefore accounted Prince of that region, by name *Palladius*, did with vehement affection loue a yong Ladye, brought vp in his fathers court, called *Zelmane*, daughter to that miſchieuouſlie vnhappie Prince *Plexirtus* (of whom already I haue, and ſometimes muſt make, but neuer honorable mention) left there by her father, becauſe of the intricate changeablenes of his eſtate; he by the mother ſide being halfe brother to this Queene *Andromana*, and therefore the willinger committing her to her care. But as Loue (alas) doth not alwaies reflect it ſelfe, ſo fell it out that this *Zelmane*, (though truely reaſon there was enough to loue *Palladius*) yet could not euer perſwade her harte to yeelde thereunto: with that paine to *Palladius*, as they feele, that feele an vnloued loue. Yet louing indeed, and therefore conſtant, hee vſed ſtill the interceſſion of diligence and faith, euer hoping, becauſe he would not put him ſelfe into that hell, to be hopeleſſe: vntill the time of our being come, and captiued there, brought foorth this ende, which truely deſerues of me a further degree of ſorrow then teares.

Such was therein my ill deſtinie, that this young Ladye *Zelmane* (like ſome vnwiſely liberall, that more delight to giue preſentes, then pay debtes) ſhe choſe (alas for the pittie) rather to beſtowe her loue (ſo much vndeſerued, as not deſired) vpon me, then to recompence him, whoſe loue (beſides many other thinges) might ſeeme (euen in the court of Honour) iuſtly to claime it of her. But ſo it was (alas that ſo it was) whereby it came to paſſe (that as nothing doth more naturally follow his cauſe, then care to preſerue, and benefite doth follow vnfained affection) ſhe felt with me, what I felt of my captiuitie, and ſtreight laboured to redreſſe my paine, which was her paine: which ſhe could do by no better meanes, then by vſing the helpe therein of *Palladius*: who (true Louer) conſidering what, and not why, in all her commaundements; and indeed ſhe concealing from him her affection (which ſhee intituled compaſſion,) immediatly obeyed to imploye his vttermoſt credite to relieue vs: which though as great, as a beloued ſon with a mother, faultye otherwiſe, but not hard-harted toward him, yet it could not preuaile to procure vs libertie. Wherefore he ſought to haue that by practiſe, which he could not by praier. And ſo being allowed often to viſite vs (for indeede our reſtraints were more, or leſſe, according as the ague of her paſſion was either in the fit or intermiſſion) he vſed the opportunitie of a fit time thus to deliuer vs.

The time of the marrying that Queene was euery year, by the extreme loue of her husband, and the ſeruiceable loue of the Courtiers, made notable by ſome pub-

like

like honours, which did (as it were) proclaime to the worlde, how deare shee was to that people. Among other, none was either more grateful to the beholders, or more noble in it selfe, then iusts, both with sword & launce, mainteined for a seuen-night together: wherein that Nation doth so excel, both for comelines and hablenes, that from neighbour-countries they ordinarilye come, some to striue, some to learne, some to behold.

This day it happened that diuers famous Knights came thither from the Court of *Helen*, Queene of *Corinth*, a Lady, whome fame at that time was so desirous to honor, that she borrowed all mens mouthes to ioyne with the sounde of her Trumpet. For as her beautie hath wonne the prize from all women, that stande in degree of comparison (for as for the two sisters of *Arcadia*, they are far beyond all conceipte of comparison) so hath her gouernment bene such as hath bene no lesse beautifull to mens iudgementes, then her beautie to the eiesight. For being brought by right of birth, a woman, a yong woman, a faire woman, to gouern a people, in nature mutinously proud, and alwaies before so vsed to hard gouernours, as they knew not how to obey without the sworde were drawne. Yet could she for some yeares, so carry her selfe among them, that they found cause in the delicacie of her sex, of admiration, not of contempt: & which was notable, euen in the time that many countries about her were full of wars (which for old grudges to *Corinth* were thought stil would conclude there) yet so handled she the matter, that the threatens euer smarted in the threatners; she vsing so strange, and yet so well-succeding a temper, that she made her people by peace, warlike; her courtiers by sports, learned; her Ladies by Loue, chast. For by cõtinuall martiall exercises without bloud, she made them perfect in that bloudy art. Her sportes were such as carried riches of Knowledge vpon the stream of Delight: and such the behauiour both of her selfe and her Ladies, as builded their chastitie not vpon waiwardnes, but choice of worthines: So as it seemed, that court to haue bene the mariage place of Loue & Vertue, and that her self was a *Diana* apparrelled in the garmẽts of *Venus*. And this which Fame only deliuered vnto me, (for yet I haue neuer seene her) I am the willinger to speake of to you, who (I know) know her better, being your neer neighbor, because you may see by her example (in her self wise, and of others beloued) that neither folly is the cause of vehement loue, nor reproch the effect. For neuer (I think) was there any woman, that with more vnremoueable determination gaue her selfe to the coũcell of loue, after she had once set before her minde the worthines of your cosin *Amphialus*; and yet is nether her wisedome doubted of, nor honor blemished. For (O God) what doth better become wisedome, then to discerne what is worthy the louing? what more agreable to goodnes, thẽ to loue it so discerned? and what to greatnes of hart, then to be constant in it once loued? But at that time, that loue of hers was not so publikely known, as the death of *Philoxenus* and her search of *Amphialus* hath made it: but then seemed to haue such leasure to send thither diuerse choise knights of her court, because they might bring her, at lest the knowledge, perchaũce the honor of, that triumph. Wherin so they behaued thẽselues as for three daies they carried the prize; which being come from so far a place to disgrace her seruaunts, *Palladius* (who himselfe had neuer vsed armes) perswaded the Queene *Andromana* to be content (for the honour sake of her court) to suffer vs two to haue our horse and armour, that he with vs might vndertake the recouerie of their lost honour: which she grãted; taking our oath to goe no further then her sonne, nor euer to abandon him.

him. Which ſhe did not more for ſauing him, then keeping vs: and yet not ſatiſfied with our oth, appointed a band of horſemen to haue eye, that we ſhould not go beyond appointed limits. We were willing to gratifie the young Prince, who (we ſaw) loued vs. And ſo the fourth day of that exerciſe, we came into the field: where (I remember) the manner was, that the forenoone they ſhould run at tilt, one after the other: the afternoone in a broad field, in manner of a battell, till either the ſtrangers, or that countrie Knights wan the field.

The firſt that ran was a braue Knight, whoſe deuiſe was to come in, all chayned with a Nymph leading him: his *Impreſa* was

Againſt him came forth an *Iberian*, whoſe manner of entring was, with Bagpipes in ſteed of trumpets; a ſhepheards boy before him for a Page, and by him a dozen apparelled like ſhepherds for the faſhion, though rich in ſtuffe, who caried his Launces, which though ſtrong to giue a launcely blow indeede, yet ſo were they couloured with hooks neere the mourn, that they pretilye repreſented ſhephooks. His own furniture was dreſt ouer with wooll, ſo enriched with Iewels artificially placed, that one would haue thought it a mariage betweene the loweſt and the higheſt. His *Impreſa* was a Sheepe marked with pitch, with this woord *Spotted to be knowne*. And becauſe I may tell you out his conceipt (though that were not done, till the running for that time was ended) before the Ladies departed from the windowes, among whom there was one (they ſay) that was the *Star*, whereby his courſe was onely directed. The Shepherds attending vpon *PHILISIDES* went among them, and ſang an eclogue; one of them anſwering another, while the other ſhepherds pulling out recorders (which poſſeſt the place of pipes) accorded their muſicke to the others voice. The Eclogue had great praiſe: I onely remember ſixe verſes, while hauing queſtioned one with the other, of their fellow-ſhepheards ſodaine growing a man of armes, and the cauſe of his ſo doing, they thus ſaid.

ME thought ſome ſtaues he miſt: if ſo, not much amiſſe:
For where he moſt would hit, he euer yet did miſſe.
Once ſaid he brake a croſſe; full well it ſo might be:
For neuer was there man more croſſely croſt then he.
But moſt cryed, O well broke: O foole full gaily bleſt:
Where failing is a ſhame, and breaking is his beſt.

Thus I haue digreſt, becauſe his maner liked me well: But when he began to run againſt *L Elius*, it had neere growne (though great loue had euer bene betwixt them) to a quarell. For *Philiſides* breaking his ſtaues with great commendation, *Lelius* (who was knowne to be ſecond to none in the perfection of that art) ranne euer ouer his head, but ſo finely to the skilfull eyes, that one might wel ſee he ſhewed more knowledge in miſſing, then others did in hitting. For with ſo gallant a grace his ſtaffe came ſwimming cloſe ouer the creſt of the Helmet as if he would repreſent the kiſſe, and not the ſtroke of *Mars*. But *Philiſides* was much moued with it, while he thought *Lelius* would ſhew a contempt of his youth: till *Lelius* (who therefore would ſatisfie him, becauſe he was his friend (made him know, that to ſuch bondage he was for ſo many courſes tyed by her, whoſe diſgraces to him were graced by her excellencye, and whoſe iniuries he could neuer otherwiſe returne, then honors.

But

But ſo by *Lelius* willing-miſſing was the oddes of the *Iberian* ſide, and continued ſo in the next by the excellent running of a Knight, though foſtred ſo by the *Muſes*, as many times the very ruſticke people left both their delights and profites to harken to his ſongs, yet could he ſo well performe all armed ſports, as if he had neuer had any other pen, then a Launce in his hand. He came in like a wilde man; but ſuch a wildenes, as ſhewed his eye-ſight had tamed him, full of withered leaues, which though they fell not, ſtill threatned falling. His *Impreſa* was, a mill-horſe ſtill bound to goe in one circle; with this word, *Data fata ſequutus*. But after him the *Corinthian* knights abſolutely preuailed, eſpecially a great noble man of *Corinth*, whoſe deuiſe was to come without any deuiſe, all in white like a new Knight, as indeede he was; but ſo new, as his newnes ſhamed moſt of the others long exerciſe. Then another from whoſe tent I remember a birde was made flie, With ſuch art to carry a written embaſſage among the Ladies, that one might ſay, If a liue bird, how ſo taught? if a dead bird, how ſo made? Then he, who hidden, man and horſe in a great figure liuely repreſenting the *Phœnix*: the fire tooke ſo artificially, as it conſumed the bird, and left him to riſe as it were, out of the aſhes thereof. Againſt whom was the fine froſen Knight, froſen in deſpaire; but his armor ſo naturallye repreſenting Ice, and all his furniture ſo liuely anſwering therto, as yet did I neuer ſee any thing that pleaſed me better.

But the delight of thoſe pleaſing ſightes, haue carried me too farre into an vnneceſſary diſcourſe. Let it then ſuffice (moſt excellent Ladye) that you know the *Corinthians* that morning in the exerciſe (as they had done the daies before) had the better; *Palladius* neither ſuffring vs, nor himſelf to take in hand the partie til the after noone; when we were to fight in troupes, not differing otherwiſe from earneſt, but that the ſharpeneſſe of the weapons was taken away. But in the triall *Palladius* (eſpecially led by *Muſidorus*, and ſomewhat aided by me) himſelfe truelye behauing him ſelfe nothing like a beginner, brought the honor to reſt it ſelfe that night on the *Iberian* ſide: and the next day, both morning, and after-noone being kept by our party, He (that ſawe the time fitte for the deliuerie he intended, called vnto vs to follow him; which we both bound by oth, and willing by good-will, obeyed: and ſo the gard not daring to interrupt vs (he commaunding paſſage) we went after him vpon the ſpur to a little houſe in a forreſt neere by: which he thought would be the fitteſt reſting place, till wee might goe further from his mothers fury, wherat he ſhas no leſſe angry, and aſhamed, then deſirous to obay *Zelmane*.

But his mother (as I learned ſince) vnderſtanding by the gard her ſonnes conuaying vs away (forgetting her greatnes, and reſining modeſtye to more quiet thoughts (flew out from her place, and cried to be accompanied, for ſhe her-ſelfe would follow vs. But what ſhe did (being rather with vehemencie of paſſion, then conduct of reaſon) made her ſtumble while ſhe ran, & by her own confuſion hinder her own deſires. For ſo impatiently ſhe commãded, as a good while no body knew what ſhe cõmanded; ſo as we had gotten ſo far the ſtart, as to be alredye paſt the confines of her kingdome before ſhe ouertook vs: and ouertake vs ſhe did in the Kingdome of *Bythinia*, not regarding ſhame, or dãger of hauing entred into anothers dominions: but (hauing with her about a threeſcore horſ-men) ſtreight cõmanded to take vs aliue, and not to regard her ſonnes threatening therin: which they attempted to doo, firſt by ſpeach, and then by force. But neither liking their eloquẽce, nor fearing their might, we eſteemed fewe ſwordes in a iuſt defence, able to reſiſt many

vniuſt

vniuſt aſſaulters. And ſo *Muſidorus* incredible valour (beating downe all lets) made both me, and *Palladius*, ſo good way, that we had little to doo to ouercome weake wrong.

And now had the victorie in effect without bloud, when *Palladius* (heated with the fight, and angrie with his mothers fault) ſo purſued our aſſaylers, that one of them (who as I heard ſince had before our comming bene a ſpeciall minion of *Andromanas*, and hated vs for hauing diſpoſſeſt him of her hart) taking him to be one of vs, with a traiterous blow ſlew his young Prince: who falling downe before our eyes, whom he ſpecially had deliuered, iudge (ſweeteſt Lady) whether anger might not be called iuſtice in ſuch a caſe: once, ſo it wrought in vs, that many of his ſubiects bodies we left there dead, to wait on him more faithfully to the other world.

All this while diſdaine, ſtrengthened by the furie of a furious loue, made *Andromana* ſtay to the laſt of the combat: and whē ſhe ſaw vs light down, to ſee what help we might doo to the helpleſſe *Palladius*, ſhe came running madly vnto vs, then no leſſe threatning, when ſhe had no more power to hurt. But when ſhe perceiued it was her onely ſonne that lay hurt, and that his hurt was ſo deadly, as that already his life had loſt the vſe of the reaſonable, and almoſt ſenſible part; then onely did misfortune lay his owne ouglineſſe vpon her fault, and make her ſee what ſhe had done, and to what ſhe was come: eſpeciallye, finding in vs rather deteſtation then pittie, (conſidering the loſſe of that young Prince) and reſolution preſentlye to departe, which ſtill ſhe laboured to ſtay. But depriued of all comfort, with eyes full of death, ſhe ranne to her ſonnes dagger, and before we were aware of it (who elſe would haue ſtayed it) ſtrake her ſelfe a mortall wound. But then her loue, though not her perſon, awaked pittie in vs, and I went to her, while *Muſidorus* laboured obout *Palladius*. But the wound was paſt the cure of a better ſurgeon then my ſelfe, ſo as I could but receaue ſome fewe of her dying words; which were curſings of her ill ſet affection, and wiſhing vnto me many croſſes and miſchaunces in my loue, when ſoeuer I ſhould loue, wherein I feare, and only feare that her praiers is from aboue granted. But the noiſe of this fight, and iſſue thereof being blazed by the countrye people to ſome noble-men there-abouts, they came thither, and finding the wrong offered vs, let vs go on our iourney, we hauing recōmended thoſe royall bodies vnto them to be conueied to the King of *Iberia*. With that *Philoclea*, ſeeing the teares ſtand in his eyes with remēbrance of *Palladius*, but much more of that which thervpon grew, ſhe would needs drink a kiſſe from thoſe eyes, and he ſucke another frō her lippes; wherat ſhe bluſhed, and yet kiſſed him again to hide her bluſhing, Which had almoſt brought *Pyrocles* into another diſcourſe, but that ſhe with ſo ſweete a rigor forbad him, that he durſt not rebell, though he found it a great warre, to keepe that peace, but was faine to goe on in his ſtorie: for ſo ſhe abſolutely bad him, and he durſt not know how to diſobey.

So (ſaid he) parting from that place before the Sunne had much abaſed himſelfe of his greateſt height, we ſawe ſitting vpon the drie ſandes) which yeelded at that time a verie hotte reflection) a faire Gentlewoman, whoſe geſture accuſed her of much ſorow, and euery way ſhewed ſhe cared not what paine ſhe put her body to, ſince the better parte (her minde) was laide vnder ſo much agonie: and ſo was ſhe dulled withall, that we could come ſo neare, as to heare her ſpeeches, and yet ſhe not perceiue the hearers of her lamentation. But wel we might vnderſtand her

at times

at times ſay. Thou doſt kill me with thy vnkinde falſhood: and, It greeues me not to die, but it greeues me that thou art the murtherer: neither doth mine own paine ſo much vexe me, as thy errour. For God knowes, it would not trouble me to be ſlain for thee, but much it torments me to be ſlaine by thee. Thou art vntrue, *Pamphilus*, thou art vntrue, and woe is me therefore. How oft didſt thou ſweare vnto me, that the Sunne ſhould looſe his light, and the rocks runne vp and downe like little kiddes, before thou wouldſt falſifie thy faith to me? Sunne therefore put out thy ſhining, and rockes runne madde for ſorrow, for *Pamphilus* is falſe. But alas, the Sun keepes his light, though thy faith be darckned; the rockes ſtand ſtill; though thou change like a wethercocke. O foole that I am, that thought I could graſpe water, and binde the winde. I might well haue knowen thee by others, but I would not; and rather wiſhed to learne poiſon by drinking it my ſelfe, while my loue helped thy words to deceiue me. Wel, yet I would thou hadſt made a better choiſe when thou didſt forſake thy vnfortunate *Leucippe*. But it is no matter, *Baccha* (thy new miſtres) wil reuenge my wrongs. But do not *Baccha*, let *Pamphilus* liue happy though I dye.

And much more to ſuch like phraſe ſhe ſpake, but that I (who had occaſion to know ſome-thing of that *Pamphilus*) ſtept to comfort her: and though I could not doo that, yet I gotte thus much knowledge of her, that this being the ſame *Leucippe*, to whome the vnconſtant *Pamphilus* had betrothed himſelfe, which had moued the other Ladies to ſuch indignation as I tolde you: neither her worthines (which in trueth was great) nor his owne ſuffering for her (which is woont to endeare affection) could fetter his ficklenes, but that before his mariage-daye appointed, he had taken to wife that *Baccha*, of whome ſhe complained; one, that in diuers places I had heard before blazed, as the moſt impudently vnchaſte woman of all *Aſia*; and withall, of ſuch an imperiouſnes therein, that ſhe would not ſtick to employe them (whome ſhe made vnhappie with her fauour) to drawe more companions of their follie: in the multitude of whome ſhe did no leſſe glorie, then a Captaine would doo, of being followed by braue Souldiers: waiwardly proud; and therefore bold, becauſe extreamely faultie: and yet hauing no good thing to redeeme both theſe, and other vnlouely parts, but a little beautie, diſgraced with wandring eyes, and vnwaied ſpeeches; yet had *Pamphilus* (for her) left *Leucippe*, and withal, left his faith: *Leucippe*, of whom one look (in a cleer iudgement) would haue bene more acceptable, then all her kindneſſes ſo prodigallie beſtowed. For my ſelfe, the remembrance of his cruell handling *Dido*, ioyned to this, ſtirred me to ſeeke ſome reuenge vpon him, but that I thought, it ſhould be a gayne to him to loſe his life, being ſo matched: and therefore (leauing him to be puniſhed by his owne election) we conueyed *Leucippe* to a houſe thereby, dedicated to *Veſtall* Nunnes, where ſhe reſolued to ſpend all her yeares (which her youth promiſed ſhould be many) in bewayling the wrong, and yet praying for the wrong doer.

But the next morning, we (hauing ſtriuen with the Sunnes earlines) were ſcarcely beyond the proſpect of the high turrets of that building, when there ouertoke vs a young Gentleman, for ſo he ſeemed to vs, but indeede (ſweete Ladie) it was the faire *Zelmane*, *Plexirtus* daughter; whom vnconſulting affection (vnfortunately borne to me-wardes) had made borrowe ſo much of her naturall modeſtie, as to leaue her more-decent rayments, and taking occaſion of *Andromanas* tumultuous purſuing vs, had apparelled her ſelfe like a page, with a pitifull crueltie cutting of her golden haire, leauing nothing, but the ſhort curles, to couer that noble heade,

but

but that ſhe ware vpon it a faire head-peece, a ſhielde at her back, and a launce in her hand, els diſarmed. Her apparell of white, wrought vpon with broken knots, her horſe, faire and luſtie, which ſhe rid ſo, as might ſhew a fearefull boldnes, daring to doo that, which ſhe knew that ſhe knew not how to doo: and the ſweetenes of her countenance did giue ſuch a grace to what ſhe did, that it did make hanſome the vnhanſomnes, and make the eye force the minde to beleeue, that there was a praiſe in that vnskilfulneſſe. But ſhe ſtraight approached me, and with fewe woords (which borrowed the help of her countenance to make themſelues vnderſtoode) ſhe deſired me to accept her into my ſeruice; telling me ſhe was a noblemans ſonne of *Iberia*, her name *Daiphantus*, who hauing ſeene what I had done in that court, had ſtolne from her father, to follow me. I enquired the particularities of the maner of *Andromanas* following me, which by her I vnderſtood, ſhe hiding nothing (but her ſexe) from me. And ſtill me thought I had ſeen that face, but the great alteration of her fortune, made her far diſtant from my memorie: but liking very well the yong Gentleman, (ſuch I tooke her to be) admitted this *Daiphantus* about me, who well ſhewed there is no ſeruice like his, that ſerues becauſe he loues. For though born of Princes bloud, brought vp with tẽdereſt education, vnapt to ſeruice (becauſe a woman) and full of thoughts (becauſe in a ſtrange eſtate;) yet Loue enioyned ſuch diligence, that no apprentiſe, no, no bondſlaue could euer be by feare more readie at all commaundementes, then that yong Princeſſe was. How often (alas) did her eyes ſay vnto me, that they loued? and yet, I not looking for ſuch a matter) had not my conceipt open, to vnderſtand them, how often would ſhe come creeping to me, betweene gladnes to be neere me, and feare to offend me? Truely I remember, that then I meruailed to ſee her receiue my commandements with ſighes, and yet do them with cheerefulnes: ſometimes anſwering me in ſuch riddles, as I then thought a childiſh inexperience: but ſince returning to my remẽbrance they haue come more cleere vnto my knowledge: and pardon me (onely deare Lady) that I vſe many words: for her affection to me deſerues of me an affectionate ſpeach.

But in ſuch ſort did ſhe ſerue me in that kingdom of *Bythinia*, for two moneths ſpace. In which time we brought to good end, a cruell warre long maintained betweene the king of *Bythinia* and his brother. For my excellent couſin, and I (diuiding our ſelues to either ſide) found meanes (after ſome triall we had made of our ſelues) to get ſuch credit with them, as we brought them to as great peace betweene themſelues, as loue towards vs, for hauing made the peace. Which done, we intended to returne through the Kingdome of *Galatia*, towarde *Thrace*, to eaſe the care of our father and mother, who (we were ſure) firſt with the ſhipwracke; and then with the other dangers we dayly paſt, ſhould haue little reſt in their thoughts till they ſaw vs.

But we were not entred into that kingdome, when by the noiſe of a great fight, we were guided to a pleaſant valey, which like one of thoſe Circuſſes, which in great cities ſome-where doth giue a pleaſant ſpectacle of running horſes; ſo of either ſide ſtretching it ſelfe in a narrow length was it hemd in by wooddy hilles; as if indeed Nature had meant therein to make a place for beholders. And there we behelde one of the cruelleſt fightes betweene two Knights, that euer hath adorned the moſt martiall ſtorie. So as I muſt confeſſe, a while we ſtood bewondred, another while delighted with the rare brauery therof; til ſeeing ſuch ſtreames of bloud, as threatned a drowning of life, we gallopped toward them to part them. But we were preuented by a doſen armed Knights, or rather villains, who vſing this time of their

extreame

extreame feebleneſſe, all together ſet vpon them. But common daunger brake off particular diſcord, ſo that (though with a dying weakenes) with a liuely courage they reſiſted, and by our help draue away, or ſlue thoſe murdering attempters: among whom we hapt to take aliue the principall. But going to diſarme thoſe two excellent Knights, we found with no leſſe wonder to vs, then aſtoniſhment to themſelues, that they were the two valiaunt, and indeede famous Brothers, *Tydeus* and *Telenor*; whoſe aduenture (as afterward we made that vngratious wretch confeſſe) had thus fallen out.

After the noble Prince *Leonatus* had by his fathers death ſucceeded in the kingdome of *Galatia*, he (forgetting all former iniuries) had receiued that naughtie *Plexirtus* into a ſtreight degree of fauour, his goodneſſe being as apt to be deceiued, as the others craft was to deceiue. Till by plaine proofe finding, that the vngratefull man went about to poyſon him, yet would not ſuffer his kindneſſe to be ouercome, not by iuſtice it ſelfe: but calling him to him, vſed words to this purpoſe. *Plexirtus* (ſaid he) this wickedneſſe is founde by thee. No good deedes of mine haue bene able to keepe it downe in thee. All men counſell me to take away thy life, likely to bring foorth nothing, but as daungerous, as wicked effects. But I cannot finde it in my harte, remembring what fathers ſonne thou art. But ſince it is the violence of ambition, which perchaunce puls thee from thine owne iudgement, I will ſee, whether the ſatisfying that, may quiet the ill working of thy ſpirites. Not farre hence is the great cittie of *Trebiſonde*; which, with the territorie about it, aunciently pertained vnto this crowne, now vniuſtly poſſeſſed, and as vniuſtly abuſed by thoſe, who haue neither title to holde it, nor vertue to rule it. To the conqueſt of that for thy ſelfe I will lende thee force, and giue thee my right. Go therefore, and with leſſe vnnaturalneſſe glut thy ambition there; and that done, if it be poſſible, learne vertue.

Plexirtus, mingling forſworne excuſes with falſe-meant promiſes, gladly embraced the offer: and haſtilie ſending backe for thoſe two Brothers (who at that time were with vs ſuccouring the gratious Queene *Erona*) by their vertue chiefly (if not onely) obteined the conqueſt of that goodly dominion. Which indeede done by them, gaue them ſuch an authoritie, that though he raigned, they in effect ruled, moſt men honouring them, becauſe they onely deſerued honour; and many, thinking therein to pleaſe *Plexirtus*, conſidering how much he was bound vnto them: while they likewiſe (with a certaine ſincere boldneſſe of ſelfe-warranting friendſhip) accepted all openly and plainely, thinking nothing ſhould euer by *Plexirtus* be thought too much in them, ſince all they were, was his.

But he (who by the rules of his own mind, could conſtrue no other end of mens doings, but ſelfe ſeking) ſodenly feared what they could doo; and as ſodainely ſuſpected, what they would doo, and as ſodainly hated them, as hauing both might, and minde to doo. But dreading their power, ſtanding ſo ſtrongly in their owne valour, and others affection, he durſt not take open way againſt them: and as hard it was to take a ſecrete, they being ſo continually followed by the beſt, and euery way hableſt of that region: and therefore vſed this diueliſh ſleight (which I will tell you) not doubting (moſt wicked man) to turne their owne friendſhip toward him to their owne deſtruction. He, (knowing that they well knew, there was no friendſhip betweene him and the new King of *Pontus*, neuer ſince he ſuccoured *Leonatus* and vs, to his ouerthrow) gaue them to vnderſtand that of late there had paſſed

ſecrete defiance betweene them, to meete priuately at a place apointed. Which though not ſo fit a thing for men of their greatnes, yet was his honour ſo engaged, as he could not go backe. Yet faining to find himſelfe weake by ſome counterfait infirmitie, the day drawing neere, he requeſted each of them to go in his ſtead; making either of thē ſweare, to keepe the matter ſecret, euen ech from other, deliuering the ſelfe ſame particularities to both, but that he told *Tydeus*, the King would meet him in a blew armour; and *Telenor*, that it was a black armour: and with wicked ſubtiltie (as if it had bene ſo apointed) cauſed *Tydeus* to take a black armour, and *Telenor* a blew; appointing them waies how to go, ſo as he knew they ſhould not meet, till they came to the place appointed, where each had promiſed to keepe ſilence, leſt the King ſhould diſcouer it was not *Plexirtus*: and there in a wait had he laied theſe murtherers, that who ouerliued the other, ſhould by them be diſpatched: he not daring truſt more then thoſe, with that enterpriſe, and yet thinking them too few, till themſelues by themſelues were weakened.

This we learned chiefly, by the chiefe of thoſe way-beaters, after the death of thoſe two worthie brothers, whoſe loue was no leſſe, then their valour: but well we might finde much thereof by their pitifull lamentation, when they knew their miſmeeting, and ſaw each other (in deſpite of the Surgerie we could doo vnto them) ſtriuing who ſhould runne faſteſt to the goale of death: each bewailing the other, and more dying in the other, then in himſelfe: curſing their owne hands for doing, and their breaſtes for not ſooner ſuffering: deteſting their vnfortunately-ſpent time in hauing ſerued ſo vngratefull a Tyraunt: and accuſing their folly in hauing beleeued, he could faithfully loue, who did not loue faithfulnes: wiſhing vs to take heed, how we placed our good will vpon any other ground, then proofe of vertue: ſince length of acquaintance, mutuall ſecrecies, nor height of benefits could binde a ſauage harte; no man being good to other, that is not good in himſelfe. Then (while any hope was) beſeeching vs to leaue the care of him that beſought, and onely looke to the other. But when they found by themſelues, and vs, no poſſibilitie, they deſired to be ioined; and ſo embracing and crauing that pardon each of other, which they denied to themſelues, they gaue vs a moſt ſorrowfull ſpectacle of their death; leauing few in the world behind them, their matches in any thing, if they had ſoone inough knowne the ground and limits of friendſhip. But with wofull hartes, we cauſed thoſe bodies to be conueyed to the next towne of *Bythinia*, where we learning thus much (as I haue tolde you) cauſed the wicked Hiſtorian to conclude his ſtory, with his owne well-deſerued death.

But then (I muſt tell you) I found ſuch wofull countenances in *Daiphantus*, that I could not but much maruaile (finding them cōtinew beyond the firſt aſſault of pittie) how the caſe of ſtrangers (for further I did not conceiue) could ſo deepely pearce. But the truth indeed is, that partly with the ſhame and ſorrow ſhe tooke of her fathers faultineſſe, partly with the feare, that the hate I conceiued againſt him, would vtterly diſgrace her in my opinion, whenſoeuer I ſhould know her, ſo vehemētly perplexed her, that her fayre colour decaied; and dayly, & haſtily grew into the very extreme working of ſorowfulnes: which oft I ſought to learne, and helpe. But ſhe, as fearefull as louing, ſtill concealed it; and ſo decaying ſtill more & more, in the excellencie of her faireneſſe, but that whatſoeuer weakeneſſe tooke away, pitie ſeemed to adde: yet ſtill ſhe forced her ſelfe to waite on me, with ſuch care and diligence, as might well ſhew had bene taught in no other ſchoole, but Loue.

While

While we returning againe to embarke our ſelues for *Greece*, vnderſtood that the mighty *Otanes* (brother to *Barzanes* ſlaine by *Muſidorus*, in the battaile of the ſix Princes) had entred vpon the kingdome of *Pontus*, partly vpon the pretences he had to the crowne, but principally, becauſe he would reuenge vpon him (whom he knew we loued) the loſſe of his brother: thincking (as indeede he had cauſe) that whereſoeuer we were, hearing of his extremitie, we would come to relieue him; in ſpite whereof he doubted not to preuaile, not onely vpon the confidence of his owne vertue and power, but eſpecially becauſe he had in his company two mighty *Giants*, ſonnes to a couple whom we ſlue in the ſame realme: they hauing bene abſent at their fathers death, and now returned, willingly entered into his ſeruice, hating (more then he) both vs, and that King of *Pontus*. We therfore with all ſpeede went thetherward, but by the way this fell out, which whenſoeuer I remember without ſorrow, I muſt forget withall, all humanitie.

Poore *Daiphantus* fell extreme ſick, yet would needs conquere the delicacie of her conſtitution, and force her ſelfe to waite on me: till one day going towarde *Pontus*, we met one, who in great haſt went ſeeking for *Tydeus* and *Telenor*, whoſe death as yet was not knowne vnto the meſſenger; who (being their ſeruaunt, and knowing how deerely they loued *Plexirtus*) brought them word, how ſince their departing, *Plexirtus* was in preſent daunger of a cruell death, if by the valiantneſſe of one of the beſt Knightes of the world, he were not reskewed: we enquired no further of the matter (being glad he ſhould now to his loſſe finde what an vnprofitable treaſon it had bene vnto him, to diſmember himſelfe of two ſuch friends) and ſo let the meſſenger part, not ſticking to make him know his maſters deſtruction, by the falſhood of *Plexirtus*.

But the griefe of that (finding a bodie alreadie brought to the laſt degree of weakeneſſe) ſo ouerwhelmed the little remnant of the ſpirits left in *Daiphantus*, that ſhe fell ſodainely into deadly ſoundings; neuer comming to her ſelfe, but that withall ſhe returned to make moſt pittifull lamentations; moſt ſtraunge vnto vs, becauſe we were farre from gheſſing the ground thereof. But finding her ſickneſſe ſuch, as began to print death in her eyes, we made all haſt poſſible to conuey her to the next towne: but before we could lay her on a bed, both we, and ſhe might find in herſelfe, that the harbingers of ouer-haſtie death, had prepared his lodging in that daintie body, which ſhe vndoubtedly feeling, with a weake chearefulnes, ſhewed comfort therein; and then deſiring vs both to come neere her, and that no bodie els might be preſent; with pale, and yet (euen in palenes) louely lips, Now or neuer, and neuer indeed, but now is it time for me (ſaid ſhe) to ſpeake: and I thanke death which giues me leaue to diſcouer that, the ſuppreſſing whereof perchance hath bene the ſharpeſt ſpur, that hath haſted my race to this end. Know then my Lords, and eſpecially you my Lord and maſter, *Pyrocles*, that your page *Daiphantus* is the vnfortunat *Zelmane*, who for your ſake cauſed my (as vnfortunate) louer, and coſen, *Palladius*, to leaue his fathers court, and conſequētly, both him and my Aunt his mother, to looſe their liues. For your ſake my ſelfe haue become, of a Princeſſe a Page: and for your ſake haue put off the apparell of a woman, and (if you iudge not more mercifully) the modeſtie. We were amazed at her ſpeach, and then had (as it were) new eies giuē vs to perceiue that which before had bene a preſent ſtrāger to our minds. For indeed, we forthwith knew it to be the face of *Zelmane*, whō before we had knowen in the court of *Iberia*. And ſorrow & pittie laying her

paine vpon me, I comforted her the beſt I could by the tendernes of good-will, pretending indeed better hope then I had of her recouery.

But ſhe that had inward ambaſſadors from the tyrant that ſhortly would oppreſſe her, No, my deere maſter (ſaid ſhe) I neither hope nor deſire to liue. I know you would neuer haue loued me (and with that word ſhe wept) nor, alas, had it bene reaſon you ſhould, conſidering manie wayes my vnworthines. It ſufficeth me that the ſtrange courſe I haue taken, ſhall to your remembrance, witneſſe my loue: and yet this breaking of my hart, before I would diſcouer my paine, will make you (I hope) thinke that I was not altogether vnmodeſt. Thinke of me ſo, deare Maſter, and that thought ſhall be my life: and with that, languiſhingly looking vpon me; And I pray you (ſaid ſhe) euen by theſe dying eies of mine (which are onely ſorrie to dye, becauſe they ſhall loſe your ſight) and by theſe pouled lockes of mine (which while they were long, were the ornament of my ſex, now in their ſhort curles, the teſtimonie of my ſeruitude) and by the ſeruice I haue done you (which God knowes hath beene full of loue) thinke of me after my death with kindnes, though ye cannot with loue. And whenſoeuer ye ſhall make any other Ladie happie with your well placed affection, if you tell her my folly, I pray you ſpeake of it, not with ſcorne, but with pittie. I aſſure you (deare Princeſſe of my life, for how could it be otherwiſe?) her words and her manner, with the liuely conſideration of her loue, ſo pearced me, that, though I had diuerſe griefes before, yet me thought I neuer felt till then, how much ſorow enfeebleth all reſolution. For I could not chuſe, but yeeld to the weakenes of abundant weeping; in trueth with ſuch griefe, that I could willingly at that time haue chaunged liues with her.

But when ſhe ſaw my teares, O God (ſaid ſhe) how largely am I recompenced for my loſſes? why then (ſaid ſhee) I may take boldneſſe to make ſome requeſts vnto you. I beſought her to doo, vowing the performance, though my life were the price thereof. She ſhewed great ioy: The firſt (ſaid ſhe) is this, that you will pardon my father the diſpleaſure you haue iuſtly conceiued againſt him, and for this once, ſuccour him out of the daunger wherein he is: I hope he will amend: and I pray you, whenſoeuer you remember him to be the faultie *Plexirtus*, remember withall that he is *Zelmanes* father. The ſecond is, that when you come once into *Greece*, you will take vnto your ſelfe this name (though vnlucky) of *Daiphantus*, and vouchſafe to be called by it: for ſo ſhall I be ſure, you ſhall haue cauſe to remember me: and let it pleaſe your noble couſin to be called *Palladius*, that I doo that right to that poore Prince, that his name yet may liue vpon the earth in ſo excellent a perſon: and ſo betwene you, I truſt ſometimes your vnluckie page ſhall be (perhaps with a ſigh) mencioned. Laſtly, let me be buried here obſcurely, not ſuffering my friends to know my fortune, till (whē you are ſafely returned to your own countrie) you cauſe my bones to be conueied thither, and laid (I beſeech you) in ſome place, where your ſelfe vouchſafe ſometimes to reſort. Alas, ſmall petitiōs for ſuch a ſuter; which yet ſhe ſo earneſtly craued, that I was faine to ſweare the accompliſhment. And then kiſſing me, and often deſiring me not to condemne her of lightneſſe, in mine armes ſhe deliuered her pure ſoule to the pureſt place: leauing me as full of agonie, as kindnes, pitie, and ſorow could make an honeſt hart. For I muſt confeſſe for true, that if my ſtarres had not wholy reſerued me for you, there els perhaps I might haue loued, and (which had bene moſt ſtrange) begun my loue after death: wherof let it be the leſſe maruaile, becauſe ſomewhat ſhe did reſemble you: though

as farre ſhort of your perfection, as her ſelfe dying, was of her ſelfe flouriſhing: yet ſomthing there was, which (when I ſaw a picture of yours) brought againe her figure into my remembrance, and made my hart as apt to receiue the wounde, as the power of your beauty with vnreſiſtable force to pearce.

But we in wofull (and yet priuat) manner burying her, performed her commandement: and then enquiring of her fathers eſtate, certainly learned that he was preſently to be ſuccoured, or by death to paſſe the neede of ſuccour. Therefore we determined to diuide our ſelues; I, according to my vowe, to helpe him, and *Muſidorus* toward the King of *Pontus*, who ſtood in no leſſe need then immediat ſuccour, & euen readie to depart one from the other, there came a meſſenger from him, who after ſome enquirie found vs, giuing vs to vnderſtand, that he truſting vpon vs two, had appointed the combat betweene him and vs, againſt *Otanes*, and the two *Gyants*. Now the day was ſo accorded, as it was impoſſible for me both to ſuccour *Plexirtus*, and be there, where my honour was not only ſo far engaged, but (by the ſtraunge working of vniuſt fortune) I was to leaue the ſtanding by *Muſidorus*, whom better then my ſelfe I loued, to go ſaue him whom for iuſt cauſes I hated. But my promiſe giuen, and giuen to *Zelmane*, & to *Zelmane* dying, preuailed more with me, then my friendſhip to *Muſidorus*: though certainely I may affirme, nothing had ſo great rule in my thoughts, as that. But my promiſe caried me the eaſier, becauſe *Muſidorus* himſelfe would not ſuffer me to breake it. And ſo with heauy mindes (more carefull each of others ſucceſſe, then of our owne) we parted; I toward the place, where I vnderſtood *Plexirtus* was priſoner to an auncient Lord, abſolutely gouerning a goodly Caſtle, with a large territory about it, whereof he acknowledged no other ſoueraigne, but himſelfe: whoſe hate to *Plexirtus*, grew for a kinſman of his, whom he malitiouſly had murdered, becauſe in the time that he raigned in *Galatia*, he foũd him apt to practiſe for the reſtoring of his vertuous brother *Leonatus*. This old Knight, ſtill thirſting for reuenge, vſed (as the way to it) a pollicie, which this occaſion I will tell you, prepared for him. *Plexirtus* in his youth had maried *Zelmanes* mother, who dying of that only child-birth, he a widdower, and not yet a King, haunted the Court of *Armenia*; where (as he was cunning to winne fauour) he obteined great good liking of *Artaxia*, which he purſued, till (being called home by his father) he falſly got his fathers kingdome; and then neglected his former loue: till throwen out of that (by our meanes) before he was deeply rooted in it, and by and by againe placed in *Trebiſonde*, vnderſtanding that *Artaxia* by her brothers death was become Queen of *Armenia*, he was hotter then euer, in that purſuit, which being vnderſtood by this olde Knight, he forged ſuch a letter, as might be written from *Artaxia*, entreating his preſent (but very priuate) repaire thether, giuing him faithfull promiſe of preſent mariage: a thing farre from her thought, hauing faithfully, and publiquely proteſted, that ſhe would neuer marrie any, but ſome ſuch Prince who would giue ſure proofe, that by his meanes we were deſtroyed. But he (no more wittie to frame, then blinde to iudge hopes) bit haſtely at the baite, and in priuate maner poaſted toward her, but by the way he was met by this Knight, far better accompanied, who quickly laid hold of him, and condemned him to death, cruell inough, if any thing may be both cruell and iuſt. For he cauſed him to be kept in a miſerable priſon, till a day appointed, at which time he would deliuer him to be deuoured by a mõſtrous beaſt of moſt vgly ſhape, armed like a *Rhinoceros*, as ſtrong as an Elephant, as fierce as a Lion, as nimble as a

Leopard, and as cruell as a Tigre: whom he hauing kept in a ſtrong place, from the firſt youth of it, now thought no fitter match, then ſuch a beaſtly monſter with a monſtrous Tyrant: proclaiming yet withall, that if any ſo well loued him, as to venture their liues againſt his beaſt, for him, if they ouercame, he ſhould be ſaued: not caring how many they were (ſuch confidence he had in that monſters ſtrength) but eſpecially hoping to entrappe thereby the great courages of *Tydeus* and *Telenor*, whom he no leſſe hated, becauſe they had bene principall inſtruments of the others power.

I dare ſay, if *Zelmane* had knowen what daunger I ſhould haue paſſed, ſhe would rather haue let her father periſh, then me to haue bidden that aduenture. But my word was paſt, and truely, the hardnes of the enterpriſe, was not ſo much a bitte, « as a ſpurre vnto me; knowing well, that the iorney of high honor lies not in plaine wayes. Therefore, going thether, and taking ſufficient ſecuritie, that *Plexirtus* ſhould be deliuered if I were victorious, I vndertooke the combatte: and (to make ſhort, excellent Ladie, and not to trouble your eares with recounting a terrible matter) ſo was my weakenes bleſſed from aboue, that without dangerous wounds I ſlew that monſter, which hundreds durſt not attempt: to ſo great admiration of many (who from a ſafe place might looke on) that there was order giuen, to haue the fight, both by ſculpture and picture, celebrated in moſt parts of *Aſia*. And the olde noble-man ſo well liked me, that he loued me; onely bewayling, my vertue had beene imployed to ſaue a worſe monſter then I killed: whom yet (according to faith giuen) he deliuered, and accompanied me to the kingdome of *Pontus*, whether I would needes in all ſpeede go, to ſee whether it were poſſible for me (if perchance the day had bene delaied) to come to the combat. But that (before I came) had bene thus finiſhed.

The vertuous *Leonatus* vnderſtanding two ſo good friends of his were to be in that danger, would perforce be one him ſelfe: where he did valiantly, and ſo did the King of *Pontus*. But the truth is, that both they being ſore hurt, the incomparable *Muſidorus* finiſhed the combat by the death of both the Giants, and the taking of *Otanes* priſoner. To whom as he gaue his life, ſo he gotte a noble friend: for ſo he gaue his word to be, and he is well knowen to thinke himſelfe greater in being ſubiect to that, then in the greatnes of his principalitie.

But thither (vnderſtanding of our being there) flocked great multitudes of many great perſons, and euen of Princes; eſpecially thoſe, whom we had made beholding vnto vs: as, the Kings of *Phrygia*, *Bythinia*, with thoſe two hurte, of *Pontus* and *Galatia*, and *Otanes* the priſoner, by *Muſidorus* ſet free; and thither came *Plexirtus* of *Trebiſonde*, and *Antiphilus*, then King of *Lycia*; with as many mo great Princes, drawen either by our reputation, or by willingnes to acknowledge themſelues obliged vnto vs, for what we had done for the others. So as in thoſe partes of the woild, I thinke, in many hundreds of yeares, there was not ſeene ſo royall an aſſemblie: where nothing was let paſſe to doo vs the higheſt honors, which ſuch perſons (who might commaund both purſes and inuentions) could perfourme. All from all ſides bringing vnto vs right toyall preſents (which we to auoide both vnkindnes, and importunitie, liberally receiued,) and not content therewith, would needes accept, as from vs, their crownes, and acknowledge to hold them of vs: with many other exceſſiue honors, which would not ſuffer the meaſure of this ſhort leiſure to deſcribe vnto you.

But

But we quickely aweary thereof, hasted to *Greece*-ward, led thither partly with the desire of our parents, but hastened principally, because I vnderstoode that *Anaxius* with open mouth of defamation had gone thither to seeke me, and was now come to *Peloponnesus* where from Court to Court he made enquyrie of me, doing yet himselfe so noble deedes, as might hap to aucthorize an ill opinion of me. We therefore suffred but short delayes, desiring to take this countrey in our way, so renowmed ouer the worlde, that no Prince coulde pretend height, nor bigger lowneſſe, to barre him from the sound thereof: renowmed indeede, not so much for the ancient prayses attributed thereunto, as for the hauing in it *Argalus* and *Amphialus* (two knights of such rare prowes, as we desired especially to know) and yet by farre, not so much for that, as without suffering of comparison for the beautie of you and your sister, which makes all indifferent iudges, that speake thereof, account this countrie as a temple of deities. But these causes indeed mouing vs to come by this land, wee embarked our selues in the next porte, whether all those Princes (sauing *Antiphilus*, who returned, as he pretended, not able to tarry longer from *Erona*) conueied vs. And there found we a ship most royally furnished by *Plexirtus*, who had made all thinges so proper (as well for our defence, as ease) that all the other Princes greatly commended him for it: who (seeming a quite altered man) had nothing but repentance in his eies, friendship in his gesture, and vertue in his mouth: so that we who had promised the sweete *Zelmane* to pardon him, now not onely forgaue, but began to fauour; perswading our selues with a youthfull credulitie, that pechance thinges were not so euill as wee tooke them and as it were desiring our owne memorie, that it might be so. But so were we licensed from those Princes, truely not without teares, especially of the vertuous *Leonatus*, who with the king of *Pontus*, would haue come with vs, but that we (in respect of the ones young wife, and both their new settled kingdomes) would not suffer it. Then would they haue sent whole fleetes to to guard vs: but we, that desired to passe secretely into *Greece*, made them leaue that motion, when they found that more ships, then one, would be displeasing vnto vs. But so committing our selues to the vncertaine discretion of the wind, we (then determining as soone as we came to *Greece*, to take the names of *Daiphantus* & *Palladius* as well for our owne promise to *Zelmane*, as because we desired to come vnknowne into *Greece*) left the *Asian* shore full of Princely persons, who euen vpon their knees recommended our safeties to the deuotion of their chiefe desires: among whome none had bene so officious (though I dare affirme, all quite contrarie to his vnfaithfulnes) as *Plexirtus*.

And So hauing sailed almost two daies, looking for nothing but when we might looke vpon the land, a graue man (whom we had seene of great trust with *Plexirtus* and was sent as our principall guide) came vnto vs, and with a certaine kinde manner mixt with shame, & repentance, began to tel vs, that he had take such a loue vnto vs (cõsidering our youth & fame) that though he were a seruant & a seruant of such, trust about *Plexirtus*, as that he had committed vnto him euen those secretes of his hart, which abhorde all other knowledge; yet he rather chose to reueale at this time a most pernitious counsel; then by concealing it bring to ruin those, whom he could not choose but honour. So went he on, and tolde vs, that *Plexirtus* (in hope therby to haue *Artaxia*, endowed with the great Kingdome of *Armenia*, to his wife) had giuen him order when we were neere *Greece*, to finde some opportunitie to murder vs, bidding him to take vs a sleepe, because he had seene what we could do waking.

Now ſirs (ſaid he) I would rather a thouſand times looſe my life, then haue my remembrance (while I liued) poyſoned with ſuch a miſchiefe: and therefore if it were onely I, that knewe herein the Kings order, then ſhould my diſobedience be a warrant of your ſafetie. But to one more (ſaid hee) namely the Captaine of the ſhippe, *Plexirtus* hath opened ſo much touching the effect of murdering you, though I think laying the cauſe rather vpon old grudge, then his hope of *Artaxia*. And my ſelfe, (before the conſideration of your excellencies had drawn loue and pittie into mind imparted it to ſuch, as I thought fitteſt for ſuch a miſchiefe. Therefore, I wiſhe you to ſtand vpon your garde aſſuring you, that what I can doo for your ſafetie, you ſhal ſee (if it come to the puſhe) by me perfourmed. We thanked him, as the matter indeed deſerued, and from that time would no more diſarme our ſelues, nor the one ſleepe without his friendes eyes waked for him: ſo that it delaied the going forward of their bad enterprize, while they thought it rather chaunce, then prouidence, which made vs ſo behaue our ſelues.

But when we came within halfe a daies ſayling of the ſhore, ſo that they ſawe it was ſpeedily, or not at all to be done. Thē (& I remember it was about the firſt watch in the night) came the Captaine and whiſpered the Councellour in the eare: But he (as it ſhould ſeem) diſſwading him from it, the Captaine (who had bene a pyrate from his youth, and often blouded in it) with a lowde voice ſware, that if *Plexirtus* bad him, he would not ſticke to kill God him ſelfe. And therewith cald his mates, and in the Kings name willed them to take vs, aliue or dead; encouraging them with the ſpoile of vs, which he ſaid, (and indeed was true) would yeeld many exceeding rich iewels. But the Councellour according to his promiſe) commanded them they ſhould not commit ſuch a villany, proteſting that hee would ſtand betweene them and the Kings anger therein. Wherewith the Captaine enraged: Nay (ſaid he) then we muſt begin with this traitor him ſelfe: and therewith gaue him a ſore blow vpon the head, who honeſtly did the beſt he could to reuenge himſelfe.

But then we knew it time rather to encounter, then waite for miſchiefe. And ſo againſt the Captaine wee went, who ſtraight was enuironned with moſt parte of the Souldiers and Mariners. And yet the trueth is, there were ſome, whom either the authoritie of the councellour, doubt of the Kinges minde, or liking of vs, made drawe their ſwords of our ſide: ſo that quickely it grewe a moſt confuſed fight. For the narrowneſſe of the place, the darkeneſſe of the time, and the vncertainty in ſuch a tumult how to know friends from foes, made the rage of ſwordes rather guide, then be guided by their maiſters. For my couſin and mee, truely I thinke wee neuer perfourmed leſſe in any place, doing no other hurte, then the defence of our ſelues, and ſuccouring them who came for it, draue vs too: for not diſcerning perfectly, who were for, or againſt vs, we thought it leſſe euill to ſpare a foe, then ſpoile a freend. But from the higheſt to the loweſt parte of the ſhippe there was no place lefte, without cryes of murdring, and murdred perſons. The Captaine I hapt a while to fight withall, but was driuen to parte with him, by hearing the crie of the Councellour, who receiued a mortall wounde, miſtaken of one of his owne ſide. Some of the wiſer would call to parley, and wiſh peace, but while the words of peace were in their mouthes, ſome of their euill auditours gaue them death for their hire. So that no man almoſt could conceiue hope of liuing, but by being laſt aliue: and therefore euery one was willing to make him ſelfe roome, by diſpatching almoſt any other: ſo that the great number in the ſhip

was reduced to exceeding few, whē of thoſe few the moſt part weary of thoſe troubles leapt into the boate, which was faſt to the ſhip: but while they that were firſt, were cutting of the rope that tied it, others came leaping in, ſo diſorderly, that they drowned both the boate, and themſelues.

But while euen in that little remnant (like the children of *Cadmus*) we continued ſtill to ſlay one an other, a fire, which (whether by the deſperate malice of ſome, or intention to ſeparate, or accidentally while all thinges were caſt vp and downe) it ſhould ſeeme had taken a good while before, but neuer heeded of vs, (who onely thought to preſerue, or reuenge) now violently burſt out in many places, and began to maiſter the principall partes of the ſhip. Then neceſſitie made vs ſee, that, a common enimy ſets at one a ciuill warre: for that little all we were (as if wee had bene waged by one man to quench a fire) ſtreight went to reſiſt that furious enimie by all art and labour: but it was to late, for already it did embrace and deuoure from the ſterne, to the waſt of the ſhip: ſo as labouring in vaine, we were driuen to get vp to the prowe of the ſhip, by the worke of nature ſeeking to preſerue life, as long as we could: while truely it was a ſtraunge and ougly ſight, to ſee ſo huge a fire, as it quickly grew to be, in the Sea, and in the night, as if it had come to light vs to death. And by and by it had burned off the maſte, which all this while had prowdly borne the ſayle (the winde, as might ſeeme, delighted to carrie fire & bloud in his mouth) but now it fell ouer boord, and the fire growing neerer vs, it was not onely terrible in reſpect of what we were to attend, but inſupportable through the heat of it.

So that we were conſtrained to bide it no longer, but diſarming and ſtripping our ſelues, and laying our ſelues vpon ſuch things, as we thought might help our ſwimming to the lande (too far for our owne ſtrength to beare vs) my couſin and I threw our ſelues into the Sea. But I had ſwomme a very little way, when I felt (by reaſon of a wound I had) that I ſhould not be able to bide the trauaile, and therefore ſeeing the maſte (whoſe tackling had bene burnt of) flote cleare from the ſhip, I ſwāme vnto it, and getting on it, I found mine owne ſworde, which by chaunce, when I threw it away (caught by a peece of canuas) had honge to the maſte. I was glad, becauſe I loued it well; but gladder, when I ſaw at the other end, the Captaine of the ſhip and of all this miſchiefe; who hauing a long pike, belike had borne himſelfe vp with that, till he had ſet him ſelfe vpon the maſt. But when I perceiued him. Villaine (ſaid I) dooſt thou thinke to ouerliue ſo many honeſt men, whom thy falſehood hath brought to deſtruction? with that beſtriding the maſt, I gat by little and little towardes him, after ſuch a manner as boies are wont (if euer you ſaw that ſport) when they ride the wild mare. And he perceiuing my intention, like a fellow that had much more courage then honeſtie, ſet him ſelfe to reſiſt. But I had in ſhort ſpace gotten within him, and (giuing him a ſound blowe) ſent him to feede fiſhes. But there my ſelfe remainde, vntill by pyrates I was taken vp, & among them againe taken priſoner, and brought into *Laconia*.

But what (ſaid *Philoclea*) became of your couſin *Muſidorus*? Loſt ſaide *Pyrocles*. Ah my *Pyrocles*, ſaid *Philoclea*, I am glad I haue taken you. I perceiue you louers doo not alwaies ſay truely: as though I knew not your couſin *Dorus*, the ſheepeheard? Life of my deſires (ſaid *Pyrocles*) what is mine, euen to my ſoule is yours but the ſecret of my friend is not mine. But if you know ſo much, then I may truely ſay, he is loſt, ſince he is no more his owne. But I perceiue, your noble ſiſter and you are great friends, and well doth it become you ſo to be. But go forward ſaide *Pyrocles*, I long

to

to heare out till your meeting me: for there to me-ward is the beſt part of your ſtorie. Ah ſweet *Philoclea* (ſaid *Pyrocles*) do you thinke I can thinke ſo precious leyſure as this well ſpent in talking. Are your eyes a fit booke (thinke you) to reade a tale vpon? Is my loue quiet inough to be an hiſtorian? Deare Princeſſe, be gracious vnto me. And then he faine would haue remembred to haue forgot himſelfe. But ſhe, with a ſweetly diſobeying grace, deſired him that her deſire (once for euer) might ſerue, that no ſpote might diſgrace that loue which ſhortly ſhe hoped ſhould be to the world warrantable. Faine he would not haue heard, till ſhee threatned anger. And then the poore louer durſt not, becauſe he durſt not. Nay I pray thee, deare *Pyrocles* (ſaid ſhe) let me haue my ſtory. Sweet Princeſſe (ſaid he) giue my thoughts a little reſpite: and if it pleaſe you, ſince this time muſt ſo bee ſpoiled, yet it ſhall ſuffer the leſſe harme, if you vouchſafe to beſtow your voice, and let mee know, how the good Queene *Erona* was betraied into ſuch danger, and why *Plangus* ſought me. For indeede, I ſhould pitie greatly any miſchance fallen to that Princeſſe. I will, ſaid *Philoclea* ſmiling, ſo you giue me your worde, your handes ſhall be quiet auditours. They ſhall, ſaid he, becauſe ſubiect. Then began ſhee to ſpeake, but with ſo prettie and delightfull a maieſtie, when ſhe ſet her countenaunce to tell the matter, that *Pyrocles* could not chuſe but rebell ſo far, as to kiſſe her. She would haue puld her head away, and ſpeake, but while ſhe ſpake he kiſt, & it ſeemed he fedde vpon her words: but ſhe gate away. How will you haue your diſcourſe (ſaid ſhe) without you let my lips alone? Hee yeelded and tooke her hand. On this (ſaide hee) will I reuenge my wrong: and ſo began to make much of that hand, when her tale, & his delight were interrupted by *Miſo*: who taking her time, while *Baſilius* backe was turned, came vnto them: and tolde *Philoclea*, ſhe deſerued ſhe knew what, for leauing her mother, being euill at eaſe, to keepe companie with ſtraungers. But *Philoclea* telling her, that ſhe was there by her fathers commandement, ſhe went away muttering, that though her back, & her ſhoulders, & her necke were broken, ye tas long as her tongue would wagge, it ſhould do her errand to her mother. And ſo went vp to *Gynecia*, who was at that time miſerably vexed with this manner of dreame. It ſeemed vnto her to bee in a place full of thornes, which ſo moleſted her, as ſhe could neither abide ſtanding ſtill, nor tread ſafely going forward. In this caſe ſhe thought *Zelmane*, being vpon a faire hill, delightfull to the eye, and eaſie in apparance, called her thither: whither with much anguiſh being come, *Zelmane* was vaniſhed, and ſhe found nothing but a dead bodie like vnto her husband, which ſeeming at the firſt with a ſtrange ſmel to infect her, as ſhe was redie likewiſe within a while to die, the dead bodie ſhe thought tooke her in his armes, and ſaid, *Gynecia*, leaue all; for here is thy onely reſt.

With that ſhe awaked, crying very loud, *Zelmane*, *Zelmane*. But remembring her ſelfe, and ſeeing *Baſilius* by, (her guiltie conſcience more ſuſpecting, then being ſuſpected ſhe turned her cal, and called for *Philoclea*. *Miſo* forthwith like a valiant ſhrew, (looking at *Baſilius*, as though ſhe would ſpeake though ſhe died for it) tolde *Gynecia*, that her daughter had bene a whole houre togither in ſecrete talke with *Zelmane*: And (ſayes ſhe) for my part I coulde not be heard (your daughters are brought vp in ſuch awe) though I tolde her of your pleaſure ſufficiently. *Gynecia*, as if ſhee had heard her laſt doome pronounced againſt her, with a ſide-looke & chaunged countenance, O my Lorde (ſaid ſhe) what meane you to ſuffer theſe yong folkes together *Baſilius* (that aymed nothing at the marke of her ſuſpition) ſmilingly tooke her in his armes, ſweete wife (ſaid he) I thanke you for your care of your childe: but

they

they muſt be youthes of other mettall, then *Zelmane*, that can endaunger her. O but; cryed *Gynecia*, and therewith ſhe ſtayed: for then indeede ſhe did ſuffer a right conflict, betwixt the force of loue, and rage of iealouſie. Manie times was ſhe about to ſatiſfie the ſpite of her minde, and tell *Baſilius*, how ſhe knewe *Zelmane* to bee farre otherwiſe then the outwarde appearance. But thoſe many times were all put backe by the manifolde obiections of her vehement loue. Faine ſhee would haue barde her daughters happe, but loth ſhe was to cut off her owne hope. But now, as if her life had bene ſet vppon a wager of quicke ryſing, as weake as ſhee was, ſhee gat vp; though *Baſilius*, (with a kindneſſe flowing onely from the fountaine of vnkindneſſe, being indeed deſirous to winne his daughter as much time as might bee) was loth to ſuffer it, ſwearing hee ſawe ſickeneſſe in her face, and therefore was loath ſhee ſhould aduenture the ayre.

But the great and wretched Ladie *Gynecia*, poſſeſſed with thoſe deuils of Loue and Iealouſie, did rid herſelfe from her tedious husbande: and taking no body with her going toward them; O Iealouſie (ſaid ſhe) the phrenſie of wiſe folkes, the well-wiſhing ſpite, and vnkinde carefulneſſe, the ſelfe-puniſhment for others fault, and ſelfe-miſerie in others happineſſe, the couſin of enuie, daughter of loue, and mother of hate, how couldeſt thou ſo quietly get thee a ſeate in the vnquiet hart of *Gynecia*, *Gynecia* (ſaid ſhe ſighing) thought wiſe, and once vertuous? Alas it is thy breeders power which plantes thee there: it is the flaming agonie of affection, that works the chilling acceſſe of thy feuer, in ſuch ſort, that nature giues place; the growing of my daughter ſeemes the decay of my ſelfe; the bleſſings of a mother turne to the curſes of a competitor; and the faire face of *Philoclea*, appeares more horrible in my ſight, then the image of death. Then remembred ſhe this ſong, which ſhe thought tooke a right meaſure of her preſent minde,

VVIth two ſtrange fires of equall heate poſſeſt,
The one of Loue, the other Iealouſie,
Both ſtill do worke, in neither finde I reſt:
For both, alas, their ſtrengthes together tie:
The one aloft doth holde, the other hie.
Loue wakes the the iealous eye leaſt thence it moues:
The iealous eye, the more it lookes, it loues.

Theſe fires increaſe: in theſe I dayly burne:
They feede on me, and with my wings do flie:
My louely ioyes to dolefull aſhes turne:
Their flames mount vp, my powers proſtrate lie:
They liue in force. I quite conſumed die.
One wonder yet farre paſſeth my conceate:
The fuell ſmall: how be the fires ſo great?

But her vnleaſured thoughtes ran not ouer the ten firſt wordes; but going with a pace, not ſo much to faſt for her bodie, as ſlowe for her minde, ſhee found them together, who after *Miſos* departure, had left their tale, and determined what to ſay to *Baſilius*. But full abaſhed was poore *Philoclea*, (whoſe conſcience now began to know cauſe of bluſhing) for firſt ſalutation, receyuing an eye from her mother, full of the

ſame

ſame diſdainefull ſcorne, which *Pallas* ſhewed to poore *Arachne*, that durſt contend with her for the prize of well weauing: yet did the force of loue ſo much rule her, that though for *Zelmanes* ſake ſhe did deteſt her, yet for *Zelmanes* ſake ſhee vſed no harder words to her, then to bid her go home, and accompany her ſolitarie father.

Then began ſhe to diſplay to *Zelmane* the ſtorehouſe of her deadly deſires, when ſodainly the confuſed rumor of a mutinous multitude gaue iuſt occaſion to *Zelmane* to breake of any ſuch conference, (for well ſhee found, they were not friendly voices they heard) and to retire with as much diligence as conueniently they could towards the lodge. Yet before they coulde winne the lodge by twentie paces, they were ouertaken by an vnruly ſort of clownes, and other rebels, which like a violent floud, were caried, they themſelues knewe not whether. But aſſoone as they came within perfect diſcerning theſe Ladies, like enraged beaſtes, without reſpect of their eſtates, or pitie of their ſexe, they began too runne againſt them, as right villaines, thinking abilitie to doo hurt, to be a great aduancement: yet ſo many as they were, ſo many almoſt were their mindes, all knitte together only in madnes. Some cried, Take; ſome, Kill; ſome, Saue: but euen they that cried ſaue, ran for companie with them that meant to kill. Euerie one commaunded, none obeyed, he onely ſeemed chiefe Captaine, that was moſt ragefull.

Zelmane (whoſe vertuous courage was euer awake) drew out her ſword, which vpon thoſe il-armed churls giuing as many wounds as blowes and as many deathes almoſt as wounds (lightning courage, and thundering ſmart vpon them) kept them at a bay, while the two Ladies got themſelues into the lodge: out of the which, *Baſilius* (hauing put on an armour long vntried) came to proue his authoritie among his ſubiects, or at leſt, to aduenture his life with his deare miſtreſſe, to whō he brought a ſhield, while the Ladies tremblingly attēded the iſſue of this dangerous aduenture. But *Zelmane* made them perceiue the ods betweene an Eagle and a Kight, with ſuch a nimble ſtayednes, and ſuch an aſſured nimblenes, that while one was running backe feare, his fellow had her ſword in his guts.

And by and by was both her harte and helpe well encreaſed by the comming of *Dorus*, who hauing beene making of hurdles for his maſters ſheepe, hearde the horrible cries of this madde multitude; and hauing ſtreight repreſented before the eies of his carefull loue, the perill wherein the ſoule of his ſoule might bee, hee went to *Pamelas* lodge, but found her in a caue hard by, with *Mopſa* and *Dametas*, who at that time would not haue opened the entrie to his father. And therefore leauing them there (as in a place ſafe, both for being ſtrong, and vnknowen) he ranne as the noiſe guyded him. But when hee ſawe his friende in ſuch danger among them, anger and contempt (aſking no counſell but of courage) made him runne among them, with no other weapon but his ſheephooke, and with that ouerthrowing one of the villaines, tooke away a two-hand ſword from him, and withall, helpt him from euer being aſhamed of looſing it. Then lifting vp his braue heade, and fiaſhing terror into their faces, he made armes and legs goe complaine to the earth, how euill their maiſters had kept them. Yet the multitude ſtill growing, and the verie killing wearying them (fearing, leſt in long fight they ſhould bee conquered with conquering) they drew back toward the lodge; but drew back in ſuch ſort, that ſtill their terror went forwarde: like a valiant maſtiffe, whom when his maſter pulles backe by the taile from the beare (with whom he hath alreadie interchanged a hatefull imbracement) though his pace be backwarde, his geſture is foreward, his teeth

and

and eyes threatning more in the retiring, then they did in the aduancing: ſo guided they themſelues homeward, neuer ſtepping ſteppe backward, but that they proued themſelues maſters of the ground where they ſtept.

Yet among the rebels there was a dapper fellowe, a tayler by occupation, who fetching his courage onelie from their going back, began to bow his knees, and very fencer-like to draw neere to *Zelmane*. But as he came within her diſtance, turning his ſwerd very nicely about his crown, *Baſilius*, with a ſide blow, ſtrake off his noſe. He (being a ſuiter to a ſeimſters daughter, and therefore not a little grieued for ſuch a diſgrace) ſtouped downe, becauſe he had hard, that if it were freſh put to, it would cleaue on againe. But as his hand was on the ground to bring his noſe to his head, *Zelmane* with a blow, ſent his head to his noſe. That ſaw a butcher, a butcherlie chuffe indeed (who that day was ſworn brother to him in a cup of wine) and lifted vp a great leauer, calling *Zelmane* all the vile names of a butcherly eloquence. But ſhe (letting ſlippe the blowe of the leauer) hitte him ſo ſurely vpon the ſide of his face, that ſhe left nothing but the nether iawe, where the tongue ſtill wagged, as willing to ſay more, if his maſters remembrance had ſerued. O (ſaid a miller that was halfe dronke) ſee the lucke of a good fellow, and with that word, ran with a pitchforke at *Dorus*: but the nimblenes of the wine caried his head ſo faſt, that it made it ouer-runne his feet, ſo that he fell withall, iuſt betwene the legs of *Dorus*: who ſetting his foote on his neck (though he offered two milche kine, and foure fat hogs for his life) thruſt his ſword quite through, from one eare to the other; which toke it very vnkindlie, to feele ſuch newes before they heard of them, in ſtead of hearing, to be put to ſuch feeling. But *Dorus* (leauing the miller to vomit his ſoule out in wine and bloud) with his two-hand ſword ſtrake off another quite by the waſte, who the night before had dreamed he was growen a couple, and (interpreting it that he ſhould be maried) had bragd of his dreame that morning among his neighbors. But that blow aſtoniſhed quite a poore painter, who ſtood by with a pike in his hands. This painter was to counterfette the skirmiſh betwene the *Centaures* and *Lapithes*, and had bene very deſirous to ſee ſome notable wounds, to be able the more liuely to expreſſe them; and this morning (being caried by the ſtreame of this companie) the fooliſh felow was euen delighted to ſee the effect of blowes. But this laſt (hapning neere him) ſo amazed him, that he ſtood ſtock ſtill, while *Dorus* (with a turne of his ſword) ſtrake off both his hands. And ſo the painter returned, well skilled in wounds, but with neuer a hand to performe his skill.

In this manner they recouered the lodge, & gaue the rebels a face of wood of the outſide. But they then (though no more furious, yet more couragious whē they ſaw no reſiſter) went about with pickaxe to the wall, & fire to the gate, to get themſelues entrance. Then did the two Ladies mixe feare with loue, eſpecially *Philoclea*, who euer caught hold of *Zelmane*, ſo (by the follie of loue) hindering the ſuccour which ſhe deſired. But *Zelmane* ſeeing no way of defence, nor time to deliberate (the number of theſe villaines ſtill encreaſing, and their madneſſe ſtill encreaſing with their number) thought it onely the meanes to goe beyond their expectation with an vnuſed boldeneſſe, and with danger to auoide danger: and therefore opened againe the gate, and (*Dorus* and *Baſilius* ſtanding redie for her defence) ſhe iſſued againe among them. The blowes ſhe had dealt before (though all in generall were haſtie) made each of them in particular take breath, before they brought them ſodainly ouer-neere her, ſo that ſhe had time to get vp to the iudgement-ſeate

of the Prince, which (according to the guiſe of that countrie) was before the court gate. There ſhe pauſed a while, making ſigne with her hand vnto them, and withall, ſpeaking aloud, that ſhe had ſomething to ſay vnto them, that would pleaſe them. But ſhe was anſwered awhile with nothing but ſhouts and cries; and ſome beginning to throw ſtones at her, not daring to approach her. But at length, a yong farmer (who might do moſt among the countrie ſort, and was caught in a little affection towardes *Zelmane*) hoping by this kindeneſſe to haue ſome good of her, deſired them, if they were honeſt men, to heare the woman ſpeake. Fie fellowes, fie, (ſaid he) what will all the maides in our towne ſay, if ſo many tall men ſhall be afraide to heare a faire wench? I ſweare vnto you by no little ones, I had rather giue my teeme of oxen, then we ſhould ſhewe our ſelues ſo vnciuill wights. Beſides, I tell you true, I haue heard it of old men counted wiſdome, to heare much, and ſay little. His ſententious ſpeech ſo preuailed, that the moſt part began to liſten. Then ſhe, with ſuch efficacie of gracefulnes, and ſuch a quiet magnanimitie repreſented in her face in this vttermoſt perill, as the more the barbarous people looked, the more it fixed their looks vpon her, in this ſort began vnto them.

It is no ſmall comfort vnto me (ſaid ſhe) hauing to ſpeake ſomething vnto you for your owne behoofs, to finde that I haue to deale with ſuch a people, who ſhew indeed in themſelues the right nature of valure, which as it leaues no violence vnattempted, while the choller is nouriſhed with reſiſtance; ſo when the ſubiect of their wrath, doth of it ſelf vnloked-for offer it ſelfe into their hands, it makes them at leſt take a pauſe before they determine cruelty. Now then firſt (before I come to the principall matter) haue I to ſay vnto you; that your Prince *Baſilius* himſelfe in perſon is within this Lodge, and was one of the three, whom a few of you went about to fight withall: (and this ſhe ſaid, not doubting but they knew it well inough; but becauſe ſhe would haue them imagine, that the Prince might thinke that they did not know it) by him am I ſent vnto you, as from a Prince to his well approoued ſubiects, nay as from a father to beloued children, to know what it is that hath bred iuſt quarrell among you, or who they be that haue any way wronged you? what it is with which you are diſpleaſed, or of which you are deſirous? This he requires: and indeed (for he knowes your faithfulnes) he commaunds you preſently to ſet downe, and to chooſe among your ſelues ſome one, who may relate your griefes or demaundes vnto him.

This (being more then they hoped for from their Prince) aſſwaged well their furie, and many of them conſented (eſpecially the young farmer helping on, who meant to make one of the demaunds that he might haue *Zelmane* for his wife) but when they began to talke of their grieues, neuer Bees made ſuch a confuſed humming: the towne dwellers demanding putting downe of impoſts: the country fellowes laying out of commons: ſome would haue the Prince keepe his Court in one place, ſome in another. All cried out to haue new councellors: but whē they ſhould thinke of any new, they liked them as well as any other, that they could member, eſpecially they would haue the treſure ſo looked vnto, as that he ſhould uer need to take any more ſubſidies. At length they fell to direct contrarieties. the Artiſans, they would haue corne & wine ſet at a lower price, & bound to be pt ſo ſtill: the plowmē, vine-laborers, & farmers would none of that. The countri ē demanded that euery man might be free in the chief townes: that could not th Burgeſſes like of. The peaſants would haue al the Gentlemē deſtroied, the Citizen ſpecially ſuch

ſuch as Cookes, Barbers, and thoſe other that liued moſt on Gentlemen) would but haue them refourmed. And of ech ſide were like diuiſiõs, one neighbourhood beginning to finde fault with another. But no confuſion was greater then of particular mens likings and diſlikings: one diſpraiſing ſuch a one, whome another praiſed, and demanding ſuch a one to be puniſhed, whom the other would haue exalted. No leſſe ado was there about chooſing him, who ſhould be their ſpokes-man. The finer ſort of Burgeſſes, as Marchants, Prentiſes, and Clothworkers, becauſe of their riches, diſdaining the baſer occupations, and they becauſe of their number as much diſdaining them: all they ſcorning the countrimens ignorance, and the countrymen ſuſpecting as much their cunning: So that *Zelmane* (finding that their vnited rage was now growne, not only to a diuiding, but to a croſſing one of another, and that the miſlike growne among themſelues did well allay the heate againſt her) made tokens againe vnto them (as though ſhe tooke great care of their well doing, and were afraid of their falling out) that ſhe would ſpeake vnto them. They now growne iealous one of another (the ſtay hauing ingendred diuiſion, and diuiſion hauing manifeſted their weaknes) were willing inough to heare, the moſt part ſtriuing to ſhow themſelues willinger then their fellowes: which *Zelmane* (by the acquaintaunce ſhe had had with ſuch kinde of humors) ſoone perceiuing, with an angerles brauery, and an vnabaſhed mildnes, in this manner ſpake vnto them.

An vnuſed thing it is, and I think not heretofore ſeene, ô *Arcadians*, that a woman ſhould giue publike counſell to men, a ſtranger to the country people, and that laſtly in ſuch a preſence by a priuate perſon, the regall throne ſhould be poſſeſſed. But the ſtrangenes of your action makes that vſed for vertue, which your violent neceſſitie impoſeth. For certainely, a woman may well ſpeake to ſuch men, who haue forgotten all manlike gouernment: a ſtraunger may with reaſon inſtruct ſuch ſubiects, that neglect due points of ſubiection: and is it maruaile this place is entred into by another, ſince your owne Prince (after thirtie yeares gouernment) dare not ſhew his face vnto his faithfull people? Heare therefore ô *Arcadians*, and be aſhamed: againſt whom hath this zealous rage bene ſtirred? whether haue bene bent theſe mãful weapõs of yours? In this quiet harmles lodge there be harbourd no *Argians* your ancient enimies, nor *Laconians* your now feared neighbours. Here be nether hard landlords, nor biting vſurers. Here lodge none, but ſuch, as either you haue great cauſe to loue, or no cauſe to hate: here being none, beſides your Prince, Princeſſe, & their childrẽ, but my ſelf. Is it I then, ô *Arcadians*, againſt whom your anger is armed? Am I the mark of your vehemẽt quarell? if it be ſo, that innocencie ſhal not be a ſtop for furie; if it be ſo, that the law of hoſpitalitie (ſo long & holily obſerued amõg you) may not defend a ſtraunger fled to your armes for ſuccour: if in fine it be ſo, that ſo many valiaunt mens courages can be enflamed to the miſchiefe of one ſilly woman; I refuſe not to make my life a ſacrifice to your wrath. Exerciſe in me your indignation, ſo it go no further, I am content to pay the great fauours I haue receiued among you, with my life, not ill deſeruing I preſent it here vnto you, ô *Arcadians*, if that may ſatisfie you; rather then you (called ouer the world the wiſe and quiet *Arcadians*) ſhould be ſo vaine, as to attempt that alone, which all the reſt of your countrie will abhor; then you ſhould ſhew your ſelues ſo vngratefull, as to forget the fruite of ſo many yeares peaceable gouernment; or ſo vnnaturall, as not to haue with the holy name of your naturall Prince, any furie ouer-maiſtred. For ſuch a helliſh madnes (I know) did neuer enter into your harts, as to attempt any thing againſt his

perſon; which no ſucceſſor, though neuer ſo hatefull, will euer leaue (for his owne ſake) vnreuenged. Neither can your wonted valour be turned to ſuch a baſenes, as in ſtead of a Prince, deliuered vnto you by ſo many royall anceſtors, to take the tyrannous yoke of your fellow ſubiect, in whome the innate meanes will bring forth rauenous couetouſnes, and the newnes of his eſtate, ſuſpectfull cruelty. Imagine, what could your enimies more wiſh vnto you, then to ſee your owne eſtate with your owne handes vndermined? O what would your fore-fathers ſay, if they liued at this time, and ſaw their of-ſpring defacing ſuch an excellent principalitie, which they with much labour and bloud ſo wiſely haue eſtabliſht? Do you thinke them fooles, that ſaw you ſhould not enioy your vines, your cattell, no not your wiues and children, without gouernment; and that there could be no gouernment without a Magiſtrate, and no Magiſtrate without obedience, and no obedience where euery one vpon his owne priuate paſſion, may interprete the doings of the rulers? Let your wits make your preſent example a leſſon to you. What ſweetnes (in good faith) find you in your preſent condition? what choiſe of choiſe finde you, if you had loſt *Baſilius*? vnder whoſe enſigne would you go, if your enimies ſhould inuade you? If you cannot agree vpon one to ſpeake for you, how will you agree vpō one to fight for you? But with this feare of I cannot tell what, one is troubled, and with that paſſed wrong another is grieued. And I pray you did the Sunne euer bring you a fruitfull harueſt, but that it was more hote then pleaſant? Haue any of you children, that be not ſometimes cumberſome? Haue any of you fathers, that be not ſometime weeriſh? What, ſhall we curſe the Sonne, hate our childrē, or diſobey our fathers? But what need I vſe theſe words, ſince I ſee in your countenances (now vertuouſly ſettled) nothing els but loue and dutie to him, by whom for your only ſakes the gouernment is embraced. For all what is done, he doth not only pardon you, but thanke you; iudging the action by the minds, & not the minds by the action. Your grieues, and deſires, whatſoeuer, and whenſoeuer you liſt, he will conſider of, and to his conſideration it is reaſon you ſhould refer them. So then, to conclude; the vncertainty of his eſtate made you take armes; now you ſee him well, with the ſame loue lay them downe. If now you end (as I know you will) he will make no other account of this matter, but as of a vehement, I muſt confeſſe ouer-vehement affection: the only continuance might proue a wickednes. But it is not ſo, I ſee very well, you began with zeale, and will end with reuerence.

The action *Zelmane* vſed, being beautified by nature and apparelled with skill, her geſtures being ſuch, that as her words did paint out her minde, ſo they ſerued as a ſhadow, to make the picture more liuely and ſenſible, with the ſweete cleerneſſe of her voice, riſing and falling kindly as the nature of the worde, and efficacie of the matter required, altogether in ſuch an admirable perſon, whoſe incomparable valour they had well felte, whoſe beautie did pearce through the thicke dulnes of their ſenſes, gaue ſuch a way vnto her ſpeach through the rugged wilderneſſe of their imaginations, who (beſides they were ſtriken in admiration of her, as of more then a humane creature) were coold with taking breath, and had learned doubts out of leaſure, that in ſteed of roaring cries, there was now heard nothing, but a confuſed muttring, whether her ſaying were to be followed, betwixt feare to purſue, and lothneſſe to leaue: moſt of them could haue bene content, it had neuer bene begun, but how to end it (each afraid of his companion,) they knew not, finding it far eaſier to tie then to looſe knots. But *Zelmane* thinking it no euill way in

ſuch

ſuch mutinies, to giue the mutinous ſome occaſion of ſuch ſeruice, as they might thinke (in their owne iudgement) would counteruaile their treſpaſſe, withall, to take the more aſſured poſſeſſion of their mindes, which ſhe feared might begin to wauer, Loiall *Arcadians* (ſaid ſhe) now do I offer vnto you the manifeſting of your duties: all thoſe that haue taken armes for the Princes ſafetie, let them turne their backs to the gate, with their weapõs bent againſt ſuch as would hurt his ſacred perſon. O weake truſt of the many-headed multitude, whom inconſtancie onely doth guide to wel doing: who can ſet confidence there, where cõpany takes away ſhame, and ech may lay the fault on his fellow? So ſaid a craftie felow among them, named *Clinias*, to himſelfe, when he ſaw the word no ſooner out of *Zelmanes* mouth, but that there were ſome ſhouts of ioy, with, God ſaue *Baſilius*, and diuers of them with much iollity growne to be his guard, that but litle before ment to be his murderers.

This *Clinias* in his youth had bene a ſcholler ſo farre, as to learne rather words then maners, and of words rather plentie then order; and oft had vſed to be an actor in Tragedies, where he had learned, beſides a ſlidingneſſe of language, acquaintance with many paſſions, and to frame his face to beare the figure of them: long vſed to the eyes and eares of men, and to recken no fault, but ſhamefaſtneſſe; in nature, a moſt notable Coward, and yet more ſtrangely then rarely venturous in priuie practiſes.

This fellowe was become of neere truſt to *Cecropia*, *Amphialus* his mother, ſo that he was priuy to all the miſchieuous deuiſes, wherewith ſhe went about to ruine *Baſilius*, and his children, for the aduauncing of her ſonne: and though his education had made him full of tongue, yet his loue to be doing, taught him in any euill to be ſecret; and had by his miſtreſſe bene vſed (euer ſince the ſtrange retiring of *Baſilius*) to whiſper rumors into the peoples eares: and this time (finding great aptnes in the multitude) was one of the chiefe that ſet them in the vprore (though quite without the conſent of *Amphialus*, who would not for all the Kingdoms of the world ſo haue aduentured the life of *Philoclea*.) But now perceiuing the flood of their furie began to ebbe, he thought it policie to take the firſt of the tide, ſo that no man cried lowder then he, vpon *Baſilius*. And ſome of the luſtieſt rebels not yet agreeing to the reſt, he cauſed two or three of his mates that were at his commandement to lift him vp, & then as if he had had a prologue to vtter, he began with a nice grauitie to demaund audience. But few attending what he ſaid, with vehement geſture, as if he would teare the ſtars from the skies, he fell to crying out ſo lowde, that not onely *Zelmane*, but *Baſilius* might heare him. O vnhappie men, more mad then the Giants that would haue plucked *Iupiter* out of heauen, how long ſhall this rage continue? why do you not all throw downe your weapons, and ſubmit your ſelues to our good Prince, our good *Baſilius*, the *Pelops* of wiſdom, and *Minos* of all good gouernment? when will you begin to beleue me, and other honeſt and faithfull ſubiects, that haue done all we could to ſtop your furie?

The farmer that loued *Zelmane* could abide him no longer. For as at the firſt he was willing to ſpeake of conditions, hoping to haue gotten great ſouerainties, and among the reſt *Zelmane*: ſo now perceiuing, that the people, once any thing downe the hill from their furie, would neuer ſtay till they came to the bottom of abſolute yeelding, and ſo that he ſhould be nearer feares of puniſhment, then hopes of ſuch aduancement, he was one of them that ſtood moſt againſt the agreement: and to begin withal, diſdaining this fellow ſhould play the preacher, who had bin one of

the chiefeſt make-bates, ſtrake him a great wound vpon the face with his ſword. The cowardly wretch fell downe, crying for ſuccour, and (ſcrambling through the legs of them that were about him) gat to the throne, where *Zelmane* tooke him, and comforted him, bleeding for that was paſt, and quaking for feare of more.

But as ſoone as that blow was giuen (as if *Æolus* had broke open the doore to let all his winds out) no hand was idle, ech one killing him that was next, for feare he ſhould do as much to him. For being diuided in minds and not diuided in companies, they that would yeeld to *Baſilius* were intermingled with them that would not yeeld. Theſe men thinking their ruine ſtood vpon it; thoſe men to get fauour of their Prince, conuerted their vngracious motion into their owne bowels, and by a true iudgement grew their owne puniſhers. None was ſooner killed then thoſe that had bene leaders in the diſobedience: who by being ſo, had taught them, that they did leade diſobediēce to the ſame leaders. And many times it fell out that they killed them that were of their owne faction, anger whetting, and doubt haſtening their fingers. But then came downe *Zelmane*; and *Baſilius* with *Dorus* iſſued, and ſomtimes ſeeking to draw together thoſe of their party, ſomtimes laying indifferētly among them, made ſuch hauocke (among the reſt *Zelmane* ſtriking the farmer to the hart with her ſword, as before ſhe had done with her eyes) that in a while all they of the contrary ſide were put to flight, and fled to certaine woods vpon the frontiers; where feeding wildly, and drinking onely water, they were diſciplined for their dronken riots; many of them being ſlaine in the chaſe, about a ſcore onely eſcaping. But when theſe late rebels, now ſouldiers, were returned from the chaſe, *Baſilius* calling them togither, partly for policy ſake, but principally becauſe *Zelmane* before had ſpoken it (which was to him more then a diuine ordinance) he pronounced their generall pardon, willing them to returne to their houſes, and thereafter be more circumſpect in their proceedings: which they did moſt of them with ſharp marks of their folly. But imagining *Clinias* to be one of the chiefe that had bred this good alteration, he gaue him particular thanks, and withall willed him to make him know, how this frenzie had entred into the people.

Clinias purpoſing indeede to tell him the trueth of all, ſauing what did touch himſelfe, or *Cecropia*, firſt, dipping his hand in the blood of his wound, Now by this blood (ſaid he) which is more deare to me, then al the reſt that is in my body, ſince it is ſpent for your ſafety: this tong (perchance vnfortunate, but neuer falſe) ſhall not now begin to lie vnto my Prince, of me moſt beloued. Then ſtretching out his hād, and making vehement countenances the vſhers to his ſpeches, in ſuch maner of tearms recounted this accident. Yeſterday (ſaid he) being your birth-day, in the goodly greene two mile hence before the city of *Eniſpus*, to do honour to the day, were a four or fiue thouſand people (of all conditiōs, as I think) gathered together, ſpending al the day in dancings & other exerciſes: and whē night came, vnder tents and bowes making great cheare, and meaning to obſerue a waſſaling watch all that night for your ſake. *Bacchus* (the learned ſay) was begot with thunder: I thinke, that made him euer ſince ſo full of ſtur & debate. *Bacchus* indeed it was which ſounded the firſt trūpet to this rude Alarū. For that barbarous opiniō being generally amōg thē, to think with vice to do honor, & with actiuitie in beaſtlines to ſhew abundāce of loue, made moſt of them ſeeke to ſhew the depth of their affection in the depth of their draught. But being once wel chafed with wine (hauing ſpent al the night, and ſome peece of the morning in ſuch reuelling) & imboldned by your abſented maner

ner of liuing, there was no matter their eares had euer heard of that grew not to be a ſubiect of their winie conference: I ſpeake it by proofe: for I take witnes of the Gods (who neuer leaue periuries vnpuniſhed) that I often cried out againſt their impudency, and (when that would not ſerue) ſtopt mine eares, becauſe I woulde not be partaker of their blaſphemies, till with buffets they forced me to haue mine eares and eies defiled. Publike affairs were mingled with priuate grudges neither was any man thought of wit, that did not pretende ſome cauſe of miſlike. Rayling was counted the fruite of freedome, and ſaying nothing had his vttermoſte prayſe in ignorãunce. At the length, your ſacred perſon (alas) why did I liue to heare it? alas howe do I breath to vtter it? But your commandement doth not onely enioine obedience, but giue me force: your ſacred perſon (I ſay) fell to be their table-talke: a proud word ſwelling in their ſtomacks, & diſdainful reproches againſt ſo great a greatnes, hauing put on the ſhew of greatnes in their little mindes: till at length the very vnbrideled vſe of wordes hauing increaſed fire in their mindes (which God wott thought their knowledge notable, becauſe they had at all no knowledge to condemne their owne want of knowledge) they deſcended (O neuer to be forgotten preſumption) to a direct miſlike of your liuing from among them. Whereupon it were tedious to remember their far-fetched conſtructions. But the ſumme was, you diſdained them: and what were the pompes of your eſtate, if their armes mainteyned you not? Who woulde call you a Prince, if you had not a people? When certaine of thẽ of wretched eſtates, & worſe minds (whoſe fortunes change could not impaire) began to ſay, that your gouernment was to be looked into; how the great treaſures (you had leuied among them) had beene ſpent; why none but great men and gentlemen could be admitted into counſel, that the cõmons (forſooth) were too plain headed to ſay their opinnions: but yet their blood and ſweat muſt maintaine all. Who could tell whether you were not betraied in this place, where you liued? nay whether you did liue or no? Therefore that it was time to come and ſee; and if you were here, to know (if *Arcadia* were growne lothſome in your ſight) why you did not ridde your ſelfe of the trouble? There woulde not want thoſe that woulde take ſo faire a cumber in good parte. Since the Countrie was theirs, and the gouernement an adherent to the countrie, why ſhould they not conſider of the one as well as inhabite the other? Nay rather (ſaid they) let vs beginne that, which all *Arcadia* will followe. Let vs deliuer our Prince from daunger of practiſes, and our ſelues from want of a Prince. Let vs doo that, which all the reſt think. Let it be ſaid, that we onely are not aſtoniſhed with vaine titles, which haue their force but in our force. Laſtly, to haue ſaide and heard ſo much, was as dangerous, as to haue attempted: and to attempt they had the glorious name of liberty with them. Theſe words being ſpokẽ (like a furious ſtorme) preſently carried away their wel inclined brains. What I, & ſome other of the honeſter ſort could do, was no more thẽ if with a puffe of breath, one ſhould goe about to make a ſaile goe againſt a mightie winde: or, with one hand, ſtay the ruine of a mighty wall. So generall grewe this madnes among them, there needed no drumme, where each man cried, each ſpake to other that ſpake as faſt to him, and the diſagreeing ſounde of ſo many voices was the chiefe token of their vnmeete agreement. Thus was their banquette turned to a battaile, their winie mirthes to bloudie rages, and the happie praiers for your life to monſtrous threatning of your eſtate; the ſolemnizing your birth-day, tended to haue been the cauſe of your funerals. But as a dronken rage hath (beſides his wickednes)

kednes) that follie, that the more it ſeekes to hurt, the leſſe it conſiders how to bee able to hurt: they neuer wayed how to arme themſelues but tooke vp euery thinge for a weapon, that furie offered to their handes. Many ſwordes, pikes, and billes there were: others tooke pitchforkes and rakes, conuerting huſbandrie to ſouldierie ſome caught holde of ſpittes (thinges ſeruiceable for life) to bee the inſtruments of death. And there was ſome ſuch one, who held the ſame pot wherein he drank to your health, to vſe it (as he coulde) to your miſchiefe. Thus armed, thus gouerned forcing the vnwilling, and hartening the willing, adding furie to furie, and encreſing rage with running, they came headlong towarde this lodge: no man (I dare ſay) reſolued in his owne hart, what was the vttermoſt he would doo when he came hether. But as miſchiefe is of ſuch nature, that it cannot ſtand but with ſtrengthning one euill by an other, and ſo multiplie in it ſelfe, till it come to the higheſt, and then fall with his owne weight: ſo to their mindes (once paſſed the boundes of obedience) more and more wickednes opened it ſelfe, ſo that they who firſt pretended to preſerue you, then to reforme you, (I ſpeak it in my conſcience, and with a bleeding hart) now thought no ſafetie for them, without murdering you, So as if the Goddes (who preſerue you for the preſeruation of *Arcadia*) had not ſhewed their miraculous power, and that they had not vſed for inſtruments, both your owne valour (not fit to be ſpoken of by ſo meane a mouth as mine) and ſome (I muſt confeſſe) honeſt minds, (whom alas why ſhould I mention, ſince what wee did, reached not to the hundred part of our duetie:) our handes (I tremble to think of it) had deſtroyed all that, for which we haue cauſe to reioyce that we are *Arcadians*.

With that the fellow did wring his hands, and wrang out teares: ſo as *Baſilius*, that was not the ſharpeſt pearcer into maſked minds, toke a good liking to him; and ſo much the more as he had tickled him with praiſe in the hearing of his miſtres. And therefore pitying his wound willed him to get him home, and looke well vnto it, & make the beſt ſearch he could, to know if there were any further depth in this matter, for which he ſhould be well rewarded. But before he went away, certain of the ſhepheards being come (for that day was appointed for their paſtorals) he ſent one of them to *Philanax*, and an other to other principall noble-men, and cities there abouts, to make through-inquirie of this vprore, and withall, to place ſuch garriſons in all the townes and villages neere vnto him, that he might thereafter keepe his ſolitary lodge in more ſecurity, vpon the making of a fire, or ringing of a bell, hauing them in a redines for him.

This, *Clinias* (hauing his eare one way when his eye was an other) had perceiued and therefore haſted away, with mind to tell *Cecropia* that ſhe was to take ſome ſpeedie reſolution, or els it were daunger thoſe examinations would both diſcouer, and ruine her: and ſo went his way, leauing that little companie with embracements, & praiſing of *Zelmanes* excellent proceeding, to ſhew, that no decking ſets foorth any thing ſo much, as affection. For as, while ſhe ſtoode at the diſcretion of thoſe vndiſcreete rebelles, euery angry countenance any of them made, ſeemed a knife layde vpon their owne throates; ſo vnſpeakable was now their ioy, that they ſawe (beſides her ſafetie and their owne) the ſame wrought, and ſafely wrought by her meanes, in whom they had placed al their delightes. What examples *Greece* coulde euer alledge of witte and fortitude, were ſet in the ranke of trifles, being compared to this action.

But as they were in the midſt of thoſe vnfained ceremonies, a Gitterne, ill-played

on

on, accompanyed with a hoarce voice (who ſeemed to ſing maugre the Muſes, and to be merie in ſpite Fortune) made them looke the way of the ill-noyſed ſong. The ſong was this.

A Hatefull cure with hate to heale:
A blooddy helpe with blood to ſaue:
A fooliſh thing with fooles to deale:
Let him be bob'd that bobs will haue.
But who by meanes of wiſdome hie
Hath ſau'd his charge? it is euen I.

Let others deck their pride with skarres,
And of their wounds make lame ſhowes:
Firſt let them die, then paſſe the ſtarres,
When rotten Fame will tell their blowes.
But eye from blade, and eare from crie:
Who hath ſau'd all? it is euen I.

They had ſoone found it was *Dametas*, who came with no leſſe lifted vp countenance, then if hee had paſſed ouer the bellies of all his enemies: ſo wiſe a point hee thought hee had perfourmed, in vſing the naturall ſtrength of the caue. But neuer was it his dooing to come ſo ſoone thence, till the coaſt were more aſſuredly cleare: for it was a rule with him, that after a great ſtorme there euer fall a fewe droppes before it bee fully finiſhed. But *Pamela* (who had now experienced how much care doth ſollicite a Louers harte) vſed this occaſion of going to her parentes and ſiſter, indeed aſwell for that cauſe, as being vnquiet, till her eye might bee aſſured how her ſhepheard had gone through the daunger. But *Baſilius* with the ſight of *Pamela* (of whom almoſt his heade otherwiſe occupied, had left the wonted remembrance) was ſodainly ſtriken into a deuout kind of admiration, remembring the oracle, which (according to the fauning humour of falſe hope) hee interpreted now his owne to his owne beſt, and with the willing blindneſſe of affection (becauſe his minde ran wholly vpon *Zelmane*) he thought the Gods in their oracles did principally minde her.

But as he was deepely thinking of the matter, one of the ſhepheardes tolde him, that *Philanax* was already come with a hundred horſe in his company. For hauing by chaunce rid not farre of the little deſert, he had heard of this vprore, and ſo was come vpon the ſpurre (gathering a company of Gentlemen as faſt as he coulde) to the ſuccour of his Maſter. *Baſilius* was glad of it; but not willing to haue him, nor any other of the Noble men, ſee his Miſtreſſe) hee himſelfe went out of the Lodge, and ſo giuing order vnto him of placing garriſons, and examining theſe matters; and *Philanax* with humble earneſtneſſe beginning to entreate him to leaue of this ſolitarie courſe (which already had bene ſo daungerous vnto him) Well (ſaide *Baſilius*) it may be ere long I will condiſcend vnto your deſire. In the meane time, take you the beſt order you can to keepe me ſafe in my ſolitatineſſe. But, (ſaid he) doe you remember, how earneſtly you wrote vnto me, that I ſhould not bee moued by that Oracles authoritie, which brought me to this reſolution? Full well Sir (anſwered *Philanax*) for though it pleaſed you not as then to let me knowe, what the Oracles

racles words were, yet all Oracles holding (in my conceipt) one degree of reputation, it ſuffiſed me to knowe, it was but an Oracle, which led you from your owne courſe. Well (ſaid *Baſilius*) I will now tell you the wordes; which before I thought not good to doo; becauſe when all the euents fall out (as ſome already haue done) I may charge you with your incredulitie. So he repeated them in this ſorte.

THy elder care ſhall from thy careſull face
By princely meane be ſtolne, and yet not loſt.
Thy yonger ſhall with Natures bliſſe embrace
And vncouth loue, which Nature hateth moſt.
Both they themſelues vnto ſuch two ſhall wed,
Who at thy beer, as at a barre, ſhall plead;
Why thee (a liuing man) they had made dead.
In thy owne ſeate a forraine ſtate ſhall ſit.
And ere that all theſe blowes thy head doo hit,
Thou, with thy wife, adultry ſhall commit.

For you forſoth (ſaid he) whn I told you, that ſome ſupernaturall cauſe ſent mee ſtrange viſions, which being confirmed with preſagious chaunces, I had gon to *Delphos*, & there receiued this anſwere, you replied to me, that the onely ſupernaturall cauſes were the humors of my body, which bred ſuch melancholy dreames; and that both they framed a mind ful of conceipts, apt to make preſages of things, which in themſelues were meerly chaunceable: and with all as I ſay, you remember what you wrote vnto me, touching authoritie of the Oracle: but now I haue ſome notable triall of the truth thereof, which hereafter I will more largly communicate vnto you. Only now, know that the thing I moſt feared is alredy performed; I mean that a forraine ſtate ſhould poſſeſſe my throne. For that hath been done by *Zelmane*, but not as I feared, to my ruine, but to my preſeruation. But when he had once named *Zelmane*, that name was as good as a pully, to make the clocke of his praiſes run on in ſuch ſort, that (*Philanax* found) was more exquiſite then the onely admiration of vertue breedeth: which his faithfull hart inwardly repining at, made him ſhrinke away as ſoone as he could, to go about the other matters of importance, which *Baſilius* had enioyned vnto him.

Baſilius returned into the Lodge, thus by him ſelfe conſtruing the oracle, that in that hee ſaide, his elder care ſhould by Princely meane bee ſtolne away from him, and yet not loſt, it was now perfourmed, ſince *Zelmane* had as it were robd from him the care of his firſt begotten childe, yet was it not loſt, ſince in his harte the ground of it remained. That his younger ſhould with Natures bliſſe embrace the loue of *Zelmane*, becauſe he had ſo commaunded her for his ſake to doo; yet ſhoulde it be with as much hate of Nature, for being ſo hatefull an oppoſite to the iealouſie hee thought her mother had of him. The ſitting in his ſeate hee deemed by her already perfourmed: but that which moſt comforted him, was his interpretation of the adulterie, which hee thought hee ſhoulde commit with *Zelmane*, whom afterwards he ſhould haue to his wife. The point of his daughters marriage, becauſe it threatned his death withall, he determined to preuent with keeping them (while he liued) vnmaried. But hauing as hee thought, gotten thus much vnderſtanding of the Oracle, hee determined for three daies after to perfourme certaine rites to *Apollo*

pollo: and euen then began with his wife and daughters to ſinge this Hymne, by them yearely vſed.

APollo *great, whoſe beames the greater world do light,*
And in our little world do cleare our inward ſight,
Which euer ſhine, though hid from earth by earthly ſhade,
Whoſe lights do euer liue, but in our darkeneſſe fade;
Thou God, whoſe youth was deckt with ſpoile of Phythons *skin:*
(So humble knowledge can throw downe the ſnakiſh ſinne)
Latonas *ſonne, whoſe birth in paine and trauaile long*
Doth teach, to learne the good what trauailes do belong:
In trauaile of our life (a ſhort but tedious ſpace)
While brickle houreglas runnes, guide thou our panting pace:
Giue vs foreſightfull mindes: giue vs minds to obaye
What fore ſight tels; our thoughts vpon thy knowledge ſtaye.
Let ſo our fruites grow vp that nature be maintainde:
But ſo our hartes keepe downe, with vice they be not ſtainde.
Let this aſſured holde our iudgemeuts ouertake,
That nothing winnes the heauen, but what doth earth forſake.

Aſſone as he had ended his deuotion (all the priuiledged ſhepheards being now come) knowing well inough he might lay all his care vpon *Philanax*, he was willing to ſweeten the taſt of this paſſed tumult, with ſome rural paſtimes. For which while the ſhepheards prepared themſelues in their beſt manner, *Baſilius* tooke his daughter *Philoclea* aſide, and with ſuch haſt, as if his eares hunted for wordes, deſired to know how ſhe had found *Zelmane*. She humbly anſwered him, according to the agreement betwixt them, that thus much for her ſake *Zelmane* was content to deſcend from her former reſolution, as to heare him, whenſoeuer he would ſpeake; and further then that (ſhe ſaid) as *Zelmane* had not graunted, ſo ſhe nether did, nor euer woulde deſire. *Baſilius* kiſt her with more then fatherly thankes, and ſtraight (like a hard-kept warde new come to his lands) would faine haue vſed the benefite of that graunt, in laying his ſicknes before his onely phyſition. But *Zelmane* (that had not yet fully determined with her ſelfe, how to beare her ſelfe toward him) made him in a few words vnderſtand, that the time in reſpect of the company was vnfit for ſuch a parley, and therefore to keepe his braines the buſier, letting him vnderſtand what ſhe had learned of his daughters, touching *Eronas* diſtreſſe (whom in her trauaile ſhe had knowne, and bene greatly beholding to) ſhe deſired him to finiſh the reſt, for ſo far as *Plangus* had told him; Becauſe ſhe ſaid (and ſhe ſaid truly) ſhe was ful of care for that Ladie, whoſe deſart (onely except an ouer-baſe choiſe) was nothing agreeable to misfortune. *Baſilius* glad that ſhe would commaund him any thing, but more glad, that in excuſing the vnfitneſſe of that time, ſhe argued an intention to graunt a fitter obeyed her in this manner.

Madam (ſaid he) it is verie true, that ſince yeares enhabled mee to iudge what is, or is not to be pitied. I neuer ſaw any thing that more moued me to iuſtifie a vehement compaſſion in my ſelfe, then the eſtate of that Prince, whom ſtrong againſt all his owne afflictions (which yet were great, as I perceaue you haue heard) yet true and noble loue had ſo pulled downe, as to lie vnder ſorrow for another In ſo much

as

as I coulde not temper my long idle pen in that ſubiect, which I perceiue you haue ſeene. But then to leaue that vnrepeated, which I finde my daughters haue told you It may pleaſe you to vnderſtand, ſince it pleaſeth you to demaund, that *Antiphilus* being crowned, and ſo left by the famous Princes *Muſidorus* and *Pyrocles* (led thence by the challenge of *Anaxius*, who is now in theſe prouinces of *Greece* making a diſhonorable enquirie after that excellent prince *Pyrocles* alreadie periſhed) *Antiphilus* (I ſay) being crowned, and deliuered from the preſence of thoſe two, whoſe vertues (while they were preſent. good ſchoolmaſters) ſuppreſſed his vanities, hee had not ſtrength of mind enough in him to make long delay, of diſcouering what maner of man hee was. But ſtreight like one caried vp to ſo hie a place, that hee looſeth the diſcerning of the ground ouer which he is; ſo was his mind lifted ſo far beyond the leuell of his owne diſcourſe, that remembring onely that himſelfe was in the high ſeate of a King, he could not perceiue that he was a king of reaſonable creatures, who would quickly ſcorne follies, and repine at iniuries. But imagining no ſo true propertie of ſouereignitie, as to do what he liſted, and to liſt what ſoeuer pleaſed his fanſie, he quickly made his kingdome a Teniſcourt, where his ſubiects ſhould be the balles; not in truth cruelly, but licenciouſly abuſing them, preſuming ſo farvpon himſelfe, that what he did was liked of euery bodie: nay, that his diſgraces were fauours, & all becauſe he was a King. For in Nature not able to conceyue the boundes of great matters (ſuddenly borne into an vnknowne Ocean of abſolute power) hee was ſwayed with all (hee knew not howe) as euery winde of paſſions puffed him. Whereto nothing helped him better, then that poyſonous ſugar of flatterie: which ſome vſed, out of the innate baſeneſſe of their hart, ſtraight like dogges fawning vpon the greateſt; others ſecretely hating him, and diſdayning his great riſing ſo ſuddenly, ſo vndeſeruedly (finding his humour) bent their exalting him onely to his ouerthrow; like the bird that caries the ſhell-fiſh high, to breake him the eaſier with his fall. But his mind) being an apt matter to receaue what forme their amplifying ſpeeches would lay vpon it) daunced ſo prettie a muſicke to their falſe meaſure, that he thought himſelfe the wyſeſt, the woorthyeſt, and beſt beloued, that euer gaue honour to a royal tytle. And being but obſcurely borne, he had found out vnbluſhing pedegrees, that made him not only of the blood royal, but true heyre though vniuſtly diſpoſſeſt by *Eronas* aunceſtours, & like the fooliſh birde, that when it ſo hides the heade that it ſees not it ſelfe, thinks no bodie elſe ſees it: ſo did he imagine, that no bodie knew his baſeneſſe, while he himſelfe turned his eyes from it.

Then vaineneſſe (a meager friend to gratefulneſſe) brought him ſo to deſpiſe *Erona*, as of whome he had receiued no benefit, that within halfe a yeeres mariage he began to pretend barrenneſſe: & making firſt an vnlawfull law of hauing mo wiues then one, hee ſtill keeping *Erona*, vnder-hand, by meſſages ſought *Artaxia*, who no leſſe hating him, then louing (as vnluckie a choiſe) the naughtie King *Plexirtus*, yet to bring to paſſe what ſhee purpoſed, was content to train him into falſe hopes, till alreadie his imagination had crowned him King of *Armenia*, and had made that, but the foundation of more, and more monarchies; as if fortune had only gottē eies to cheriſh him. In which time a great aſſembly of moſt part of all the Princes of *Aſia* being to do honour to the neuer ſufficiently praiſed *Pyrocles* & *Muſidorus*, hee would be one not to acknowledge his obligation (which was as great as any of the others,) but looking to haue bene yong-maſtered among thoſe great eſtates, as he was amōg his abuſing vnderlings. But ſo many valorous Princes, in-deed farre neerer to diſdain

him

him then otherwiſe, he was quickly (as ſtanding vpon no true ground, inwardly) out of countenance with himſelfe, till his ſeldom-comfortleſſe flatterers (perſwading him, it was enuie and feare of his expected greatnes) made him haſt away from that company, and without further delay appointed the meeting with *Artaxia*; ſo incredibly blinded with the ouer-bright ſhining of his roialty, that he could thinke ſuch a Queene would be content to be ioined-patent with an other to haue ſuch an husband. Poore *Erona* to all this obeied, either vehemency of affection making her ſtoop to ſo ouerbaſe a ſeruitude, or aſtoniſhed with an vnlooked-for fortune, dull to any behoofefull reſolution, or (as many times it falles out euen in great harts when they can accuſe none but themſelues) deſperatly bent to maintaine it. For ſo went ſhe on in that way of her loue, that (poore Lady) to be beyond all other examples of ill-ſet affection, ſhe was brought to write to *Artaxia*, that ſhe was content; for the publike good, to be a ſecond wife, and yeeld the firſt place to her: nay to extoll him, and euen woo *Artaxia* for him.

But *Artaxia* (mortally hating them both for her brothers ſake) was content to hide her hate, till ſhe had time to ſhew it: and pretending that all her grudge was againſt the two paragons of vertue, *Muſidorus* and *Pyrocles*, euen met them halfe way in excuſing her brothers murder, as not being principall actors; and of the other-ſide, driuen to what they did by the euer-pardonable neceſſitie: and ſo well handled the matter, as, though ſhe promiſed nothing, yet *Antiphilus* promiſed himſelfe all that ſhe would haue him thinke. And ſo a ſolemne enteruiew was appointed. But (as the Poets ſay) *Hymen* had not there his ſaffron-coloured cote. For *Artaxia* laying men ſecretly (and eaſily they might be ſecret, ſince *Antiphilus* thought ſhe ouerran him in loue) when he came euen readie to embrace her, ſhewing rather a countenaunce of accepting then offering, they came forth, and (hauing much aduauntage both in number, valure, and fore-preparation) put all his companie to the ſword; but ſuch as could flie away. As for *Antiphilus* ſhe cauſed him and *Erona* both to be put in irons, haſting backe toward her brothers tombe, vpon which ſhe ment to ſacrifice them; making the loue of her brother ſtand betwene her and all other motions of grace, from which by nature ſhe was alienated.

But great diuerſitie in them two quickly diſcouered it ſelfe for the bearing of that affliction. For *Antiphilus* that had no greatneſſe but outward, that taken away, was readie to fall faſter then calamitie could thruſt him; with fruitleſſe begging of life (where reaſon might well aſſure him his death was reſolued) and weake bemoning his fortune, to giue his enemies a moſt pleaſing muſique, with manie promiſes, and proteſtations, to as little purpoſe, as from a little minde. But *Erona* ſad indeede, yet like one rather vſed, then new fallen to ſadneſſe (as who had the ioyes of her hart alreadie broken) ſeemed rather to welcome then to ſhun that ende of miſerie, ſpeaking little, but what ſhe ſpake was for *Antiphilus*, remembring his guiltleſneſſe, being at that time priſoner to *Tiridates*, when the valiant princes ſlue him: to the diſgrace of men, ſhewing that there are women both more wiſe to iudge what is to be expected, and more conſtant to beare it when it is happened.

But her wit endeared by her youth, her affliction by her birth, and her ſadneſſe by her beautie, made this noble prince *Plangus*, who (neuer almoſt from his couſin *Artaxia*) was now preſent at *Eronaes* taking, to perceyue the ſhape of louelineſſe more perfectly in wo, then in ioyfulneſſe (as in a picture which receiues greater life by the darkeneſſe of ſhadowes, then by more glittering colours) and

ſeeing to like; and liking to loue; and louing ſtraight to feele the moſt incident effects of loue, to ſerue and preſerue. So borne by the haſtie tide of ſhort leyſure, he did haſtily deliuer together his affection, and affectionate care. But ſhe (as if he had ſpoken of a ſmall matter, when he mencioned her life, to which ſhe had not leiſure to attend) deſired him if he loued her, to ſhew it, in finding ſome way to ſaue *Antiphilus*. For her, ſhe found the world but a weariſome ſtage vnto her, where ſhe played a part againſt her will: and therefore beſought him, not to caſt his loue in ſo vnfruitfull a place, as could not loue it ſelfe: but for a teſtimonie of conſtancie, and a ſutablenes to his word, to do ſo much comfort to her minde, as that for her ſake *Antiphilus* were ſaued. He tolde me how much he argued againſt her tendering him, who had ſo vngratefully betraied her, and fooliſhly caſt away himſelfe. But perceiuing ſhe did not only bend her very good wits to ſpeake for him againſt herſelfe, but when ſuch a cauſe could be allied to no reaſon, yet loue would needes make it-ſelfe a cauſe, and barre her rather from hearing, then yeeld that ſhe ſhould yeeld to ſuch arguments: he likewiſe in whom the power of Loue (as they ſay of ſpirits) was ſubiect to the loue in her, with griefe conſented, & (though backwardly) was diligent to labor the help of *Antiphilus*: a man whom he not only hated, as a traitour to *Erona*, but enuied as a poſſeſſor of *Erona*. Yet Loue ſware, his hart, in ſpite of his hart, ſhould make him become a ſeruant to his riuall. And ſo did he, ſeeking all the meanes of perſwading *Artaxia*, which the authority of ſo neere, and ſo vertuous a kinſman could giue vnto him. But ſhe to whom the eloquẽce of hatred had giuen reuenge the face of delight, reiected all ſuch motions; but rather the more cloſely impriſoning them in her chiefe citie, where ſhe kept them with intention at the birth-day of *Tiridates* (which was very nere) to execute *Antiphilus*, and at the day of his death (which was about halfe a yeere after) to vſe the ſame rigor towards *Erona*. *Plangus* much grieued (becauſe much louing) attempted the humors of the *Lycians*, to ſee, whether they would come in with forces to ſuccor their Princeſſe. But there the next inheritor to the crowne (with the true play that is vſed in the game of kingdõs) had no ſooner his miſtres in captiuity, but he had vſurped her place, and making her odious to her people, becauſe of the vnfit electiõ ſhe had made, had ſo left no hope there: but which is worſe, had ſent to *Artaxia*, perſwading the iuſticing her, becauſe that vniuſtice might giue his title the name of iuſtice. Wãting that way, *Plangus* practiſed with ſome deere friends of his, to ſaue *Antiphilus* out of priſon, whoſe day becauſe it was much neerer then *Eronaes*, and that he well found, ſhe had twiſted her life vpõ the ſame threed with his, he determined firſt to get him out of priſon: and to that end hauing prepared all matters as well as in ſuch caſe he could, where *Artaxia* had ſet many of *Tiridates* old ſeruants to haue well-marking eyes, he cõferred with *Antiphilus*, as (by the aucthoritie he had) he found meanes to do; and agreed with him of the time & maner, how he ſhould by the death of ſome of his iaylors eſcape. But all being well ordered, and *Plangus* willinglie putting himſelfe into the greateſt danger, *Antiphilus* (who, like a bladder, ſweld redie to breake, while it was full of the winde of proſperitie, that being out, was ſo abiected, as apt to be trode on by euery bodie) whẽ it came to the point, that with ſome hazard, he might be in apparant likelihood to auoid the vttermoſt harme, his hart fainted, and (weake foole, neither hoping, nor fearing as he ſhould) gat a conceit, that with bewraying this practiſe, he might obtaine pardon: and therefore, euen a little before *Plangus* ſhould haue come vnto him, opened the whole practiſe to him that had the charge,

charge, with vnpittyed teares idly proteſting, he had rather die by *Artaxias* commaundement, then againſt her will eſcape: yet begging life vpon any the hardeſt, and wretchedeſt conditions that ſhe would lay vpon him. His keeper prouided accordingly, ſo that when *Plangus* came, he was like, himſelfe to haue bene entrapped: but that finding (with a luckie in-ſight) that it was diſcouered, he retired; and (calling his friendes about him) ſtood vpon his guard, as he had good cauſe. For, *Artaxia* (accounting him moſt vngratefull, conſidering that her brother and ſhe, had not only preſerued him againſt the malice of his father, but euer vſed him much liker his birth, then his fortune) ſent forces to apprehend him. But he among the martiall men had gotten ſo great loue, that he could not onely keep himſelfe from her malice, but worke in their mindes a compaſſion of *Eronas* aduerſitie.

But for the ſuccour of *Antiphilus* he could get no bodie to ioyne with him, the contempt of him hauing not bene able to qualifie the hatred; ſo that *Artaxia* might eaſilie vpon him perfourme her will; which was (at the humble ſuite of all the women of that citie) to deliuer him to their cenſure, who mortally hating him for hauing made a lawe of *Polygamie*, after many tortures, forſt him to throw himſelfe from a high *Pyramis*, which was built ouer *Tiridates* tombe, and ſo to end his falſe-harted life, which had planted no ſtrong thought in him, but that he could be vnkinde.

But *Plangus* well perceiuing that *Artaxia* ſtaied onely for the appointed day, that the faire *Eronas* bodie, (conſumed to aſhes) ſhould make a notorious teſtimonie, how deepely her brothers death was engrauen in her breſt, he aſſembled good numbers of friends, whom his vertue (though a ſtranger) had tied vnto him, by force to giue her libertie. Contrariwiſe, *Artaxia*, to whom Anger gaue more courage then her ſexe did feare, vſed her regall authoritie (the moſt ſhe could) to ſuppreſſe that ſedition, and haue her will: which (ſhe thought) is the moſt princely thing that may be. But *Plangus*, who indeede (as all men witnes) is one of the beſt captaines (both for policie and valour) that are trained in the ſchoole of *Mars*, in a conflict ouerthrew *Artaxias* power, though of far greater number: and there toke priſoner a baſe ſonne of her brothers, whom ſhe deerly affected, and then ſent her word that he ſhould run the ſame race of fortune (whatſoeuer it was) that *Erona* did: and happy was that threatning for her; for els *Artaxia* had haſtened the day of her death, in reſpect of thoſe tumults.

But now (ſome principall noble-men of that countrie interpoſing themſelues) it was agreed, that all perſons els fullie pardoned, and all priſoners (except *Erona*) deliuered, ſhe ſhould be put into the hands of a principall nobleman, who had a caſtle of great ſtrength, vpon oath, that if by the day two yeare from *Tiridates* death, *Pyrocles* and *Muſidorus* did not in perſon combat, and ouercome two knights, whom ſhe appointed to maintain her quarrell againſt *Erona* and them, of hauing by treaſon deſtroyed her brother, that then *Erona* ſhould be that ſame day burned to aſhes: but if they came, and had the victorie, ſhe ſhould be deliuered; but vpon no occaſion, neither freed, nor executed, till that day. And hereto of both ſides, all toke ſolemne oath, and ſo the peace was concluded; they of *Plangus* partie forcing him to agree, though he himſelfe the ſooner condiſcended, knowing the courteſie of thoſe two excellent Princes, not to refuſe ſo noble a quarrell, and their power ſuch, as two more (like the other two) were not able to reſiſt. But *Artaxia* was more, and vpon better ground, pleaſed with this action; for ſhe had euen newly receiued newes frō

Plexirtus, that vpon the ſea he had cauſed them both to periſh, and therefore ſhe held her ſelfe ſure of the match.

But poore *Plangus* knew not ſo much, and therefore ſeeing his partie (as moſt times it falles out in like caſe) hungry of any conditions of peace, accepted them; and then obteined leaue of the Lord, that indifferently kept her, to viſite *Erona*, whom he found full of deſperate ſorow, not ſuffering, neither his vnworthineſſe, nor his wrongs, nor his death (which is the naturall concluſion of all worldly acts) either to couer with forgetfulnes, or diminiſh with conſideration, the affection ſhe had borne him: but euen glorying in affliction, and ſhunning all comfort, ſhe ſeemed to haue no delight, but in making herſelfe the picture of miſerie. So that when *Plangus* came to her, ſhe fell in deadlie traunces, as if in him ſhe had ſeene the death of *Antiphilus*, becauſe he had not ſuccoured him: and yet (her vertue ſtriuing) ſhe did at one time acknowledge her ſelfe bound, and profeſſe her ſelfe iniured; in ſteede of allowing the concluſion they had made, or writing to the Princes (as he wiſht her to doo) crauing nothing but ſome ſpeedie death to follow, her (in ſpite of iuſt hate) beloued *Antiphilus*.

So that *Plangus* hauing nothing but a rauiſht kiſſe from her hand at their parting, went away toward *Greece*, whetherward he vnderſtoode the Princes were embarked. But by the way it was his fortune to intercept letters, written by *Artaxia* to *Plexirtus*: wherein ſhe ſignified her accepting him to her husband, whom ſhe had euer fauoured, ſo much the rather, as he had perfourmed the conditions of her mariage, in bringing to their deſerued end, her greateſt enemies: withall, thanking the ſea, in ſuch tearmes, as he might well perceiue, it was by ſome treaſon wrought in *Plexirtus* ſhippe. Whereupon (to make more diligent ſearch) he tooke ſhippe himſelfe, and came into *Laconia*, enquiring, and by his enquirie finding, that ſuch a ſhippe was indeede with fight, and fire, periſhed, none (almoſt) eſcaping. But for *Pyrocles* and *Muſidorus*, it was aſſuredly determined that they were caſt away: for the name of ſuch Princes (eſpecially in *Greece*) would quickly els haue bene a large witneſſe to the contrarie. Full of griefe with that, for the loſſe of ſuch, who left the world poore of perfection: but more ſorie for *Eronas* ſake, who now by them could not be relieued. A new aduertiſement from *Armenia* ouertooke him, which multiplied the force of his anguiſh. It was a meſſage from the Noble-man who had *Erona* in ward, giuing him to vnderſtand, that ſince his departure, *Artaxia* (vſing the benefite of time) had beſieged him in his caſtell, demaunding preſent deliuery of her, whom yet for his faith giuen, he would not, before the day appointed, if poſſibly he could reſiſt, which he foreſaw, long he ſhould not do for want of victuall, which he had not ſo wiſely prouided, becauſe he truſted vpon the generall oth taken for two yeares ſpace: and therefore willed him to make haſt to his ſuccour, and come with no ſmall forces; for all they that were of his ſide in *Armenia*, were conſumed, and *Artaxia* had encreaſed her might by mariage of *Plexirtus*, who now crowned King there, ſtickt not to glory in the murder of *Pyrocles* and *Muſidorus*, as hauing iuſt cauſe thereto, in reſpect of the deaths of his ſiſter *Andromana*, her ſonne his nephew, and his owne daughter *Zelmane*, all whoſe loſſe he vniuſtly charged them withall, and now openly ſtickt not to confeſſe, what a reuenge his wit had brought forth. *Plangus* much aſtoniſhed herewith, bethought himſelfe what to doo. For to returne to *Armenia* was vaine, ſince his friends there were vtterly ouerthrowne. Then thought he of going to his father; but he had already (euen ſince the death

death of his ſtepmother, and brother) attempted the recouering his fauour, and all in vaine. For they, that had before ioined with *Andromana* to do him the wrong, thought now no life for them if he returned, and therefore kept him ſtill (with new forged ſuſpicions) odious to his father. So that *Plangus* reſeruing that for a worke of longer time, then the ſauing of *Erona* could beare, determined to goe to the mighty and good King *Euarchus*: who lately hauing (to his eternall fame) fully, not onely conquered his enemies, but eſtabliſhed good gouernment in their countries, he hoped he might haue preſent ſuccour of him, both for the iuſtnes of the cauſe, & reuenge of his childrens death, by ſo hainous a treaſon murthered. Therefore with diligence he went to him; & by the way (paſſing through my country) it was my hap to find him, the moſt ouerthrowne man with griefe, that euer I hope to ſee againe. For ſtill it ſeemed he had *Erona* at a ſtake before his eies; ſuch an apprehenſion he had taken of her daunger; which in deſpite of all the comfort I could giue him, he poured out in ſuch lamentations, that I was moued not to let him paſſe, till he had made full declaration, which by peeces my daughters and I haue deliuered vnto you. Faine he would haue had ſuccour of my ſelfe, but the courſe of my life being otherwiſe bent, I onely accompanied him with ſome that might ſafely guide him to the great *Euarchus*: for my part hauing had ſome of his ſpeeches ſo feelingly in my memory, that at an idle time (as I told you) I ſet them downe Dialogue-wiſe, in ſuch manner as you haue ſeene. And thus, excellent Ladie, I haue obeyed you in this ſtorie; wherein if it well pleaſe you to conſider, what is the ſtraunge power of Loue, and what is due to his authoritie, you ſhall exerciſe therein the true nobleneſſe of your iudgement, and doo the more right to the vnfortunate Hiſtorian. *Zelmane* (ſighing for *Eronaes* ſake, yet inwardly comforted in that ſhe aſſured her ſelfe, *Euarchus* would not ſpare to take in hand the iuſt deliuering of her, ioyned with the iuſt reuenge of his childrens loſſe) hauing now what ſhe deſired of *Baſilius*, to auoide his further diſcourſes of affection, encouraged the ſhepheards to begin, whom ſhe ſaw allready ready for them.

The ſecond Eclogues.

THE rude tumult of the *Eniſpians* gaue occaſion to the honeſt ſhepheards to begin their Paſtoralls this day with a daunce, which they called the skirmiſh betwixt *Reaſon* and *Paſsion*. For ſeuen ſhepheards (which were named the reaſonable ſhepheards) ioined themſelues; foure of them making a ſquare, and the other two going a little wide of either ſide, like wings for the maine battell, and the ſeuenth man formoſt, like the forlorne hope, to begin the skirmiſh. In like order came out the ſeuen appaſſionated ſhepheards, all keeping the paſe of their foot by their voice, and ſundry conſorted inſtruments they held in their armes. And firſt, the formoſt of the Reaſonable ſide began to ſing:

R. *Thou Rebell vile, come, to thy maſter yeeld.*

And the other that met with him anſwered:

P. *No, Tyrant, no: mine, mine ſhall be the field.*
Reaſon. *Can Reaſon then a Tyraunt counted bee?*
Paſsion. *If Reaſon will, that Paſsions be not free.*
R. *But Reaſon will, that Reaſon gouerne moſt.*

P. And Paſsion will, that Paſsion rule the roſt.
R. Your will is will, but Reaſon reaſon is.
P. Will hath his will, when Reaſons will doth miſſe.
R. Whome Paſsion leades vnto his death is bent.
P. And let him die, ſo that he die content.
R. By nature you to Reaſon faith haue ſworne.
P. Not ſo, but fellow-like togither borne.
R. Who Paſsion doth enſue, liues in annoy.
P. Who Paſsion doth forſake, liues void of ioy.
R. Paſsion is blinde, and treades an vnknowne trace.
P. Reaſon hath eyes to ſee his owne ill caſe.

Then as they approched nearer, the two of Reaſons ſide, as if they ſhot at the other, thus ſang:

R. Dare Paſsions then abide in Reaſons light?
P. And is not Reaſon dimme with Paſsions might?
R. O fooliſh thing, which glory doth deſtroy.
P. O glorious title of a fooliſh toy.
R. Weakenes you are, dare you with our ſtrength fight?
P. Becauſe our weaknes weakeneth all your might.
R. O ſacred Reaſon, helpe our vertuous toiles.
P. O Paſsion, paſſe on feeble Reaſons ſpoiles.
R. We with our ſelues abide a daily ſtrife.
P. We gladly vſe the ſweetneſſe of our life.
R. But yet our ſtrife ſure peace in end doth breede.
P. We now haue peace, your peace we doo not neede.

Then did the two ſquare battailes meete, and in ſteed of fighting embrace one another, ſinging thus:

R. We are too ſtrong: but Reaſon ſeekes no blood.
P. Who be too weake, do feigne they be too good.
R. Though we cannot orecome, our cauſe is iuſt.
P. Let vs orecome, and let vs be vniuſt.
R. Yet Paſsions yeeld at length to Reaſons ſtroke.
P. What ſhall we winne by taking Reaſons yoke.
R. The ioyes you haue ſhall be made permanent.
P. But ſo we ſhall with griefe learne to repent.
R. Repent in deed, but that ſhall be your bliſſe.
P. How know we that, ſince preſent ioyes we miſſe?
R. You know it not: of Reaſon therefore know it.
P. No Reaſon yet had euer skill to ſhow it.
R. Then let vs both to heauenly rules giue place.
P. Which Paſsions kill, and Reaſon do deface.

Then embraced they one another, and came to the King, who framed his prayſes of them according to *Zelmanes* liking; whoſe vnreſtrained parts, the mind & eie had

had their free course to the delicate *Philoclea*, whose looke was not short in well requiting it, although shee knew it was a hatefull sight to her iealouse mother. But *Dicus* (that had in this time taken a great liking of *Dorus*, for the good partes he foũd aboue his age in him) had a delight to taste the fruites of his wit, though in a subiect which he himselfe most of all other despised: & so entred to speach with him in the manner of this following Eclogue.

Dicus. Dorus.

Dicus. *Dorus, tell me, where is thy wonted motion,*
To make these woods resound thy lamentation?
Thy sainte is dead, or dead is thy deuotion,
For who doth holde his loue in estimation,
To witnes that he thinkes his thoughts delicious,
Thinks to make each thing badge of his sweet passion.

Dorus. *But what doth make thee* Dicus *so suspicious*
Of my due faith, which needs must be immutable?
Who others vertue doubt, themselues are vicious,
Not so; although my mettals were most mutable,
Her beames haue wrought therein most faire impression,
To such a force some chaunge were nothing stable.

Dicus. *The harte well set doth neuer shunne confession:*
If noble be thy bandes, make them notorious:
Silence doth seeme the maske of base oppression.
Who glories in his loue, doth make Loue glorious:
But who doth feare, or bideth muet wilfully,
Shewes, guilty harte doth deeme his state opprobrious.
Thou then, that fram'st both wordes and voice most skilfully,
Teeld to our eares a sweet and sound relation,
If Loue tooke thee by force, or caught thee guilefully.

Dorus. *If sunnie beames shame heau'nly habitation,*
If three-leau'd grasse seeme to the sheepe vnsauorie,
Then base and sowre is Loues most high vocation.
Or if sheepes cries can helpe the Sunnes owne brauerie,
Then may I hope, my pipe may haue abilitie,
To helpe her praise, who decks me in her slauerie,
No, no: no words ennoble selfe nobilitie,
As for your doubts, her voice was it deceaued me,
Her eye the force beyond all possibilitie.

Dicus. *Thy words well voyc'd, well grac'de had almost heaued me,*
Quite from my selfe to loue Loues contemplation;
Till of these thoughts thy sodaine ende bereaued me,
Goe on therefore, and tell vs by what fashion

In thy owne proofe he gets ſo ſtraunge poſſeſſion,
And how poſſeſt he ſtrengthens his invaſion.

Dorus. *Sight is his roote, in thought is his progreſſion,*
His child hood wonder, prentizeſhip attention,
His youth delight, his age the ſoules oppreſſion
Doubt is his ſleepe, he waketh in inuention,
Fancie his foode, his clothing is of carefulnes;
Beautie his booke, his play louers diſſention:
His eyes are curious ſearch, but vailde with warefulneſſe:
His wings deſire oft clipt with deſperation.
Largeſſe his hands could neuer skill of ſparefulneſſe
But how he doth by might, or by perſwaſion
To conquere, and his conqueſt how to ratifie,
Experience doubts, and ſchooles hold diſputation.

Dicus. *But ſo thy ſheepe may thy good wiſhes ſatiſſie*
With large encreaſe, and wooll of fine perfection,
So ſhe thy loue, her eyes thy eyes may gratifie;
As thou wilt giue our ſoules a deare refection,
By telling how ſhe was, how now ſhe framed is
To helpe, or hurt in thee her owne infection.

Dorus. *Bleſt be the name, wherewith my miſtres named is:*
Whoſe wounds are ſalues, whoſe yokes pleaſe more then pleaſure doth
Her ſtaines are beames; vertue the fault ſhe blamed is,
The hart, eye, eare here onely find his treaſure doth.
All numbring artes her endleſſe graces number not:
Time, place, life. witt, ſcarcely her rare gifts meaſure doth.
Is ſhe in rage? ſo is the Sunne in ſommer hot,
Yet harueſt brings. Doth ſhe, alas! abſent her ſelfe?
The Sunne is hid; his kindly ſhadows cumber not.
But when to giue ſome grace ſhe doth content her ſelfe,
O then it ſhines, then are the heau'ns diſtributed,
And Venus ſeemes, to make vp her, ſhe ſpent her ſelfe.
Thus then (I ſay) my miſchiefes haue contributed
A greater good by her diuine reflection,
My harmes to me, my bliſſe to her attributed.
Thus ſhe is fram'd: her eyes are my direction,
Her loue my life, her anger my diſtruction,
Laſtly what ſo ſhe is, that's my protection.

Dicus. *Thy ſafetie ſure is wrapped in deſtruction,*
For that conſtruction thine owne wordes do beare.
A man to feare a womans moodie eye,
Makes Reaſon lie a ſlaue to ſeruile ſenſe,
A weake defence where weaknes is thy force:

So is remorſe in follie dearly bought.

Dorus. *If I had thought to heare blaſphemous wordes,*
My breſt to ſwords, my ſoule to hell haue ſolde
I rather would, then thus mine eares defile
With words ſo vile, which viler breath doth breed.
O heards take heed; for I a woolfe haue found,
Who hunting round the ſtrongeſt for to kill,
His breaſt doth fill with earth of others woe,
And loden ſo pulls downe, pull'd downe deſtroyes.
O ſheepheards boyes, eſchue theſe tongues of venome,
Which do enuenome both the ſoule and ſenſes.
Our beſt defenſes are to flie theſe adders.
O tongues like ladders made to clime diſhonour,
Who iudge that honour, which hath ſcope to ſlander!

Dicus. Dorus *you wander farre in great reproches,*
So Loue encroches on your charmed reaſon,
But it is ſeaſon for to end our ſinging.
Such anger (bringing: as for me, my fancie
In ſicke-mans frenzie rather takes compaſſion,
Then rage for rage: rather my wiſh I ſend to thee,
Thou ſoone may haue ſome helpe, or change of paſſion,
She oft her lookes, the ſtarres her fauour bend to thee,
Fortune ſtore, Nature health, Loue grant perſwaſion.
A quiet mind none but thy ſelfe can lend to thee,
Thus I commend to thee all our former Loue.

Dorus. *Well do I proue, errour lies oft in zeale,*
Yet it is ſeale, though errour, of true hart.
Nought could impart ſuch heates to friendly mind,
But for to find thy words did her diſgrace,
Whoſe onely face the little heauen is,
Which who doth miſſe his eyes are but deluſions,
Barr'd from their chiefeſt obiect of delightefulneſſe
Throwne on this earth the Chaos of confuſions;
As for thy wiſh, to my enraged ſpitefulneſſe
The louely blow, with rare reward, my prayer is
Thou mayſt loue her that I may ſee thy ſightfulneſſe.
The quiet mind (whereof my ſelfe empairer is,
As thou doeſt thinke) ſhould moſt of all diſquiet me
Without her loue, then any mind who fairer is,
Her onely cure from ſurfet woes can diet me:
She holdes the ballance of my contentation:
Her cleared eyes, nought els, in ſtormes can quiet me,
Nay rather then my eaſe diſcontentation
Should breed to her, let me for aye deiected be

From any ioy, which might her griefe occaſion.
With ſo ſweet plagues my happie harmes infected be:
Paine willes me die, yet will of death I mortifie:
For though life irkes, in life my loues protected be,
Thus for each change my changeleſſe hart I fortifie.

When they had ended to the good pleaſing of the aſſiſtants, eſpeciallie of *Zelmane*, who neuer forgat to giue due cõmendatiõs to her friend *Dorus*, *Baſilius* called for *Lamon* to end his diſcourſe of *Strephon* & *Klaius*, wherwith the other day he marked *Zelmane* to haue bene exceedingly delighted. But him ſicknes had ſtaied from that aſſemblie. which gaue occaſion to *Hiſtor* and *Damon* two yonge ſhepheards, taking vpõ them the two frendly riualles names, to preſent *Baſilius* with ſome other of their complaints Ecloge-wiſe, and firſt with this double Seſtine.

Strephon. Klaius.

Strephon. *Ye Goteheard Gods, that loue the graſſie mountaines,*
Ye nymphes that haunt the ſprings in pleaſant vallies,
Ye Satyrs ioyde with free and quiet forreſts,
Vouchſafe your ſilent eares to plaining muſique,
Which to my woes giue ſtill an early morning.
And drawes the dolor on till weary euening.

Klaius. *O* Mercurie, *foregoer to the euening,*
O heauenly huntreſſe, of the ſauage mountaines,
O louelie ſtarre, entitled of the morning,
While that my voice doth fill theſe woefull vallies,
Vouchſafe your ſilent eares to plaining muſique,
Which oft hath Echo tir'de in ſecrete forreſts.

Strephon. *I that was once free burges of the forreſts,*
Where ſhade from Sunne, and ſports I ſought at euening,
I that was once eſteem'd for pleaſant muſique,
Am baniſht now among the monſtrous mountaines
Of huge deſpaire, and foule afflictions vallies,
Am growne a ſhrich owle to my ſelfe each morning.

Klaius. *I that was once delighted euery morning,*
Hunting the wilde inhabiters of forreſts,
I that was once the muſique of theſe vallies,
So darkened am, that all my day is euening,
Hart broken ſo, that molehilles ſeeme high mountaines,
And fill the vales with cries in ſteed of muſique.

Strephon. *Long ſince alas, my deadly ſwanniſh muſique*
Hath made it ſelfe a crier of the morning,
And hath with wailing ſtrength clim'd higheſt mountaines:

Long

Long since my thoughts more desert be then forrests:
Long since I see my ioyes come to their euening,
And state throwne downe to ouertroden vallies.

Klaius. *Long since the happie dwellers of these vallies,*
Haue praide me leaue my strange exclaming musique,
Which troubles their dayes worke, & ioyes of euening,
Long since I hate the night, more hate the morning:
Long since my thoughts chase me like beasts in forrests,
And make me wish my selfe layd vnder mountaines.

Strephon. *Me seemes I see the high and stately mountaines,*
Transforme themselues to lowe deiected vallies:
Me seemes I heare in these ill changed forrests,
The Nightingales doo learne of Owles their musique:
Me seemes I feele the comfort of the morning
Turnde to the mortall sereine of an euening.

Klaius. *Me seemes I see a filthy clowdie euening,*
As soone as Sunne begins to clime the mountaines:
Me seemes I feele a noysome sent, the morning
When I doo smell the flowers of these vallies:
Me seemes I heare, when I doo heare sweete musique,
The dreadfull cries of murdred men in forrests.

Strephon. *I wish to fire the trees of all these forrests,*
I giue the Sunne a last farewell each euening,
I curse the fidling finders out of musicke:
With enuie I doo hate the loftie mountaines;
And with dispite despise the humble vallies:
I doo detest night, euening, day, and morning.

Klaius. *Curse to my selfe my praier is, the morning;*
My fire is more then can be made with forrests;
My state more base, then are the baseste vallies:
I wish, no euenings more to see, each euening;
Shamed I hate my selfe in sight of mountaines,
And stoppe mine eares, lest I grow mad with musicke.

Strephon. *For she whose parts maintainde a perfect musique*
Whose beautie shin'de more then the blushing morning,
Who much did passe in state the stately mountaines,
In streightnes past the Cedars of the forrests,
Hath cast me wretch into eternall euening,
By taking her two Sunnes from these darke vallies.

Klaius. *For she, to whom compar'd, the Alpes are vallies,*

She

She, whoſe left word brings from the ſpheares their muſique,
At whoſe approche the Sunne roſe in the euening,
Who where ſhe went bare in her forhead morning,
Is gone, is gone, from theſe our ſpoyled forreſts,
Turning to deſarts our beſt paſtur'de mountaines.

Strephon. *Theſe mountaines witneſſe ſhall, ſo ſhall theſe vallies,*
Theſe forreſts eke, made wretched by our muſique,
Klaius. *Our morning hymne is this, and ſong at euening.*

But, as though all this had bene but the taking of a taſte of their wailings, *Strephon* againe begã this Dizaine, which was anſwered vnto him in that kind of verſe which is called the crowne.

Strephon. Klaius.

Strephon. *I Ioy in griefe, and doo deteſt all ioyes:*
Deſpiſe delight am tyr'd with thought of eaſe:
I turne my minde to all formes of annoyes,
And with the chaunge of them my fancie pleaſe,
I ſtudie that which may me moſt diſpleaſe,
And in deſpite of that diſpleaſures might,
Embrace that moſt, that moſt my ſoule deſtroyes.
Blinded with beames, fell darkenes is my ſight:
Dwell in my ruines, feede with ſucking ſmarte
I thinke from me, not from my woes to parte.

Klaius. *I thinke from me, not from my woes to parte,*
And loth this time, call'd life, nay thinke, that life
Nature to me for torment did emparte;
Thinke, my harde haps haue blunted deaths ſharpe knife,
Not ſparing me, in whom his workes be riſe:
And thinking this, thinke nature, life, and death
Place Sorrowes triumph on my conquerd harte,
Whereto I yeeld, and ſeeke none other breath,
But from the ſent of ſome infectious graue:
Nor of my fortune ought, but miſchieue craue,

Strephon. *Nor of my fortune ought but miſchieue craue,*
And ſeeke to nouriſh that, which now containes
All what I am: if I my ſelfe will ſaue,
Then muſt I ſaue, what in me chiefely raignes,
Which is the hatefull web of ſorrowes paines.
Sorrow, then cheriſh me, for I am ſorrow:
No being now, but ſorrowe I can haue:
Then decke me as thine owne; thy helpe I borrowe,
Since thou my riches art, and that thou haſte

Enough

Enough to make a fertill minde lie waſte.

Klaius. *Enough to make a fertill minde lie waſte,*
Is that huge ſtorme, which powres it ſelfe on me:
Haileſtones of teares, of ſighes a monſtrous blaſt,
Thunders of cries; lightnings my wilde lookes be,
The darkned heau'n my ſoule, which nought can ſee.
The flying ſprites which trees by rootes vp teare,
Be thoſe deſpaires, which haue my hopes quite waſt.
The difference is; all folkes thoſe ſtormes forbeare;
But I cannot; who then my ſelfe ſhould flie.
So cloſe vnto my ſelfe my wrackes doo lie.

Strephon. *So cloſe vnto my ſelfe my wrackes doo lie,*
Both cauſe, effect, beginning, and the ende
Are all in me: what helpe then can I trie?
My ſhip, my ſelfe, whoſe courſe to lone doth bende,
Sore beaten doth her maſt of comfort ſpend:
Her cable, Reaſon, breakes from anchor, Hope:
Fancie, her tackling, torne away doth flie:
Ruine, the winde, hath blowne her from her ſcope:
Bruſed with waues of Cares, but broken is
On rocke, Deſpaire, the buriall of my bliſſe.

Klaius. *On rocke, Deſpaire, the buriall of my bliſſe,*
I long dos plowe with plough of deepe deſire:
The ſeed Faſt meaning is, no truth to miſſe:
I harow it with Thoughts, which all conſpire
Fauour to make my chiefe and onely hire.
But, woe is me, the yeare is gone about,
And now I faine would reape, I reape but this
Hate fully growne, Abſence new ſprongen out.
So that I ſee, although my ſight empaire,
Vaine is their paine, who labour in deſpaire.

Strephon. *Vaine is their paine, who labour in deſpaire.*
For ſo did I, when with my angle Will,
I ſought to catch the fiſh Torpedo faire.
Eu'n then Deſpaire did Hope already kill:
Yet fancie would perforce employ his skill,
And this hath got; the catcher now is caught,
Lamde with the angle, which it ſelfe did beare,
And vnto death, quite drownde in dolours, brought
To death, as then diſguiſd in her faire face.
Thus, Thus alas, I had my loſſe in chaſe.

Klaius. *Thus, Thus alas, I had my loſſe in chaſe,*
When firſt that crowned Baſiliske I knewe,
Woſe footeſteps I with kiſſes oft did trace,
Till by ſuch hap, as I muſt euer rue,
Mine eyes did light vpon her ſhining hue,
And hers on me, aſtoniſht with that ſight.
Since then my hart did looſe his wonted place,
Infected ſo with her ſweet poyſons might,
That, leauing me for dead, to her it went:
But ah her flight hath my dead reliques ſpent.

Strephon. *But ah her flight hath my dead reliques ſpent,*
Her flight from me, from me, though dead to me,
Yet liuing ſtill in her, while her beames lent
Such vitall ſparke, that her mine eyes might ſee.
But now thoſe liuing lights abſented be,
Full dead before, I now to duſt ſhall fall,
But that eternall paines my ſoule haue hent,
And keepe it ſtill within this body thrall:
That thus I muſt, while in this death I dwell,
In earthly fetters feele a laſting hell.

Klaius. *In earthly fetters feele a laſting hell*
Alas I doo; from which to finde releaſe,
I would the earth, I would the heauens ſell.
But vaine it is to thinke theſe paines ſhould ceaſe,
Where life is death, and death cannot breed peace.
O faire, ô onely faire, from thee alas,
Theſe foule, moſt foule, deſaſtres to me fell;
Since thou from me (o me) ô Sunne didſt paſſe.
Therefore eſteeming all good bleſsings toyes
I ioy in griefe, and doo deteſt all ioyes.

Strephon. *I ioy in griefe, and doo deteſt all ioyes*
But now an ende, (O Claius*) now an ende:*
For euen the hearbes our hatefull muſique ſtroyes,
And from our burning breath the trees do bende.

So well were theſe wailefull complaints accorded to the paſsions of all the princely hearers, while euery one made what he heard of another the ballance of his owne fortune, that they ſtood a long while ſtriken in a ſad and ſilent conſideration of them. Which the olde *Geron* no more marking then condemning in them, deſirous to ſet foorth what counſailes the wiſedome of age had layde vp in ſtore againſt ſuch fancies (as he thought) follies of youth (yet ſo as it might not apeare that his wordes reſpected them) bending himſelfe to a young ſhepheard named *Philiſides*, (who neither had daunced nor ſong with them, and had all this time layne vpon the ground at the foote of a *Cypreſſe* tree, leaning

leaning vpon his elbowe with ſo deepe a melancoly that his ſences caried to his minde no delight from any of their obiects) he ſtrake him vpon the ſhoulder, with a right old mans grace, that will ſeeme liuelier then his age will afford him, And thus began vnto him his Ecloge.

Geron. Philiſides.

Geron. *VP, vp* Philiſides, *let ſorrowes goe,*
Who yelds to woe, doth but encreaſe his ſmart.
Do not thy hart, to plaintfull cuſtome bring,
But let vs ſing, ſweet tunes do paſsions eaſe,
An olde man heare, who would thy fancies raiſe.

Philiſides. *Who minds to pleaſe the minde drownd in annoyes*
With outward ioyes, which inly cannot ſincke,
As well may thincke with oyle to coole the fire:
Or with deſire to make ſuch foe a frend,
Who doth his ſoule to endleſſe malice bend.

Geron. *Yet ſure an end, to each thing time doth giue,*
Though woes now liue, at length thy woes muſt dye.
Then vertue try, if ſhe can worke in thee
That which we ſee in many time hath wrought,
And weakeſt harts to conſtant temper brought.

Philiſides. *Who euer taught a skilleſſe man to teach,*
Or ſtop a breach, that neuer Cannon ſawe?
Sweet vertues Lawe barres not a cauſefull mone.
Time ſhall in one my life and ſorrowes end,
And me perchaunce your conſtant temper lend.

Geron. *What can amend where phyſick is refuſde?*
The witts abuſde with will no counſayle take.
Yet for my ſake diſcouer vs thy griefe.
Oft comes reliefe when moſt we ſeeme in trappe.
The ſtarres thy ſtate, fortune may change thy happe.

Philiſides. *If fortunes lappe became my dwelling place,*
And all the ſtarres conſpired to my good,
Still were I one, this ſtill ſhould be my caſe,
Ruines relique, cares web, and ſorrowes foode:
Since ſhe faire fierce to ſuch a ſtate me calls,
Whoſe wit the ſtarres, whoſe fortune fortune thralls.

Geron. *Alas what falls are falne vnto thy minde?*
That there where thou confeſt thy miſchiefe lyes
Thy wit doſt vſe ſtill ſtill more harmes to finde.

Whome wit makes vaine, or blinded with his eyes,
What counſell can preuaile, or light giue light?
Since all his force againſt himſelfe he tries.
Then each conceit that enters in his ſight,
Is made, forſooth, a Iurate of his woes,
Earth, ſea, ayre, fire, heau'n, hell, and gaſtly ſprite.
Then cries to ſenceleſſe things, which neither knowes
What ayleth thee, and if they knew thy minde
Would ſcorne in man (their king) ſuch feeble ſhow's.
Rebell, Rebell, in golden fetters binde
This tyran Loue; or rather do ſuppreſſe
Thoſe rebell thoughts which are thy ſlaues by kinde.
Let not a glittring name thy fancie dreſſe
In painted clothes, becauſe they call it loue.
There is no hate that can thee more oppreſſe.
Begin (and halfe the worke is done) to proue
By riſing vp, vpon thy ſelfe to ſtand.
And thinck ſhe is a ſhe, that doth thee moue.
He water plowes, and ſoweth in the ſand,
And hopes the flickring winde with net to holde,
Who hath his hopes laid vp in womans hand.
What man is he that hath his freedome ſolde?
Is he a manlike man, that doth not know man
Hath power that Sex with bridle to withhold?
A fickle Sex, and trew in truſt to no man,
A ſeruant Sex, ſoone prowde if they be coi'de
And to conclude thy miſtreſſe is a woman.

Philiſides. *O gods, how long this old ſoole hath annoi'd*
My wearied eares! O gods yet graunt me this,
That ſoone the world of his falſe tong be void.
O noble age who place their only bliſſe
In being heard vntill the hearer dye
Vttring a ſerpents minde with ſerpents hiſſe.
Then who will heare a well autoriſ'd lye,
(And pacience hath) let him goe learne of him
What ſwarmes of vertues did in his youth flye
Such hartes of braſſe, wiſe heads, and garments trim
Were in his dayes: which heard, one nothing heares,
If from his words the falſhood he do skim.
And herein moſt their folly vaine appeares
That ſince they ſtill alledge, When they were yong:
It ſhews they fetch their wit from youthfull yeares
Like beaſt for ſacrifice, where ſaue the tong
And belly nought is left, ſuch ſure is he,
This life-deadman in this old dungeon flong.
Olde houſes are throwne downe for new we ſee:

The oldeſt Rammes are culled from the flocke:
No man doth wiſh his horſe ſhould aged bee.
The ancient oke well makes a fired blocke:
Old men themſelues, doe loue young wiues to chooſe:
Only fond youth admires a rotten ſtocke.
Who once a white long beard, well handle does,
(As his beard him, not he his beard did beare)
Though cradle witted, muſt not honnor looſe.
Oh when will men leaue off to iudge by haire,
And thinke them olde, that haue the oldeſt minde,
With vertue fraught and full of holy feare!

Geron. If that thy face were hid, or I were blinde,
I yet ſhould know a young man ſpeaketh now,
Such wandring reaſons in thy ſpeech I finde.
He is a beaſt, that beaſtes vſe will allowe
For proofe of man, who ſprong of heau'nly fire
Hath ſtrongeſt ſoule, when moſt his raynes do bowe.
But fondlings fonde, know not your owne deſire
Loth to dye young, and then you muſt be olde,
Fondly blame that to which your ſelues aſpire.
But this light choller that doth make you bolde,
Rather to wrong then vnto iuſt defence,
Is paſt with me, my bloud is waxen colde.
Thy words, though full of malapert offence,
I way them not, but ſtill will thee aduize
How thou from fooliſh loue maiſt purge thy ſenſe.
Firſt thinke they erre, that thinke them gayly wiſe,
Who well can ſet a paſſion out to ſhow:
Such ſight haue they that ſee with goggling eyes.
Paſſion beares high when puffing wit doth blowe,
But is indeed a toy, if not a toy,
True cauſe of euils, and cauſe of cauſeleſſe woe.
If once thou maiſt that fancie gloſſe deſtroy
Within thy ſelfe, thou ſoone wilt be aſhamed
To be a player of thine owne annoy.
Then let thy minde with better bookes be tamed,
Seeke to eſpie her faultes as well as praiſe,
And let thine eyes to other ſports be framed.
In hunting fearefull beaſtes, do ſpend ſome dayes,
Or catch the birds with pitfalls, or with lyme,
Or trayne the fox that traines ſo crafty laies.
Ly but to ſleepe, and in the earely prime
Seeke skill of hearbes in hills, haunt brookes neere night,
And try with bayt how fiſh will bite ſometime.
Goe graft againe, and ſeeke to graft them right,
Thoſe pleaſant plants, thoſe ſweete and frutefull trees,

Which both the pallate, and the eyes delight.
Cheriſh the hiues of wiſely painfull Bees:
Let ſpeciall care vpon thy flock be ſtaid,
Such actiue minde but ſeldome paſſion ſees.

Philiſides. *Hath any man heard what this old man ſaid?*
Truly not I, who did my thoughts engage,
Where all my paines one looke of her hath paid.

Geron was euen out of countenance, finding the words he thought were ſo wiſe, winne ſo little reputation at this young mans hands; and therefore ſometimes looking vpon an old acquaintance of his called *Maſtix*, one of the repiningeſt fellows in the world, and that beheld no body but with a minde of miſlike (ſaying ſtill the world was amiſſe, but how it ſhould be amended, he knew not) ſometimes caſting his eyes to the ground, euen aſhamed to ſee his gray haires deſpiſed, at laſt he ſpied his two dogges, whereof the elder was called *Melampus*, and the younger *Lælaps* (in deede the iewells he euer had with him) one brawling with another; which occaſion he tooke to reſtore himſelfe to his countenance, and rating *Melampus*, he began to ſpeake to his doggs, as if in them a man ſhould finde more obedience then in vnbridled young men.

Geron. Maſtix.

Geron. *Downe, downe* Melampus; *what? your fellow bite?*
I ſet you ore the flock I dearly loue,
Them to defend, not with your ſelues to fight.
Do you not thincke this will the wolues remoue
From former feare, they had of your good mindes,
When they ſhall ſuch deuided weakeneſſe proue?
What if Lælaps *a better morſell finde?*
Then you earſt knew? rather take part with him
Then iarle: lo, lo, euen theſe how enuie blindes.
And then Lælaps *let not pride make thee brim*
Becauſe thou haſt thy fellow ouergone,
But thanke the cauſe, thou ſeeſt, where he is dim.
Here Lælaps, *here, in deed againſt the foen*
Of my good ſheepe, thou neuer trew's time tooke:
Be as thou art, but be with mine at one.
For though Melampus *like a wolfe doo looke,*
(For age doth make him of a woluiſh hew)
Yet haue I ſeene when well a wolfe he ſhooke.
Foole that I am that with my dogges ſpeake grewe.
Come neere good Maſtix, *tis now full tway ſcore*
Of yeeres (alas) ſince I good Maſtix *knewe.*
Thou heardſt euen now a yong man ſnebb me ſore,
Becauſe I red him, as I would my ſon.
Youth will haue will: Age muſt to age therefore.

Masttix. *What maruaile if in youth ſuch faults be done,*
Since that we ſee our ſaddeſt Shepheards out
Who haue their leſſon ſo long time begonne?
Quickly ſecure, and eaſilie in doubt,
Either a ſleepe be all if nought aſſaile,
Or all al roade if but a Cubb ſtart out.
We ſhepeheards are like them that vnder ſaile
Doe ſpeake high wordes, when all the coaſte is cleare,
Yet to a paſſenger will bonnet vaile.
I con thee thanke to whom thy dogges be deare,
But commonly like currs we them entreate,
Saue when great need of them perforce apeare.
Then him we kiſſe, whom late before we beatt
With ſuch intemperance, that each way grows
Hate of the firſte, contempt of later feate:
And ſuch diſcord twixt greateſt ſhepheards flowes,
That ſport it is to ſee with howe greate art
By iuſtice worke they their owne faultes diſcloſe:
Like buſie boyes, to winne their tutors harte,
One ſaith, He mockes; the other ſaith, he playes;
The third his leſſon miſt, till all do ſmarte.
As for the reſt, howe ſhepeheardes ſpend their daies,
At blowe point, hotcocles, or els at keeles
While, Let vs paſſe our time each ſhepeheard ſaies.
So ſmall accompt of time the ſhepeheard feeles
And doth not feele, that life is nought but time
And when that time is paſte, death holdes his heeles.
To age thus doe they draw there youthfull pryme,
Knowing no more, then what poore tryall ſhowes,
As fiſhe ſure tryall hath of muddy ſlyme.
This paterne good, vnto our children goes,
For what they ſee, their parents loue or hate
Their firſt caught ſence prefers to teachers blowes.
Theſe cocklinges cockred we be waile to late,
When that we ſee our offspring gaily bent,
Wemen man-wood, & men effeminate.

Geron. *Fy man, fy man, what wordes hath thy tonge lent?*
Yet thou art mickle warſe then ere was I,
Thy too much zeale, I feare thy braine hath ſpent.
We oft are angrier, with the feeble flie
For buſines, where it pertaines him not,
Then with the poiſno'us todes that quiet lie.
I pray thee what hath ere the Parret *gott,*
And yet they ſay he talkes in greate mens bowers?
A Cage (guilded perchaunce) is all his lott.
Who of his tongue the lickowr gladly powrs,

A good foole call'd with paine, perhapps may be,
But euen for that ſhall ſuffer mightie Lowers.
Let ſwannes example ſiker ſerue for thee,
Who once all birdes, in ſweetly-ſinging paſt,
But now to ſilence turn'd his minſtralſie.
For he woulde ſing, but others were defaſte;
The peacockes pride, the pyes pild flattery,
Cormorаunts glutt, Kites ſpoile, king fiſhers waſte.
The Falcons fercenes, Sparrows letchery
The Cockows ſhame, the Gooſes good intent,
Euen turtle toutcht he with hypocriſie.
And worſe of other more, till by aſſent
Of all the birdes, but namely thoſe were grieued,
Of fowles there called was a parliament.
There was the ſwan of dignitie deprived,
And ſtatute made he neuer ſhoulde haue voice,
Since when I thinke he hath in ſilence liued.
I warne thee therefore (ſince thou maiſt haue choice)
Let not thy tonge become a firy matche,
No ſword ſoe bytes as that euill toole annoyes.
Lett our vnpartiall eyes a litle watche
Our owne demeane, and ſoone we wondre ſhall
That huntinge faultes, our ſelues we did not catch.
Into our mindes let vs a little fall,
And we ſhall find more ſpottes then Leopards skinne.
Then who makes vs ſuch iudges ouer all?
But farewell nowe, thy fault is no great ſinne,
Come, come my currs, tis late I will goe in.

And away with his doggs ſtreight he went as if he would be ſure to haue the laſte worde: all the aſſemblie laughing at the luſtines of the olde fellowe who departed muttering to himſelfe he had ſene more in his daies then twentie of them. But *Baſilius*, who neuer before had heard *Philiſides* (though hauing ſeldome failed to be at theſe metings) deſired him hee woulde begin ſome Ecloge with ſome other of the ſhepheardes according to the accuſtomed guiſe. *Philiſides* though very vnwilling, at the Kings cōmaundemēt offred to ſing with *Thyrſis*. But he directly refuſed him, ſeing, he ſhould within few dayes be maried to the faire *Kala*; and ſince he had gotten his deſire he would ſing no more. Then the king willed *Philiſides* to declare the diſcourſe of his owne fortunes vnknowen to them as being a ſtranger in that countrie but hee praied the King to pardon him, the time being farre to ioyfull to ſuffer the rehearſall of his miſeries. But to ſatiſfie *Baſilius* ſomeway, hee began an Eclogue betwixt himſelfe and the *Echo*, framing his voice ſo in thoſe deſert places as what wordes he would haue the Echo replie vnto, thoſe he woulde ſing higher then the reſt; and ſo, kindelie framed a diſputation betwixt himſelfe and it, which with theſe hexameters in the following order he vttered.

Philisides. Echo.

Faire Rocks, goodly riuers, ſweet woods, when ſhall I ſee peace? Peace,
Peace? what barrs me my tongue? who is it that comes me ſo ny? I.
Oh! I do know what gueſt I haue mett; it is Echo. 't is Echo.
Well mett Echo, aproche: then tell me thy will too. I will too.
Echo, what do I gett yelding my ſprite to my grieues? Grieues.
What medecin may I finde for a griefe that draw's me to death? Death.
O poiſonous medecin! what worſe to me can be then it? It.
In what ſtate was I then, when I tooke this deadly diſeaſe? Eaſe.
And what manner a mind which had to that humor a vaine? Vaine.
Hath not Reaſon enough vehemence the deſire to reproue? Proue.
Oft proue I: but what ſalue, when Reaſon ſeeks to be gone? One
Oh! what is it? what is it that may be a ſalue to my Loue? Loue.
What do louers ſeeke for, long ſeeking for to enioy? Ioy.
What be the ioyes which for to enioy they went to the paines? Paines.
Then to an earneſt Loue what doth beſt victorie lend? Ende.
End? but I can neuer end, loue will not giue me the leaue? Leaue.
How be the minds diſpoſ'd that can not taſt thy phyſick? Sick.
Yet ſay againe thy aduiſe for th' eu'lls that I told thee? I told thee.
Doth th'infected wretch, of his harme th' extremity know? No.
But if he know not his harms what guides hath he whil'ſt he be blind? Blind.
What blinde guides can he haue that leanes to a fancy? A fancy.
Can fancies want eies, or he fall that ſteppeth aloft? Oft.
What cauſes firſt made theſe torments on me to light? Light.
Can then a cauſe be ſo light that forceth a man to go die? Yea.
Yet tell what light thinge I had in me to draw me to die? Eye.
Eyſight made me to yeelde, but what firſt pierſt to my eies? Eies.
Eies hurters, eies hurt. but what from them to me fall's? Fall's.
But when I firſt did fal, what brought moſt fall to my hart? Arte.
Arte? what can be that art that thou doſt meane by thy ſpeche? Speche.
What be the fruites of ſpeaking arte? what groues by the words? Words.
O much more then words: thoſe words ſeru'd more me to bleſſe. Leſſe.
Oh when ſhall I be knowne, wher moſt to be knowne I do longe? Long.
Long be thy woes for ſuch newes, but how reck's ſhe my thoughts? Oughts.
Then then what do I gaine, ſince vnto hir will I do winde? Winde.
Winde, tempeſts, & ſtormes, yet in ende what giues ſhe deſire? Ire,
Silly reward! yet among women hath ſhe of vertu the moſt, Moſt.
What great name may I giue to ſo heau'nly a woman? A woe-man,
Woe, but ſeems to me ioy, that agrees to my thought ſo. I thought ſo.
Think ſo, for of my deſired bliſſe it is only the courſe. Curſe.
Curſ'd be thy ſelfe for curſing that which leades me to ioies. Toies.
What be the ſweet creatures wher lowly demaunds be not heard? Hard.
What makes them be vnkind? ſpeake for th' haſt narroly pri'de? Pride.
Whence can pride come there, ſince ſprings of beawty be thence? Thence,
Horrible is this blaſphemy vnto the moſt holy. O lie.
Thou li'ſt falſe Echo, their minds as vertu be iuſt, Iuſt.

Mock'ſt

Mock'ſt thou thoſe Diamonds which only be matcht by the gods? Ods.
Ods? what an ods is their ſince them to the heau'ns I preferr? errr.
Tell yet againe me the names of theſe faire form'd to do eu'lls. Deu'lls.
Deu'lls? if in hell ſuch deu'lls do a bide, to the hells I do go. Go.

Philiſides was commended for the placing of his Echo, but little did hee regarde their praiſes, who had ſett the foundation of his honour there, where hee was moſt deſpiſde: and therefore retorning againe to the traine of his deſolate penſiuenes, *Zelmanes* ſeing no body offer to fill the ſtage, as if her long reſtrayned conceates did now burſt out of priſon: ſhe thus deſiring her voice ſhould be accorded to nothing, but to *Philocleas* eares, threw downe the burden of her minde in *Anacreous* kinde of verſes.

My muſe what ail's this ardour
To blaſe my onely ſecretts?
Alas it is no glory
To ſing my owne decaid ſtate.
Alas it is no comfort,
To ſpeake without an anſwere.
Alas it is no wiſdome
To ſhew the wound without cure,

My muſe what ail's this ardour?
Mine eys be dym, my lyms ſhake,
My voice is hoarſe, my throte ſcerchte,
My tong to this my rooſe cleaues,
My fancy amazde, my thought dull'd,
My harte doth ake, my life faints,
My ſowle beginnes to take leaue.
So greate a paſſion all feele,
To think a ſoare ſo deadly
I ſhould ſo raſhly ripp vp.

My muſe what ail's this ardour?
If that to ſing thou arte bent
Go ſing the fall of old, Thebes
The warres of ougly Centaurs,
The life, the death of Hector
So may the ſonge be famous,
Or if to loue thou art bent,
Rocount the rape of Europe,
Adonis *end,* Venus *nett*
The ſleepy kiſſe the moone ſtale:
So may thy ſong be pleaſant.

My muſe what ail's this ardour
To blaſe my onely ſecretts?
Wherein do only flowriſh
The ſorry fruites of anguiſh.
The ſong thereof a laſt will,
The tunes be cryes, the words plaints,
The ſinger is the ſongs theame
When no eare can haue ioy,
Nor ey receaue due obiect
Ne pleaſure here, ne fame gett.

My muſe what ail's this ardour?
Alas ſhe ſaith I am thine,
So are thy pains my pains too.
Thy heated harte my ſeat is
Wherein I burne thy breath is
My voice, too hott to keepe in,
Beſides lo here the auther
Of all thy harmes: Lo here ſhe,
That only can redreſſe thee,
Of her I will demaund helpe.

My muſe I yeeld, my muſe ſinge,
But all thy ſonge herein knitt,
The life we leade is all loue:
The loue we holde is all death,
Nor ought I craue to feede life,
Nor ought I ſeeke to ſhun death,
But onely that my goddeſſe
My life my death do counte hers.

Baſilius when ſhee had fully ended her ſong, fell proſtrate vpon the ground, and thanked the Gods they had preſerued his life ſo longe, as to heare the very muſicke they themſelues vſed, in an earthly body. And then with like grace to *Zelmane* neuer left

left intreating her till she had (taking a *Lyra Basilius* helde for her) song these *Phaeacciakes*

Reason, tell me thy mind, if here be reason
In this strange violence, to make resistance.
Where sweet graces erect the stately banner
Of vertues regiment, shining in harnesse
Of fortunes Diademes, by beauty mustred.
Say then Reason, I say what is thy counsell?

Her loose haire be the shott, the breaste the pykes be,
Skowts each motion is, the hands be horsmen,
Her lipps are the riches the warres to maintaine,
Where well couched abides a coffer of pearle,
Her legges carriage is of all the sweet campe:
Say then Reason I say what is thy counsell?

Her cannons be her eys, myne eys the walls be,
Which at firste voly gaue too open entry,
Nor ramper did abide; my braine was vp blowne,
Vndermin'd with a speech the pearcer of thoughts.
Thus weakned by my selfe, no helpe remaineth
Say then Reason; I say, what is thy counsell?

And now fame the herald of her true honour,
Doth proclaime with a sound made all by mens mouths
That nature souerayne of earthly dwellers,
Commands all creatures, to yeeld obeysance
Vnder this, this her owne, her only dearling.
Say then Reason I say what is thy counsell?

Reason sighes but in end he thus doth answere.
Nought can reason availe in heau'nly matters.
Thus natures Diamond receaues thy conquest,
Thus pure pearle, I do yeeld, my senses and soule.
Thus sweete paine, I do yeeld, what ere I can yeelde,
Reason looke to thy selfe, I serue a goddesse.

Dorus had long he thought kept silence from saying, somwhat which might tend to the glorie of her in whom all glory to his seeming was included, but nowe hee brake it, singing these verses called *Asclepiadikes.*

O sweet woods the delight of solitarines!
O how much I do like your solitarines!
where mans mind hath a freed consideration
Of goodnes to receiue louely direction.
Where senses do behold th'order of heau'nly hoste,
And wise thoughts do behold what the creator is:

Com-

The Counteſſe of Pembrokes

Contemplation here holdeth his only ſeate:
Bownded with no limitts, borne with a wing of hope
Clymes euen vnto the ſtarres, Nature is vnder it.
Nought diſturbs thy quiet, all to thy ſeruice yeelds,
Each ſight draws on a thought, thought mother of ſcience,
Sweet birds kindly do graunt harmony vnto thee,
Faire trees ſhade is enough fortification,
Nor danger to thy ſelfe if be not in thy ſelfe.

O ſweete woods the delight of ſolitarines!
O how much I do like your ſolitarines!
Here nor treaſon is hidd, vailed in innocence,
Nor enuies ſnaky ey, finds any harbor here,
Nor flatterers venomous inſinuations,
Nor comming humoriſts puddled opinions,
Nor courteous ruin of proffered vſury,
Nor time pratled away, cradle of ignorance,
Nor cauſeleſſe duty, nor comber of arrogance,
Nor trifling title of vanity dazleth vs,
Nor golden manacles, ſtand for a paradiſe,
Here wrongs name is vnheard: ſlander a monſter is
Keepe thy ſprite from abuſe, here no abuſe doth haunte.
What man grafts in a tree diſſimulation?

O ſweete woods the delight of ſolitarines!
O how well I do like your ſolitarines!
Yet deare ſoile, if a ſoule cloſed in a manſion
As ſweete as violetts, faire as lilly is,
Streight as Cedar, a voice ſtaines the Cannary birds,
Whoſe ſhade ſafely doth hold, danger auoideth her:
Such wiſedome, that in her liues ſpeculation:
Such goodnes that in her ſimplicitie triumphs:
Where enuies ſnaky ey, winketh or els dyeth,
Slander wants a prelext, flattery gone beyond:
Oh! if ſuch a one haue bent, to a lonely life,
Her ſtepps gladd we receaue, gladd we receaue her eys.
And thinke not ſhe doth hurt our ſolitarines,
For ſuch company decks ſuch ſolitarines.

The other Shepeheards were offring themſelues to haue continued the ſportes, but the night had ſo quietlie ſpent the moſt parte of herſelfe among them that the king for that time licēſed thē. And ſo bringing *Zelmane* to her lodging, who would much rather haue done the ſame for *Philoclea*, of all ſides they went to counterfett a ſleepe in their bedd, for a trewe one there agonies could not aforde them. Yet there they Lay (ſo might they be moſte ſolitarie for the foode of their thoughts) til it was neere noone the next day, after which *Baſilius* was to continue his *Appollo* deuotions, and the other to meditate vpon their priuate deſires.

The end of the ſecond Eclogues.

The

THE THIRDE BOOKE OF THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA.

(:)



His laſt dayes danger, hauing made Pamelaes loue diſcerne, what a loſſe it ſhould haue ſuffered, if *Dorus* had bene deſtroied, bred ſuch tenderneſſe of kindnes in her toward him: that ſhe could no longer keep loue from loking out through her eyes, and going forth in her words; whom before as a cloſe priſoner ſhe had to her hart onely committed; ſo as finding not only by his ſpeeches and letters, but by the pitifull oration of a languiſhing behauiour, and the eaſily diſcyphered character of a ſorowfull face, that Diſpaire began now to threaten him deſtruction, ſhe grewe content both to pittie him, and let him ſee ſhe pityed him: as well by making her owne beautifull beames to thawe awaye the former icineſſe of her behauiour, as by entertaining his diſcourſes (whenſoeuer he did vſe them) in the third perſon of *Muſidorus*; to ſo farre a degree, that in the ende ſhe ſaid, that if ſhe had bene the Princes, whom that diſguiſed Prince had vertuouſly loued, ſhe would haue requited his faith with faithfull affectiō: finding in her hart, that nothing could ſo hartily loue as vertue: with many mo words to the ſame ſence of noble fauour, and chaſt plainneſſe. Which when at the firſt it made that expected bliſſe ſhine vpō *Dorus*; he was like one frozen with extremitie of colde, ouer-haſtilye brought to a great fire, rather oppreſſed, then relieued with ſuch a lightning of felicitie. But after the ſtrength of nature had made him able to feele the ſweetnes of ioyfulnes, that againe being a childe of Paſſion, and neuer acquainted with mediocrity, could not ſet bounds vpon his happines, nor be content to giue Deſire a kingdome, but that it muſt be an vnlimitted Monarchie. So that the ground he ſtoode vpon being ouer-high in happines, and ſlippery through affection, he could not holde himſelfe from falling into ſuch an error, which with ſighs blew al comfort out of his breſt, & waſht away all cheerfulnes of his cheer, with teares. For this fauour filling him with hope, Hope encouraging his deſire, and Deſire conſidering nothing, but oportunitie: one

time (*Mopſa* being called away by her mother, and he left alone with *Pamela*) the ſudden occaſion called Loue, and that neuer ſtaide to aske Reaſons leaue; but made the too-much louing *Dorus* take her in his armes, offering to kiſſe her, and as it were, to eſtabliſh a trophee of his victorie. But ſhe, as if ſhe had bin ready to drink a wine of excellent taſt & colour, which ſuddenly ſhe perceiued had poiſon in it, ſo did ſhe put him away frō her: loking firſt vp to heauen, as amazed to finde herſelfe ſo beguiled in him; then laying the cruell puniſhment vpon him of angry Loue, and lowring beautie, ſhewing diſdain, & a deſpiſing diſdain, Away (ſaid ſhe) vnworthy man to loue, or to be loued. Aſſure thy ſelf, I hate my ſelfe for being ſo deceiued; iudge then what I doo thee, for deceiuing me. Let me ſee thee no more, the only fall of my indgement, and ſtaine of my conſcience. With that ſhe called *Mopſa*, not ſtaying for any anſwer (which was no other, but a flood of teares) which ſhe ſeemed not to mark (much leſſe to pity) & chid her for hauing ſo left her alone.

It was not an amazement, it was not a ſorrow, but it was euen a death, which then laid hold of *Dorus*: which certainly at that inſtant would haue killed him, but that the feare to tarrie longer in her preſence (contrarye to her commaundement) gaue him life to cary himſelf away from her ſight, and to run into the woods, where throwing himſelfe downe at the foot of a tree, he did not fall to lamentation, for that proceeded of pittying) or grieuing for himſelf (which he did no way) but to curſes of his life, as one that deteſted himſelfe. For finding himſelfe not onely vnhappy, but vnhappy after being falne from all happines: and to be falne from all happines, not by any miſconceiuing, but by his own fault, and his fault to be done to no other but to *Pamela*: he did not tender his owne eſtate, but deſpiſed it; greedily drawing into his minde, all conceipts which might more and more torment him. And ſo remained he two daies in the woods, diſdaining to giue his bodie food, or his mind comfort, louing in himſelfe nothing, but the loue of her. And indeede that loue onelye ſtraue with the fury of his anguiſh, telling it, that if it deſtroyed *Dorus*, it ſhould alſo deſtroy the image of her that liued in *Dorus*: and whē the thought of that was crept in vnto him, it begā to win of him ſome compaſſion to the ſhrine of that image, & to bewaile not for himſelf (whō he hated, but that ſo notable a loue ſhould periſh. Thē began he onely ſo far to wiſh his owne good, as that *Pamela* might pardon him the fault, though not the puniſhmēt: and the vttermoſt height he aſpired vnto, was, that after his death ſhe might yet pitie his error, & know that it proceeded of loue, & not of boldnes. That cōceipt found ſuch friendſhip in his thoughts, that at laſt he yelded ſince he was baniſhed her preſēce, to ſeek ſome means by writing to ſhew his ſorow and teſtifie his repētance. Therfore getting him the neceſſary inſtrumēts of writing, he thought beſt to coūterfait his hād (fearing that as already ſhe knew his, ſhe would caſt it away as ſoon as ſhe ſaw it) & to put it in verſe, hoping that would draw her on to read the more, chuſing the *Elegiac* as fitteſt for mourning: but neuer pen did more quakingly perform his office; neuer was paper more double moiſtned with inke & teares; neuer words more ſlowly maried together, & neuer the *Muſes* more tired thā now with changes & rechanges of his deuiſes: fearing how to end, before he had reſolued how to begin, miſtruſting ech word, condemning eche ſentence. This word was not ſignificant, that word was too plain: this would not be cōceiued, the other would be ill cōceiued. Here Sorow was not enough expreſſed; there he ſeemed too much for his own ſake to be ſory. This ſentēce rather ſhewed art, thē paſſion; that ſētence rather fooliſhly paſſionate, thē forcibly mouing. At laſt, marring with mēding

and

and putting out better, then he left, he made an end of it; and being ended, was diuerſe times readie to teare it: till his reaſon aſſuring him, the more he ſtudied, the worſe it grew, he folded it vp, deuoutly inuoking good acceptation vnto it; and watching his time, when they were all gone one day to dinner (ſauing *Mopſa*) to the other lodge, ſtale vp into *Pamelaes* chamber, and in her ſtandiſh (which firſt he kiſſed; and craued of it a ſafe and friendly keeping) left it there, to be ſeene at her next vſing her inke (himſelfe returning againe to be true priſoner to deſperate ſorrow) leauing her ſtandiſh vpon her beds head, to giue her the more occaſion to marke it: which alſo fell out.

For ſhe finding it at her after noone-returne, in another place then ſhe left it, opened it. But when ſhe ſaw the letter, her hart gaue her from whence it came. And therefore clapping it to againe, ſhe went away from it, as if it had bene a contagious garment of an infected perſon: and yet was not long away, but that ſhe wiſhed ſhe had read it, though ſhe were loth to read it. Shall I (ſaid ſhe) ſecõd his boldnes ſo far, as to read his preſumptuous letters? And yet (ſaid ſhe) he ſees me not now to grow the bolder therby: And how can I tel, whether they be preſumptuous? The paper came from him & therfore not worthy to be receiued? and yet the paper (ſhe thought was not guiltie. At laſt, ſhe concluded, it were not much amiſſe to looke it ouer, that ſhe might out of his words pick ſome further quarrell againſt him. Then ſhe opened it, and threw it away, and took it vp againe, till (ere ſhe were aware) her eyes would needs read it, conteining this matter.

VNto a caitife wretch, whom long affliction holdeth,
and now fully beleeues helpe to be quite periſhed;
Grant yet, grant yet a looke, to the laſt monument of his anguiſhe,
O you (alas ſo I finde) cauſe of his onely ruine.
Dread not a whit (O goodly cruell) that pittie may enter
into thy hart by the ſight of this Epiſtle I ſend;
And ſo refuſe to beholde of theſe ſtrange wounds the recitall,
leaſt it might th'allure home to thy ſelfe to returne,
(Vnto thy ſelfe I do meane thoſe graces dwell ſo within thee,
gratefulnes, ſweetnes, holy loue, hartie regard)
Such thing cannot I ſeeke (Deſpaire hath giu'n me my anſwere
Deſpaire moſt tragicall clauſe to a deadly requeſt)
Such thing cannot he hope, that knowes thy determinat hardnes;
hard like a rich marbell: hard, but a faire Diamond.
Can thoſe eyes that of eyes drownd in moſt harty flowing teares,
(teares and teares of a man) had no returne to remorſe;
Can thoſe eyes now yeeld to the kind conceit of a ſorow,
which inke onely relates, but ne laments, ne replies?
Ah, that, that I do I not conceiue (though that to my bliſſe were)
more then Neſtors *yeares, more then a Kings diademe.*
Ah, that, that do I not conceiue; to the heauen when a mouſe climes
then may I hope t'atchieue grace of a heauenly tiger.
But, but alas, like a man condemn'd doth craue to be heard ſpeak
not that he hopes for amends of the deſaſter he feeles,
But finding th'approch of death with an inly relenting,
giues an adieu to the world, as to his onely delight:

Right ſo my boiling hart, enflam'de with fire of a faire eye,
bubling out doth breath ſignes of his hugie dolours:
Now that he findes to what end his life, and loue be reſerued,
and that he thence muſt part where to liue only he liu'd.
O faire, O faireſt, are ſuch thy triumphs to thy faireneſſe?
can death beautie become? muſt I be ſuch monument?
Muſt I be onely the marke, ſhall proue that vertue is angrie?
ſhall proue that fiercenes can with a white doue abide?
Shall to the world appeare that faith and loue be rewarded
with mortall diſdaine, bent to vnendly reuenge?
Vnto reuenge? O ſweete, on a wretch wilt thou be reuenged?
ſhall ſuch high Plannets tend to the loſſe of a worme?
And to reuenge who doo bend, would in that kinde be reuenged,
as th'offence was done, and goe beyond if he can.
All my offence was Loue: with Loue then muſt I be chaſtned,
and with more, by the lawes that to reuenge doo belong.
If that loue be a fault, more fault in you to be louely:
Loue neuer had me oppreſt, but that I ſaw to be lou'd.
You be the cauſe that I lou'd: what Reaſon blameth a ſhadowe,
that with a body 't goes? ſince by a body it is.
If that Loue you did hate, you ſhould your beauty haue hidden:
you ſhould thoſe faire eyes haue with a veile couered.
But fooole, foole that I am, thoſe eyes would ſhine from a darke caue.
what veiles then doo preuaile, but to a more miracle?
Or thoſe golden lockes, thoſe lockes which lock me to bondage,
torne you ſhould diſperſe vnto the blaſts of a winde.
But foole, foole that I am, tho I had but a haire of her head found,
eu'n as I am, ſo I ſhould vnto that haire be a thrall.
Or with faire hands-nailes (ô hand which nailes me to this death)
you ſhould haue your face (ſince Loue is ill) blemiſhed.
O wretch, what do I ſay? ſhould that faire face be defaced?
ſhould my too-much ſight cauſe ſo true a Sunne to be loſt?
Firſt let Cimmerian darknes be my onel habitacion:
firſt be mine eyes pulde out, firſt be my braine periſhed;
Ere that I ſhould conſent to doo ſo exceſſiue a dammage
vnto the earth, by the hurt of this her heauenly iewell.
O not, but ſuch loue you ſay you could haue afoorded,
as might learne Temp'rance voide of a rages euents.
O ſweet ſimplicitie: from whence ſhould Loue be ſo learned?
vnto Cupid that boy ſhall a Pedante be found?
Well: but faultie I was: Reaſon to my Paſſion yeelded,
Paſſion vnto my rage, Rage to a haſtie reuenge.
But what's this for a fault, for which ſuch faith be aboliſht,
ſuch faith, ſo ſtaneles, inuiolate, violent?
Shall I not? ô may I not thus yet refreſh the remembrance,
what ſweete ioyes I had once, and what a place I did hold?
Shall I not once obiect, that you, you graunted a fauour

vnto

vnto the man, whom now ſuch miſeries you awarde?
Bend your thoughts to the dear ſweet words which then to me giu'n were:
thinke what a world is now, thinke who hath altred her hart.
What? was I then worthie ſuch good, now worthie ſuch euill?
now fled, then cheriſhed? then ſo nie, now ſo remote?
Did not a roſed breath, from lips more roſie proceeding,
ſay, that I ſhould well finde in what a care I was had?
With much more: now what doo I finde, but Care to abhor me,
Care that I ſinke in griefe, Care that I liue baniſhed?
And baniſhed doo I liue, nor now will ſeeke a recou'rie,
ſince ſo ſhe will, whoſe will is to me more then a lawe.
If then a man in moſt ill caſe may giue you a farewell;
farewell, long farewell, all my woe, all my delight.

What this would haue wrought in her, ſhe her ſelfe could not tell: for, before her Reaſon could moderate the diſputatiō betwene Fauour & Faultines, her ſiſter, and *Miſo*, called her downe to entertaine *Zelmane*, who was come to viſite the two ſiſters; about whom, as about two Poles, the Skie of Beautie was turned: while *Gynecia* wearied her bed with her melancholie ſicknes, and made *Miſos* ſhrewdneſſe (who like a ſprite, ſet to keep a treaſure, bard *Zelmane* from any further conference) to be the Lieutenant of her iealouſie: Both ſhe and her husband, driuing *Zelmane* to ſuch a ſtreight of reſolution, either of impoſſible graunting, or dangerous refuſing, as the beſt eſcape ſhe had, was (as much as ſhe could) to auoyde their companie. So as, this day, being the fourth day after the vprore, (*Baſilius* being with his ſicke wife, conferring vpon ſuch examinations, as *Philanax*, and other of his noblemen had made of this late ſedition, all touching *Cecropia* with vehement ſuſpition of giuing either flame or fuell vnto it) *Zelmane* came with her bodie, to find her mind, which was gone long before her, and had gotten his ſeate in *Philoclea*: who now with a baſhfull cheerefulneſſe (as though ſhe were aſhamed, that ſhe could not chooſe but be glad) ioyned with her ſiſter, in making much of *Zelmane*.

And ſo as they ſate deuiſing how to giue more feathers to the wings of Time, there came to the lodge dore, ſixe maides, all in one liuerie of skarlet petticotes, which were tuckt vp almoſt to their knees, the petticotes them ſelues being in many places garniſhed with leaues, their legges naked, ſauing that aboue the anckles they had little black ſilke laces, vpon which did hang a few ſiluer belles: like which they had a little aboue their elbowes, vpon their bare armes. Vpon their haire they ware garlands of roſes and gilliflowers; and the haire was ſo dreſt, as that came againe aboue the garlandes; enterchaunging a mutuall couering: ſo as it was doubtfull, whether the haire dreſt the garlandes, or the garlands dreſt the haire. Their breaſts liberall to the eye: the face of the formoſt of them, in excellencie faire; and of the reſt louely, if not beautifull: and beautifull might haue bene, if they had not ſuffered greedy *Phœbus*, ouer-often, and harde, to kiſſe them. Their countenaunces full of a gracefull grauitie; ſo as the geſture matcht with the apparrell, it might ſeeme a wanton modeſtie, and an entiſing ſobernes. Each of them had an inſtrument of muſick in their hands, which conſorting their wel-pleaſing tunes, did charge each eare with vnſenſiblenes, that did not lend it ſelf vnto them. The Muſick entring alone into the lodge, the Ladies were all deſirous to ſee frō whence ſo pleaſant a gueſt was come: and therfore went out together; where

before they could take the paines to doubt, much leſſe to aske the queſtion of their qualitie, the faireſt of them (with a gay, but yet diſcreete demeanour) in this ſort ſpake vnto them. Moſt excellent Ladies, (whoſe excellencies haue power to make cities enuie theſe woods, and ſolitarines to be accounted the ſweeteſt companie) vouchſafe our meſſage your gracious hearing, which as it comes frō Loue, ſo comes it from louely perſons. The maides of all this coaſt of *Arcadia*, vnderſtanding the often acceſſe that certaine ſhepheards of theſe quarters, are allowed to haue in this forbidden place; and that their rurall ſports are not diſdained of you, haue ben ſtird with emulation to them, & affectiō to you, to bring forth ſome thing, which might as well breed your contentment: and therefore hoping that the goodnes of their intention, & the hurtleſnes of their ſex ſhal excuſe the breach of the commandemēt in comming to this place vnſent for, they choſe out vs, to inuite both your princely parents, and your ſelues, to a place in the woods about halfe a mile hence: where they haue prouided ſome ſuch ſports, as they truſt your gratious acceptations will interpret to be delightfull. We haue bene at the other lodge, but finding them there, buſied in weightier affaires, our truſt is, that you yet will not denie the ſhining of your eies vpon vs. The Ladies ſtood in ſome doubt, whether they ſhould goe or not, leſt *Baſilius* might be angry withall. But *Miſo* (that had bene at none of the paſtorals, & had a great deſire to lead her old ſenſes abroad to ſome pleaſure) told them plainly, they ſhould nor will nor chooſe, but go thether, and make the honeſt countrie people know, that they were not ſo ſqueamiſh as folkes thought of them. The Ladies glad to be warranted by her authoritie; with a ſmiling humbleneſſe obeied her: *Pamela* only caſting a ſeeking looke, whether ſhe could ſee *Dorus* (who poore wretch wandred halfe mad for ſorrow in the woods, crying for pardon of her, who could not heare him) but indeed was grieued for his abſence, hauing giuen the wound to him through her owne harte. But ſo the three Ladies & *Miſo* went with thoſe ſix *Nymphes*, conquering the length of the way with the force of muſique, leauing only *Mopſa* behind, who diſgraced weeping with her countenāce, becauſe her mother would not ſuffer her to ſhew her newskoured face among thē. But the place apointed (as they thought) met them halfe in their way, ſo well were they pleaſed with the ſweete tunes & prettie conuerſation of their inuiters. There found they in the midſt of the thickeſt part of the wood, a litle ſquare place, not burdened with trees, but with a boord couered, & beautified with the pleaſanteſt fruites, that Sunburnd *Autumne* could deliuer vnto thē. The maids beſought the Ladies to ſit down and taſt of the ſwelling grapes, which ſeemed great with child of *Bacchus*: and of the diuers coloured plums, which gaue the eye a pleaſant taſt before they came to the mouth. The Ladies would not ſhew to ſcorne their prouiſion, but eat, & dranke a little of their coole wine, which ſeemed to laugh for ioy to come to ſuch lips.

But after the collation was ended, and that they looked for the cōming foorth of ſuch deuiſes, as were prepared for them, there ruſht out of the woods twentie armed men, who round about enuironed them, and laying hold of *Zelmane* before ſhe could draw her ſword, and taking it from her, put hoods ouer the heads of all fower, and ſo muffled, by force ſet them on horſebacke and carried them away; the ſiſters in vaine crying for ſuccour, while *Zelmanes* harte was rent in peeces with rage of the iniurie, and diſdaine of her fortune. But when they had caried them a foure or fiue mile further, they lefte *Miſo* with a gagge in her mouth, and bound hande and foote, ſo to take her fortune: and brought the three Ladies

(by

(by that time that the Night ſeemed with her ſilence to conſpire to their treaſon) to a caſtle about ten mile frō the Lodges: where they were fain to take a boat which wayted for them. For the caſtle ſtood in the midſt of a great lake vpon a high rocke, where partly by Arte, but principallie by Nature, it was by all men eſtemed impregnable. But at the Caſtle gate their faces were diſcouered, & there were mett with a great number of torches, after whom the ſiſters knew their aunt in law, *Cecropia*. But that ſight increaſed the deadly terrour of the Princeſſes, looking for nothing but death, ſince they were in the power of the wicked *Cecropia*: who yet came vnto them, making courteſie the outſide of miſchiefe, and deſiring them not to bee diſcomforted: for they were in a place dedicated to their ſeruice, *Philoclea* (with a looke where Loue ſhined through the miſte of Feare) beſought her to be good vnto thē, hauing neuer deſerued euill of her. But *Pamelas* high harte diſdayning humbleneſſe to iniurie, Aunt, (ſaid ſhe) what you haue determined of vs I pray you doo it ſpeedily: for my part I looke for no ſeruice, where I finde violence.

But *Cecropia* (vſing no more words with them) conueyed them all three to ſeuerall lodgings (*Zelmanes* harte ſo ſwelling with ſpite, that ſhe could not bring foorth a word) and ſo lefte them: firſt taking from them their kniues, becauſe they ſhoūld do themſelues no hurte, before ſhe had determined of them: and then giuing ſuch order that they wanted nothing but libertie, & comfort, ſhee went to her ſonne, who yet kept his bed, becauſe of his wounde hee had receiued of *Zelmane*, & tolde him, whom now he had in his power. *Amphialus* was but euen then returned from far countries, where he had wonne immortal fame, both of courage & courteſie, when he met with the Princeſſes, and was hurt by *Zelmane*, ſo as hee was vtterly ignorant of all his mothers wicked deuiſes, to which he would neuer haue conſented, being (like a roſe out of a brier) an excellent ſonne of an euill mother: and now when hee heard of this, was as much amazed, as if he had ſeen the Sunne fall to the earth. And therefore deſired his mother that ſhee would tell him the whole diſcourſe, howe all theſe matters had happened. Sonne (ſaide ſhee) I will doo it willingly, & ſince all is done for you, I will hide nothing from you. And howſoeuer I might be aſhamed to tell it ſtraungers, who would thinke it wickednes, yet what is done for your ſake (how euill ſoeuer to others) to you is vertue. To begin then euen with the beginning, this doting foole *Baſilius* that now raignes, hauing liued vnmaried till hee was nigh threeſcore yeares old (and in all his ſpeaches affirming, and in all his dooinges aſſuring, that he neuer would marrie) made all the eyes of this country to bee bent vpon your father, his onely brother (but younger by thirty yeares) as vpon the vndoubted ſucceſſour: being indeed a mā worthy to raigne, thinking nothing enough for himſelfe: where this gooſe (you ſee) puts downe his head, before there be any thing neere to touch him. So that he holding place and eſtimation as heyre of *Arcadia*, obteyned me of my father the King of *Argos*, his brother helping to the concluſion, with proteſting his bachelerly intention: for elſe you may be ſure the King of *Argos*, nor his daughter would haue ſuffered their Royall bloud to bee ſtained with the baſe name of ſubiection. So that I came into this countrie as apparant Princeſſe thereof, and accordingly was courted, and followed of all the Ladies of this countrie. My porte and pompe did well become a King of *Argos* daughter: in my preſence their tongues were turned into eares, and their eares were captiues vnto my tongue. Their eyes admired my Maieſtie, & happy was he or ſhe, on whom I would ſuffer the beames therof to fall. Did I goe to church? it ſeemed the very Goddes

wayted

wayted for me, their deuotions not being ſolemnized till I was ready. Did I walke abroad to ſee any delight? Nay, my walking was the delight it ſelfe: for to it was the concourſe; one thruſting vpon another, who might ſhewe him ſelfe moſt diligent and ſeruiceable towardes me: my ſleepes were inquired after, and my wakings neuer vnſaluted: the very gate of my houſe full of principall perſons, who were glad, if their preſents had receaued a gratefull acceptation. And in this felicitie wert thou borne, the very earth ſubmitting it ſelf vnto thee to be troden on as by his Prince; & to that paſſe had my husbands vertue (by my good help) within ſhort time brought it, with a plot we laide, as wee ſhould not haue needed to haue waited the tedious worke of a naturall end of *Baſilius*; when the heauens (I thinke enuying my great felicity) then ſtopt thy fathers breath, when he breathed nothing but power and ſoueraignetie. Yet did not thy orphancie, or my widdowhood, depriue vs of the delightfull proſpect, which the hill of honour dooth yeeld, while expectation of thy ſucceſſion did bind dependencies vnto vs.

But before, (my ſonne) thou wert come to the age to feele the ſweetneſſe of authoritie, this beaſt (whom I can neuer name with patience) falſely and fooliſhly married this *Gynecia*, then a young girle, and brought her to ſit aboue me in al feaſts to turne her ſhoulder to me-warde in all our ſolemnities. It is certaine, it is not ſo great a ſpite to bee ſurmounted by ſtraungers, as by ones owne allies. Thinke then what my minde was, ſince withall there is no queſtion: The fall is greater from the firſt to the ſecond, then from the ſecond to the vndermoſt. The rage did ſwell in my harte, ſo much the more as it was faine to bee ſuppreſſed in ſilence, and diſguiſed with humblenes. But aboue all the reſt, the griefe of grieues was, when with theſe two daughters (now thy priſoners) ſhe cut of all hope of thy ſucceſſiō. It was a tedious thing to me; that my eies ſhould loke lower then any bodies, that (my ſelf being by) anothers voice then mine, ſhould be more reſpected. But it was in ſupportable vnto me, to think that not only I, but thou ſhouldſt ſpend al thy time in ſuch miſery and that the Sun ſhould ſee my eldeſt ſon leſſe then a Prince. And though I had ben a ſainct I could not chooſe, finding the chaunge this chaunge of fortune bred vnto me, for now from the multitude of followers, ſiléce grew to be at my gate, & abſence in my preſence. The gueſſe of my mind could preuaile more before; then now many of my earneſt requeſts. And thou (my deare ſonne) by the fickle multitude no more then an ordinary perſon (borne of the mud of the people) regarded. But I (remembring that in all miſeries weeping becomes fooles, and practize wiſe folks) haue tried diuers meanes to pull vs out of the mire of ſubiection. And though many times Fortune failed me, yet did I neuer faile my ſelfe. Wild beaſtes I kept in a caue harde by the lodges, which I cauſed by night to be fed in the place of their paſtorales, I as then liuing in my houſe hard by the place, and againſt the houre they were to meet (hauing kept the beaſtes without meate) then let them looſe, knowing that they would ſeeke their food there, and deuoure what they founde. But blind Fortune hating ſharpe-ſighted inuentions, made them vnluckily to bee killed. After I vſed my ſeruant *Clinias* to ſtir a notable tumult of country people: but thoſe loutes were too groſſe inſtruments for delicate conceits. Nowe laſtly, finding *Philanax* his examinations grow daungerous, I thought to play double or quit; and with a ſleight I vſed of my fine-witted wench *Arteſia*, with other maids of mine, woulde haue ſent theſe goodly inheritrixes of *Arcadia*, to haue pleaded their cauſe before *Pluto*, but that ouer-fortunatly for thē, you made me know the laſt day how vehemētly this childiſh

paſſion

paſſion of loue, doth torment you. Therfore I haue brought them vnto you, yet wiſhing rather hate then loue in you. For Hate often begetteth victory; Loue commonly is the inſtrument of ſubiection. It is true, that I would alſo by the ſame practiſe haue entrapped the parentes, but my maides failed of it, not daring to tary long about it. But this ſufficeth, ſince (theſe being taken away) you are the vndoubted inheritor, and *Baſilius* will not long ouer-liue this loſſe.

O mother (ſaid *Amphialus*) ſpeak not of doing them hurt, no more thē to mine eyes, or my hart, or if I haue any thing more deare then eyes, or hart vnto me. Let others finde what ſweetnes they will in euer fearing, becauſe they are euer feared: for my part, I will think my ſelfe highlye intitled, if I may be once by *Philoclea* accepted for a ſeruant. Well (ſaid *Cecropia*) I would I had borne you of my minde, as wel as of my body: then ſhould you not haue ſuncke vnder theſe baſe weakneſſes. But ſince you haue tied your thoughts in ſo wilful a knot, it is happie my policy hath brought matters to ſuch a paſſe, as you may both enioy affection, and vpon that builde your ſoueraignтie. Alas (ſaid *Amphialus*) my hart would faine yeeld you thanks for ſetting me in the way of felicitie, but that feare killes thē in me, before they are fully borne. For if *Philoclea* be diſpleaſed, how can I be pleaſed? if ſhe count it vnkindenes, ſhal I giue tokens of kindnes? perchance ſhe condemnes me of this action, and ſhall I triumph? perchance ſhe drownes now the beauties I loue with ſorrowfull teares, and where is then my reioycing? You haue reaſon ſaid (*Cecropia* with a fained grauitie) I will therefore ſend her away preſently, that her contentment may be recouered. No good mother (ſaide *Amphialus*) ſince ſhe is here, I would not for my life conſtraine preſence, but rather would I die then conſent to abſence. Pretie intricate follies (ſaid *Cecropia*) but get you vp, and ſee how you can preuaile with her, while I go to the other ſiſter. For after we ſhal haue our hands full to defend our ſelues, if *Baſilius* hap to beſiege vs. But remembring herſelfe, ſhe turned back and asked him what he would haue done with *Zelmane*, ſince now he might be reuenged of his hurt. Nothing but honorably, anſwered *Amphialus*, hauing deſerued no other of me, eſpecially being (as I hear) greatly cheriſhed of *Philoclea*: and therfore I could wiſh they were lodged together. O no (ſaid *Cecropia*) company confirmes reſolutions, and lonelines breeds a werines of ones thoughts, and ſo a ſooner conſenting to reaſonable profers.

But *Amphialus* (taking of his mother *Philocleas* kniues, which he kept as a relique, ſince ſhe had worne thē) gat vp, and calling for his richeſt apparell, nothing ſeemed ſumptuous inough for his miſtreſſes eyes: and that which was coſtly, he feared were not dainty: and though the inuention were delicat, he miſdoubted the making. As carefull he was too of the colour; leſt if gay, he might ſeem to glory in his iniury, & her wrong; if mourning, it might ſtrike ſome euil preſage vnto her of her fortune. At length he took a garmēt more rich then glaring, the ground being black veluet, richly embrodered with great pearle, & precious ſtones, but they ſet ſo among certaine tuffes of cipres, that the cipres was like black clowds, through which the ſtars might yeeld a dark luſter. About his neck he ware a brode & gorgeous coller; whereof the pieces enterchāgeably anſwering; the one was of diamōds & pearle, ſet with a white enamell, ſo as by the cunning of the workman it ſeemed like a ſhining ice, and the other piece being of Rubies, and Opalles, had a fierie gliſtring, which he thought pictured the two paſſions of Feare & Deſire, wherein he was enchained. His hurt (not yet fully well) made him a little halt, but he ſtraue to giue the beſt grace he coulde vnto his halting.

And

And in that ſorte hee went to *Philocleas* Chamber: whome he found (becauſe her Chamber was ouer-lightſome) ſitting of that ſide of her bedde which was from the windowe; which did caſt ſuch a ſhadowe vpon her, as a good Painter would beſtowe vpon *Venus*, when vnder the trees ſhe bewailed the murther of *Adonis*: her hands and fingers (as it were) indented one within the other: her ſhoulder leaning to her beds head, and ouer her head a ſcarfe, which did eclipſe almoſt halfe her eyes, which vnder it fixed their beames vpon the wall by, with ſo ſteddie a maner, as if in that place they might well chaunge, but not mende their obiect: and ſo remayned they a good while after his comming in, he not daring to trouble her, nor ſhe perceiuing him, till that (a little varying her thoughts ſomething quickening her ſenſes) ſhe heard him as he happed to ſtirre his vpper garment: and perceiuing him, roſe vp, with a demeanure, where in the booke of Beauty there was nothing to be read but Sorrow: for Kindenes was blotted out, & Anger was neuer there.

But *Amphialus* that had entruſted his memorie with long and forcible ſpeeches, found it ſo locked vp in amazement, that he could pike nothing out of it, but the beſeeching her to take what was don in good part, and to aſſure herſelfe there was nothing but honour meant vnto her perſon. But ſhe making no other aunſwere, but letting her handes fall one from the other, which before were ioyned (with eyes ſomething caſt aſide, and a ſilent ſigh) gaue him to vnderſtande, that conſidering his dooings, ſhe thought his ſpeeche as full of incongruitie, as her aunſwere would be voyde of purpoſe: whereupon he kneeling downe, and kiſſing her hand, (which ſhe ſuffered with a countenance witneſſing captiuitie, but not kindneſſe) he beſought her to haue pitie of him, whoſe loue went beyond the boundes of conceite, much more of vttering: that in her hands the ballance of his life or death did ſtand; whereto the leaſt motion of hers would ſerue to determine, ſhe being indeed the miſtres of his life, and he her eternall ſlaue; and with true vehemencie beſought her that he might heare her ſpeak, wherevpon ſhe ſuffered her ſweete breath to turne it ſelfe into theſe kinde of words.

Alas couſin, (ſaide ſhe) what ſhall my tongue be able to doo, which is infourmed by the eares one way, and by the eyes another? You call for pittie, and vſe crueltie; you ſay, you loue me, and yet do the effects of enmitie. You affirme your death is in my handes, but you haue brought me to ſo neere a degree to death, as when you will, you may lay death vpon me: ſo that while you ſaye I miſtreſſe of your life, I am not miſtreſſe of mine owne. You entitle your ſelfe my ſlaue, but I am ſure I am yours. If then violence, iniurie, terror, and depriuing of that which is more deare then life it ſelfe, libertie, be fit orators for affection, you may expect that I will be eaſily perſwaded. But if the neareneſſe of our kinred breede any remorſe in you, or there be any ſuch thing in you, which you call loue towarde me, then let not my fortune be diſgraced with the name of impriſonment: let not my hart waſte it ſelfe by being vexed with feeling euill, and fearing worſe. Let not me be a cauſe of my parents wofull deſtruction; but reſtore me to my ſelfe; and ſo doing I ſhall account I haue receiued my ſelfe of you. And what I ſay for my ſelfe, I ſay for my deare ſiſter, and my friend *Zelmane*: for I deſire no wel-being, without they may be partakers. With that her teares rayned downe from her heauenly eyes, and ſeemed to water the ſweete and beautifull flowers of her face.

But

But *Amphialus* was like the poore woman, who louing a tame Doe she had, aboue all earthly things, hauing long played withall, and made it feed at her hand and lappe, is constrained at length by famine (all her flocke being spent, and she fallen into extreeme pouertie) to kill the Deare, to sustaine her life. Many a pitifull looke doth she cast vpon it, and many a time doth she drawe backe her hand before she can giue the stroke. For euen so *Amphialus* by a hunger-starued affection, was compelled to offer this iniurie, and yet the same affection made him with a tormenting griefe, thinke vnkindnesse in himselfe, that he coulde finde in his hart any way to restraine her freedome. But at length, neither able to graunt, nor denie, he thus answered her. Deare Lady (said he) I will not say vnto you (how iustly soeuer I may do it) that I am nether author, nor accessarie vnto this your withholding. For since I do not redres it, I am as faulty as if I had begun it. But this I protest vnto you (and this protestation of mine, let the heauens heare, and if I lye, let them answer me with a deadly thunderbolt) that in my soule I wish I had neuer seene the light, or rather, that I had never had a father to beget such a child, then that by my means those eyes should ouerflow their own beauties, then by my means the skie of your vertue should be ouerclowded with sorrow. But woe is me, most excellent Ladye, I finde my selfe most willing to obey you: neither truelye doo mine eares receaue the least word you speak, with any lesse reuerence, then as absolute, and vnresistable commaundements. But alas, that tirant Loue, (which now possesseth the holde of all my life and reason) will no way suffer it. It is Loue, it is Loue, not I, which disobey you. What then shall I say? but that I, who am redie to lye vnder your feete, to venture, nay to loose my life at your least commandement: I am not the staye of your freedome, but Loue, Loue, which tyes you in your owne knots. It is you your selfe, that imprison your selfe: it is your beauty which makes these castlewalles embrace you: it is your own eyes, which reflect vpon themselues this iniurye. Then is there no other remedie, but that you some way vouchsafe to satisfie this Loues vehemencie; which (since it grew in your selfe) without question you shall finde it (far more then I) tractable.

But with these wordes *Philoclea* fell to so extreame a quaking, and her liuelye whitenesse did degenerate to such a deadly paleneſſe, that *Amphialus* feared some daungerous traunce: so that taking her hande, and feelinge that it (which was woonte to be one of the chiefe firebrands of *Cupid*) had all the sence of it wrapt vp in coldnes, he began humblie to beseech her to put away all feare, and to assure herselfe vpon the vowe he made thereof vnto God, and her selfe, that the vttermost forces he would euer employ to conquere her affection, should be Desire, and Desert. That promise brought *Philoclea* againe to her selfe, so that slowly lifting vp her eyes vpon him, with a countenaunce euer courteous, but then languishing, she tolde him, that he should do well to do so, if indeed he had euer tasted what true loue was: for that where now she did beare him good will, she should (if he tooke any other way) hate, and abhor the very thought of him: assuring him withall, that though his mother had taken away her knives, yet the house of Death had so many doores, as she would easilie flie into it, if euer she found her honor endaungered.

Amphialus hauing the colde ashes of Care cast vpon the coales of Desire, leauing some of his mothers Gentlewomen to waite vpon *Philoclea*, himselfe indeede a prisoner to his prisoner, and making all his authoritie to be but a foote-

stoole

ſtoole to Humblenes, went from her to his mother. To whome with words which Affection endited, but Amazement vttered, he deliuered what had paſſed between him and *Philocles*: beſeeching her to trie what her perſwaſions could doo with her, while he gaue order for all ſuch things as were neceſſarie againſt ſuch forces, as he looked dayly *Baſilius* would bring before his caſtle. His mother bad him quiet him ſelfe, for ſhe doubted not to take fit times. But that the beſt way was, firſt to let her owne Paſſion a little tire it ſelfe.

So they calling *Clinias*, and ſome other of their counſell, adüiſed vpon their preſent affaires. Firſt, he diſpatched priuat letters to all thoſe principall Lords and gentlemen of the country, whom he thought ether alliance, or friendſhip to himſelfe might drawe; with ſpeciall motions from the generall conſideration of duetie: not omitting all ſuch, whom either youthfull age, or youthlike mindes did fill with vnlimited deſires: beſides ſuch, whom any diſcontentment made hungry of change, or an ouer-ſpended want, made want a ciuill war: to each (according to the counſell of his mother) conforming himſelfe after their humors. To his friends, friendlines; to the ambitious, great expectations; to the diſpleaſed, reuenge; to the greedie, ſpoile: wrapping their hopes with ſuch cunning, as they rather ſeemed giuen ouer vnto them as partakers: then promiſes ſprong of neceſſitie. Then ſent he to his mothers brother, the king of *Argos*: but he was as then ſo ouer-laid with war himſelfe, as from thence he could attend ſmall ſuccour.

But becauſe he knew how violently rumors doo blow the ſailes of popular iudgments, and how fewe there be that can diſcerne betweene truth and truthlikenes, betweene ſhowes and ſubſtance; he cauſed a iuſtification of this his action to be written, wherof were ſowed abroad many copies, which with ſome gloſſes of probabilitie, might hide indeede the foulenes of his treaſon; and from true common-places, fetch downe moſt falſe applications. For, beginning how much the duetie which is owed to the countrie, goes beyond all other dueties, ſince in it ſelfe it conteines them all, and that for the reſpect therof, not onely all tender reſpectes of kinred, or whatſoeuer other friendſhippes, are to be laide aſide, but that euen long-helde opinions (rather builded vpon a ſecret of gouernement, then any ground of truthe) are to be forſaken. He fell by degrees to ſhew, that ſince the ende whereto any thing is directed, is euer to be of more noble reckning, then the thing thereto directed: that therefore, the weale-publike was more to be regarded, then any perſon or magiſtrate that thereunto was ordained. The feeling conſideration whereof, had moued him (though as nere of kinne to *Baſilius* as could be, yet) to ſet principally before his eyes, the good eſtate of ſo many thouſands, ouer whom *Baſilius* raigned: rather then ſo to hoodwinke himſelfe with affection, as to ſuffer the realme to runne to manifeſt ruine. The care whereof, did kindly appertaine to thoſe who being ſubalterne magiſtrates and officers of the crowne, were to be employed as from the Prince, ſo for the people; and of all other, eſpeciallie himſelfe, who being deſcended of the Royall race, and next heire male, Nature had no ſoner opened his eyes, but that the ſoyle where-upon they did looke, was to looke for at his hands a continuall carefulnes: which as from his childhood hee had euer caried; ſo now finding that his vncle had not only giuen ouer al care of gouernmēt, but had put it into the hands of *Philanax*, (a man neither in birth comparable to many, nor for his corrupt, prowde, and partiall dealing, liked of any) but beſide, had ſet his daughters (in whom the whole eſtate, as next heires thereunto, had no leſſe intereſt then him-

himſelfe) in ſo vnfit and il-guarded a place, as it was not only dangerous for their perſons, but (if they ſhould be conueied to any forraine country) to the whole common-wealth pernicious: that therefore he had brought them into this ſtrong caſtle of his, which way, if it might ſeem ſtrange, they were to conſider, that new neceſſities require new remedies: but there they ſhould be ſerued and honored as belonged to their greatnes, vntill by the generall aſſembly of the eſtates, it ſhould be determined how they ſhould to their beſt (both priuate, and publique) aduantage be matched; vowing all faith & duty both to the father & children, neuer by him to be violated. But if in the meane time, before the eſtates could be aſsẽbled, he ſhould be aſſailed, he would thẽ for his own defence take armes: deſiring al, that either tendred the dãgerous caſe of their country, or in their harts loued iuſtice, to defẽd him in this iuſt actiõ. And if the Prince ſhould cõmaund them otherwiſe, yet to know, that therein he was no more to be obeied, then if he ſhould call for poiſon to hurt himſelf withal: ſince all that was done, was done for his ſeruice, howſoeuer he might (ſeduced by *Philanax*) interprete of it: he proteſting, that whatſoeuer he ſhould do for his owne defence, ſhould be againſt *Philanax*, and no way againſt *Baſilius*.

To this effect, amplified with arguments and examples, and painted with rhetoricall colours, did he ſow abroad many diſcourſes: which as they preuailed with ſome of more quicke then ſounde conceipt, to runne his fortune with him; ſo in many did it breed a coolenеſſe, to deale violently againſt him, and a falſe-minded neutralitie to expect the iſſue. But beſides the waies he vſed to weaken the aduerſe partie, he omitted nothing for the ſtrengthning of his owne. The chiefe truſt whereof (becauſe he wanted men to keepe the field) he repoſed in the ſuretie of his caſtle; which at leſt would winne him much time, the mother of many mutations. To that therſore he bent both his outward and inward eyes, ſtriuing to make Art ſtriue with Nature, to whether of them two that fortification ſhould be moſt beholding. The ſeat Nature beſtowed, but Arte gaue the building: which as his rocky hardneſſe would not yeeld to vndermining force, ſo to open aſſaults he tooke counſell of skill, how to make all approches, if not impoſſible, yet difficult; as well at the foot of the caſtle, as round about the lake, to giue vnquiet lodgings to them, whome onely enmitie would make neighbors. Then omitted he nothing of defence, as well ſimple defence, as that which did defend by offending, fitting inſtruments of miſchiefe to places, whence the miſchiefe might be moſt liberally beſtowed. Nether was his ſmalleſt care for victuals, as well for the prouiding that which ſhould ſuffice, both in ſtore & goodneſſe, as in well preſeruing it, and wary diſtributing it, both in quantitie, and qualitie; ſpending that firſt which would keepe leſt.

But wherein he ſharpned his wits to the pearcingeſt point, was touching his men (knowing them to be the weapon of weapons, & maſter-ſpring (as it were) which makes all the reſt to ſtir; and that therfore in the Arte of man ſtood the quinteſſence, and ruling skill of all proſperous gouernment, either peaceable, or military) he choſe in number as many as without peſtring (and ſo daunger of infection) his victuall would ſerue for two yeare to maintaine; all of hable bodies, and ſome few of able mindes to direct, not ſeeking many commaunders, but contenting himſelfe, that the multitude ſhould haue obeying wittes, euery one knowing whom he ſhould commaund, and whom he ſhould obey, the place where, and the matter wherein; diſtributing each office as neere as he could, to the diſpoſition of the perſon that ſhould exerciſe it: knowing no loue, daunger, nor diſcipline can ſodainly

alter an habite in nature. Therefore would he not employ the ſtill man to a ſhifting practiſe, nor the liberall man to be a diſpenſer of his victuals, nor the kind-harted man to be a puniſher: but would exerciſe their vertues in ſorts, where they might be profitable, employing his chiefe care to know them all particularly, and throughly, regarding alſo the conſtitution of their bodies; ſome being able better to abide watching, ſome hunger, ſome labour, making his benefit of ech hability, and not forcing beyond power. Time to euery thing by iuſt proportion he allotted, and as wel in that, as in euery thing els, no ſmall errour winckt at, leſt greater ſhould be animated. Euen of vices he made his profite, making the cowardly *Clinias* to haue care of the watch, which he knew his own feare would make him very wakefully performe. And before the ſiege began, he himſelfe cauſed rumors to be ſowed, and libels to be ſpread againſt himſelfe, fuller of mallice, then witty perſuaſion: partly, to knowe thoſe that would be apt to ſtumble at ſuch motions, that he might cull them from the faithfuller band; but principally, becauſe in neceſſitie they ſhould not know when any ſuch thing were in earneſt attempted, whether it were, or not, of his owne inuention. But euen then (before the enemies face came neere to breed any terrour) did he exerciſe his men dayly in all their charges, as if Daunger had preſently preſented his moſt hideous preſence: him ſelfe rather inſtructing by example, then precept; being neither more ſparing in trauaile, nor ſpending in diet, then the meaneſt ſouldier: his hand and body diſdaining no baſe matters, nor ſhrinking from the heauy.

The onely ods was, that when others tooke breath, he ſighed; and when others reſted, he croſt his armes. For Loue paſſing thorow the pikes of Daunger, and tumbling it ſelfe in the duſt of Labour, yet ſtill made him remember his ſweete deſire, and beautifull image. Often when he had begun to commaund one, ſomewhat before halfe the ſentence were ended, his inward gueſt did ſo entertaine him, that he would breake it off, and a prettie while after end it, when he had (to the marualle of the ſtanders by) ſent himſelfe in to talke with his own thoughts. Sometimes when his hand was lifted vp to do ſome thing, as if with the ſight of *Gorgons* head he had bene ſodainely turned into a ſtone, ſo would he there abide with his eyes planted, and hand lifted, till at length, comming to the vſe of himſelfe, he would looke about whether any had perceiued him; then would he accuſe, and in himſelfe condemne all thoſe wits, that durſt affirme Idleneſſe to be the well-ſpring of Loue. O, would he ſay, all you that affect the title of wiſdome, by vngratefull ſcorning the ornaments of Nature, am I now piping in a ſhaddow? or doo ſlouthfull feathers now enwrap me? Is not hate before me, and doubt behinde me? is not daunger of the one ſide, and ſhame of the other? And doo I not ſtande vpon paine, and trauaile, and yet ouer all, my affection triumphes? The more I ſtirre about vrgent affaires, the more me thinks the very ſtirring breedes a breath to blow the coales of my loue: the more I exerciſe my thoughts, the more they encreaſe the appetite of my deſires. O ſweet *Philoclea* (with that he would caſt vp his eyes wherein ſome water did appeare, as if they would waſh themſelues againſt they ſhould ſee her) thy heauenly face is my Aſtronomie; thy ſweet vertue, my ſweet Philoſophie: let me profite therein, and farewell all other cogitations. But alas, my minde miſgiues me, for your planets beare a contrarie aſpect vnto me. Woe, woe is me, they threaten my deſtruction: and whom do they threaten this deſtruction? euen him that loues them; and by what meanes will they deſtroy, but by louing them? O deare

(though

(though killing) eyes, ſhall death head his darte with the golde of *Cupids* arrowe? Shall death take his ayme from the reſt of Beautie? O beloued (though hating *Philoclea*, how if thou beeſt mercifull, hath crueltie ſtolne into thee? Or how if thou beeſt cruell, doth crueltie looke more beautifull then euer Mercie did? Or alas, is it my deſtinie that makes Mercie cruell? Like an euill veſſell which turnes ſweete licour to ſowernes; ſo when thy grace falls vpon me, my wretched conſtitution makes it become fierceneſſe. Thus would he exerciſe his eloquence, when ſhe could not heare him, and be dumbe-ſtriken, when her preſence gaue him fit occaſion of ſpeaking: ſo that his witte could finde out no other refuge, but the comfort and counſell of his mother, deſiring her (whoſe thoughts were vnperplexed) to vſe for his ſake the moſt preuailing manners of interceſſion.

She ſeing her ſonnes ſafetie depende thereon, (though her pride much diſdained the name of a deſirer) tooke the charge vpon her, not doubting the eaſie conqueſt of an vnexpert virgin, who had alreadie with ſubtiltie and impudencie begun to vndermine a monarchy. Therefore, waighing *Philocleas* reſolutions by the counterpeaſe of her owne youthfull thoughts, which ſhe then called to minde, ſhe doubted not at leaſt to make *Philoclea* receiue the poyſon diſtilled in ſweete liquour, which ſhe with little diſguiſing had drunke vp thirſtily. Therefore ſhe went ſoftly to *Philocleas* chamber, and peeping through the ſide of the doore, then being a little open, ſhe ſawe *Philoclea* ſitting lowe vpon a cuſhion, in ſuch a giuen-ouer manner, that one would haue thought, ſilence, ſolitarineſſe, and melancholie were come there, vnder the enſigne of miſhap, to conquere delight, and driue him from his naturall ſeate of beautie: her teares came dropping downe like raine in Sunſhine, and ſhe not taking heede to wipe the teares, they hoong vpon her cheekes, and lips, as vpon cherries which the dropping tree bedeweth. In the dreſſing of her haire and apparell, ſhe might ſee neither a carefull arte, nor an arte of careleſneſſe, but euen left to a neglected chaunce, which yet could no more vnperfect her perfections, then a Dedanie way caſt, could looſe his ſquareneſſe.

Cecropia (ſtirred with no other pitie, but for her ſonne) came in, and haling kindneſſe into her countenance, What ayles this ſweet Ladie, (ſaid ſhe) will you marre ſo good eyes with weeping? ſhall teares take away the beautie of that complexion, which the women of *Arcadia* wiſh for, and the men long after? Fie of this peeuiſh ſadneſſe; in ſooth it is vntimely for your age. Looke vpon your owne bodie, and ſee whether it deſerue to pine away with ſorrow: ſee whether you will haue theſe hands (with that ſhe tooke one of her hands and kiſſing it, looked vppon it as if ſhe were enamoured with it) fade from their whiteneſſe, which makes one deſire to touch them; and their ſoftneſſe, which rebounds againe a deſire to looke on them, and become drie, leane and yellow, and make euerie bodie woonder at the chaunge, and ſay, that ſure you had vſed ſome arte before, which now you had left? for if the beauties had beene naturall, they would neuer ſo ſoone haue beene blemiſhed. Take a glaſſe, and ſee whether theſe teares become your eies: although, I muſt confeſſe, thoſe eies are able to make teares comely. Alas Madame (anſwered *Philoclea*) I know not whether my teares become mine eyes, but I am ſure mine eies thus beteared, become my fortune. Your fortune (ſaide *Cecropia*) if ſhe could ſee to attire her ſelfe, would put on her beſt raiments. For I ſee, and I ſee it with griefe, and (to tell you true) vnkindnes: you miſconſter euery thing, that only for your ſake is attempted. You thinke you are offended and are indeed defended:

fended: you eſteeme your ſelfe a priſoner, and are in truth a miſtres: you feare hate, and ſhall finde loue. And truely, I had a thing to ſay to you, but it is no matter, ſince I finde you are ſo obſtinatly melancholy, as that you woo his felowſhip: I will ſpare my paines, and hold my peace: And ſo ſtaied indeede, thinking *Philoclea* would haue had a female inquiſitiueneſſe of the matter. But ſhe, who rather wiſhed to vnknow what ſhe knewe, then to burden her hart with more hopeles knowledge, only deſired her to haue pity of her, and if indeed ſhe did meane her no hurt, then to graunt her liberty: for elſe the very griefe and feare, would proue her vnappointed executioners. For that (ſaid *Cecropia*) beleue me vpon the faith of a kings daughter, you ſhall be free, ſo ſoone as your freedome may be free of mortall danger, being brought hither for no other cauſe, but to preuent ſuch miſchiefes as you know not of. But if you thinke indeed to winne me to haue care of you, euen as of mine owne daughter, then lend your eares vnto me, and let not your mind arme it ſelfe with a wilfulneſſe to be flexible to nothing. But if I ſpeake reaſon, let Reaſon haue his due reward, perſuaſion. Then ſweet neece (ſaid ſhe) I pray you preſuppoſe, that now, euen in the midſt of your agonies, which you paint vnto your ſelfe moſt horrible, wiſhing with ſighes, and praying with vowes, for a ſoone and ſafe deliuerie. Imagin neece (I ſay) that ſome heauenly ſpirit ſhould appeare vnto you, and bid you follow him through the doore, that goes into the garden, aſſuring you, that you ſhould therby returne to your deare mother, and what other delights ſoeuer your minde eſteemes delights: would you (ſweet neece) would you refuſe to folow him, and ſay, that if he led you not through the chiefe gate, you would not enioy your ouer-deſired liberty? Would you not drink the wine you thirſt for, without it were in ſuch a glaſſe, as you eſpecially fancied? tell me (deare neece:) but I will anſwer for you, becauſe I know your reaſon & wit is ſuch, as muſt needs cõclude, that ſuch niceneſſe can no more be in you, to diſgrace ſuch a mind, then diſgracefulneſſe can haue any place in ſo faultles a beauty. Your wiſdom would aſſuredly determin, how the mark were hit, not whether the bow were of Ewe or no, wherein you ſhot. If this be ſo, & thus ſure (my deare neece) it is, then (I pray you) imagin, that I am that ſame good Angel, who grieuing in your griefe, and in truth not able to ſuffer, that bitter ſighs ſhould be ſent foorth with ſo ſweet a breath, am come to lead you, not only to your deſired, and imagined happines, but to a true and eſſentiall happines; not only to liberty, but to libertie with commandement. The way I will ſhew you (which if it be not the gate builded hitherto in your priuate choiſe, yet ſhall it be a doore to bring you through a garden of pleaſures, as ſweet as this life can bring foorth; nay rather, which makes this life to be a life: (My ſon,) let it be no blemiſh to him that I name him my ſon, who was your fathers own nephew: for you know I am no ſmall kings daughter,) my ſonne (I ſay) farre paſſing the neerneſſe of his kinred, with neerneſſe of good-will, and ſtriuing to match your matchleſſe beautie with a matchleſſe affection, doth by me preſent vnto you the full enioying of your liberty, ſo as with this gift you will accept a greater, which is, this caſtell, with all the reſt which you knowe he hath, in honorable quantitie; and will cõfirme his gift, and your receipt of both, with accepting him to be yours. I might ſay much both for the perſon and the matter; but who will crie out the Sun ſhines? It is ſo manifeſt a profit vnto you, as the meaneſt iudgement muſt ſtraight apprehend it: ſo farre is it from the ſharpneſſe of yours, therof to be ignorant. Therfore (ſweet neece) let your gratefulnes be my interceſſion, and your gentleneſſe my eloquence, and let me cary comfort to a hart

which

which greatly needs it. *Philocles* looked vpon her, and caſt downe her eie againe. Aunt (ſaid ſhe) I would I could be ſo much a miſtres of my owne mind, as to yeeld to my couſins vertuous requeſt: for ſo I conſtrue of it. But my hart is already ſet (and ſtaying a while on that word, ſhe brought foorth afterwards) to leade a virgins life to my death: for ſuch a vow I haue in my ſelfe deuoutly made. The heauens preuent ſuch a miſchiefe (ſaid *Cecropia.*) A vowe, quoth you? no, no, my deere neece, Nature, whē you were firſt borne, vowed you a woman, and as ſhe made you child of a mother, ſo to do your beſt to be mother of a child: ſhe gaue you beautie to moue loue; ſhe gaue you wit to know loue; ſhe gaue you an excellent body to reward loue: which kind of liberall rewarding is crowned with an vnſpeakable felicitie. For this, as it bindeth the receiuer, ſo it makes happy the beſtower: this doth not impouerish, but enrich the giuer. O the ſweet name of a mother: O the comfort of comforts, to ſee your children grow vp, in whom you are (as it were) eternized: if you could conceiue what a hart-tickling ioy it is to ſee your owne litle ones, with awfull loue come running to your lap, & like litle models of your ſelfe, ſtill cary you about them, you would think vnkindnes in your owne thoughts, that euer they did rebel againſt the mean vnto it. But perchāce I ſet this bleſſednes before your eies, as Captains do victorie before their ſouldiers, to which they muſt come through many paines, grieues & dangers. No, I am cōtent you ſhrinke frō this my counſel, if the way to come vnto it, be not moſt of all pleaſant. I know not (anſwered the ſweet *Philoclea*, fearing leaſt ſilence would offend for ſullennes) what contentment you ſpeake of: but I am ſure the beſt you can make of it, (which is mariage) is a burdenous yoke. Ah, deere neece (ſaid *Cecropia*) how much you are deceiued? A yoke indeed we all beare, laid vpō vs in our creation, which by mariage is not increaſed, but thus far eaſed, that you haue a yokefellow to help to draw through the cloddy cumbers of this world. O widow-nights, beare witnes with me of the difference. How often alas do I embrace the orfan-ſide of my bed, which was wont to be imprinted by the body of my deare husband, and with teares acknowledge, that I now enioy ſuch a liberty as the baniſhed mā hath; who may, if he liſt, wāder ouer the world, but is for euer reſtrained frō his moſt delightful home? that I haue now ſuch a liberty as the ſeeled doue hath, which being firſt depriued of eies, is thē by the falconer caſt off? For beleue me, neece, beleue me, mans experiēce is womās beſt eie-ſight. Haue you euer ſeene a pure Roſewater kept in a chriſtal glas? how fine it lokes? how ſweet it ſmels, while that beautifull glaſſe impriſons it? Breake the priſon, and let the water take his owne courſe, doth it not imbrace duſt, and looſe all his former ſweetneſſe, & faireneſſe? Truly ſo are we, if we haue not the ſtay, rather then the reſtraint of Criſtalline mariage. My hart melts to thinke of the ſweet comforts, I in that happy time receiued, when I had neuer cauſe to care, but the care was doubled: when I neuer reioiced, but that I ſaw my ioy ſhine in anothers eies. What ſhall I ſay of the free delight, which the hart might embrace, without the accuſing of the inward conſcicēe, or feare of outward ſhame? and is a ſolitary life as good as this? then can one ſtring make as good muſicke as a conſort: then can one colour ſet forth a beautie. But it may be, the generall conſideration of mariage doth not ſo much miſlike you, as the applying of it to him. He is my ſonne, I muſt confeſſe, I ſee him with a mothers eyes, which if they doo not much deceiue me, he is no ſuch one, ouer whom Contempt may make any iuſt chalenge. He is comely, he is noble, he is rich; but that which in it ſelfe ſhould carie all comelineſſe, nobilitie, and riches, he loues you; and he loues

you, who is beloued of others. Driue not away his affection (ſweete Ladie) and make no other Ladie hereafter proudly bragge, that ſhe hath robbed you of ſo faithfull and notable a ſeruant. *Philoclea* heard ſome pieces of her ſpeches, no otherwiſe then one doth when a tedious pratler combers the hearing of a delightfull muſicke. For her thoughts had left her eares in that captiuitie, and conueied themſelues to behold (with ſuch eies as imagination could lend them) the eſtate of her *Zelmane*: for whome how well ſhe thought many of thoſe ſayings might haue ben vſed with a farre more gratefull acceptation. Therfore liſting not to diſpute in a matter whereof her ſelfe was reſolued, and deſired not to enforme the other, ſhe onely told her, that whileſt ſhe was ſo captiued, ſhe could not conceiue of any ſuch perſuaſions (though neuer ſo reaſonable) any otherwiſe, then as conſtraints: and as conſtraints muſt needs euen in nature abhor them, which at her libertie, in their owne force of reaſon, might more preuaile with her: and ſo faine would haue returned the ſtrength of *Cecropias* perſwaſions, to haue procured freedome.

But neither her wittie words in an enemie, nor thoſe words, made more then eloquent with paſſing through ſuch lips, could preuaile in *Cecropia*, no more then her perſwaſions could winne *Philoclea* to diſauowe her former vowe, or to leaue the priſoner *Zelmane*, for the commaunding *Amphialus*. So that both ſides being deſirous, and neither graunters, they brake off conference. *Cecropia* ſucking vp more and more ſpite out of her deniall, which yet for her ſonnes ſake, ſhe diſguiſed with a viſarde of kindnes, leauing no office vnperfourmed, which might either witnes, or endeare her ſonnes affection. Whatſoeuer could be imagined likely to pleaſe her, was with liberall diligence perfourmed: Muſickes at her windowe, and eſpecially ſuch Muſickes, as might (with dolefull embaſſage) call the mind to thinke of ſorow, and thinke of it with ſweetnes; with ditties ſo ſenſiblie expreſſing *Amphialus* caſe, that euerie word ſeemed to be but a diuerſifying of the name of *Amphialus*. Daily preſents, as it were oblations, to pacifie an angrie Deitie, ſent vnto her: wherein, if the workmanſhip of the forme, had ſtriuen with the ſumptuouſnes of the matter, as much did the inuention in the application, contende to haue the chiefe excellencie: for they were as ſo many ſtories of his diſgraces, and her perfections; where the richnes did inuite the eyes, the faſhion did entertaine the eyes, and the deuice did teach the eyes, the preſent miſerie of the preſenter himſelfe awefully ſeruiceable: which was the more notable, as his authoritie was manifeſt. And for the bondage wherein ſhe liued, all meanes vſed to make knowen, that if it were a bondage, it was a bondage onely knitte in loue-knots: but in harte alreadie vnderſtanding no language but one. The Muſicke wrought indeede a dolefulnes, but it was a dolefulnes to be in his power: the dittie intended for *Amphialus*, ſhe tranſlated to *Zelmane*: the preſents ſeemed ſo many tedious clogs of a thralled obligation: and his ſeruice, the more diligent it was, the more it did exprobrate (as ſhe thought) vnto her, her vnworthie eſtate: that euen he that did her ſeruice, had authoritie of commanding her, onely conſtruing her ſeruitude in his owne nature, eſteeming it a right, and a right bitter ſeruitude: ſo that all their ſhots (how well ſoeuer leuelled) being carried awrie from the marke, by the ſtorme of her miſlike, the Prince *Amphialus* affectionately languiſhed, and *Cecropia* ſpitefullie cunning, diſdained at the barrennes of their ſucceſſe.

Which willingly *Cecropia* would haue reuenged, but that ſhe ſaw, her hurt could not be diuided from her ſonnes miſchiefe: wherefore, ſhe bethought her ſelfe

to

to attempt *Pamela*, whose beautie being equall, she hoped, if shee might bee woon, that her sonnes thoughtes would rather rest on a beautifull gratefulnes, then still be tormented with a disdaining beautie. Therefore, giuing new courage to her wicked inuentions, and vsing the more industry, because she had mist in this, and taking euen precepts of preuailing in *Pamela*, by her fayling in *Philoclea*, shee went to her chamber, and (according to her owne vngratious method of subtile proceeding) stood listning at the dore, because that out of the circumstance of her present behauiour, there might kindly arise a fitte beginning of her intended discourse.

And so shee might perceaue that *Pamela* did walke vp and downe, full of deepe (though patient) thoughts. For her look and countenance was setled, her pace soft and almost still of one measure, without any passionate gesture, or violent motion: till at length (as it were) awaking, and strengthning her selfe, Well (said she) yet this is, the best, and of this I am sure, that how soeuer they wrong me, they cannot ouer-master God. No darkenes blinds his eyes, no Iayle barres him out. To whom then else should I flie, but to him for succoure? And therewith kneeling downe, euen where she stood, she thus said. O all-seeing Light, and eternall Life of al things to whom nothing is either so great, that it may resist; or so small, that it is contemned: looke vpon my miserie with thine eye of mercie, and let thine infinite power vouchsafe to limite out some proportiõ of deliuerance vnto me, as to thee shal seem most conuenient. Let not iniurie, ô Lord, triumphe ouer me, and let my faultes by thy hande be corrected, and make not mine vniuste enemie the minister of thy Iustice. But yet, my God, if in thy wisdome, this be the aptest chastizement for my vnexcuseable follie; if this low bondage bee fittest for my ouer-hie desires; if the pride of my not-inough humble harte, bee thus to bee broken, O Lorde, I yeeld vnto thy will, and ioyfully embrace what sorrow thou wilt haue me suffer. Onely thus much let me craue of thee, (let my crauing, ô Lord, be accepted of thee, since euen that proceedes from thee) let mee craue, euen by the noblest title, which in my greatest affliction I may giue my selfe, that I am thy creature, and by thy goodnes (which is thy selfe) that thou wilt suffer some beame of thy Maiestie so to shine into my mind, that it may still depende confidently vpon thee. Let calamitie bee the exercise, but not the ouerthrowe of my vertue: let their power preuaile, but preuaile not to destruction: let my greatnes be their praie: let my paine bee the sweetnes of their reuenge: let them (if so it seem good vnto thee) vexe me with more and more punishment. But, ô Lord, let neuer their wickednes haue such a hand, but that I may carie a pure minde in a pure bodie. (And pausing a while) And ô most gracious Lorde (said she) what euer become of me, preserue the vertuous *Musidorus*.

The other parte *Cecropia* might well heare, but this latter prayer for *Musidorus*, her hart helde it, as so iewel-like a treasure, that it woulde scarce trust her owne lippes withall. But this prayer, sent to heauen, from so heauenly a creature, with such a feruent grace, as if Deuotion had borowed her bodie, to make of it selfe a most beautifull representation; with her eyes so lifted to the skie-ward, that one woulde haue thought they had begunne to flie thetherwarde, to take their place among their fellow starres; her naked hands raising vp their whole length, and as it were kissing one another, as if the right had ben the picture of *Zeale*, and the left, of *Humblenesse*, which both vnited themselues to make their suites more acceptable. Lastly, all her senses being rather tokens then instruments of her inwarde motions, altogether had so straunge a working power, that euen the harde-harted wickednesse of *Cecropia*, if it

founde not a loue of that goodnes, yet it felt an abashment at that goodnes; and if she had not a kindly remorse, yet had she an yrksome accusation of her own naughtines, so that she was put from the biasse of her fore-intended lesson. For well shee found there was no way at that time to take that mind, but with some, at lest, image of Vertue, and what the figure thereof was her hart knew not.

Yet did she prodigally spend her vttermost eloquence, leauing no argument vnproued, which might with any force inuade her excellent iudgement: the iustnes of the request being, but for marriage; the worthinesse of the suiter: then her owne present fortune, which shoulde not onely haue amendment, but felicitie: besides falsely making her belieue, that her sister would thinke her selfe happie, if now shee might haue his loue which before shee contemned: and obliquely touching, what daunger it should be for her, if her sonne should accept *Philoclea* in marriage, and so match the next heire apparant, shee being in his powre: yet plentifully periuring how extreamely her sonne loued her, and excusing the little shewes hee made of it, with the duetifull respect he bare vnto her, and taking vpon her selfe that she restrayned him, since shee found shee could set no limits to his passions. And as shee did to *Philoclea*, so did she to her, with the tribute of gifts, seeke to bring her mind into seruitude: and all other meanes, that might either establish a beholdingnesse, or at lest awake a kindnes; doing it so, as by reason of their imprisonment, one sister knew not how the other was wooed; but each might thinke, that onely shee was sought. But if *Philoclea* with sweet and humble dealing did auoid their assaults, she with the Maiestie of Vertue did beate them of.

But this day their speach was the sooner broken of, by reason that he, who stood as watche vpon the top of the keepe, did not onely see a great dust arise (which the earth sent vp, as if it would striue to haue clowdes as well as the aire) but might spie sometimes, especially when the dust (wherein the naked winde did apparaile, it selfe) was caried a side frow them, the shining of armour; like flashing of lightning, wherewith the clowdes did seeme to bee with childe; which the Sunne guilding with his beames, it gaue a sight delightfull to any, but to them that were to abide the terrour. But the watch gaue a quicke Alarum to the souldiers within, whome practise already hauing prepared, began each, with vnabashed hartes or at lest countenaunces, to looke to their charge, or obedience, which was allotted vnto them.

Onely *Clinias* and *Amphialus* did exceed the bounds of mediocrity: the one in his naturall coldnesse of cowardise, the other in heate of courage. For *Clinias* (who was bold onely in busie whisperings, and euen in that whisperingnes rather indeede confident in his cunning, that it should not bee bewraied, then any way bolde, if euer it should bee bewrayed) now that the enemy gaue a dreadfull aspect vnto the castle, his eyes saw no terror, nor eare heard any martiall sounde, but that they multiplied the hideousnesse of it to his mated minde. Before their comming he had many times felt a dreadfull expectation, but yet his minde (that was willing to ease it selfe of the burden of feare) did somtime faine vnto it selfe possibilitie of let; as the death of *Basilius*, the discord of the nobilitie, and (when other cause fayled him) the nature of chaunce serued as a cause vnto him: and sometimes the hearing other men speake valiantly, and the quietnesse of his vnassailed senses, woulde make himselfe beleue, that hee durst doo something. But now, that present daunger did

display

diſplay it ſelfe vnto his eye, and that a daungerous dooing muſt be the onely meane to preuent the danger of ſuffering, one that had marked him woulde haue iudged, that his eies would haue run into him, and his ſoule out of him; ſo vnkindly did either take a ſent of daunger. He thought the lake was too ſhallow, and the walles too thin: he miſdouted ech mans treaſon, and coniectured euery poſſibilitie of misfortune, not onely fore-caſting likely perils, but ſuch as all the planets together coulde ſcarcely haue conſpired: and already began to arme him ſelfe, though it was determined he ſhould tarrie within doores; and while he armed himſelfe, imagined in what part of the vault he would hide himſelfe, if the enimies wonne the caſtle. Deſirous he was that euery body ſhould do valiantly, but himſelfe; and therefore was afraid to ſhew his feare, but for very feare would haue hid his feare; leſt it ſhoulde diſcomfort others: but the more he ſought to diſguize it, the more the vnſutablenes of a weake broken voice to high braue wordes, and of a pale ſhaking countenance to a geſture of animating did diſcouer him.

But quite contrarily *Amphialus*, who before the enimies came was carefull, prouidently diligent, & not ſomtimes with out doubting of the iſſue; now the nearer danger approched (like the light of a glow-worme) the leſſe ſtill it ſeemed: and now his courage began to boile in choler, and with ſuch impatience to deſire to powre out both vpon the enimie, that he iſſued preſently into certaine boates he had of purpoſe and carying with him ſome choiſe men, went to the fortreſſe he had vpon the edge of the lake, which hee thought would bee the firſt thing, that the enimy woulde attempt; becauſe it was a paſſage, which commanding all that ſide of the country, and being loſt would ſtop victuall, or other ſupply, that might be brought into the caſtle & in that fortreſſe hauing ſome force of horſemen, he iſſued out with two hundred horſe, & fiue hundred footmen, embuſhed his footmen in the falling of a hill, which was ouer ſhadowed with a wood, he with his horſmen went a quarter of a mile further; aſide hand of which he might perceaue the many troupes of the enimie, who came but to take view where beſt to encampe themſelues.

But as if the ſight of the enimie had bene a Magnes ſtone to his courage he could not containe himſelfe, but ſhewing his face to the enimie, and his backe to his ſouldiers, vſed that action, as his onely oration, both of denouncing warre to the one and perſwading help of the other. Who faithfully following an example of ſuch authoritie, they made the earth to grone vnder their furious burden, and the enimies to begin to be angry with them, whom in particular they knew not. Among whom there was a young man, youngeſt brother to *Philanax*, whoſe face as yet did notbewray his ſex, with ſo much as ſhew of haire; of a minde hauing no limits of hope, nor knowing why to feare; full of iollitie in conuerſation, and lately growne a Louer. His name was *Agenor*, of all that armie the moſt beautifull: who hauing ridden in ſportfull conuerſation among the foremoſt, all armed ſauing that his beauer was vp, to haue his breath in more freedome, ſeing *Amphialus* come a pretty way before his cõpany, neither ſtaying the commaundement of the captaine, nor recking whether his face were armed, or no, ſet ſpurs to his horſe, and with youthfull brauerie caſting his ſtaffe about his head, put it then in his reſt, as carefull of comely carying it, as if the marke had beene but a ring, and the lookers on Ladies, But *Amphialus* launce was already come to the laſt of his deſcending line, and began to make the ful point of death againſt the head of this young Gentleman, when *Amphialus* perceyuing his youth and beautie, Compaſſion ſo rebated the edge of Choller, that hee

ſpared

ſpared that faire nakedneſſe, and let his ſtaffe fal to *Agenors* vampalt: ſo as both with braue breaking ſhould hurtleſſie haue perfourmed that match, but that the pittileſſe launce of *Amphialus* (angry with being broken) with an vnlucky counterbuffe ful of vnſparing ſplinters, lighted vpon that face farre fitter for the combats of *Venus*; geuing not onely a ſuddaine, but a fowle death, leauing ſcarſely any tokens of his former beautie: but his hands abandoning the reynes, and his thighes the ſaddle, hee fell ſidewarde from the horſe. Which ſight comming to *Leontius*, a deere friende of his, who in vaine had lamentably cried vnto him to ſtay, when he ſaw him beginne his careere, it was harde to ſay, whether pittie of the one, or reuenge againſt the other, helde as then the ſoueraigntie in his paſſions. But while hee directed his eye to his friende, and his hinde to his enimie, ſo worngly-conſorted a power coulde not reſiſt the ready minded force of *Amphialus*: who perceyuing his il-directed direction againſt him, ſo paide him his debt before it was lent, that hee alſo fell to the earth onely happy that one place, and one time, did finiſh both their Loues and liues together.

But by this time there had bene a furious meeting of either ſide: where after the terrible ſalutation of warlike noyſe, the ſhaking of handes was with ſharpe weapons: ſome launces according to the mettall they mett, and skill of the guider, did ſtaine themſelues in bloud; ſome flew vp in pieces, as if they would threaten heauen, becauſe they fayled on earth. But their office was quickly inherited, either by (the Prince of weapons) the ſworde, or by ſome heauy maſe, or biting axe; which hunting ſtill the weakeſt chaſe, ſought euer to light there, wher ſmalleſt reſiſtance might worſe preuent miſchiefe. The claſhing of armour, and cruſhing of ſtaues; the iuſtling of bodies, the reſounding of blowes, was the firſt parte of that ill-agreeing muſicke, which was beautified with the griſelineſſe of woundes, the riſing of duſt; the hideous falles, and grones of the dying. The very horſes angrie in their maſters anger, with loue and obedience brought foorth the effects of hate and reſiſtance, and with minds of ſeruitude, did as if they affected glorie. Some lay deade vnder their dead maiſters, whome vnknightly wounds had vniuſtly puniſhed for a faithfull dutie, Some lay vppon their Lordes by like accidents, and in death had the honour to be borne by them, whom in life they had borne. Some hauing loſt their commaunding burthens, ranne ſcattered about the fielde, abaſhed with the madneſſe of mankinde. The earth it ſelfe woont to be a buriall of men) was nowe (as it were) buried with men: ſo was the face thereof hidden with deade bodies, to whom Death hade come masked in diuerſe manners. In one place lay diſinherited heades, diſpoſſeſſed of their naturall ſeignories: in an other, whole bodies to ſee to, but that their hartes wont to be bound all ouer ſo cloſe, were nowe with deadly violence opened: in others, fowler deaths had ouglily diſplayed their trayling guttes. There lay armes, whoſe fingers yet mooued, as if they would feele for him that made them feele: and legges, which contrarie to common reaſon, by being diſcharged of their burden, were growne heauier. But no ſword payed ſo large a tribute of ſoules to the eternall Kingdome, as that of *Amphialus*, who like a Tigre, from whome a companie of Woolues did ſeeke, to rauiſh a newegotten pray; ſo he (remembring they came to take away *Philoclea*) did labour to make valure, ſtrength, choller and hatred, to anſwere the proportion of his loue, which was infinit.

There died of his handes the olde knight *Æſchylus*, who though by yeares might well haue beene allowed to vſe rather the exerciſes of wiſedome, then of courage;

yet

yet hauing a luſtie bodie and a merrie hart, he euer tooke the ſummons of Time in ieſt, or elſe it had ſo creepingly ſtollen vpon him, that he had heard ſcarcely the noiſe of his feete, and therefore was as freſh in apparell, and as forwarde in enterpriſes, as a farre yonger man: but nothing made him bolder, then a certaine prophecie had beene tolde him, that he ſhoulde die in the armes of his ſonne, and therefore feared the leſſe the arme of an enemie. But now when *Amphialus* ſword was paſſed through his throate, he thought himſelfe abuſed; but that before he died, his ſonne, indeede ſeeing his father beginne to fall, helde him vp in his armes, till a pitileſſe ſouldier of of the other ſide, with a mace brained him, making father & ſonne become twinnes in the neuer againe dying birth. As for *Drialus*. *Memnon*, *Niſus* and *Policrates*; the firſt had his eyes cut out ſo, as he could not ſee to bid the neare following death welcome: the ſeconde had met with the ſame Prophet that olde *Æſchylus* had, and hauing founde many of his ſpeeches true, beleeued this to, that hee ſhould neuer bee killed, but by his owne companions: and therefore no man was more valiant then he againſt an enimie, no man more ſuſpicious of his friends: ſo as he ſeemed to ſleep in ſecuritie, when he went to a battell, and to enter into a battaile, when he began to ſleepe, ſuch guards he would ſet about his perſon; yet miſtruſting thoſe verie guards leſt they would murther him. But now *Amphialus* helped to vnriddle his doubtes; for he ouerthrowing him from his horſe, his owne companions comming with a freſh ſupplie, preſſed him to death. *Niſus* graſping with *Amphialus*, was with a ſhort dagger ſlaine. And for *Policrates*, while hee ſhunned as much as hee could, keeping onely his place for feare of puniſhment, *Amphialus* with a memorable blowe ſtrake of his head, where, with the conuulſions of death ſetting his ſpurres to his horſe, he gaue ſo braue a charge vpon the enemie, as it grewe a prouerbe, that *Policrates* was onely valiant, after his head was off. But no man eſcaped ſo well his handes as *Phebilus* did: for hee hauing long loued *Philoclea*, though for the meanneſſe of his eſtate he neuer durſt reueale it, nowe knowing *Amphialus*, ſetting the edge of a riuall vpon the ſworde of an enemie, he helde ſtrong fight with him. But *Amphialus* had already in the daungerouſeſt places diſarmed him, and was lifting vp his ſworde to ſend him away from himſelfe, when he thinking indeede to die, O *Philoclea* (ſaid he) yet this ioyes mee, that I die for thy ſake. The name of *Philoclea* firſt ſtaied his ſworde, and when he heard him out, though he abhord him much worſe then before, yet could he not vouchſafe him the honour of dying for *Philoclea*, but turned his ſworde another way, doing him no hurt for ouer-much hatred. But what good did that to poore *Phebilus*, if eſcaping a valiant hand, hee was ſlaine by baſe ſouldiour, who ſeeing him ſo diſarmed, thruſt him through?

But thus with the well-followed valure of *Amphialus* were the other almoſt ouerthrowne, when *Philanax* (who was the marſhall of the army) came in, with newe force renuing the almoſt decayed courage of his ſouldiers. For, crying to them (and asking them whether their backes or their armes were better fighters) hee himſelfe thruſt into the preſſe, and making force and furie waite vppon diſcretion and gouernement, he might ſeeme a braue Lion who taught his yong Lionets, how in taking of a pray, to ioine courage with cunning. Then Fortune (as if ſhee had made chaſes inow of the one ſide of that bloody Teniſcourt) went of the other ſide the line, making as many fall downe of *Amphialus* followers, as before had done of *Philanaxis*, they looſing the ground, as faſt as before they had woon it, onely leauing them to keepe it, who had loſt themſelues in keeping it. Then thoſe that had killed,

inherited

inherited the lot of thoſe that had bene killed; and cruel Deaths made them lie quietly to gether, who moſt in their liues had ſought to diſquiet ech other; and many of thoſe firſt ouerthrowne, had the comfort to ſee the murtherers ouerrun them to *Charons* ferrie.

Codrus, *Cteſiphon*, and *Atilo*, loſt their liues vpon *Philanax* his ſword: but no bodies caſe was more pitied, then of a yong eſquire of *Amphialus*, called *Iſmenus*, who neuer abandoning his maiſter, and making his tender age aſpire to actes of the ſtrongeſt manhoode, in this time that his ſide was put to the worſt, and that *Amphialus* his valure was the onely ſtay of them from deliuering themſelues ouer to a ſhamefull flight, hee ſawe his maſters horſe killed vnder him. Whereupon, asking no aduiſe of no thought, but of faithfulnes and courage, he preſently lighted from his owne horſe, and with the helpe of ſome choiſe and faithfull ſeruants, gat his maſter vp. But in the multitude that came of either ſide, ſome to ſuccour, ſome to ſaue *Amphialus*, hee came vnder the the hande of *Philanax*: and the youth perceyuing he was the man that did moſt hurt to his partie, (deſirous euen to change his life for glorie) ſtrake at him, as hee rode by him, and gaue him a hurt vpon the legg, that made *Philanax* turn towards him; but ſeing him ſo yong, and of a moſt louely preſence, he rather toke pity of him; meaning to make him priſoner, & then to giue him to his brother *Agenor* to be his companion, becauſe they were not much vnlike, neither in yeeres, nor countenance. But as he loked down vpon him with that thought he ſpied wher his brother lay dead, & his friend *Leontius* by him, euen almoſt vnder the ſquiers feet. Then ſoroing not only his owne ſorow, but the paſt-comfort ſorow which he fore-knew his mother would take, (who with many teares, and miſgiuing ſighs had ſuffred him to go with his elder brother *Philanax*) blotted out all figures of pitie out of his minde, and putting foorth his horſe (while *Iſmenus* doubled two or three more valiant, then well ſet blowes) ſaying to himſelfe, Let other mothers bewaile and vntimely death as well as mine; hee thruſt him through. And the boy fearce though beautifull; & beautifull, though dying, not able to keepe his failinge feete, fell downe to the earth, which he bit for anger, repining at his Fortune, and as long as he could reſiſting Death, which might ſeeme vnwilling to; ſo long he was in taking away his yong ſtruggling ſoule.

Philanax himſelfe could haue wiſhed the blow vngiuen, when hee ſaw him fall like a faire apple, which ſome vncourteous bodie (breaking his bowe) ſhould throw downe before it were ripe. But the caſe of his brother made him forget both that, and himſelfe: ſo as ouerhaſtily preſſing vpon the retiring enemies, hee was (ere hee was aware) further engaged then his owne ſouldiers could relieue him; where being ouerthrowne by *Amphialus*, *Amphialus* glad of him, kept head aginſt his enemies while ſome of his men caried away *Philanax*.

But *Philanax*-his men as if with the loſſe of *Philanax* they had loſt the fountaine of their valure, had their courages ſo dried vp in feare; that they began to ſet honour at their backs, and to vſe the vertue of pacience in an vntimely time: when into the preſſe comes (as hard as his horſe, more afraied of the ſpurre, then the ſworde coulde carie him) a Knight in armor as darke as blacknes coulde make it, followed by none, and adorned by nothing; ſo far without authoritie that hee was without knowledge. But vertue quickly made him knowne, and admiration bred him ſuch authoritie, that though they of whoſe ſide he came knew him not, yet they all knew it was fitte to obey him: and while he was followed by the valianteſt, hee made way

for

for the vileſt. For, taking part with the beſiegers, he made the *Amphialians* bloud ſerue for a capariſon to his horſe, and a decking to his armour. His arme no oftner gaue blowes, then the blowes gaue wounds, then the wounds gaue deathes: ſo terrible was his force, and yet was his quicknes more forcible then his force, and his iudgement more quick then his quicknes. For though his ſword went faſter then eyelight could follow it, yet his owne iudgement went ſtill before it. There died of his hand, *Sarpedon*, *Pliſtonax*, *Strophilus*, and *Hippolitus*, men of great proofe in warres, and who had that day vndertaken the guard of *Amphialus*. But while they ſought to ſaue him, they loſt the fortreſſes that Nature had placed them in. Then ſlew he *Megalus*, who was a little before proude, to ſee himſelfe ſtained in the bloud of his enemies: but when his owne bloud came to be married to theirs, he then felt, that Crueltie dooth neuer enioy a good cheape glorie. After him ſent he *Palemon*, who had that daye vowed (with fooliſh brauerie) to be the death of tenne: and nine already he had killed, and was careful to performe his (almoſt performed) vowe, when the Blacke Knight helpt him to make vp the tenth himſelfe.

And now the often-changing Fortune began alſo to chaunge the hewe of the battailes. For at the firſt, though it were terrible, yet Terror was deckt ſo brauelie with rich furniture, guilt ſwords, ſhining armours, pleaſant penſils, that the eye with delight had ſcarce leaſure to be afraide: But now all vniuerſally defiled with duſt, bloud, broken armours, mangled bodies, tooke away the maske, and ſette foorth Horror in his owne horrible manner. But neither could danger be dreadfull to *Amphialus* his vndiſmayable courage, nor yet ſeeme ougly to him, whoſe truely-affected minde, did ſtill paint it ouer with the beautie of *Philoclea*. And therefore he, rather enflamed then troubled with the encreaſe of dangers, and glad to finde a woorthie ſubiect to exerciſe his courage, ſought out this newe Knight, whom he might eaſilie finde: for he, like a wanton rich man, that throwes downe his neighbours houſes, to make himſelfe the better proſpecte, ſo had his ſworde made him ſo ſpatious a roome, that *Amphialus* had more cauſe to wonder at the finding, then labour for the ſeeking: which, if it ſtirred hate in him, to ſee how much harme he did to the one ſide, it prouoked as much emulation in him, to perceaue how much good he did to the other ſide. Therefore, they approaching one to the other, as in two beautifull folkes, Loue naturally ſtirres a deſire of ioyning, ſo in their two courages Hate ſtirred a deſire of triall. Then began there a combatte betweene them, worthy to haue had more large liſtes, and more quiet beholders: for with the ſpurre of Courage, and the bitte of Reſpect, each ſo guided himſelfe, that one might well ſee, the deſire to ouercome, made them not forget how to ouercome: in ſuch time and proportion they did employ their blowes, that none of *Ceres* ſeruaunts could more cunningly place his flaile: while the left foote ſpurre ſet forward his owne horſe, the right ſet backward the contrarie horſe, euen ſometimes by the aduauntage of the enemies legge, while the left hande (like him that helde the ſterne) guyded the horſes obedient courage: All done in ſuch order, that it might ſeeme, the minde was a right Prince indeede, who ſent wiſe and diligent Lieutenants into each of thoſe well gouerned partes. But the more they fought, the more they deſired to fight; and the more they ſmarted, the leſſe they felte the ſmarte: and now were like to make a quicke proofe, to whome Fortune or Valour would ſeeme moſt friendly, when in comes an olde Gouernour of *Amphialus*, alwayes a good Knight, and carefull

of his charge; who giuing a sore wound to the blacke Knights thigh, while he thought not of him, with an other blowe slewe his horse vnder him. *Amphialus* cried to him, that he dishonoured him: You say well (answered the olde Knight) to stand now like a priuate souldier, setting your credite vpon particular fighting, while you may see *Basilius* with all his hoste, is getting betweene you and your towne. He looked that way, and found that true indeede, that the enemie was beginning to encompasse him about, and stoppe his returne: and therefore causing the retreite to be sounded, his Gouernour ledde his men homeward, while hee kept himselfe still hindmost, as if hee had stoode at the gate of a sluse, to let the streame goe, with such proportion, as should seeme good vnto him: and with so manfull discretion perfourmed it, that (though with losse of many of his men) he returned in him selfe safe, and content, that his enemies had felte, how sharpe the sworde could bite of *Philocleas* Louer. The other partie being sorie for the losse of *Philanax*, was yet sorrier when the blacke Knight could not be found. For he hauing gotten a horse, whom his dying master had bequeathed to the world, finding him selfe sore hurt, and not desirous to be knowen, had in the time of the enemies retiring, retired away also: his thigh not bleeding bloud so fast, as his harte bledde reuenge. But *Basilius* hauing attempted in vaine to barre the safe returne of *Amphialus*, encamped himselfe as strongly as he could, while he (to his griefe) might heare the ioy was made in the towne by his owne subiects, that he had that day sped no better. For *Amphialus* (being well beloued of that people) when they saw him not vanquished, they esteemed him as victorious, his youth setting a flourishing shew vpon his worthinesse, and his great nobilitie ennobling his dangers.

But the first thing *Amphialus* did, being returned, was to visite *Philocles*, and first presuming to cause his dreame to be song vnto her (which he had seen the night before he fell in loue with her) making a fine boy he had, accorde a prettie dolefulnes vnto it. The song was this.

NOw was our heau'nly vaulte depriued of the light
With Sunnes depart: and now the darkenes of the night
Did light those beamy stars which greater light did darke:
Now each thing that enioy'd that firie quickning sparke
(Which life is cald) were mou'd their spirits to repose,
And wanting vse of eyes their eyes began to close:
A silence sweet each where with one consent embraste
(A musique sweet to one in carefull musing plaste)
And mother Earth, now clad in mourning weeds, did breath
A dull desire to kisse the image of our death:
When I, disgraced wretch, not wretched then, did giue
My senses such reliefe, as they which quiet liue,
Whose braines broile not in woes, nor brests with beatings ake,
With natures praise are wont in safest home to take.
Far from my thoughts was ought, whereto their minds aspire,
Who vnder courtly pompes doo hatch a base desire.
Free all my powers were from those captiuing snares,
Which heau'nly purest gifts defile in muddy cares.
No could my soule it selfe accuse of such a faulte,

As tender conſcience might with furious pangs aſſaulte.
But like the feeble flower (whoſe ſtalke cannot ſuſtaine
His weighty top) his top downeward doth drooping leane:
Or as the ſilly birde in well acquainted neſt
Doth hide his head with cares but onely how to reſt:
So I in ſimple courſe, and vnentangled minde
Did ſuffer drouſie lids mine eyes then cleare to blinde;
And laying downe my head, did natures rule obſerue,
Which ſenſes vp doth ſhut the ſenſes to preſerue.
They firſt their vſe forgot, then fancies loſt their force;
Till deadly ſleepe at length poſſeſt my liuing coarſe.
A liuing coarſe I lay: but ah, my wakefull minde
(Which made of heau'nly ſtuffe no mortall chaunge doth blind)
Flew vp with freer wings of fleſhly bondage free;
And hauing plaſte my thoughts, my thoughts thus placed me.
Me thought, nay ſure I was, I was in faireſt wood
Of Samothea lande; a lande, which whilom ſtood
An honour to the world, while Honour was their ende,
And while their line of yeares they did in vertue ſpende.
But there I was, and there my calmie thoughts I fedd
On Natures ſweet repaſt, as healthfull ſenſes ledd.
Her giftes my ſtudy was, her beauties were my ſporte:
My worke her workes to know, her dwelling my reſorte.
Thoſe lamps of heau'nly fire to fixed motion bound,
The euer-turning ſpheares, the neuer-mouing ground;
What eſſence deſt nie hath; if fortune be or no;
Whence our immortall ſoules to mortall earth doo ſlowe:
What life it is, and how that all theſe liues doo gather,
With outward makers force, or like an inward father.
Such thoughts, me thought, I thought, and ſtraind my ſingle mind
Then void of neerer cares, the depth of things to find.
When lo with hugeſt noiſe (ſuch noiſe a tower makes
When it blowne downe with winde a fall of ruine takes)
(Or ſuch a noiſe it was, as higheſt thunders ſende,
Or canons thunder-like, all ſhot togither, lende)
The Moone aſunder rent; whereout with ſodaine fall
(More ſwift then falcons ſtoope to feeding Falconers call)
There came a chariot faire by doues and ſparrowes guided:
Whoſe ſtormelike courſe ſtaid not till hard by me it bided.
I wretch aſtoniſht was, and thought the deathfull doome
Of heauen, of earth, of hell, of time and place was come.
But ſtreight there iſſued forth two Ladies (Ladies ſure
They ſeemd to me) on whom did wait a Virgin pure.
Straunge were the Ladies weeds; yet more vnfit then ſtrange.
The firſt with cloth's tuckt vp as Nymphes in woods do range;
Tuckt vp euen with the knees, with bowe and arrowes preſt:
Her right arme naked was, diſcouered was her breſt.

But heauy was her pace, and ſuch a meagre cheere,
As little hunting minde (God knowes) did there appeere.
The other had with arte (more then our women knowe,
As ſtuffe meant for the ſale ſet out to glaring ſhowe)
A wanton womans face, and with curld knots had twinde
Her haire, which by the helpe of painters cunning, ſhinde.
When I ſuch gueſts did ſee come out of ſuch a houſe,
The mountaines great with childe I thought brought foorth a mouſe.
But walking forth, the firſt thus to the ſecond ſaide,
Venus come on: ſaid ſhe, Diane you are obaide.
Thoſe names abaſht me much, when thoſe great names I hard:
Although their fame (me ſeemd) from truth had greatly iard.
As I thus muſing ſtood, Diana cald to her
The waiting Nymphe, a Nymphe that did excell as farr
All things that earſt I ſawe, as orient pearles exceed,
That which their mother hight, or els their ſilly ſeed.
Indeed a perfect hewe, indeed a ſweet conſent
Of all thoſe Graces giftes the heauens haue euer lent.
And ſo ſhe was attirde, as one that did not prize
Too much her peerles parts, nor yet could them deſpiſe.
But cald, ſhe came apace; a pace wherein did moue
The bande of beauties all, the little world of Loue.
And bending humbled eyes (ô eyes the Sunne of ſight)
She waited miſtreſſe will: who thus diſcloſd her ſpright.
Sweet Mira mine (quoth ſhe) the pleaſure of my minde,
In whom of all my rules the perfect proofe I finde,
To onely thee thou ſeeſt we graunt this ſpeciall grace
Vs to attend, in this moſt priuate time and place.
Be ſilent therefore now, and ſo be ſilent ſtill
Of that thou ſeeſt: cloſe vp in ſecrete knot thy will.
She anſwer'd was with looke, and well perform'd beheſt:
And Mira I admirde: her ſhape ſonke in my breſt.
But thus with irefull eyes, and face that ſhooke with ſpite
Diana did begin. What moude me to inuite
Your preſence (ſiſter deare) firſt to my Moony ſpheare,
And hither now, vouchſafe to take with willing eare.
I know full well you know, what diſcord long hath raign'd
Betwixt vs two; how much that diſcord ſoule hath ſtain'd
Both our eſtates, while each the other did deprаue,
Proofe ſpeakes too much to vs that feeling triall haue.
Our names are quite forgot, our temples are defac'd:
Our offrings ſpoil'd, our prieſts from prieſthood are diſplac'd.
Is this the fruite of ſtrife? thoſe thouſand churches hie,
Thoſe thouſand altars faire now in the duſt to lie?
In mortall mindes our mindes but planets names preſerue:
No knees once bowed, forſooth, for them they ſay we ſerue.
Are we their ſeruants growne? no doubt a noble ſtaye:

Celestiall powers to wormes, Ioues children serue to claye.
But such they say we be: this praise our discord bred,
While we for mutuall spight, a striuing passion fed.
But let vs wiser be; and what foule discorde brake,
So much more strong againe let fastest concorde make.
Our yeares doo it require: you see we both doo feele
The weakning worke of Times for euer-whirling wheele.
Although we be diuine, our grandsire Saturne is
With ages force decay'd, yet once the heauen was his.
And now before we seeke by wise Apollos skill
Our young yeares to renew (for so he saith he will)
Let vs a perfect peace betweene vs two resolue:
Which lest the ruinous want of gouernment dissolue,
Let one the Princesse be, to her the other yeeld:
For vaine equalitie is but contentions field.
And let her haue the giftes that should in both remaine:
In her let beautie both, and chastnesse fully raigne.
So as if I preuaile, you giue your giftes to me:
If you, on you I lay what in my office be.
Now resteth onely this, which of vs two is she,
To whom precedence shall of both accorded be.
For that (so that you like) hereby doth lie a youth
(She beckned vnto me) as yet of spotlesse truth,
Who may this doubt discerne: for better, witt, then lot
Becommeth vs: in vs fortune determines not.
This crowne of amber faire (an amber crowne she held)
To worthiest let him giue, when both he hath beheld:
And be it as he saith. Venus was glad to heare
Such proffer made, which she well showd with smiling cheere.
As though she were the same, as when by Paris doome
She had chiefe Goddesses in beautie ouercome.
And smirkly thus gan say. I neuer sought debate
Diana deare; my minde to loue and not to hate
Was euer apt: but you my pastimes did despise.
I neuer spited you, but thought you ouerwise.
Now kindnesse profred is, none kinder is then I:
And so most ready am this meane of peace to trie.
And let him be our iudge: the lad doth please me well.
Thus both did come to me, and both began to tell
(For both togither spake, each loth to be behinde)
That they by solemne oth their Deities would binde
To stand vnto my will: their will they made me know.
I that was first agast, when first I saw their showe:
Now bolder waxt, waxt prowde, that I such sway must beare:
For neere acquaintance dooth diminish reuerent feare.
And hauing bound them fast by Styx, they should obaye
To all what I decreed, did thus my verdict saye.

How ill both you can rule, well hath your diſcord taught:
Ne yet for ought I ſee, your beauties merit ought.
To yonder Nymphe therefore (to Mira *I did point)*
The crowne aboue you both for euer I appoint.
I would haue ſpoken out: but out they both did crie;
Fie, fie, what haue we done? vngodly rebell fie.
But now we needs muſt yeelde, to that our othes require.
Yet thou ſhalt not go free (quoth Venus*) ſuch a fire*
Her beautie kindle ſhall within thy fooliſh minde,
That thou full oft ſhalt wiſh thy iudging eyes were blinde.
*Nay then (*Diana *ſaid) the chaſtneſſe I will giue*
In aſhes of deſpaire (though burnt) ſhall make thee liue.
Nay thou (ſaid both) ſhalt ſee ſuch beames ſhine in her face
That thou ſhalt neuer dare ſeeke helpe of wretched caſe.
And with that curſed curſe away to heauen they fled,
Firſt hauing all their giftes vpon faire Mira *ſpred.*
The reſt I cannot tell, for therewithall I wak'd
And found with deadly feare that all my ſinewes ſhak'd.
Was it a dreame? O dreame, how haſt thou wrought in me,
That I things erſt vnſeene ſhould firſt in dreaming ſee?
And thou ô traytour Sleepe, made for to be our reſt,
How haſt thou framde the paine wherewith I am oppreſt?
O cowarde Cupid *thus dooſt thou thy honour keepe,*
Vnarmde (alas) vnwarn'd to take a man aſleepe?

Laying not onely the conqueſts, but the hart of the conquerour at her feet. *** But ſhe receiuing him after her woonted ſorrowfull (but otherwiſe vnmoued) mãner, it made him thinke, his good ſucceſſe was but as a pleaſant monumẽt of a dolefull buriall: Ioy it ſelfe ſeeming bitter vnto him, ſince it agreed not to her taſte.

Therefore, ſtill crauing his mothers helpe to perſuade her, he himſelfe ſent for *Philanax* vnto him, whome he had not onely long hated, but now had his hate greatly encreaſed by the death of his Squire *Iſmenus*. Beſides he had made him as one of the chiefe cauſes that mooued him to this rebellion, and therefore was enclined (to colour the better his action, and the more to embrewe the handes of his accomplices by making them guiltie of ſuch a treſpaſſe) in ſome formall ſort to cauſe him to be executed: being alſo greatly egged thereunto by his mother, and ſome other, who long had hated *Philanax*, onely becauſe he was more worthy, then they to be loued.

But while that deliberation was handeled, according rather to the humour then the reaſon of ech ſpeaker, *Philoclea* comming to knowledge of the hard plight wherein *Philanax* ſtood, ſhe deſired one of the gentlewomen appoynted to waite vpon her, to goe in her name, and beſeech *Amphialus*, that if the loue of her had any power of perſwaſion in his minde, he would lay no further puniſhment, then impriſonment, vppon *Philanax*. This meſſage was deliuered euen as *Philanax* was entring to the preſence of *Amphialus*, comming (according to the warning was giuen him) to receyue a iudgement of death. But when he with manfull reſolution attended the fruite of ſuch a tyrannicall ſentence, thinking it wrong, but

no

no harme to him that ſhoulde die in ſo good a cauſe; *Amphialus* turned quite the fourme of his pretended ſpeech, & yeelded him humble thankes, that by his meanes he had come to that happineſſe, as to receiue a commaundement of his Ladie: and therfore he willingly gaue him libertie to returne in ſafetye whether he would, quiting him, not onely of all former grudge, but aſſuring him that he would be willing to do him any friendſhipp, and ſeruice: onely deſiring thus much of him, that hee would let him know the diſcourſe and intent of *Baſilius*-his proceeding.

Truely my Lorde (anſwered *Philanax*) if there were any ſuch knowne to mee, ſecrete in my maiſters counſaile, as that the reuealing thereof might hinder his good ſucceſſe, I ſhould loath the keeping of my blood, with the loſſe of my faith; & would thinke the iuſt name of a traitour a hearde purchaſe of a fewe yeares liuing. But ſince it is ſo, that my maiſter hath indeede no way of priuie practiſe, but meanes openly & forcibly to deale againſt you, I will not ſticke in few words to make your required declaration. Then told he him in what a maze of a mazemēt, both *Baſilius* & *Gynecia* were, when they miſt their childrē & *Zelmane*. Somtimes apt to ſuſpect ſome practiſe of *Zelmane*, becauſe ſhe was a ſtraunger; ſomtimes doubting ſome reliques of the late mutinie, which doubt was rather encreaſed, thē any way ſatisfied, by *Miſo*: who (being foūd, almoſt dead for hunger, by certaine Countrey-people) brought home word, with what cūning they were trayned out, & with what violence they were caried away. But that within a few dayes they came to knowledge wher they were, by *Amphialus*-his own letters ſent abroad to procure cōfederates in his attemptes. That *Baſilius* his purpoſe was neuer to leaue the ſieg of this town, til he had takē it, & reuēged the iniurie done vnto him. That he meant rather to winne it by time, & famine, then by force of aſſault: knowing howe valiant men he had to deale withall in the towne: that he had ſent order, that ſupplyes of ſouldiours, pioners, and all thinges elſe neceſſarie, ſhould dayly be brought vnto him: ſo as, my Lord (ſayde *Philanax*) let me nowe, hauing receyued my life by your grace. let me giue you your life and and honour by my counſaile; proteſting vnto you, that I cannot chooſe but loue you, being my maiſter-his nephewe; and that I wiſh you well in all cauſes but this, You knowe his nature is as apte to forgiue, as his power is able to conquere. Your fault paſſed is excuſable, in that Loue perſwaded, and youth was perſwaded. Doo not vrge the effects of angrie victorie, but rather ſeeke to obtaine that conſtantly by courteſie, which you can neuer aſſuredly enioy by violence. One might eaſily haue ſeene in the cheare of *Amphialus*, that diſdainfull choller would faine haue made the aunſwere for him, but the remembraunce of *Philoclea* ſerued for forcible barriers betweene Anger, and angry effects: ſo as he ſaid no more, but that he woulde not put him to the trouble to giue him any further counſaile: But that hee might returne, if hee liſted, preſently. *Philanax* glad to receyue an vncorrupted libertie, humbly accepted his fauourable conuoy out of the towne; and ſo departed, not viſitinge the Princeſſes, thinking it might be offenſiue to *Amphialus*, and no way fruitfull to them who were no way but by force to be reskued.

The poore Ladies indeede, not ſuffered either to meet together, or to haue conference with any other, but ſuch as *Cecropia* had alreadie framed to ſing al their ſongs to her tune, ſhe herſelfe omitting no day, and catching holde of euerie occaſion to mooue forwarde her ſonnes deſire, and remoue their owne reſolutions: vſing the ſame arguments to the one ſiſter, as to the other; determining that whom ſhe could winne firſt, the other ſhoulde (without her ſonnes knowledge) by poyſon be made away.

away. But though the reaſons were the ſame to both, yet the handling was diuerſe, according as ſhe ſaw their humours to prepare a more or leſſe aptneſſe of apprehenſion. This day hauing vſed long ſpeech to *Philoclea*, amplifying not a little the great duetifulneſſe her ſonne had ſhewed in deliuering *Philanax*: of whom ſhe could get no aunſwere, but a ſilence ſealed vp in vertue, & ſo ſweetly graced, as that in one inſtant it caried with it both reſiſtance, and humblenes: *Cecropia* threatning in her ſelfe to rūne a more rugged race with her, went to her ſiſter *Pamela*: who that day hauing wearied her ſelf with reading, & with the height of her hart diſdaining to keep companie with any of the Gentlewomē appointed to attend her, whome ſhe accounted her iaylours, was working vppō a purſe certain Roſes & Lillies, as by the fineneſſe of the worke, one might ſee ſhe had borowed her wittes of the ſorow that then owed them, & lent them wholy to that exerciſe. For the flowers ſhee had wrought, caried ſuch life in thē, that the cūningeſt painter might haue learned of her needle: which with ſo prety a maner made his careers to & fro through the cloth, as if the needle it ſelf wold haue ben loth to haue gone frōward ſuch a miſtres, but that it hoped to return thitherward very quickly againe: the cloth loking with many eies vpon her, & louingly embracing the wounds ſhe gaue it: the ſheares alſo were at hand to behead the ſilke, that was grown to ſhort. And if at any time ſhe put her mouth to bite it off it ſeemed, that where ſhe had beene long in making of a Roſe with her hands, ſhee would in an inſtāt make Roſes with her lips; as the Lillies ſemed to haue their whiteneſſe, ráther of the hand that made them, then of the matter wherof the were made; & that they grew therby the Sūnes of her eys, & were refreſhed by the moſt indiſcōfort comfortable ayre, which an vnwares ſigh might beſtow vpon them. But the colours for the ground were ſo well choſen, neither ſullenly darke, nor glaringly lightſome, & ſo wel proportioned, as that, though much cunning were in it, yet it was but to ſerue for an ornament of the principall woorke; that it was not without marualle to ſee, how a mind which could caſt a careleſſe ſemblant vpon the greateſt conflictes of Fortune, could commaund it ſelfe to take care for ſo ſmall matters. Neither had ſhe neglected the daintie dreſſing of her ſelfe: but as if it had been her mariage time to Affliction, ſhe rather ſemed to remember her owne worthineſſe, then the vnworthineſſe of her husband. For wel one might perceyue ſhe had not reiected the counſaile of a glaſſe, & that her hands had pleaſed themſelues, in paying the tribute of vndeceyuing skill, to ſo high perfections of Nature.

The ſight whereof ſo diuerſe from her ſiſter, (who rather ſuffered ſorrowe to dreſſe it ſelfe in her beautie, then that ſhe would beſtow any intertainment of ſovnwelcome a gueſt made *Cecropia* take a ſuddaine aſſuredneſſe of hope, that ſhe ſhould obtaine ſomewhat of *Pamela*: thinking (according to the ſquaring out of her owne good nature) that beautie, careſully ſet foorth, woulde ſoone proue a ſigne of an vnrefuſing harborough. Animated wherewith, ſhee ſate downe by *Pamela*: and taking the purſe, and with affected curioſitie looking vpon the worke, Full happie is he (ſaide ſhe) at leaſt if hee knew his owne happineſſe, to whom a purſe in this maner, and by this hand wrought, is dedicated. In faith he ſhall haue cauſe to account it, not as a purſe for treaſure, but as a treaſure it ſelfe, worthie to bee purſed vp in the purſe of his owne hart. And thinke you ſo indeede (ſaide *Pamela* halfe ſmiling) I promiſe you I wrought it, but to make ſome tedious houres beleeue, that I thought not of them: for elſe I valued it, but euen as a verie purſe. It is the right nature (ſaide *Cecropia*) of Beauty, to worke vnwitting effectes of wonder. Truely (ſaide *Pamela*) I neuer thought till now, that this outward glaſſe, intitled Beautie, which it pleaſeth

you

you to lay to my (as I thinke) vnguiltie charge, was but a pleaſaunt mixture of naturall colours, delightfull to the eye, as muſicke is to the eare, without any further conſequence: ſince it is a thing, which not onely beaſtes haue; but euen ſtones and trees many of them doo greatly excell in it. That other thinges (anſwered *Cecropia*) haue ſome portion of it, takes not away the excellencie of it, where indeede it doth excell: ſince we ſee, that euen thoſe beaſtes, trees, & ſtones, are in the name of Beauty onely highly praiſed. But that the beautie of humaine perſons be beyond al other things there is great likelihood of reaſon, ſince to them onely is giuen the iudgement to diſcerne Beautie; and among reaſonable wightes, as it ſeemes, that our ſex hath the preheminence, ſo that in that preheminence, Nature counteruailes al other liberalities, wherein ſhe may bee thought to haue dealte more fauourably towarde mankind. How doo men crowne (thinke you) themſelues with glorie, for hauing either by force brought others to yeelde to their minde, or with long ſtudie, and premeditated orations, perſwaded what they would haue perſwaded? and ſee, a faire woman ſhall not onely commaund without authoritie, but perſwade without ſpeaking. She ſhall not neede to procure attention, for their owne eyes will chaine their eares vnto it. Men venture liues to cõquere; ſhe conqueres liues without venturing. She is ſerued, and obeyed, which is the moſt notable, not becauſe the lawe: ſo commaund it, but becauſe they become lawes themſelues to obey her; not for her parents ſake, but for her own ſake. She need not diſpute, whether to gouerne by Feare or Loue, ſince without her thinking thereof, their loue will bring foorth feare, and their feare willl fortifie their loue: and ſhee neede not ſeeke offenſiue, or defenſiue force, ſince her onely lippes may ſtande for ten thouſand ſhieldes, and tenne thouſand vneuitable ſhot goe from her eyes. Beautie, Beautie (deere Neece) is the crowne of the feminine greatnes; which gifte, on whom ſoeuer the heauens (therein moſt nigardly) do beſtowe, without queſtion, ſhe is bound to vſe it to the noble purpoſe, for which it is created: not onely winning, but preſeruing; ſince that indeede is the right happines, which is not onely in it ſelfe happie, but can alſo deriue the happines to another. Certainly Aunt (ſaid *Pamela*) I feare me you will make me not only think my ſelfe fairer then euer I did, but think my fairenes a matter of greater valew then heretofore I could imagine it. For I euer (til now) conceaued theſe conqueſts you ſpeake of, rather to proceed from the weakenes of the conquered, then from the ſtrength of the conquering power: as they ſay, the Cranes ouerthrow whole battailes of *Pygmees*, not ſo much of their Craniſh courage, as becauſe the other are *Pygmees*, and that wee ſee, young babes thinke babies of woonderfull excellencie, and yet the babies are but babies. But ſince your elder yeares, & abler iudgement, finde Beautie to be worthy of ſo incomparable eſtimation, certainly me thinks it ought to be held in dearnes, according to the excellencie, and (no more then we would do of things which we account pretious) euer to ſuffer it to be defiled.

Defiled? (ſaide *Cecropia*) Mary God forbid that my ſpeech ſhoulde tend to any ſuch purpoſe, as ſhould deſerue ſo foul a title. My meaning is to ioyne your beauty to loue; your youth to delight. For truely, as coulours ſhould be as good as nothing if there were no eyes to behold them: ſo is Beauty nothing, without the eye of Loue behold it: and therfore, ſo far is it from defiling it, that it is the onely honoring of it, the onely preſeruing of it: for Beauty goes awaye, deuoured by Time, but where remaines it euer flouriſhing, but in the hart of a true louer? And ſuch a one (if euer there were any) is my ſon: whoſe loue is ſo ſubiected vnto you, that rather thē breed

any

any offence vnto you, it will not delight it ſelfe in beholding you. There is no effect of his loue (anſwered *Pamela*) better pleaſeth mee then that: but as I haue often anſwered you, ſo, reſolutely I ſay vnto you, that he muſt get my parents conſent, and then he ſhall know further of my minde; for, without that, I know I ſhould offend God. O ſweet youth (ſaid *Cecropia*) how vntimely ſubiect it is to deuotion(No, no ſweet neece, let vs old folks thinke of ſuch preciſe conſiderations; do you enioy the heauen of your age, whereof you are ſure: and like good houſholders, which ſpend thoſe thinges that will not bee kept, ſo do you pleaſantly enioy that, which elſe will bring an ouer-late repentance, when your glas ſhall accuſe you to your face, what a change there is in you. Do you ſee how the ſpring-time is full of flowers, decking it ſelfe with them, and not aſpiring to the fruits of *Autumne*: what leſſon is that vnto you, but that in the april of your age, you ſhould be like *April*? Let not ſome of them for whom alredy the graue gapeth, and perhaps enuy the felicity in you, which thẽſelues cannot enioy, perſwade you to loſe the holde of occaſion; while it may not onely be taken, but offers, nay ſues to bee taken: which if it bee not now taken, wil neuer hereafter be ouertaken. Your ſelfe know, how your father hath refuſed all offers made by the greateſt Princes about you, & wil you ſuffer your beauty to be hidden in the wrinckles of his peuiſh thoughts? If hee be peuiſh (ſaid *Pamela*) yet is he my father, and how beautifull ſo euer I be, I am his daughter: ſo as God claimes at my hands obedience, and makes me no iudge of his imperfections.

Theſe often replies vpon conſcience in *Pamela*; made *Cecropia* thinke, that there was no righter waye for her, then as ſhee had (in her opinion) ſet her in liking of Beautie, with perſwaſion not to ſuffer it to be voide of purpoſe, ſo if ſhe could make her leſſe feeling of thoſe heauenly conceipts, that then ſhee might eaſilie winde her to her croked bias. Therefore, employing the vttermoſt of her miſchieuous witte, and ſpeaking the more earneſtly, becauſe ſhe ſpake as ſhee thought, ſhee thus dealt with her. Deare neece, or rather, deare daughter, if my affection & wiſh might preuaile therein, how much dooth it increaſe (trowe you) the earneſt deſire I haue of this bleſſed match, to ſee theſe vertues of yours knit faſt with ſuch zeale of Deuotion (indeede the beſt bonde) which the moſt politicke wittes haue founde, to holde mans witte in well doing? For, as children muſt firſt by feare bee induced to knowe that, which after (when they doo know) they are moſt glad of: So are theſe bugbeares of opiniõs brought by great Clearks into the world, to ſerue as ſhewelles to to keepe them from thoſe faults, whereto els the vanitie of the worlde, and weakenes of ſenſes might pull them. But in you (Neece) whoſe excellencie is ſuch, as it neede not to be helde vp by the ſtaffe of vulgar opinions, I would not you ſhoulde loue Vertue ſeruillie, for feare of I know not what, which you ſee not: but euen for the good effects of vertue which you ſee. Feare, and indeede, fooliſh feare, & fearefull ignorance, was the firſt inuenter of thoſe conceates. For, when they hearde it thunder, not knowing the naturall cauſe, they thought there was ſome angrie body aboue, that ſpake ſo lowde: and euer the leſſe they did perceiue, the more they did conceiue. Whereof they knew no cauſe that grew ſtreight a miracle: fooliſh folkes, not marking that the alterations be but vpon particular accidents, the vniuerſalitie being alwaies one. Yeſterday was but as to day, and to morrow will tread the ſame footſteps of his foregoers: ſo as it is manifeſt inough, that all thinges follow but the courſe of their owne nature, ſauing onely Man, who while by the pregnancie of his imagination he ſtriues to things ſupernaturall, meane-while hee looſeth his owne

naturall

naturall felicitie. Be wiſe, and that wiſedome ſhalbe a God vnto thee; be contented, and that is thy heauen: for els to thinke that thoſe powers (if there bee any ſuch) aboue are moued either by the eloquence of our prayers, or in a chafe at the folly of our actions; caries aſmuch reaſon as if flies ſhould thinke, that men take great care which of them hums ſweeteſt, and which of them flies nimbleſt.

She woulde haue ſpoken further to haue enlarged and confirmed her diſcourſe: when *Pamela* (whoſe cheeks were died in the beautifulleſt graine of vertuous anger, with eies which gliſtered foorth beames of diſdaine) thus interrupted her. Peace (wicked womã) peace, vnworthy to breath, that doeſt not acknowledge the breathgiuer; moſt vnworthy to haue a tongue, which ſpeakeſt againſt him, through whom thou ſpeakeſt: keepe your affection to your ſelfe, which like a bemired dog, would defile with fauning. You ſay yeſterday was as to day. O fooliſh woman, and moſt miſerablely fooliſh, ſince wit makes you fooliſh. What dooth that argue, but that there is a conſtancie in the euerlaſting gouernour? Woulde you haue an inconſtant God, ſince wee count a man fooliſh that is inconſtant? He is not ſeene you ſay, and woulde you thinke him a God, who might bee ſeene by ſo wicked eyes, as yours? which yet might ſee enough if they were not like ſuch, who for ſport-ſake willingly hood-winke themſelues to receaue blowes the eaſier. But though I ſpeake to you without any hope of fruite in ſo rotten a harte, and there bee no bodie elſe here to iudge of my ſpeeches, yet be thou my witneſſe, O captiuitie, that my yeares ſhal not bewillingly guiltie of my Creators blaſphemie. You ſaie, becauſe we know not the cauſes of things; therfore feare was the mother of ſuperſtitiõ: nay, becauſe we know that each effect hath a cauſe, that hath engendred a true & liuely deuotion. For this goodly work of which we are, & in which we liue, hath not his being by Chaũce; on which opiniõ it is beyõd meruaile by what chaũce any braine could ſtumble. For if it be eternall (as you would ſeeme to conceiue of it) Eternity, and Chaunce are things vnſufferable together. For that is chaunceable which happeneth; and if it happen, there was a time before it happned, when it might haue not happened; or els it did not happen; and ſo if chaunceable, not eternall. And as abſurd it is to thinke that if it had a beginning, his beginning was deriued from Chaunce: for Chaunce could neuer make all things of nothing: and if there were ſubſtaunces before, which by chaunce ſhoulde meete to make vp this worke, thereon followes another bottomleſſe pitt of abſurdities. For then thoſe ſubſtaunces muſt needs haue bene from euer and ſo eternall: and that eternall cauſes ſhould bring forth chaunceable effectes, is as ſenſible, as that the Sunne ſhoulde bee the author of darkeneſſe. Againe, if it were chaunceable, then was it not neceſſarie; whereby you take away all conſequents. But we ſee in all thinges, in ſome reſpect or other, neceſſitie of conſequence: therefore in reaſon we muſt needs know that the cauſes were neceſſarie.

Laſtly Chaunce is variable, or els it is not to be called Chaunce: but wee ſee this worke is ſteady and permanent. If nothing but Chaunce had glewed thoſe pieces of this All, the heauie partes would haue gone infinitely downward, the light infinitely vpwarde, and ſo neuer haue mett to haue made vp his goodly bodie. For before there was a heauen, or a earth, there was neyther a heauen to ſtay the height of the riſing, nor an earth, which (in reſpect of the round walles of heauen) ſhould become a centre. Laſtly, perfect order, perfect beautie, perfect conſtancie, if theſe be the children of Chaunce, let wiſedome be counted the roote of wickedneſſe. But you will ſay it is ſo by nature, as much as if you ſaide it is ſo, becauſe it is ſo: if you meane of many

many natures conſpiring together, as in a popular gouernemẽt to eſtabliſh this faire eſtate; as if the Elementiſhe and ethereall partes ſhoulde in their towne-houſe ſet downe the bounds of each ones office; then conſider what followes: that there muſt needes haue bene a wiſedome which made them concurre: for their natures beyng abſolute contrarie, in nature rather would haue ſought each others ruine, then haue ſerued as well conſorted partes to ſuch an vnexpreſſable harmonie. For that contrary things ſhould meete to make vp a perfection without a force and Wiſedome aboue their powers, is abſolutely impoſſible; vnles you will flie to that hiſſed-out opinion of Chaunce againe. But you may perhaps affirme, that one vniuerſal Nature (which hath ben for euer) is the knitting together of theſe many partes to ſuch an excellent vnitie. If you meane a Nature of wiſdome, goodnes, & prouidence, which knowes what it doth, then ſay you that, which I ſeeke of you, and cannot conclude thoſe blaſphemies, whith which you defiled your mouth, & mine eares. But if you meane a Nature, as we ſpeake of the fire, which goeth vpward, it knowes not why: and of the nature of the Sea which in ebbing and flowing ſemes to obſerue ſo iuſt a daunce and yet vnderſtands no muſicke, it is but ſtill the ſame abſurditie ſuperſcribed with another title. For this worde, one, being attributed to that which is All, is but one mingling of many, and many ones; as in a leſſe matter, when we ſay one kingdome which conteines many cities; or one cittie which conteines many perſons, wherein the vnder ones (if there be not a ſuperiour power and wiſedome) cannot by nature regarde to any preſeruation but of themſelues: no more wee ſee they doo, ſince the water willingly quenches the fire, and drownes the earth; ſo farre are they from a conſpired vnitie: but that a right heauenly Nature indeed, as it were vnnaturinge them, doth ſo bridle them.

Againe, it is as abſurde in nature that from an vnitie many contraries ſhould proceede ſtill kept in an vnitie: as that from the number of contrarieties an vnitie ſhould ariſe. I ſay ſtill, if you baniſh both a ſingularitie, and pluralitie of iudgement from among them then (if ſo earthly a minde can lift it ſelfe vp ſo hie) doo but conceaue, how a thing whereto you giue the higheſt, and moſt excellent kind of being (which is eternitie) can be of a baſe & vileſt degree of being, and next to a not-being; which is ſo to be, as not to enioy his owne being? I will not here call all your ſenſes to witnes which can heare, nor ſee nothing, which yeeldes not moſt euident euidence of of the vnſpeakeableneſſe of that Wiſedome: each thinge being directed to an ende, and an ende of preſeruation: ſo proper effects of iudgement, as ſpeaking, and laughing are of mankind.

But what madd furie can euer ſo enueagle any conceipte, as to ſee our mortal and corruptible ſelues to haue a reaſon, and that this vniuerſalitie (whereof wee are but the leſt pieces) ſhoulde bee vtterly deuoide thereof? as if one ſhoulde ſaie, that ones foote might be wiſe, and him ſelfe fooliſh. This hearde I once alledged againſt ſuch a godleſſe minde as yours, who being driuen to acknowledge this beaſtly abſurditie that our bodies ſhould be better then the whole worlde, if it had the knowledge, whereof the other were voide; he ſought (not able to anſwere directly) to ſhifte it off in this ſorte: that if that reaſon were true, then muſt it followe alſo, that the world muſt haue in it a ſpirite, that could write and read too, and be learned; ſince that was in vs commendable: wretched foole, not conſidering that Bookes bee but ſupplies of defects; and ſo are prayſed, becauſe they helpe our want, and therefore cannot be incident to the eternall intelligence, which needes no recording of opinions to confirme

firme his knowledge, no more then the Sunne wants waxe to be the fewell of his glorious lightfulnes. This world therfore cannot otherwiſe conſiſt but by a minde of Wiſedome, which gouernes it, which whether you will allow to bee the Creator thereof, as vndoubtedly he is, or the ſoule and gouernour thereof, moſt certaine it is that whether he gouerne all, or make all, his power is aboue either his creatures, or his gouernement. And if his power be aboue all thinges, then conſequently it muſt needes be infinite, ſince there is nothing aboue it to limit it. For beyond which there is nothing, muſt needes be boundleſſe, and infinite: if his power be infinite, then likewiſe muſt his knowledge be infinite: for elſe there ſhould be an infinite proportion of power which he ſhould not know how to vſe; the vnſenſibleneſſe whereof I thinke euen you can conceaue: and if infinite, then muſt nothing, no not the eſtate of flies (which you with ſo vnſauerie skorne did ieſt at) be vnknowne vnto him. For if it were, then there were his knowledge bounded, and ſo not infinite: if knowledge and power be infinite, then muſt needs his goodneſſe and iuſtice march in the ſame rancke: for infinitenes of power, and knowledge, without like meaſure of goodneſſe, muſt neceſſarily bring foorth deſtruction and ruine, and not ornament and preſeruation. Since then there is a God, and an all-knowing God, ſo as he ſees into the darkeſt of all naturall ſecretes, which is the hart of Man; and ſees therein the deepeſt diſſembled thoughts, nay ſees the thoughts before they be thought: ſince he is iuſt to exerciſe his might, and mightie to performe his iuſtice, aſſure thy ſelfe, moſt wicked woman (that haſt ſo plaguily a corrupted minde, as thou canſt not keepe thy ſickeneſſe to thy ſelfe, but muſt moſt wickedly infect others) aſſure thy ſelfe, I ſay, (for what I ſay dependes of euerlaſting and vnremooueable cauſes) that the time will come, when thou ſhalt knowe that power by feeling it, when thou ſhalt ſee his wiſedome in the manifeſting thy ougly ſhamefulnes, and ſhalt onely perceiue him to haue bene a Creator in thy deſtruction.

Thus ſhe ſaide, thus ſhe ended, with ſo faire a maieſtie of vnconquered vertue, that captiuitie might ſeeme to haue authoritie ouer tyrannie: ſo fowly was the filthineſſe of impietie diſcouered by the ſhining of her vnſtayned goodnes, ſo farre, as either *Cecropia* ſaw indeed, or elſe the guilty amazement of a ſelfe-accuſing conſcience, made her eies vntrue iudges of their naturall obiect, that there was a light more then humaine, which gaue a luſtre to her perfections. But *Cecropia*, like a Batte (which though it haue eyes to diſcerne that there is a Sunne, yet hath ſo euill eyes, that it cannot delight in the Sunne) found a trueth, but could not loue it. But as great perſons are woont to make the wrong they haue done, to be a cauſe to doo the more wrong, her knowledge roſe to no higher point, but to enuie a worthier, and her will was no otherwiſe bent, but the more to hate, the more ſhe found her enemie prouided againſt her. Yet all the while ſhe ſpake (though with eyes caſt like a horſe that would ſtrike at the ſtirrop, and with colour which bluſhed through yellowneſſe) ſhe ſate rather ſtill then quiet, and after her ſpeech rather muttered, then replied: for the warre of wickedneſſe in her ſelfe, brought forth diſdainefull pride to reſiſt cunning diſſimulation; ſo as, ſaying little more vnto her, but that ſhe ſhould haue leyſure inough better to bethinke her ſelfe; ſhe went away repining, but not repenting: condemning greatly (as ſhe thought) her ſonnes ouer-feeble humbleneſſe, and purpoſing to egge him forward to a courſe of violence. For her ſelfe, determining to dealewith neither of them both any more in

maner of a ſuter: for what maieſtie of vertue did in the one, that did ſilent humbleneſſe in the other. But finding her ſonne ouer-apt to lay both condemnation, and execution of ſorrow vpon himſelfe, ſhe ſought to mitigate his minde with feigned delayes of comfort, who (hauing this inward ouerthrow in himſelfe) was the more vexed, that he could not vtter the rage thereof vpon his outward enemies.

For *Baſilius* taught by the laſt dayes triall, what daungerous effectes choſen courages can bring forth, rather vſed the ſpade, then the ſworde; or the ſworde, but to defende the ſpade; girding about the whole towne with trenches; which beginning a good way off from the towne, with a number of well directed Pioners, he ſtill caryed before him till they came to a neere diſtance, where he builded Fortes, one anſwering the other, in ſuch ſort, as it was a pretie conſideration in the diſcipline of warre, to ſee building vſed for the inſtrument of ruine, and the aſſayler entrenched as if he were beſieged. But many ſallies did *Amphialus* make to hinder their working. But they (exerciſing more melancholie, then choller in their reſolution) made him finde, that if by the aduauntage of place, fewe are able to defende themſelues from manie, that manie muſt needes haue power, (making themſelues ſtrong in ſeate) to repell fewe; referring the reuenge rather to the ende, then a preſent requitall. Yet oftentimes they dealt ſome blowes in light skirmiſhes, eche ſide hauing a ſtrong retyring place, and rather fighting with manie alarums, to vexe the enemie, then for anie hope of great ſucceſſe.

Which euerie way was a tedious comber to the impacient courage of *Amphialus*: till the fame of this warre, bringing thither diuerſe, both ſtraungers, and ſubiects, as well of princely, as noble houſes, the gallant *Phalantus*, who refrained his ſportfull delightes as then, to ſerue *Baſilius*, (whome he honoured for receyued honours) when he had ſpent ſome time in conſidering the *Arcadian* manner in marching, encamping, and fighting, and had learned in what points of gouernement, and obedience their diſcipline differed from others, and ſo had ſatisfied his minde in the knowledges, both for the cutting off the enemies helpes, and furniſhing ones ſelfe, which *Baſilius* orders could deliuer vnto him, his yong ſpirits (wearie of wanting cauſe to be wearie) deſired to keepe his valure in knowledge, by ſome priuate acte, ſince the publique policie reſtrayned him; the rather, becauſe his olde miſtreſſe *Arteſia* might ſee, whome ſhe had ſo lightly forſaken: and therefore demaunding and obteyning leaue of *Baſilius*; he cauſed a Heraulde to be furniſhed with apparell of his office, and tokens of a peaceable meſſage, and ſo ſent him to the gate of the towne to demaunde audience of *Amphialus*: who vnderſtanding thereof, cauſed him both ſafely, and courteouſly to be brought into his preſence: who making lowly reuerence vnto him, preſented his Letters, deſiring *Amphialus* that what ſoeuer they conteyned, he would conſider that he was onely the bearer, and not the inditer. *Amphialus* with noble gentleneſſe aſſured him both, by honourable ſpeeches, and a demeanure which aunſwered for him, that his reuenge, whenſoeuer, ſhould ſort vnto it ſelfe a higher ſubiect. But opening the Letters, he found them to ſpeake in this maner.

PHalantus of *Corinthe*, to *Amphialus* of *Arcadia*, ſendeth the greeting of a hateleſſe enemie. The liking of martiall matters without anie miſlike of your perſon, hath

hath brought me rather to the companie, then to the minde of your beſiegers: where languiſhing in idleneſſe, I deſire to refreſh my minde with ſome exerciſe of armes, which might make knowne the dooers, with delight of the beholders. Therefore, if there be any Gentleman in your Towne, that eyther for the loue of Honour, or honour of his Loue, will armed on horſebacke, with launce, and ſworde, winne another, or looſe himſelfe, to be a priſoner at diſcretion of the conquerour, I will to morrowe morning by Sunne riſing, with a trumpet and a Squire onely, attende him in like order furniſhed. The place I thinke fitteſt, the Iland within the Lake, becauſe it ſtandes ſo well in the view of your Caſtell, as that the Ladies may haue the pleaſure of ſeeing the combate: which though it be within the commaundement of your Caſtell, I deſire no better ſecuritie, then the promiſe I make to my ſelfe of your vertue. I attende your aunſwere, and wiſh you ſuch ſucceſſe as may be to your honour, rather in yeelding to that which is iuſt, then in mainteyning wrong by violence.

Amphialus read it with cheerefull countenance, and thinking but a little with himſelfe, called for inke and paper, and wrote this aunſwere.

Amphialus of *Arcadia*, to *Phalantus* of *Corinthe*, wiſheth all his owne wiſhes, ſauing thoſe which may be hurtfull to another. The matter of your letters ſo fit for a worthy minde, and the maner ſo ſutable to the nobleneſſe of the matter, giue me cauſe to thinke how happie I might accounte my ſelfe, if I coulde get ſuch a friende, who eſteeme it no ſmall happineſſe to haue mette with ſo noble an enemie. Your chalenge ſhall be aunſwered, and both time, place, and weapon accepted. For your ſecuritie from any treacherie (hauing no hoſtage woorthie to counteruaile you) take my woord, which I eſteeme aboue all reſpectes. Prepare therefore your armes to fight, but not your hart to malice; ſince true valure needes no other whetſtone, then deſire of honour.

HAuing writte and ſealed his letter, he deliuered it to the Heraulde, and withall tooke a faire chaine from off his owne necke, and gaue it him. And ſo with ſafe conuoy ſent him away from out his Citie: and he being gone, *Amphialus* ſhewed vnto his mother, and ſome other of his chiefe Counſailours, what he had receyued, and howe he had aunſwered: telling them withall, that he was determined to aunſwere the chalenge in his owne perſon. His mother with prayers authorized by motherly commaundement; his olde gouernour with perſwaſions mingled with reprehenſions, (that he would rather affect the glorie of a priuate fighter, then of a wiſe Generall) *Clinias* with falling downe at his feete, and beſeeching him to remember, that all their liues depended vppon his ſafetie, ſought all to diſſuade him. But *Amphialus* (whoſe hart was enflamed with courage, and courage enflamed with affection) made an imperious reſolution cutte off the tediouſneſſe of replyes, giuing them in charge, what they ſhoulde doo vppon all occaſions, and particularly to deliuer the Ladies, if otherwiſe then well happened vnto him: onely deſiring his mother, that ſhe woulde bring *Philoclea* to a window, whence ſhe might with eaſe perfectly diſcerne the combat. And ſo, as ſoone as the morning beganne to draw dewe from the faireſt greenes, to waſhe her face withall, againſt the approach of the burning Sunne, hee

went to his ſtable, where himſelfe choſe out a horſe, whom (though he was neere twentie yeere olde) he preferred for a peece of ſure ſeruice, before a great number of yonger. His colour was of a browne bay, dapled thick with black ſpots; his forhead marked with a white ſtarre; to which, in all his bodie there was no part ſutable, but the left foote before; his mane and taile black, and thick, of goodly, and well proportioned greatnes. He cauſed him to be trimmed with a ſumptuous ſaddle of tawnie, and golde ennamell, enriched with pretious ſtones: his furniture was made into the faſhion of the branches of a tree, from which the leaues were falling: and ſo artificiallie were the leaues made, that as the horſe moued, it ſeemed indeed that the leaues wagged, as when the winde plaies with them; and being made of a pale cloath of gold, they did beare the ſtraw-coloured liuerie of ruine. His armour was alſo of tawnie and golde, but formed into the figure of flames darckened, as when they newelie brake the priſon of a ſmoakie furnace. In his ſhielde he had painted the *Torpedo* fiſh. And ſo appointed, he cauſed himſelfe, with his trumpet and ſquire (whom he had taken ſince the death of *Iſmenus*) to be ferried ouer into the Iland: a place well choſen for ſuch a purpoſe. For, it was ſo plaine, as there was ſcarcely any buſh, or hillock, either to vnleuell, or ſhadow it: of length and breadth enough, to trie the vttermoſt both of launce and ſword, and the one end of it facing the caſtle, the other extending it ſelfe toward the campe, and no acceſſe to it, but by water: there could no ſecret trecherie be wrought, and for manifeſt violence, ether ſide might haue time inough to ſuccour their party.

But there he found *Phalantus*, alredy waiting for him vpon a horſe, milke white, but that vpon his ſhoulder and withers, he was freckned with red ſtaines, as when a few ſtrawberies are ſcattered into a diſh of creame. He had cauſed his mane and taile to be died in carnation; his reines were vine branches, which ingendring one with the other, at the end, when it came to the bitte, there, for the boſſe, brought foorth a cluſter of grapes, by the workeman made ſo liuely, that it ſeemed, as the horſe champed on his bitte, he chopped for them, and that it did make his mouth water, to ſee the grapes ſo neere him. His furniture behind was of vines, ſo artificially made, as it ſeemed the horſe ſtood in the ſhadow of the vine, ſo pretily were cluſters of rubie grapes diſperſed among the trappers which embraced his ſides. His armour was blew, like the heauen, which a Sun did with his rayes (proportionately deliuered) guild in moſt places. His ſhield was beautified with this deuice; A greyhound, which ouerrunning his fellow, and taking the hare, yet hurts it not when it takes it. The word was, *The glorie, not the pray.*

But as ſoone as *Amphialus* landed, he ſent his ſquire to *Phalantus*, to tell him, that there was the Knight, redy to know whether he had any thing to ſay to him. *Phalantus* anſwered, that his anſwere now muſt be in the language of launces; and ſo each attended the warning of the trumpets, which were to ſound at the appointment of foure iudges, who with cõſideration of the ſame, had deuided the ground. *Phalantus*-his horſe young, and feeling the youth of his maſter, ſtood coruetting; which being well gouerned by *Phalantus*, gaue ſuch a glittering grace, as when the Sunne in a cleare day ſhines vpon a wauing water. *Amphialus*-horſe ſtood panting vpon the ground, with his further foot before, as if he would for his maſters cauſe begin to make himſelfe angry: till the trumpet ſounding together, Together they ſet ſpurres to their horſes, together took their launces from their thighes, conueied them vp into their reſtes together, together let them ſinke downward; ſo as it was a

delectable

delectable ſight, in a dangerous effect; and a pleaſant conſideration, that there was ſo perfect agreement, in ſo mortall diſagreement: like a muſick, made of cunning diſcords. But their horſes keeping an euen line their maſters had skilfully allotted vnto them, paſſed one by another without encountring, although either might feel the angry breath of other. But the ſtaues being come to a iuſt deſcent, but euen when the mark was ready to meet them, *Amphialus* was runne through the vamplate, and vnder the arme: ſo as the ſtaffe appearing behind him, it ſemed to the beholders he had bene in danger. But he ſtrake *Phalantus* iuſt vpon the gorget, ſo as he battred the lamms thereof, and made his head almoſt touch the back of his horſe. But either ſide hauing ſtaied the ſpur, & vſed the bit to ſtop their horſes fury, caſting away the troncheons of their ſtaues, & drawing their ſwords, they attended the ſecond ſummons of the death-threatning trumpet, which quickly folowed; and they aſſoone making their horſes anſwer their hands, with a gentle galop, ſet one toward the other, till being come in the neernes of litle more then a ſtaues length. *Amphialus* truſting more to the ſtrength, then to the nimblenes of his horſe, put him foorth with ſpeedie violence, and making his head ioyne to the others flanke, guiding his blow with diſcretion, and ſtrengthning it with the courſe of his horſe, ſtrake *Phalantus* vpon the head, in ſuch ſort, that his feeling ſenſe did both dazell his ſight, and aſtoniſh his hearing. But *Phalantus* (not accuſtomed to be vngratefull to ſuch benefites) ſtrake him vpon the ſide of his face, with ſuch force, that he thought his iawe had bene cut aſunder: though the faithfulnes of his armour indeede garded him from further damage. And ſo remayned they awhile, rather angry with fighting, then fighting for anger, till *Amphialus*-his horſe, leaning harde vpon the other, and winning grounde, the other horſe feeling himſelfe preſt, began to riſe a little before, as he was woont to doo in his coruette: which aduantage *Amphialus* taking, ſet forward his owne horſe with the further ſpurre, ſo as *Phalantus*-his horſe came ouer with his maſter vnder him. Which *Amphialus* ſeeing, lighted, with intention to helpe *Phalantus*. But his horſe that had faulted, rather with vntimely arte, then want of force, gatte vp from burdning his burden, ſo as *Phalantus* (in the fall hauing gotten his feete free off the ſtirrop) could (though ſomething bruiſed) ariſe, and ſeeing *Amphialus* neere him, he asked him, Whether he had giuen him any help in remouing his horſe. *Amphialus* ſaid No. Truely ſayd *Phalantus*, I asked it, becauſe I would not willingly haue fought with him, that had had my life in his mercie. But now (ſaid *Phalantus*) before we proceed further, let me know who you are, becauſe neuer yet did any man bring me to the like fortune. *Amphialus* liſting to keepe himſelfe vnknowne, told him he was a Gentleman, to whom *Amphialus* that day had giuen armour and horſe to trie his valour, hauing neuer before ben in any combat worthy remẽbrance. Ah, (ſaid *Phalantus* in a rage) And muſt I be the exerciſe of your prentiſ-age? and with that, choler tooke away either the bruſe, or the feeling of the bruſe, ſo as he entred a freſh into the cõbat, and boiling into his armes the diſdaine of his hart, ſtrake ſo thick vpon *Amphialus*, as if euery blow would faine haue ben foremoſt. But *Amphialus* (that many like trials had taught, great ſpending to leaue ſmall remnants) let paſſe the ſtorme with ſtrong wards, and nimble auoidings: till ſeeing his time fit, both for diſtaunce & nakednes, he ſtrake him ſo cruell a blow on the knee, that the poore Gentleman fell downe withall in a ſowne.

But *Amphialus*, pittying approued valoure, made pretious by naturall curteſie, wẽt to him, & taking off his head-piece to giue him aire, the young Knight (diſdaining

ning to buy life with yeelding) bad him vſe his fortune: for he was reſolued neuer to yeeld. No more you ſhall (ſaid *Amphialus*) if it be not to my requeſt, that you will account your ſelfe to haue great intereſt in me. *Phalantus* more ouercome by his kindnes, then by his fortune, deſired yet once againe to know his name, who in his firſt beginning had ſhewed ſuch furie in his force, and yet ſuch ſtay in his furie. *Amphialus*, then named himſelfe, telling him withall, he would think his name much bettred, if it might be honored by the title of his friend. But no Baulme could be more comfortable to his wound, then the knowledge thereof was to his minde, when he knew his miſhap ſhould be excuſed by the renowmed valour of the other. And ſo promiſing each to other aſſurednes of good will, *Phalantus*, (of whom *Amphialus* would haue no other raunſome, but his word of friendſhip) was conueyed into the campe, where he would but litle remaine among the enimies of *Amphialus*: but went to ſeeke his aduentures other-where.

As for *Amphialus* he was receaued with triumph into the caſtle; although one might ſee by his eyes (humbly lifted vp to the window where *Philoclea* ſtood) that he was rather ſuppliaunt, then victorious: which occaſion *Cecropia* taking, (who as then ſtood by *Philoclea*, and had lately leſte *Pamela* in another roome, whence alſo ſhe might ſee the combate) Sweet Lady (ſaid ſhe) now you may ſee, whether you haue cauſe to loue my ſonne, who then lies vnder your feete, when he ſtandes vpon the necke of his braueſt enemies. Alas ſaid *Philoclea*, a ſimple ſeruice to me, me thinkes it is, to haue thoſe, who come to ſuccour me, deſtroied: If it be my dutie to call it loue, be it ſo: but the effects it brings foorth I confeſſe I account hatefull. *Cecropia* grew ſo angry with this vnkinde anſwere, that ſhe could not abſtayne from telling her, that ſhe was like them that could not ſleepe, when they were ſoftly layed: but that if her ſonne would follow her counſell, he ſhould take another courſe with her: and ſo flang away from her.

Yet (knowing the deſperate melancholy of *Amphialus* in like caſes) framed to him a very thankefull meſſage, poudring it with ſome hope-giuing phraſes; which were of ſuch ioy to *Amphialus*, that he (though againſt publike reſpect, and importunity of diſſuaders) preſently cauſed it to be made knowne to the campe, that whatſoeuer Knight would trie the like fortune as *Phalantus* did, he ſhould in like ſort be anſwered: ſo as diuers of the valianteſt, partly of themſelues, partly at the inſtigation of *Baſilius*, attempted the combat with him: and according to euery ones humour, ſo were the cauſes of the challenge grounded: one laying treaſon to his charge; another preferring himſelfe in the worthineſſe to ſerue *Philoclea*; a third, exalting ſome Ladies beautie beyonde either of the ſiſters; a fourth, laying diſgraces to Loue it ſelfe, naming it the bewitcher of the witte, the rebell to Reaſon, the betrayer of reſolution, the defiler of thoughts, the vnderminer of magnanimitie, the flatterer of vice, the ſlaue to weakenes, the infection of youth, the madnes of age; the curſe of life, and reproch of death; a fifth, diſdayning to caſt at leſſe then at all, would make the cauſe of his quarrell the cauſers of loue, and proclayme his blaſphemies againſt womankinde; that namely that ſex was the ouerſight of Nature, the diſgrace of reaſonablenes, the obſtinate cowards, the ſlaue-borne tyrants, the ſhops of vanities, the guilded wethercocks; in whome cõſcience is but peeuiſhnes, chaſtitie waywardnes, and gratefulnes a miracle. But all theſe challenges (how well ſo euer endited) were ſo well anſwered, that ſome by death taught others, though paſt learning themſelues; and ſome by yeelding gaue themſelues

themselues the lie for hauing blasphemed; to the great griefe of *Basilius*, so to see his Rebell preuaile, and in his owne sight to crowne himselfe with deserued honour.

Whereupon thirsting for reuenge, and else not hoping to preuaile, the best of his campe being already ouerthrowne; he sent a messenger to *Argalus*, in whose approued courage and force, he had (and had cause) to haue great confidence, with a letter; requiring him, to take this quarrell in hand, from which hee had hetherto spared him in respect of his late mariage. But now his honour, and (as he esteemed it) felicitie standing vpon it, hee coulde no longer forbeare to chalenge of him his faithfull seruice.

The messenger made speede, and found *Argalus* at a castle of his owne, sitting in a parler with the faire *Parthenia*, he reading in a booke the stories of *Hercules*, she by him, as to heare him reade; but while his eyes looked on the booke, shee looked on his eies, and sometimes staying him with some prety question, not so much to bee resolued of the doubte; as to giue him occasion to looke vpon her. A happy couple, he ioying in her, she ioying in her selfe, but in her selfe, because shee enioyed him: both encreasing their riches by giuing to each other; each making one life double, because they made a double life one; where desire neuer wanted satisfaction, nor satisfaction euer bred facietie; he ruling, because she would obey: or rather because she would obey, she therein ruling.

But when the messenger came in with letters in his hand, and hast in his countenance, though she knew not what to feare, yet she feared, because she knew not; but she rose, and went aside, while hee deliuered his letters and message; yet a far off she looked, now at the messenger, and then at her husband: the same feare, which made her loth to haue cause of feare, yet making her seeke cause to nourish her feare. And well she found there was some serious matter; for her husbands countenance figured some resolution betweene lothnesse and necessitie: and once his eie cast vpon her, and finding hers vpon him, he blushed; and she blushed, because hee blushed; and yet streight grew pale, because she knew not why he had blushed. But when he had read, and heard, and dispatched away the messenger (like a man in whom Honour could not be rocked a sleepe by Affection) with promise quickly to follow; he came to *Parthenia*, and as sorie as might bee for parting, and yet more sorie for her sorrow, he gaue her the letter to reade. She with fearfull slownes tooke it, and with fearefull quickneſse read it; and hauing read it, *Ah* my *Argalus* (said she) and haue you made such hast to answere? and are you so soone resolued to leaue me? But hee discoursing vnto her, how much it imported his honour (which since it was deare to him, he knew it would be deare vnto her) her reason ouerclowded with sorrow, suffered her not presently to replie, but left the charge thereof to teares, and sighes; which he not able to beare, left her alone, and went to giue order for his present departure.

But by that time he was armde, & readie to go, she had recouered a little strength of spirite againe and comming out, and seing him armed, and wanting nothing for his departure but her fearewell, she ran to him, tooke him by the arme, and kneeling downe without regard, who either heard her speach, or sawe her demeanour, My *Argalus*, my *Argalus* (said she) do not thus forsake me. Remẽber, alas, Remẽber that I haue interest in you, which I wil neuer yeeld shalbe thus aduẽtured. Your valour is already sufficiently knowne: sufficiently haue you already done for your country: ennow, ennow there are besides you to loose lesse worthie liues. Woe is me, what

ſhall become of me, if you thus abandon mee? Then was it time for you to follow theſe aduentures, when you aduentured no body but your ſelf, and were no bodies but your owne. But now pardon me, that now, or neuer, I claime mine owne; mine you are, and without me you can vndertake no danger: and will you endanger *Parthenia*? *Parthenia* ſhalbe in the battle of your fight: *Parthenia* ſhal ſmart in your paine and your blood muſt bee bled by *Parthenia*. Deare *Parthenia* (ſaid he) this is the firſt time, that euer you reſiſted my will: I thanke you for it; but perſeuer not in it; and let not the teares of thoſe moſt beloued eies be a preſage vnto me of that, which you would not ſhould happen. I ſhall liue, doubte not: for ſo great a bleſſing, as you are was not giuen vnto me, ſo ſoone to be depriued of it. Looke for me therefore ſhortly, and victorious; and prepare a ioyfull welcome, and I will wiſh for no other triumph. She anſwered not, but ſtood as it were thunder-ſtriken with amazement: for true Loue made obedience ſtand vp againſt al other paſſions. But when he tooke her in his armes, and ſought to printe his harte in her ſweete lippes, ſhe fell in a ſounde, ſo as he was faine to leaue her to her Gentlewomen: and caried away by the tyrannie of Honour, though with manie a backe-caſt looke, and hartie grone, went to the campe. Where vnderſtanding the notable victories of *Amphialus*, he thought to giue him ſome daies reſpite of reſt, becauſe he would not haue his victory diſgraced by the others wearineſſe. In which dayes, he ſought by all meanes (hauing leaue to parley with him) to diſſuade him from his enterpriſe: & then imparting his minde to *Baſilius*, becauſe he founde *Amphialus* was inflexible, wrote his deſire vnto him in this maner.

RIght famous *Amphialus*, if my perſuaſion in reaſon, or prayer in good will, might preuaile with you, you ſhould by better meanes be like to obtaine your deſire. You ſhoulde make many braue enemies become your faithfull ſeruants, and and make your honor flie vp to heauen, being caried vp by both the wings of valure and iuſtice; whereof now it wants the latter. But ſince my ſuite, nor counſell can get no place in you, diſdaine not to receiue a mortall chalenge, from a man ſo farre inferiour vnto you in vertue, as that I do not ſo much miſlike of the deede, as I haue the doer in admiration. Prepare therefore your ſelfe, according to the noble maner you haue vſed and thinke not lightly of neuer ſo weake an arme, which ſtrikes with the ſworde of iuſtice,

To this he quickely receiued this anſwere.

MVch more famous *Argalus*, I whom neuer threatninges could make afraid, am now terrified by your noble courteſie. For well I knowe, from what height of vertue it doth proceed, and what cauſe I haue to doubt ſuch vertue bent to my ruine: but Loue, which iuſtifieth the vniuſtice you lay vnto me, doth alſo animate me againſt all daungers, ſince I come full of him by whom your ſelfe haue beene (if I be not deceiued) ſometimes conquered. I will therefore attend your appearaunce in the Ile, carying this aduantage with me, that as it ſhall be a ſingular honour if I get the victorie, ſo there can be no diſhonour in being ouercome by *Argalus*.

The chalenge thus denounced, and accepted, *Argalus* was armed in a white armour, which was al guilded ouer with knots of womans haire, which came downe from the creſt of his head-peece, & ſpred it ſelfe in rich quãtitie ouer all his armour: his furniture was cut out into the faſhion of an Egle, whereof the beake (made into

a rich

a rich iewell) was faſtened to the ſaddle, the taile couered the crooper of the horſe, and the wings ſerued for trappers; which falling of ech ſide, as the horſe ſtirred, the bird ſeemed to flie. His petrell and raines, were embrodered with feathers ſutable vnto it: vpō his right arme he ware a ſleeue, which his deare *Parthenia* had made for him, to be worne in a iuſtes, in the time that ſucceſſe was vngrateful to their well-deſerued loue: it was full of bleeding hartes, though neuer intended to any bloodie enterpriſe. In his ſhield (as his owne deuice) he had two Palme trees, neere one another, with a word ſignifying, *In that ſort flouriſhing*. His horſe was of a firie ſorrel, with blacke feete, & blacke liſt on his back, who with open noſtrels breathed warre, before he could ſee an enemy: and now vp with one legge, and then with another, ſeemed to complaine of Nature, that ſhe had made him any whit earthie.

But he had ſcarcely vewed the grounde of the Ilande, and conſidered the aduantages (if any were) thereof, before the Caſtel boate had deliuered *Amphialus*, in all pointes prouided to giue a hard entertainment. And then ſending ech to other their Squires in honourable maner, to knowe whether they ſhould attende any further ceremony; the trumpets ſounding, the horſes with ſmooth running, the ſtaues with vnſhaked motion, obediently performed their cholericke commandementes. But when they drew nere, *Argalus* horſe being hot, preſt in with his head: which *Amphialus* perceiuing, knowing if he gaue him his ſide, it ſhoulde bee to his diſaduauntage, preſt in alſo with him, ſo as both the horſes & men met ſhoulder to ſhoulder, ſo as the horſes (hurt as much with the ſtriking, as being ſtriken) tumbled down to the earth, daungerouſly to their maiſters, but that they by ſtrength nimble, & by vſe skilfull, in the falling ſhunned the harme of the fall, and without more reſpite, drewe out their ſwordes with a gallant brauerie, eche ſtriuing to ſhewe himſelfe the leſſe endamaged, and to make knowne that they were glad, they had nowe nothing elſe to truſt to, but their owne vertue. True it is, that *Amphialus* was the ſooner vp; but *Argalus* had his ſworde out the ſooner: and then fell they to the cruelleſt combate, that any preſent eye had ſeene. Their ſwords firſt, like Canons, battering down the walles of their armour, making breaches almoſt in euerie place for troupes of wounds to enter. Amōg the reſt, *Argalus* gaue a great wound to *Amphialus* diſarmed face; though part of the force of it *Amphialus* warded vpon his ſhielde, and with-all (firſt caſting his eie vp to *Philocleas* Window, as if he had fetched his courage thēce) feyning to entend the ſame ſort of blow, turned his ſworde, and with a mightie reuerſe, gaue a cruell wounde to the right arme of *Argalus*, the vnfaythfull armour yeelding to the ſwords ſtrong-guiuded ſharpeneſſe. But though the blood accuſed the hurt of *Argalus*, yet would he in no action of his confeſſe it: but keeping himſelf in a lower warde, ſtoode watching with timely thruſtes to repaire his loſſe; which quickly he did. For *Amphialus* (following his fawning fortune) laid on ſo thicke vpon *Argalus*, that his ſhield had almoſt fallen peece-meale to the earth, when *Argalus* comming in with his right foot, and ſomthing ſtowping to come vnder his armour, thruſt him into the belly daungerouſly, and mortally it woulde haue beene but that, with the blowe before, *Amphialus* had ouer ſtriken himſelfe ſo, as he fell ſide-ward downe, and with falling ſaued himſelfe from ruine, The ſworde by that meanes ſlipping aſide, and not pearcing more deepely. *Argalus* ſeeing him fall, threatning with voice and ſworde, bad him yeelde. But hee ſtriuing without aunſwere to riſe, *Argalus* ſtrake with all his might vpon his head. But his hurt arme not able to maiſter ſo ſounde a force, let the ſwoorde fall ſo, as *Amphialus*, though aſtoniſhed with

the

the blowe, could ariſpe: which *Argalus* conſidering, ranne in to graſp with him,& ſo cloſed together; falling ſo to the grounde, now one getting aboue, and then the other; at length, both wearie of ſo vnlouely embracements, with a diſſending conſent gate vp, and went to their ſwordes: but happened eche of his enemies: where *Argalus* finding his foes ſworde garniſhed in his blood, his harte raſe with the ſame ſwoord to reuenge it, and on that blade to allie their bloods together. But his mind was euil wayted-on by his lamed force, ſo as he receiued ſtil more & more wounds which made all his armour ſeeme to bluſh, that it had defended his maſter no better. But *Amphialus* perceiuing it, & waying the ſmall hatefulneſſe of their quarrell, with the worthineſſe of the Knight, deſired him to take pitie of himſelfe. But *Argalus*, the more repining, the more he founde himſelfe in diſaduauntage, filling his veynes with ſpite in ſteade of blood, and making courage ariſe againſt faintneſſe, (like a Candle, which a little before it goes out, giues then the greateſt blaze) ſo did he vnite all his force, that caſting away the little remnaunt of his ſhielde, and taking his ſword in both hands, he ſtroke ſuch a notable blow, that he cleft his ſhield armour, and arme almoſt to the bone.

But then *Amphialus* forgat all ceremonies, & with cruell blowes made more of his beſt blood ſucceed the reſt; til his hand being ſtaied by his eare, his eare filled with a pitifull crie, the crie guided his ſight to an excellent faire Ladie, who came running as faſt as ſhe could, and yet becauſe ſhe could not as faſt as ſhe would, ſhee ſent her lamentable voyce before her: and being come, and being knowne to them both, to be the beautifull *Parthenia*, (who had that night dreamed ſhee ſaw her husbande in ſuch eſtate, as ſhee then found him, which made her make ſuch haſte thither) they both maruailed. But *Parthenia* ranne between them (feare of loue making her forget the feare of Nature) and then fel downe at their feete, determining ſo to part them, till ſhee coulde get breathe to ſigh out her dolefull ſpeeches: and when her breath (which running had ſpent, & diſmayedneſſe made ſlowe to returne) had by ſobbes; gotten into her ſorow-cloſed breaſt, for a while ſhe could ſay nothing, but, O wretched eyes of mine, O wailefull ſight, O day of darkeneſſe: at length turning her eyes (where in ſorrow ſwamme) to *Amphialus*, My Lorde (ſaide ſhe) it is ſaide you loue; in the power of that loue, I beſeech you to leaue of this combate, as euer your harte may finde comfort in his affection, euen for her ſake, I craue it: or if you be mortally determined, be ſo pitifull vnto me, as firſt to kill me, that I may not ſee the death of *Argalus*. *Amphialus* was about to haue aunſwered, when *Argalus*, vexed with his Fortune, but moſt vexed that ſhe ſhoulde ſee him in that fortune, Ah *Parthenia* (ſaid he) neuer till now vnwelcome vnto me, do you come to get my life by requeſt? And cānot *Argalus* liue but by requeſt? Is that a life? With that he went aſide, for fear of hurting her, & would haue begun the cōbate afreſh. But *Amphialus* not only cōiured by that which held the Monarchie of his mind, but euen in his noble hart melting with cōpaſſion at ſo paſſionate a ſight, deſired him to withhold his hāds, for that he ſhould ſtrike one, who ſought his fauour, & would not make reſiſtaūce. A notable example of the wonderful effectes of Vertue, where the conquerour, ſought for friendſhip of the conquered, & the conquered would not pardon the conquerour: both indeede being of that minde to loue eche other for accepting, but not for giuing mercie, & neyther affected to ouer-liue a diſhonour: ſo that *Argalus* not ſo much ſtriuing with *Amphialus* (for if he had had him in the like ſorte, in like ſorte he woulde haue dealt with him) as labouring againſt his owne power (which he chiefly deſpiſed) ſet himſelfe

ſelfe forward, ſtretching his ſtrength to the vttermoſt. But the fire of that ſtrife, blowen with his inward rage, boyled out his bloud in ſuch aboundance, that hee was driuen to reſt him vpon the pommel of his ſworde: and then each thing beginning to turne round in the daunce of Death before his eyes, his ſight both dazled & dimmed, till (thinking to ſit downe) he fel in a ſowne. *Parthenia*, and *Amphialus* both haſtely went vnto him: *Amphialus* tooke off his helmet, and *Parthenia* laid his head in her lap, tearing of her linnen ſleues & partlet, to ſerue about his wounds to bind which, ſhee tooke of her hair-lace, and woulde haue cut of her faire haire herſelfe, but that the ſquires and iudges came in with fitter things for the purpoſe: while ſhe bewayled her ſelfe with ſo lamentable ſweetnes, as was inough to haue taught ſorrow to the gladdeſt thoughts, and haue engraued it in the mindes of hardeſt mettall.

O *Parthenia*, no more *Parthenia* (ſaid ſhe) What art thou? what ſeeſt thou? how is thy bliſſe in a moment fallen? how art thou, euen-now before all Ladies the example of perfect happines, and nowe the gaſing-ſtocke of endles miſerie? O God, what hath bene my deſert to be thus puniſhed? or if ſuch haue bene my deſert, why was I not in my ſelfe puniſhed? O wandring life, to what wildernes wouldſt thou lead me? But Sorow, I hope thou art ſharp inough to ſaue my labour from other remedies. *Argalus*, *Argalus*, I will folow thee, I will follow thee.

But with that *Argalus* came out of his ſowne, and lifting vp his languiſhing eyes (which a paineful reſt, and iron ſleep did ſeeke to lock vp) ſeeing her, in whom (euen dying) he liued, and him ſelfe ſeated in ſo beloued a place, it ſeemed a little cheerefull bloud came vp to his cheekes, like a burning cole, almoſt dead, if ſome breath a little reuiue it: and forcing vp (the beſt he coulde) his feeble voice, My deare, my better halfe (ſaide hee) I finde I muſt now leaue thee: and by that ſweete hand, and faire eyes of thine I ſweare, that Death bringes nothing with it to grieue me, but that I muſt leaue thee, and cannot remaine to anſwere part of thy infinit deſerts, with being ſome comfort vnto thee. But ſince ſo it pleaſeth him, whoſe wiſedome and goodneſſe guideth all, put thy confidence in him, and one day wee ſhall bleſſedly meet againe, neuer to depart: meane while liue happily, deare *Parthenia*, and I perſwade my ſelfe, it will encreaſe the bleſſednes of my ſoule, ſo to ſee thee. Loue well the remembrance of thy louing, and truely louing, *Argalus*: and let not (with that word he ſighed) this diſgrace of mine, make thee one day thinke, thou hadſt an vnwoorthie husband. They could ſcarcely vnderſtand the laſt wordes: for Death began to ſeaze him ſelfe of his harte, neither coulde *Parthenia* make anſwere, ſo full was her breaſt of anguiſh. But while the other ſought to ſtanch his remediles wounds, ſhe with her kiſſes made him happie: for his laſt breath was deliuered into her mouth.

But when indeede ſhe found his ghoſt was gone, then Sorowe loſt the witte of vtterance, and grew ragefull, and madde, ſo that ſhee tare her beautifull face, and rent her haire, [illegible]ough they coulde ſerue for nothing, ſince *Argalus* was gone; till *Amphialus* (ſo [illegible]oued with pittie of that ſight, as that hee honoured his aduerſaries death with [illegible]res) cauſed her (with the helpe of her women that came with her partelie by [illegible]rce, to be conueyed into the boat, with the dead body of *Argalus*, from which ſhe [illegible]ould not depart. And being come of the other ſide, there ſhe was receaued by *Ba[illegible]us* him ſelf, with all the funerall pompe of militarie diſcipline, trayling all their I[illegible]ignes vpon the ground, making theſe warlike inſtrumentes ſound dole-

full

full notes, and *Baſilius* (with comfort in his mouth, and woe in his face) ſought to perſwade ſome eaſe into *Parthenias* mind: but all was as eaſefull to her, as the handling of ſore woundes: all the honour done, being to her but the triumph of her ruine, ſhe finding no comfort, but in deſperate yeelding to Sorrow: and rather determined to hate her ſelfe, if euer ſhe ſhoulde finde eaſe thereof. And well might ſhee heareas ſhe paſt through the Campe, the great prayſes ſpoken of her husbande, which all were recordes of her loſſe. But the more excellent he was (being indeede accounted ſeconde to none in all Greece) the more did the breath of thoſe praiſes, beare vp the winges of *Amphialus*-his fame: towhom yet (ſuch was his caſe) that Trophe vpon Trophe, ſtill did but builde vp the monument of his thraldome; hee euer finding himſelfe in ſuch fauour of *Philoclea*, that ſhee was moſt abſent, when he was preſent with her; and euer forrieſt, when he had beſt ſucceſſe: which would haue made him renounce all comfort, but that his mother, with diuerſity of deuiſes, kept vp his hart.

But while he allayed thus his outward glorie, with inward diſcomfort, hee was like to haue bene ouertaken with a notable treaſon, the beginning wherof (though meerely ridiculous) had like to haue brought forth vnto him a weeping effect.

Among other that attended *Baſilius* in this expedition, *Damætas* was one; whether to be preſent with him, or abſent from *Miſo*: once, certaine it was without any mind to make his ſword curſed by any widow. Now being in the campe, while each talke ſemed iniurious, which did not acknowledge ſome duety to the fame of *Amphialus*, it fell out ſometimes in communication, that as the ſpeech of heauen doth often beget the mentiō of hel, ſo the admirable prowes of *Amphialus* (by a contrary) brought forth the remembrance of the cowardiſe of *Clinias*: in ſo much, as it grew almoſt to a prouerb, *As very a cowarde, as Clinias*. Deſcribing him in ſuch ſort, that in the ende, *Damætas* began to thinke with himſelfe, that if hee made a chalenge vnto him, hee would neuer anſwere it; and that then hee ſhoulde greatly encreaſe the fauourable conceite of *Baſilius*. This fancie of his he vttered to a young Gentleman, that waited vpon *Philanax*, in whoſe friendſhip he had eſpeciall confidence, becauſe he haunted his company, laughing often merely at his ſpeeches, and not a little extolling the goodly *dotes* of *Mopſa*. The young Gentleman as glad, as if hee had founde a Hare ſitting, egd him on, breaking the matter with *Philanax*, and then (for feare the humour ſhould quayle in him) wrote a challenge him ſelfe for *Damætas*, and brought it to him. But when *Damætas* read it, putting his head on his ſhoulder, and ſomwhat ſmiling; he ſaid, it was prettie indeed; but that it had not a loſtie ſtile enough: and ſo would needes indite it in this ſort.

O Clinias, thou Clinias, *the wickedeſt worme that euer went vpō two legges; the very fritter of fraude, and ſeething pot of iniquitie: I* Damætas, *chiefe gouernour of all the royall cattel, & alſo of* Pamela (*whom thy Maiſter moſt pernicioufly hath ſuggeſted out of my dominion*) *doo deſie thee, in a mortall affray from the bodkin to the pike vpwarde. Which if thou dooſt preſume to take in hande, I will out of that ſuperfluous bodie of thine make the ſoule to bee euacuated.*

The young Gentleman ſeemed dumbe-ſtriken with admiration, and preſently tooke vpon him to bee the bearer thereof, while the heate of the fit laſted, and hauing gotten leaue of *Baſilius* (euery body helping on, to eaſe his mind ouercharged with

with melancholy) he went into the towne according to the manner before time vſed, and in the preſence of *Amphialus* deliuered this letter to *Clinias*; deſiring to haue an anſwere, which might be fit for his reputation. *Clinias* opened it, read it; and in the reading, his bloud not daring to be in ſo daungerous a place, went out of his face, and hid it ſelfe more inwardly: and his very wordes (as if they were afraide of blowes) came very ſlowly out of his mouth: but, aſwell as his panting breath would vtter it, he bad him tell the lowte that ſente him, that he diſdained to haue any thing to doo with him. But *Amphialus*, perceauing the matter, tooke him aſide, and very earneſtly dealt with him not to ſhame himſelfe; *Amphialus* onely deſirous to bring it to paſſe to make ſome ſport to *Philoclea*, but not being able to perſwade with him, *Amphialus* licenced the Gentleman, telling him, that by next morning he ſhould haue anſwere.

The yong Gentleman (ſory he had ſped no better) returned to *Damætas*, who had fetched many a ſower-breathed ſigh, for feare *Clinias* would accept the chalẽge. But whẽ he perceiued by his truſty meſſenger, that this delay was in effect a denial, there being no diſpoſition in him to accept it; then lo, *Damætas* began to ſpeake his lowd voice, to looke big, to march vp & down, & in his march to lift his legs higher then he was wont, ſwearing by no meane deuotions, that the wals ſhould not keepe the coward frõ him, but he would fetch him out of his connie-berrie: and then was hotter then euer to prouide himſelfe of horſe & armour, ſaying, he would go to the Iland brauely addoubed, & ſhew himſelf to his charge *Pamela*. To this purpoſe many willing hands were about him, letting him haue reynes, pettrell, with the reſt of the furniture, and very braue baſes; but all comming from diuers houſes, nether in coulour nor faſhion, ſhewing any kinred one with another; but that liked *Damætas* the better: for that he thought would argue, that he was maiſter of many braue furnitures. Then gaue he order to a painter for his deuice; which was, a plowe with the oxen lewſed from it, a ſword with a great number of armes and legges cut off; and laſtly a great armie of pen and inke-hornes, and bookes. Nether did he ſtick to tell the ſecrete of his intent, which was, that he had left off the plowe, to doo ſuch bloudy deedes with his ſwoorde, as many inkehornes and bookes ſhould be employed about the hiſtorifying of them: and being asked, why he ſet no word vnto it, he ſaid, that was indeed like the painter, that ſayeth in his picture, Here is the dog, and there is the Hare: & with that he laughed ſo perfectly, as was great conſolation to the beholders. Yet remembring, that *Miſo* would not take it well at his returne, if he forgat his dutie to her, he cauſed in a border about to be written:

Miſo *mine owne pigſnie, thou ſhalt heare news of* Damætas.

Thus all things being condignely ordered, with an ill fauoured impatiencie he waited, vntill the next morning, that he might make a muſter of himſelfe in the Iland; often asking them that very diligently wayted vpon him, whether it were not pittie, that ſuch a coward, as *Clinias*, ſhould ſet his runaway feete vpon the face of the earth?

But as he was by diuers principall yong Gentlemen, to his no ſmall glory, lifted vp on horſebacke, comes me a page of *Amphialus*, who with humble ſmiling reuerence deliuered a letter vnto him from *Clinias*: whom *Amphialus* had brought to this, firſt with perſwaſions (that for certaine, if he did accept the combat, *Damætas* would neuer dare to appeare, and that then the honour ſhould be his) but

principally threatning him, that if he refuſed it, he would turne him out of the towne to be put to death for a traitour by *Baſilius:* ſo as the preſent feare (euer to a coward moſt terrible) of being turned out of the towne, made him, though full vnwillingly, vndertake the other feare, wherein he had ſome ſhewe of hope, that *Dametas* might hap either to be ſick, or not to haue the courage to performe the matter. But when *Dametas* heard the name of *Clinias*, very aptly ſuſpecting what the matter might be, he bad the page carry backe his letter, like a naughty boy as he was: for he was in no humour, he tolde him, of reading letters. But *Dametas*-is friend, firſt perſuading him, that for certaine it was ſome ſubmiſſion, tooke vpon him ſo much boldneſſe, as to open his letter, and to reade it alowd in this ſort.

Filthy driuell, vnworthy to haue thy name ſet in any letter by a ſouldiers hand written: could thy wretched harte thinke it was timorouſneſſe, that made Clinias *ſuſpende a while his anſwere? No caitiffe, no: it was but as a Ramme, which goes backe to returne with the greater force. Knowe therefore that thou ſhalt no ſooner appeare (appeare now if thou dareſt) I ſay thou ſhalt no ſooner appeare in the Ilande (O happy thou, if thou doo not appeare) but that I will come vpon thee with all my force; and cut thee in pieces (marke, what I ſaie) ioynte after ioynte, to the eternall terrour of all preſumptuous villaynes. Therefore looke what thou dooſt: for I tell thee, horrible ſmarte, and paine ſhalbe thy lot, if thou wilt needes be ſo fooliſh (I hauing giuen thee no ſuch cauſe) as to meete with me.*

Theſe terrible wordes *Clinias* vſed, hoping they would giue a cooling to the heate of *Dametas*-is courage: and ſo indeede they did, that he did grone to heare the thundring of thoſe threatnings. And when the Gentleman had ended the reading of them, *Dametas* tolde them, that in his opinion he thought this anſwere came too late, and that therefore he might very well go, and diſarme himſelfe: eſpecially conſidering, the other had in curteous maner warned him not to come. But they (hauing him now on horſebacke) led him vnto the ferrie, and ſo into the Iland; the claſhing of his owne armour ſtriking miſerable feare into him, and in his minde thinking greate vnkindneſſe in his friende, that he had brought him to a matter ſo contrarie to his complexion. There ſtayed he but a little (the Gentlemen that came with him teaching him how to vſe his ſword and launce, while he caſt his eye about, to ſee which way he might runne away, curſing all Ilands for being euill ſcituated) when *Clinias* with a braue ſound of trumpets landed at the other ende: who came all the way debating with himſelfe, what he had deſerued of *Amphialus* to driue him to thoſe inconueniences. Sometimes his witte made him bethinke him ſelfe what was beſt to be done: but feare did ſo corrupt his witte, that whatſoeuer he thought was beſt, he ſtill found daunger therein; fearefulneſſe (contrarie to all other vices) making him thinke the better of another, the worſe he found him ſelfe; rather imagining in him ſelfe, what wordes he would vſe (if he were ouercome) to get his life of *Dametas*, then how to ouercome, whereof he coulde thinke with no patience. But oftentimes looking to the Earth pittifully complayning, that a man of ſuch ſufficiencie (as hee thought him ſelfe) ſhoulde in his beſt yeares be ſwallowed vp by ſo baſe an element. Faine he would haue prayed, but he had not harte inough to haue confidence in prayer; the glittering of the armour, and ſounding of the trumpets giuing ſuch an aſſault to the weake-breache of his falſe ſenſes, that hee grewe

from

from the degree of feare to an amazement, not almoſt to know what he did; till two iudges (choſen for the purpoſe) making the trumpets ceaſe, and taking the oth of thoſe champions, that they came without guile or witchcraft, ſet them at wonted diſtaunce; one from the other.

Then the trumpets ſounding, *Dametas* horſe (vſed to ſuch cauſes) when hee thought leſt of the matter, ſtarted out ſo luſtely, that *Dametas* was iogde back with head, and bodie, and pulling withall his bridle-hande, the horſe (that was tender of mouth) made halfe a ſtop, and fell to bounding, ſo that *Dametas* threw away his launce, and with both his hands held by the pummell: the horſe, halfe running, halfe leaping, till he met with *Clinias*: who fearing he ſhould miſſe his reſt, had put his ſtaffe therein before he began his careere: neither would he then haue begun, but that at the trumpets warning, one (that ſtood behinde) ſtrake on his horſe, who running ſwiftly, the winde tooke ſuch hold of his ſtaffe, that it croſt quite ouer his breaſt, and in that ſort gaue a flat baſtonado to *Dametas*: who, halfe out of his ſadle, went neere to his olde occupation of digging the earth, but with the creſt of his helmet. *Clinias* when he was paſt him, not knowing what he had done, but fearing leſt *Dametas* were at his backe, turned with a wide turne; and ſeeing him on the ground, he thought then was his time, or neuer, to treade him vnder his horſes feete; and withall (if he could) hurt him with his launce, which had not broken; the encounter was ſo eaſie. But putting forth his horſe, what with the falling of the ſtaffe too low before the legs of the horſe, and the comming vpon *Dametas*, who was then ſcrambling vp, the horſe fell ouer and ouer, and lay vpon *Clinias*. Which *Dametas* (who was gottē vp) perceiuing, drew out his ſword, prying which way he might beſt come to kill *Clinias* behind. But the horſe that lay vpon him, kept ſuch a pawing with his feet, that *Dametas* durſt not approch, but verie leyſurely; ſo as the horſe (being luſtie) gat vp, and withall fell to ſtrike, and leape, that *Dametas* ſtarted back a good way, and gaue *Clinias* time to riſe, but ſo bruiſed in bodie, and broken in hart, that he meant to yeeld himſelfe to mercie: and with that intent drew out his ſword, entending when he came nearer, to preſent the pommell of it to *Dametas*. But *Dametas*, when he ſaw him come with his ſword drawne, nothing conceiuing of any ſuch intent, went backe as faſt as his backe and heeles could leade him. But as *Clinias* found that, he began to thinke a poſſibilitie in the victorie, and therefore followed with the cruell haſte of a preuailing coward; laying vpon *Dametas*, who did nothing but crie out to him to holde his hand: ſometimes that he was dead, ſometimes that he would complaine to *Baſilius*: but ſtill bare the blowes vngratefully, going backe, till at length he came into the water with one of his feete.

But then a new feare of drowning tooke him, ſo that not daring to go back, nor to deliberat (the blows ſtill ſo lighted on him) nor to yeelde (becauſe of the cruell threatnings of *Clinias*) feare being come to the extremitie, fell to a madneſſe of deſpaire: ſo that (winking as hard as euer he could) he began to deale ſome blowes, and his arme (being vſed to a flaile in his youth) laid them on ſo thick, that *Clinias* now began with lamentable eies to ſee his owne blood come out in many places, and before he had loſt halfe an ounce, finding in himſelfe that he fainted, cried out aloud to *Dametas*, that he yeelded. Throw away thy ſword then (ſaid *Dametas*) & I wil ſaue thee; but ſtill laying on, as faſt as he could. *Clinias* ſtraight obeyed, & humbly craued mercie, telling him, his ſword was gone. Then *Dametas* firſt opened his eyes, and ſeeing him indeed vnweaponed, made him ſtand a good way off from it;

and then willed him to lie downe vpon the earth as flat as he could. *Clinias* obeyed; and *Dametas* (who neuer could thinke himſelfe ſafe, till *Clinias* were dead) began to thinke with himſelfe, that if he ſtrake at him with his ſworde, if he did not kill him at the firſt blowe, that then *Clinias* might happe to ariſe, and reuenge himſelfe. Therefore he thought beſt to kneele downe vpon him, and with a great whittle he had (hauing diſarmed his heade) to cut his throate, which he had vſed ſo with Calues, as he had no ſmall dexteritie in it. But while he ſought for his Knife, which vnder his armour he could not well finde out, and that *Clinias* lay with ſo ſheepiſh a quietnes, as if he would haue beene glad to haue his throate cut for feare of more paine, the Iudges came in, and tooke *Dametas* from off him, telling him he did againſt the lawe of Armes, hauing promiſed life, if hee threwe away his ſworde. *Dametas* was loath to conſent, till they ſware, they would not ſuffer him to fight any more, when he was vp: and then more forced, then perſwaded, he let him riſe, crowing ouer him, and warning him to take heede how he dealt any more with any that came of his fathers kinred. But thus this *combate of cowardes* being finiſhed, *Dametas* was with much mirth and melodie receiued into the campe as victorious, neuer a Page there failing to waite vpon this Triumph.

But *Clinias*, though he wanted hart to preuent ſhame, yet he wanted not wit to feele ſhame; not ſo much repining at it for the abhorring of ſhame, as for the diſcommodities, that to them that are ſhamed, enſue. For well he deemed, it would be a great barre to his practize, and a pulling on of iniuries, when men needed not care, how they vſed him. Inſomuch, that *Clinias* (finding himſelfe the ſcorning-ſtocke of euery companie) fell with repining to hate the cauſe thereof; and hate in a cowards hart, could ſet it ſelfe no other limites, but death. Which purpoſe was well egged on by repreſenting vnto himſelfe, what daunger he lately was in; which ſtill kept no leſſe ougly figure in his minde, then when it was preſent: and quickly (euen in his diſſembling countenance) might be diſcerned a concealed grudge. For though he forced in himſelfe a farre more diligent officiouſneſſe toward *Amphialus*, then euer before, yet a leering eye vpon the one ſide at him, a countenance ſtill framed to ſmiling before him (how little cauſe ſoeuer there was of ſmiling) and grombling behind him, at any of his commandements, with an vncertaine manner of behauiour: his words comming out, though full of flatterie, yet ſlowly, and hoarcely pronounced, might well haue blazed, what armes his falſe hart bare. But deſpiſed, becauſe of his cowardlineſſe, and not marked, becauſe deſpiſed, he had the freer ſcope of practize. Which he did the more deſperately enter into, becauſe the dayly dangers *Amphialus* did ſubmit himſelfe into, made *Clinias* aſſuredly looke for his ouerthrow, and for his owne conſequently, if he did not redeme his former treaſon to *Baſilius*, with a more treaſonable falſhood toward *Amphialus*. His chiefe care therefore was, to finde out among all ſorts of the *Amphialians*, whom either like feare, tediouſnes of the ſiege, or diſcontentment of ſome vnſatisfied ambition would make apt to dig in the ſame mine that he did: & ſome alredy of welthy weary folks, & vnconſtāt youths (who had not found ſuch ſudden ſucceſſe as they had promiſed thēſelues) he had made ſtoupe to his lure. But of none he made ſo good account as of *Arteſia*, ſiſter to the late ſlain *Iſmenus*, & the chiefe of the ſix maids, who had trained out the Princeſſes to their banket of miſerie: ſo much did the ſharpnes of her wit counteruaile (as he thought) any other defects of her ſex: for ſhe had vndertaken that dangerous practiſe by the perſuaſion of *Cecropia*;

who

who assured her that the two princesses should be made away; and then *Amphialus* wold marry her: which she was the apter to beleue, by some false persuasiõ her glas had giuen her of her own incomparable excellẽcies, & by the great fauor she knew he bare to her brother *Ismenus*, which (like a self-flattering womã) she cõceiued was done for her sake. But when she had atchieued her attempt, and that she found the Princesses were so fat frõ their intended death, as that the one of them was like to be her souereigne, & that neither her seruice had woon of *Amphialus* much more then ordinary fauor, nor her ouer-large offring herselfe to a mind otherwise owed, had obteined a loked-for acceptatiõ; disdain to be disdained spite of a frustrat hope, & perchance vnquenched lust-growne rage, made her vnquiet thoughts find no other rest, but malice: which was increased by the death of her brother, whom she iudged neither succoured against *Philanax*, nor reuenged vpõ *Philanax*. But all these coles were wel blowne by the cõpany she especially kept with *Zelmane*, all this time of her imprisonment. For finding her presence vncheerfull to the mourning *Philoclea*, and contemned of the hie harted *Pamela*, she spent her time most with *Zelmane*. Who though at the first hardly brooking the instrument of their miserie, learning cunning in the schoole of aduersitie, in time framed her self to yeeld her acceptable intertainment. For *Zelmane*, when she had by that vnexpected mischiefe her bodie imprisoned, her valure ouermastred, her wit beguiled, her desires barred, her loue eclipsed; assured of euill, fearing worse, able to know *Philocleas* misfortune, and not able to succour her, she was a great while, before the greatnes of her hart could descend to sorow, but rather rose boyling vp in spight and disdain; Reason hardly making Courage beleeue, that it was distressed: but as if the walles would be afraid of her, so would her lookes shoote out threatning vpon them. But the fetters of seruitude (growing heauier with wearing) made her feele her case, and the little preuailing of repining: and then griefe gat a seate in her softned mind, making sweetenesse of passed comforts by due title claime teares of present discomforts: and since her fortune made her able to helpe as litle as any bodie, yet to be able to waile as much as any bodie; solitarie Sorrow, with a continuall circle in her selfe, going out at her owne mouth, to come in againe at her owne eares. Then was the name of *Philoclea* graued in the glas windowes, and by the fooliish idolatrie of affection, no sooner written, then adored; and no sooner adored, then pittied: all the wonted praises (she was wont to giue vnto her) being now but figures of rethorick to amplifie the iniuries of misfortune; against which being alone, she would often make inuectiue declamations, methodized only by raging sorow.

But when *Artesia* did insinuat herselfe into her acquaintance, she gaue the gouernment of her courage to wit, & was content to familiarize herselfe with her: so much the rather, as that she perceiued in her certaine flawes of il-concealed discontentmẽt. Insomuch that whẽ *Zelmane* would sweeten her mouth with the praises of the sisters, especially setting forth their noble gratefulnes, in neuer forgetting welintended seruices, & inuoking the iustice of the gods, not to suffer such treasures to be wrõgfully hidden, & somtimes with a kind vnkindnes, charging *Artesia* that she had ben abused to abuse so worthy persons: *Artesia* (though falsly) wold protest, that she had bin beguiled in it, neuer meaning other matter thẽ recreatiõ: & yet withall (by alleaging how vngratefully she was dealt with) it was easie to be seene, it was the vnrewarding, and not the euill employing her seruice, which grieued her. But *Zelmane* (vsing her own bias to bowle neer the mistres of her own thoughts) was content to

and then willed him to lie downe vpon the earth as flat as he could. *Clinias* obeyed; and *Dametas* (who neuer could thinke himſelfe ſafe, till *Clinias* were dead) began to thinke with himſelfe, that if he ſtrake at him with his ſworde, if he did not kill him at the firſt blowe, that then *Clinias* might happe to ariſe, and reuenge himſelfe. Therefore he thought beſt to kneele downe vpon him, and with a great whittle he had (hauing diſarmed his heade) to cut his throate, which he had vſed ſo with Calues, as he had no ſmall dexteritie in it. But while he ſought for his Knife, which vnder his armour he could not well finde out, and that *Clinias* lay with ſo ſheepiſh a quietnes, as if he would haue beene glad to haue his throate cut for feare of more paine, the Iudges came in, and tooke *Dametas* from off him, telling him he did againſt the lawe of Armes, hauing promiſed life, if hee threwe away his ſworde. *Dametas* was loath to conſent, till they ſware, they would not ſuffer him to fight any more, when he was vp: and then more forced, then perſwaded, he let him riſe, crowing ouer him, and warning him to take heede how he dealt any more with any that came of his fathers kinred. But thus this *combate of cowardes* being finiſhed, *Dametas* was with much mirth and melodie receiued into the campe as victorious, neuer a Page there failing to waite vpon this Triumph.

But *Clinias*, though he wanted hart to preuent ſhame, yet he wanted not wit to feele ſhame; not ſo much repining at it for the abhorring of ſhame, as for the diſcommodities, that to them that are ſhamed, enſue. For well he deemed, it would be a great barre to his practize, and a pulling on of iniuries, when men needed not care, how they vſed him. Inſomuch, that *Clinias* (finding himſelfe the ſcorning-ſtocke of euery companie) fell with repining to hate the cauſe thereof; and hate in a cowards hart, could ſet it ſelfe no other limites, but death. Which purpoſe was well egged on by repreſenting vnto himſelfe, what daunger he lately was in; which ſtill kept no leſſe ougly figure in his minde, then when it was preſent: and quickly (euen in his diſſembling countenance) might be diſcerned a concealed grudge. For though he forced in himſelfe a farre more diligent officiouſneſſe toward *Amphialus*, then euer before, yet a leering eye vpon the one ſide at him, a countenance ſtill framed to ſmiling before him (how little cauſe ſoeuer there was of ſmiling) and grombling behind him, at any of his commandements, with an vncertaine manner of behauiour: his words comming out, though full of flatterie, yet ſlowly, and hoarcely pronounced, might well haue blazed, what armes his falſe hart bare. But deſpiſed, becauſe of his cowardlineſſe, and not marked, becauſe deſpiſed, he had the freer ſcope of practize. Which he did the more deſperately enter into, becauſe the dayly dangers *Amphialus* did ſubmit himſelfe into, made *Clinias* aſſuredly looke for his ouerthrow, and for his owne conſequently, if he did not redeme his former treaſon to *Baſilius*, with a more treaſonable falſhood toward *Amphialus*. His chiefe care therefore was, to finde out among all ſorts of the *Amphialians*, whom either like feare, tediouſnes of the ſiege, or diſcontentment of ſome vnſatisfied ambition would make apt to dig in the ſame mine that he did: & ſome alredy of welthy weary folks, & vnconſtāt youths (who had not found ſuch ſudden ſucceſſe as they had promiſed thēſelues) he had made ſtoupe to his lure. But of none he made ſo good account as of *Arteſia*, ſiſter to the late ſlain *Iſmenus*, & the chiefe of the ſix maids, who had trained out the Princeſſes to their banket of miſerie: ſo much did the ſharpnes of her wit counteruaile (as he thought) any other defects of her ſex: for ſhe had vndertaken that dangerous practiſe by the perſuaſion of *Cecropia*;

who

who assured her that the two princesses should be made away; and then *Amphialus* wold marry her: which she was the apter to beleue, by some false persuasiō her glas had giuen her of her own incomparable excellēcies, & by the great fauor she knew he bare to her brother *Ismenus*, which (like a self-flattering womā) she cōceiued was done for her sake. But when she had atchieued her attempt, and that she found the Princesses were so far frō their intended death, as that the one of them was like to be her souereigne, & that neither her seruice had woon of *Amphialus* much more then ordinary fauor, nor her ouer-large offring herselfe to a mind otherwise owed, had obteined a loked-for acceptatiō; disdain to be disdained spite of a frustrat hope, & perchance vnquenched lust-growne rage, made her vnquiet thoughts find no other rest, but malice: which was increased by the death of her brother, whom she iudged neither succoured against *Philanax*, nor reuenged vpō *Philanax*. But all these coles were wel blowne by the cōpany she especially kept with *Zelmane*, all this time of her imprisonment. For finding her presence vncheerfull to the mourning *Philoclea*, and contemned of the hie harted *Pamela*, she spent her time most with *Zelmane*. Who though at the first hardly brooking the instrument of their miserie, learning cunning in the schoole of aduersitie, in time framed her self to yeeld her acceptable intertainment. For *Zelmane*, when she had by that vnexpected mischiefe her bodie imprisoned, her valure ouermastred, her wit beguiled, her desires barred, her loue eclipsed; assured of euill, fearing worse, able to know *Philocleas* misfortune, and not able to succour her, she was a great while, before the greatnes of her hart could descend to sorow, but rather rose boyling vp in spight and disdain; Reason hardly making Courage beleeue, that it was distressed: but as if the walles would be afraid of her, so would her lookes shoote out threatning vpon them. But the fetters of seruitude (growing heauier with wearing) made her feele her case, and the little preuailing of repining: and then griefe gat a seate in her softned mind, making sweetenesse of passed comforts by due title claime teares of present discomforts: and since her fortune made her able to helpe as litle as any bodie, yet to be able to waile as much as any bodie; solitarie Sorrow, with a continuall circle in her selfe, going out at her owne mouth, to come in againe at her owne eares. Then was the name of *Philoclea* graued in the glas windowes, and by the fooliſh idolatrie of affection, no sooner written, then adored; and no sooner adored, then pittied: all the wonted praises (she was wont to giue vnto her) being now but figures of rethorick to amplifie the iniuries of misfortune; against which being alone, she would often make inuectiue declamations, methodized only by raging sorow.

But when *Artesia* did insinuat herselfe into her acquaintance, she gaue the gouernment of her courage to wit, & was content to familiarize herselfe with her: so much the rather, as that she perceiued in her certaine flawes of il-concealed discontentmēt. Insomuch that whē *Zelmane* would sweeten her mouth with the praises of the sisters, especially setting forth their noble gratefulnes, in neuer forgetting welintended seruices, & inuoking the iustice of the gods, not to suffer such treasures to be wrōgfully hidden, & somtimes with a kind vnkindnes, charging *Artesia* that she had ben abused to abuse so worthy persons: *Artesia* (though falsly) wold protest, that she had bin beguiled in it, neuer meaning other matter thē recreatiō: & yet withall (by alleaging how vngratefully she was dealt with) it was easie to be seene, it was the vnrewarding, and not the euill employing her seruice, which grieued her. But *Zelmane* (using her own bias to bowle neer the mistres of her own thoughts) was content to

lende her beleefe, and withall, to magnifie her deſert, if willingly ſhe would deliuer, whom vnwillingly ſhe had impriſoned; leauing no argument which might tickle ambition, or flatter reuenge. So that *Arteſia*, (puſht forward by *Clinias*, & drawne onward by *Zelmane*) bound her ſelfe to that practiſe; wherin *Zelmane* (for her part) deſired no more, but to haue armour and weapons brought into her chamber, not doubting therwith to perfourme any thing, how impoſſible ſoeuer, which longing Loue can perſwade, and inuincible Valour dare promiſe.

But *Clinias* (whoſe faith could neuer comprehende the miſteries of Courage) perſwaded *Arteſia*, while he by corruption had drawne the guard of one gate, to open it (when he would appoint the time) to the enemie: that ſhe ſhould impoyſon *Amphialus*, which ſhe might the eaſier do, becauſe ſhe her ſelfe had vſed to make the broaths, when *Amphialus* (either wearied or wounded) did vſe ſuch diet. And all things alredy were ready to be put in execution, whē they thought beſt to break the matter with the two excellent ſiſters, not doubting of their conſent in a thing ſo behoofefull to thēſelues: their reaſons being, that the Princeſſes knowing their ſeruice, might be ſure to preſerue them from the fury of the entring ſouldiers: whereof *Clinias* (euen ſo) could ſcarcely be ſufficiently certaine: and withall, making them priuie to their action, to binde them afterwardes to a promiſed gratefulnes towards them. They went therefore at one time, when they knew them to be alone, *Clinias* to *Philoclea*, and *Arteſia* to *Pamela*: and *Clinias*, with no fewe words, did ſet forth what an exploite was intended for her ſeruice. But *Philoclea* (in whoſe cleere minde treaſon could finde no hiding place) told him, that ſhe would be glad, if he could perſwade her coſin to deliuer her, and that ſhe would neuer forget his ſeruice therein: but that ſhe deſired him to lay downe any ſuch way of miſchiefe, for that (for her part) ſhe would rather yeeld to perpetuall impriſonment, then conſent to the deſtroying her coſin, who (ſhe knewe) loued her, though wronged her. This vnlooked-for anſwere amazed *Clinias*, ſo that he had no other remedie in his minde, but to kneele downe to *Philoclea*, and beſeech her to keepe it ſecret, conſidering that the intention was for her ſeruice: and vowing (ſince ſhe miſliked it) to proceed no further therein. She comforted him with promiſe of ſilence, which ſhe perfourmed.

But that little auayled: for *Arteſia* hauing in like ſort opened this deuice to *Pamela*, ſhe (in whoſe mind Vertue gouerned with the ſcepter of Knowledge) hating ſo horrible a wickednes, and ſtreight iudging what was fitte to doo, Wicked woman (ſaid ſhe) whoſe vnrepenting harte can finde no way to amend treaſon, but by treaſon: now the time is come, that thy wretched wiles haue caught thy ſelfe in thine owne nette: as for me, let the Gods diſpoſe of me as ſhall pleaſe them; but ſure it ſhall be no ſuch way, nor way-leader, by which I will come to libertie. This ſhe ſpake ſomething with a lowder voice then ſhe was woont to vſe, ſo as *Cecropia* heard the noiſe; who was (ſooner then *Arteſia* imagined ſhe would) come vp, to bring *Pamela* to a window, where ſhe might ſee a notable skirmiſh happened in the Campe, as ſhe thought, among themſelues: and being a cunning fiſher in troubled waters, ſtreight found by their voices and geſtures, there was ſome matter of conſequence, which ſhe deſired *Pamela* to tell her. Aske of her (ſaid *Pamela*) and learne to know, that who do falſhoode to their ſuperiours, teach falſhoode to their inferiours. More ſhe would not ſay. But *Cecropia* taking away the each-way guiltie *Arteſia*, with feare of torture, gat of her the whole practiſe: ſo as *Zelmane* was the more

more closely imprisoned, and *Clinias* (with the rest of his corrupted mates, according to their merites) executed: For, as for *Artesia*, shee was but lockt vp in her chamber, *Amphialus* not consenting (for the loue hee bare to *Ismenus*) that further punishment should be laide vpon her.

But the noyse they heard in the campe, was occasiõ of the famous Prince *Anaxius*, nephewe to the Giant *Euardes* whom *Pyrocles* slew: A Prince, of body exceedingly strong; in armes so skilfull and fortunate, as no man was thought to excell him; of courage that knew not howe to feare: partes worthie praise, if they had not beene guyded by pride, and followed by vniustice. For by a strange composition of mind, there was no man more tenderly sensible in any thing offered to himselfe, which in the fartheſt-fette construction, might be wrested to the name of wrong; no man, that in his owne actions could worse distinguish betweene Valour and Violence: So proud, as he could not abstaine from a *Thraso*-like boasting, and yet (so vnluckie a lodging his vertues had gotten) he would neuer boast more then he would accomplish: falsly accounting an vnflexible anger, a couragious constancie: esteeming feare, and astonishment, righter causes of admiration, then Loue and Honour. This man had foure sundrie times fought with *Amphialus*, but *Mars* had bene so vnpartiall an arbiter, that neither side gate aduauntage of the other. But in the end it hapned, that *Anaxius* found *Amphialus* (vnknowen) in a great danger, and saued his life: whereupon (louing his owne benefite) began to fauour him, so much the more as, thinking so well of himselfe, he coulde not chooſe but like him, whom he found a match for himselfe: which at last grewe to as much friendship towardes him, as could by a proud harte be conceiued. So as in this trauaile (seeking *Pyrocles* to be reuenged of his vncles death) hearing of this siege, neuer taking paines to examine the quarrell (like a man whose will was his God, and his hand his lawe taking with him his two brothers (men accounted little inferiour to him selfe in martiall matters) and two hundred chosen horsemen (with whome hee thought him selfe able to conquere the world) yet commaunding the rest of his forces to follow, hee himselfe vpon such an vnexpected suddainnesse entred in vpon the backe of *Basilius*, that many with great vnkindnesse tooke their death, not knowing why, nor how they were so murdred. There, if euer, did he make knowne the wonderfulnes of his force. But the valiant, and faithfull *Philanax*, with well gouerned speed made such head against him, as would haue shewed, how soone Courage falles in the ditch which hath not the eie of Wisdome: but that *Amphialus* at the same time issued out, and winning with an abundaunce of courage one of the sconses, which *Basilius* had builded, made waie for his friend *Anaxius* with great losse of both sides, but especially of the *Basilians*; such notable monuments had those two swords especially lefte of their Maisters redoubted worthynesse.

There with the respect fit to his estate, the honour dewe to his worthinesse, and the kindnesse which accompanies friendship (made fast by enterchaunged benefits) did *Amphialus* enforce him selfe (as much as in a besieged towne he could) to make *Anaxius* know, that his succour was not so needefull, as his presence gratefull. For causing the streetes and houses of the towne to witnes his welcome (making both souldiers and Magistrates in their countenaunces to shewe their gladnesse of him) he led him to his mother, whom hee besought to entertaine him with no lesse loue and kindnesse, then as one, who once had saued her sonnes life, and now came to saue both life and honour. Tush (said *Anaxius*, speaking alowde, looking vpon his brothers)

brothers) I am onely ſorie there are not halfe a dozen Kinges more about you: that what *Anaxius* can do, might be the better manifeſted. His brothers ſmiled, as though he had ouer-modeſtly ſpoken farre vnderneath the pitch of his power. Thē was he diſarmed at the earneſt requeſt of *Amphialus*: for *Anaxius* boiled with deſire to iſſue out vppon the enemies, perſwading himſelf, that the Sun ſhould not be ſette, before he had ouerthrown them. And hauing repoſed himſelfe, *Amphialus* asked him, whether he would viſite the yong Princeſſes. But *Anaxius* whiſpered him in the eare: In trueth (ſaide hee) deare friende *Amphialus*, though I am none of thoſe, that loue to ſpeake of themſelues, I neuer came yet in companie of Ladies, but that they fell in loue with me. And I that in my hart ſcorne them as a peeuiſh paltrie ſexe, not woorthie to communicate with my vertues, woulde not doo you the wrong: ſince (as I heare) you doo debaſe your ſelfe ſo much as to affect them. The curteous *Amphialus* could haue beene angrie with him for thoſe wordes; but knowing his humour ſuffered him to daunce to his owne muſicke: and gaue himſelfe to entertaine both him and his brothers, with as cheerefull a maner, as coulde iſſue from a mind whom vnluckie loue had filled with melancholie. For to *Anaxius* he yeelded the directiō of all. He gaue the watchwoorde, and if any grace were graunted, the meanes were to be made to *Anaxius*. And that night when ſupper was ended, wherein *Amphialus* woulde needes himſelfe waite vpon him, he cauſed in Boates vpon the Lake an excellent muſicke to be ordered: which, though *Anaxius* might conceiue was for his honour, yet indeede he was but the Bricke-wall to conuey it to the eares of the beloued *Philoclea*.

The muſicke was of Cornets, whereof one aunſwering the other, with a ſweete emulation, ſtriuing for the glorie of muſicke, and ſtriking vpon the ſmooth face of the quiet Lake, was then deliuered vp to the caſtle walles, which with a proude reuerberation, ſpreading it into the aire; it ſeemed before the harmonie came to the eare, that it had enriched it ſelfe in trauaile, the nature of thoſe places adding melodie to that melodious inſtrument. And when a while that inſtrument had made a braue proclamation to all vnpoſſeſſed mindes of attention, an excellent conſort ſtreight followed of fiue Violles, and as many voyces; which all being but Oratours of their maiſters paſſions, beſtowed this ſong vppon her, that thought vppon another matter.

THe Fire to ſee my wrongs for anger burneth:
The Aire in raine for my affliction weepeth:
The Sea to ebbe for griefe his flowing turneth:
The Earth with pittie dul his center keepeth
Fame is with wonder blazed:
Time runnes away for ſorrow:
Place ſtandeth ſtill amazed,
To ſee my night of euils, which hath no morrowe.
Alas all onely ſhe no pittie taketh
To know my miſeries, but chaſte and cruell
My fall her glory maketh;
Yet ſtill her eyes giue to my flames their fuell.

Fire, burne me quite till ſenſe of burning leaue me:
Aire, let me drawe thy breath no more in anguiſh:
Sea, drown'd in thee of tedious life bereaue me:
Earth, take this earth wherein my ſpirits languiſh.
Fame, ſay I was not borne:
Time, haſt my dying hower:
Place, ſee my graue vptorne:
Fire, aire, ſea, earth, fame, time, place ſhow your power.
Alas from all their helpes I am exiled:
For hers am I, and Death feares her diſpleaſure.
Fie Death thou art beguiled:
Though I be hers, ſhe makes of me no treaſure.

But *Anaxius* (ſeeming a weary before it was ended) tolde *Amphialus*, that for his part he liked no muſick, but the neighing of horſes, the ſound of trumpets, and the cries of yeelding perſons: and therefore deſired, that the next morning they ſhould iſſue vpō the ſame place, wher they had ētred that day, not doubting to make them quickely a wearie of being the beſiegers of *Anaxius*. *Amphialus*, who had no whit leſſe courage, though nothing blowne vp with pride, willingly condiſcended and ſo the next morning (giuing falſe alarum to the other ſide of the campe) *Amphialus* at *Anaxius* earneſt requeſt, ſtaying within the towne to ſee it garded, *Anaxius* and his brethren, *Lycurgus*, and *Zoilus*, ſallied out with the beſt choſen men. But *Baſilius* (hauing bene the laſt day ſome what vnprouided) now had better fortified the ouerthrowne ſconſe; and ſo well had prepared euery thing for defence, that it was impoſſible for any valour from within, to preuaile. Yet thinges were perfourmed by *Anaxius* beyonde the credite of the credulous. For thriſe (valiantly followed by his brothers) did he ſet vp his banner vpon the rampire of the enemie: though thriſe againe by the multitude, & aduauntage of the place, but eſpecially by the comming of three valiant Knights, he were driuen downe againe. Numbers there were that day, whoſe deathes and ouerthrowes were excuſed by the well knowen ſworde of *Anaxius*: but the reſt, by the length of time & iniurie of Hiſtorians, haue bene wrapped vp in darke forgetfulneſſe: onely *Treſſennius* is ſpoken of, becauſe when all abandoned the place, he onely made head to *Anaxius*; till hauing loſt one of his legs, yet not loſt the harte of fighting, *Lycurgus* (ſecond brother to *Anaxius*) cruellie murthered him; *Anaxius* him ſelfe diſdayning any further to deale with him.

But ſo farre had *Anaxius* at the third time preuayled, that now the *Baſilians* began to let their courage deſcende to their feete, *Baſilius*, & *Philanax* in vaine ſtriuing with reuerence of authoritie to bridle the flight of aſtoniſhment, and to teach Feare diſcretion: ſo that *Amphialus*, ſeeing Victorie ſhewe ſuch a flattering countenaunce to him, came out with all his force; hoping that day to end the ſiege.

But that fancie altered quicklie by the ſuddaine comming to the other ſide of three Knights, whereof the one was in white armour, the other in greene, and the third by his blacke armour; and deuice ſtreight knowne to be the notable Knight, who the firſt day had giuen Fortune ſo ſhort a ſtoppe with his notable deedes and fighting hand to hand the deemed inuincible *Amphialus*. For the very cowardes no ſooner ſaw him, but as borrowing ſome of his ſpirit, they went like yong Eagles to the pray, vnder the wing of their damme. For the three aduenturers, not content

to keepe them from their rampier, leapt downe among them, and entered into a braue combate with the three valiant brothers. But to whether side Fortune would haue beene partiall, could not be determined. For the *Basilians*, lightened with the beames of these straungers valure; followed so thicke, that the *Amphialians* were glad with some haste to retire to the walles warde: though *Anaxius* neither reason, feare, nor example, coulde make him asswage the furie of his fight: vntill one of the *Basilians* (vnwoorthie to haue his name registred, since he did it cowardly, sideward, when he least looked that way) almost cut off one of his legges: so as he fell downe, blaspheming heauen, that all the influences thereof had power to ouerthrow him; and there death would haue seazed of his proud hart, but that *Amphialus* tooke in hande the blacke knight, while some of his souldiers conueied away *Anaxius*, so requiting life for life vnto him.

And for the loue and example of *Amphialus*, the fight began to enter into a newe fitte of heate: when *Basilius* (that thought inough to be done for that day) caused retraite to be sounded; fearing least his men following ouer-earnestly, might bee the losse of those excellent Knights whom he desired to know. The Knights as soone as they heard the retraite (though they were eagerly set, knowing that courage without discipline is nearer beastlinesse then manhood) drew backe their swords, though hungrie of more blood: especially the blacke Knight, who knowing *Amphialus*, could not refraine to tell him, that this was the seconde time hee escaped out of his hands, but that he would shortly bring him a bill of all the former accounts. *Amphialus* seing it fit to retire also (most of his people being hurt, both in bodies and harts) withdrewe himselfe, with so well seated a resolution, that it was as farre from anger, as from dismayednesse; answering no other to the blacke Knights threats, but that when he brought him his account, he should finde a good pay-master.

The fight being ceased, and ech side withdrawne within their strengthes, *Basilius* sent *Philanax* to entertaine the straung Knights, and to bring them vnto him, that he might acknowledge what honour was due to their vertue. But they excused theselues, desiring to be knowne first by their deedes, before their names should accuse their vnworthinesse: and though the other replied according as they deserued, yet (finding that vnwelcome curtesie is a degree of iniury) hee suffered them to retire themselues to a tent of their owne without the campe, where they kept themselues secrete: *Philanax* himselfe being called away to another straunge Knight; straunge not onely by the vnlookednesse of his comming. but by the straunge maner of his comming.

For he had before him foure damosels, and so many behind him, all vpon palfreys and all appareled in mourning weedes; each of them a seruant of each side, with like liueries of sorrow. Himselfe in an armour, all painted ouer with such a cunning of shadow, that it represented a gaping sepulchre, the furniture of his horse was all of Cypresse braunches: wherewith in olde time they were woont to dresse graues. His Bases (which he ware so long, as they came almost to his ankle) were imbrodered onely with blacke wormes, which seemed to crawle vp and downe, as readie alreadie to deuoure him. In his shielde for *Impresa*, he had a beautifull childe, but hauing two heades; whereon the one shewed, that it was alreadie dead: the other aliue, but in that case, necessarily looking for death. The worde was, *No way to be rid from death, but by death.*

This Knight of the tombe (for so the souldiours termed him) sent to, *Basilius* to demaund

demaund leaue to ſend in a damoſel into the towne, to call out *Amphialus*, according as before time ſome others had done. Which being graunted (as glad any would vndertake the charge, which no bodie elſe in that campe was knowne willing to do) the damoſell went in & hauing with teares ſobbed out a braue chalenge to *Amphialus*, from the Knight of the Tombe, *Amphialus*, honourably enterteining the gentelwoman and deſiring to knowe the Knights name (which the doolefull Gentlewoman would not diſcouer) accepted the chalenge, only deſiring the Gentlewoman to ſay thus much to the ſtraunge Knight, from him; that if his minde were like to his title, there were more cauſe of affinitie, then enmitie betweene them. And therefore preſently (according as he was woont) as ſoone as he perceyued the Knight of the Tombe, with his Damoſels and Iudge, was come into the Iland, hee allſo went ouer in accuſtomed maner: and yet for the curteſie of his nature, deſired to ſpeake with him.

But the Knight of the Tombe, with ſilence, and drawing his horſe backe, ſhewed no will to heare, nor ſpeake: but with Launce on thigh, made him knowe, it was fitte for him to go to the other ende of the Career, whence wayting the ſtarte of the vnknowne Knight, he likewiſe made his ſpurres claime haſte of his horſe. But when his ſtaffe was in his reſt, comming downe to meete with the Knight, nowe verie neere him, hee perceyued the Knight had miſt his reſt: wherefore the curteous *Amphialus* woulde not let his Launce deſcende, but with a gallant grace, ranne ouer the heade of his there-in friended enemie: and hauing ſtepped his horſe, and with the turning of him, bleſſed his ſight with the Windowe where hee thought *Philoclea* might ſtand, hee perceyued the Knight had lighted from his horſe, and throwne away his ſtaffe, angrie with his misfortune, as of hauing miſt his reſt, and drawne his ſword to make that ſupply his fellowes fault. He alſo lighted, and drew his ſworde, eſteeming victorie by aduantage, rather robbed then purchaſed: and ſo the other comming eagerly towarde him, he with his ſhield out, and ſworde aloft, with more brauerie then anger, drew vnto him; and ſtraight made their ſwords ſpeake for them a pretie-while with equall fearcenes. But *Amphialus* (to whome the earth brought forth few matches) hauing both much more skill to chooſe the places, and more force to worke vpon the choſen, had already made many windowes in his armour for death to com in at; whē in the noblenes of his nature abhorring to make the puniſhment ouergoe the offence he ſtept a little backe, and withall, Sir Knight (ſaid he) you may eaſely ſee, that it pleaſeth God to fauour my cauſe; employ your valour againſt them that wiſh you hurt: for my part, I haue not deſerued hate of you. Thou lyeſt falſe traytor, ſaide the other, with an angrie, but weake voyce. But *Amphialus*, in whome abuſed kindneſſe became ſpitefull rage, Ah barbarous wretch (ſaid he) onely couragious in diſcourteſie; thou ſhalt ſoone ſee whether thy toonge hath betrayed thy harte, or no: and with that, redoubling his blowes, gaue him a great wound vpon his necke, and cloſing with him ouerthrew him, & in the fall thruſt him mortally into the body: and with that went to pull off his helmet, with intention to make him giue himſelfe the lye, for hauing ſo ſaide, or to cut off his head.

But the head-peece was no ſooner off, but that there fell about the ſhoulders of the ouercome Knight the treaſure of faire golden haire, which with the face (ſoone known by the badge of excellencie) witneſſed that it was *Parthenia*, the vnfortunatelie vertuous wife of *Argalus*: her beautie then euen in deſpight of the paſſed ſorrow, or comming death, aſſuring all beholders, that it was nothing ſhort of perfecti-

on.

on. For her exceeding faire eyes, hauing with continual weeping gotten a little rednesse about them; her roundy ſweetly ſwelling lippes a little trembling, as though they kiſſed their neighbour death; in her cheekes the whiteneſſe ſtriuing by little & little to get vpō the roſines of thē; her necke, a necke indeed of Alablaſter, diſplaying the wound, which with moſt daintie blood laboured to drowne his owne beauties; ſo as here was a riuer of pureſt redde, there an Iland of perfitteſt white, each giuing luſtre to the other; with the ſweete countenance (God-knowes) full of an vnafected languiſhing: though theſe thinges to a groſly conceauing ſenſe might ſeeme diſgraces; yet indeed were they but apparaling beautie in a new faſhion, which all looked-vpon thorough the ſpectacles of pittie, did euen encreaſe the lynes of her naturall fairenes, ſo as *Amphialus* was aſtoniſhed with griefe, compaſſion, and ſhame, deteſting his fortune, that made him vnfortunate in victory.

Therefore, putting off his headpeece and gauntlet; kneeling downe vnto her, and with teares teſtifying his ſorow, he offred his (by himſelfe accurſed) handes to helpe her: proteſting his life and power to be readie to doo her honour. But *Parthenia* (who had inward meſſingers of the deſired deathes approch) looking vpon him and ſtreight turning away her feeble ſight, as from a delightleſſe obiect, drawing out her words, which her breath (loath to departe from ſo ſweet a bodie) did faintly deliuer, Sir (ſaid ſhe) I pray you (if prayers haue place in enemies) to let my maides take my body vntouched by you: the onely honour I now deſire by your meanes, is, that I haue no honour of you. *Argalus* made no ſuch bargaine with you, that the handes which killed him, ſhoulde helpe me. I haue of them (and I doo not onely pardon you, but thanke you for it) the ſeruice which I deſired. There reſts nothing now, but that I go liue with him, ſince whoſe death I haue done nothing but die. Then pawſing, and a little fainting, and againe comming to herſelfe, O ſweete life, welcome (ſaide ſhe) nowe feele I the bandes vntied of the cruell death, which ſo long hath helde me. And O life, O death, aunſwere for mee, that my thoughts haue not ſo much as in a dreame taſted any comfort; ſince they were depriued of *Argalus*. I come, my *Argalus*, I come: And, O God hide my faultes in thy mercies, and graunt (as I feele thou dooſt graunt) that in thy eternall loue, we may loue eche other eternally. And this O Lorde: But there *Atropos* cut off her ſentence: for with that, caſting vp both eyes and hands to the skies, the noble ſoule departed (one might well aſſure himſelfe) to heauen, which left the bodie in ſo heauenly a demeanure.

But *Amphialus* (with a hart oppreſſed with griefe, becauſe of her requeſt) withdrewe himſelfe, but the Iudges, as full of pitie, had bene al this while diſarming her, and her gentelwomen with lamentable cries, laboring to ſtanch the remediles wounds: and a while ſhe was dead before they perceiued it; death being able to diuide the ſoule, but not the beauty from that body. But when the infallible tokens of death aſſured them of their loſſe, one of the women would haue killed her ſelfe, but that the ſquire of *Amphialus* perceauing it, by force held her. Others that had as ſtrong paſſion, though weaker reſolution, fell to caſt duſt vppon their heads, to teare their garments: al falling vpon the earth & crying vpon their ſweet miſtres; as if their cries could perſwade the ſoule to leaue the celeſtiall happines, to come againe into the elements of ſorrow: one time calling to remembrance her vertue, chaſtnes, ſweetnes, goodnes to them: another time accurſing themſelues, that they had obeyed her,

they

they hauing bene deceaued by her words, who assured thē, that it was reuealed vnto her, that she should haue her harts desire in the battaile against *Amphialus*, which they wrongly vnderstood. Then kissing her cold hands and feete, wearie of the world, since she was gone, who was their world. The very heauens seemed, with a cloudie countenance, to loure at the losse, and Fame it selfe (though by nature glad to tell such rare accidents, yet) could not choose but deliuer it in lamentable accents, and in such sort went it quickly all ouer the Campe: and, as if the aire had bene infected with sorow, no hart was so hard, but was subiect to that contagion; the rarenes of the accidēt, matching together (the rarely matched together) pittie with admiration, *Basilius* himselfe came foorth, and brought the faire *Gynecia* with him, who was come into the campe vnder colour of visiting her husband, and hearing of her daughters: but indeed *Zelmane* was the Sainct, to which her pilgrimage was entended: cursing, enuying, blessing, and in her hart kissing the walles which imprisoned her. But both they with *Philanax*, and the rest of the principall Nobilitie, went out, to make Honour triumph ouer Death, conueying that excellent body (whereto *Basilius* himselfe would needes lende his shoulder) to a Church a mile from the Campe, where the valiant *Argalus* lay intombed; recommending to that sepulchre, the blessed reliques of faithfull and vertuous Loue: giuing order for the making of marble images, to represent them, and each way enriching the tombe. Vpon which, *Basilius* himselfe caused this Epitaph to be written.

The Epitaph.

HIs being was in her alone:
And he not being, she was none.

They ioi'd one ioy, one griefe they griev'd,
One loue they lou'd, one life they liu'd.
The hand was one, one was the sword
That did his death, hir death afford.

As all the rest, so now the stone
That tombes the two, is iustly one.

ARGALVS & PARTHENIA.

Then with eyes full of teares, and mouthes full of her prayses, returned they to the campe, with more and more hate against *Amphialus*: who (poore Gentleman) had therefore greater portion of woe, then any of them. For that courteous hearte, which would haue grieued but to haue heard the like aduenture, was rent with remembring himselfe to be the author: so that his wisdome could not so far temper his passion, but that he tooke his sword, counted the best in the world (which with much bloud he had once conquered of a mighty Giant) and brake it into many

peeces (which afterwards he had good cauſe to repent) ſaying, that neither it was worthy to ſerue the noble exerciſe of chiualrie, nor any other worthy to feele that ſword, which had ſtroken ſo excellēt a Lady: and withall, baniſhing all cheerfulnes of his countenance, he returned home. Where he gate him to his bed, not ſo much to reſt his reſtles mind, as to auoid all company, the ſight wherof was tedious vnto him. And then melancholie (only rich in vnfortunate remembrances) brought before him all the miſhaps, with which his life had wreſtled: taking this, not only as a confirming of the former, but a preſage of following miſerie; and to his harte (alredy ouercome by ſorrowfulnes) euen trifling misfortunes came, to fill vp the rolle of a grieued memorie, labouring only his wits to pearce farther & farther into his owne wretchednes. So as all that night (in deſpite of darknes) he held his eyes open; and the morning when the light began to reſtore to each body his colour, then with curtaines bard he himſelfe frō the enioying of it: neither willing to feele the comfort of the day, nor the eaſe of the night: vntil his mother (who neuer knew what loue meant, but only to himward) came to his bed ſide, and beginning with louing earneſtnes to lay a kind chiding vpō him, becauſe he would ſuffer the weaknes of ſorow, to conquere the ſtrength of his vertues; he did with a broken peecemeale ſpeach (as if the tēpeſt of paſſion vnorderly blewe out his words) remember the miſhaps of his youth, the euils he had ben cauſe of, his rebelling with Shame, & that ſhame increaſed with ſhamefull accidents, the deaths of *Philoxenus* & *Parthenia*, wherein he found himſelfe hated of the euer-ruling powers, but eſpecially (and ſo eſpecially, as the reſt ſeemed nothing when he came to that) his fatall loue to *Philoclea*: to whom he had ſo gouerned himſelfe; as one that could neither conquer, nor yeeld; being of the one ſide a ſlaue, & of the other a iaylor: and with all, almoſt vpbrayding vnto his mother the little ſucceſſe of her large hoping promiſes, he in effect finding *Philoclea* nothing mollified, and now himſelfe ſo caſt downe, as hee thought him vnworthy of better. But his mother (as ſhe had plentifull cauſe) making him ſee, that of his other griefes there was little or no fault in himſelf, and therfore there ought to be little or no griefe in him; when ſhe came to the head of the ſore, indeed ſeeing that ſhe could no lōger patch vp her former promiſes (he taking a deſperat deafnes to all delaying hopes) ſhe confeſt plainly, that ſhe could preuaile nothing: but the fault was his owne, who had marred the yong Girle by ſeeking to haue that by praier, which he ſhould haue taken by authoritie. That as it were an abſurd cunning to make hie ladders to go in a plaine way; ſo was it an vntimely and fooliſh flattery, there to beſeech, where one might commaund, puffing them vp by being beſought, with ſuch a ſelfe-pride of ſuperioritie, that it was not (forſooth) to be held out, but by a denial. O God (ſaid *Amphialus*) how wel I thought my fortune would bring forth this end of your labors? aſſure your ſelf, mother, I wil ſooner pull out theſe eies, then they ſhall looke vpō the heauenly *Philoclea*, but as vpō a heauen, whence they haue their light, & to which they are ſubiect, if they wil power downe any influēces of comfort, O happy I: but if by the ſacrifice of a faithful hart, they wil not be called vnto me, let me languiſh, & wither with languiſhing, and grieue with withering, but neuer ſo much as repine with neuer ſo much grieuing. Mother, ô Mother, luſt may wel be a tyrant, but true loue where it is indeed, it is a ſeruant. Accurſed more then I am, may I be, if euer I did approch her, but that I friezed aſmuch in a fearefull reuerēce, as I burned in a vehemēt deſire. Did euer mās eye looke thorough loue vpō the maieſty of vertue, ſhining through beauty, but that he becam (as it wel becam him) a captiue, & is it the ſtile of a captiue to write, *Our will and pleaſure?*

Tuſh,

Tush, tush sonne (said *Cecropia*) if you say you loue, but withall you feare; you feare lest you should offend; offend? and how know you, that you should offend? because she doth denie: denie? Now by my truth, if your sadnes would let me laugh, I could laugh hartily, to see that yet you are ignorant, that No, is no negatiue in a womans mouth. My sonne, beleeue me, a woman, speaking of women: a louers modesty among vs is much more praised, then liked: or if we like it, so well we like it, that for marring of his modestie, he shall neuer proceed further. Each vertue hath his time: if you command your souldier to march formost, and he for curtesie put others before him, would you praise his modesty? loue is your Generall: he bids you dare: and will *Amphialus* be a dastard? Let examples serue: doo you thinke *Theseus* should euer haue gotten *Antiope* with sighing, and crossing his armes? he rauished her, and rauished her that was an *Amazon*, and therfore had gotten a habite of stoutnes aboue the nature of a woman; but hauing rauished her, he got a child of her. And I say no more, but that (they say) is not gotten without consent of both sides. *Iole* had her owne father killed by *Hercules*, and her selfe rauished, by force rauished, and yet ere long this rauished, and vnfathered Lady could sportfully put on the Lions skin vpon her owne faire shoulders, and play with the clubbe with her owne delicate hands: so easily had she pardoned the rauisher, that she could not but delight in those weapons of rauishing. But aboue all, marke *Helen* daughter to *Iupiter*, who could neuer brooke her manerly-wooing *Menelaus*, but disdained his humblenes, and lothed his softnes. But so well she could like the force of enforcing *Paris*, that for him she could abide what might be abidden. But what? *Menelaus* takes hart, he recouers her by force, by force carries her home, by force inioies her; and she, who could neuer like him for seruiceableneese, euer after loued him for violence. For what can be more agreable, then vpon force to lay the fault of desire, and in one instant to ioyne a deare delight with a iust excuse? or rather the true cause is (pardon me ô woman-kinde for reuealing to mine owne sonne the truth of this mystery) we thinke there wants fire, where we finde no sparkles at lest of furie. Truly I haue knowen a great Lady, long sought by most great, most wise, most beautifull, most valiant persons; neuer wonne, because they did ouersuperstitiously sollicite her: the same Ladie brought vnder by an other, inferiour to all them in all those qualities, onely because he could vse that imperious maisterfulnesse, which nature giues to men aboue women. For indeede (sonne, I confesse vnto you) in our very creation we are seruants: and who prayseth his seruaunts shall neuer be well obeyed: but as a ready horse streight yeeldes, when he findes one that will haue him yeelde, the same fals to boundes when he feeles a fearefull horseman. Awake thy spirits (good *Amphialus*) and assure thy selfe, that though she refuseth, she refuseth but to endeere the obtaining. If she weepe, and chide, and protest, before it be gotten, she can but weepe, and chide, and protest, when it is gotten. Thinke, she would not striue, but that she meanes to trie thy force: and my *Amphialus*, knowe thy selfe a man, and shew thy selfe a man: and (beleeue me vpon my word) a woman is a woman.

Amphialus was about to answere her, when a Gentleman of his made him vnderstand, that there was a messenger come, who had brought a letter vnto him from out of the campe: whom he presently calling for, tooke, opened, and read the letter, importing this.

TO thee Amphialus *of* Arcadia, *the forſaken Knight wiſheth health, and courage, that by my hand thou maieſt receyue puniſhment for thy treaſon, according to thine owne offer, which wickedly occaſioned, thou haſt proudly begun, and accurſedly mainteyned. I will preſently (if thy minde faint thee not for his owne guiltineſſe) meete thee in thy Iland, in ſuch order, as hath by the former beene vſed: or if thou likeſt not the time, place, or weapon, I am ready to take thine owne reaſonable choiſe in any of them; ſo as thou doo perfourme the ſubſtaunce. Make me ſuch anſwere as may ſhewe that thou haſt ſome taſte of honour: and ſo I leaue thee, to liue till I meete thee.*

Amphialus read it, and with a deepe ſigh (according to the humour of inward affliction) ſeemed euen to condemne him ſelfe, as though indeed his reproches were true. But howſoeuer the dulnes of Melancholy would haue languiſhingly yeelded thereunto, his Courage (vnuſed to ſuch iniuries) deſired helpe of Anger to make him this anſwere.

FOrſaken Knight, *though your nameleſſe challenge might carry in it ſelfe excuſe for a man of my birth and eſtate, yet herein ſet your harte at reſt, you ſhall not be forſaken. I will without ſtay anſwere you in the woonted manner, and come both armed in your fooliſh threatnings, and yet the more feareleſſe, expecting weake blowes, where I finde ſo ſtrong words. You ſhall not therefore long attende me in the Iland, before proofe teach you, that of my life you haue made your ſelfe too large a promiſe. In the meane time, Farewell.*

This being written, and deliuered, the meſſenger tolde him, that his Lord would (if he liked the ſame) bring two Knights with him to be his *Patrons*. Which *Amphialus* accepted, and withall ſhaking off (with reſolution) his mothers importunate diſſwaſions, he furniſhed him ſelfe for the fight: but not in his wonted furniture. For now (as if he would turne his inſide outward) he would needes appeare all in blacke; his decking both for him ſelfe, and horſe, being cut out into the faſhion of very ragges: yet all ſo daintely ioyned together with pretious ſtones, as it was a braue raggedneſſe, and a riche pouertie: and ſo cunningly had a workeman followed his humour in his armour, that he had giuen it a ruſtie ſhewe, and yet ſo, as any man might perceiue was by arte, and not negligence; carying at one inſtant a diſgraced handſomneſſe, and a new oldnes. In his ſhield he bare for his deuiſe, a Night, by an excellent painter excellently painted, with a Sunne with a ſhadow, and vpon the ſhadow with a ſpeech ſignifying, that it *onely* was *barrd from inioying that, whereof it had his life:* or, *From whoſe I am, banniſhed.* In his creſte he caried *Philocleas* kniues, the onely token of her forced fauour.

So paſt he ouer into the Iland, taking with him the two brothers of *Anaxius*; where he founde the forſaken Knight, attired in his owne liuerie, as blacke, as ſorrowe it ſelfe could ſee it ſelfe in the blackeſt glaſſe: his ornaments of the ſame hew, but formed into the figure of Rauens, which ſeemed to gape for carrion: onely his raynes were ſnakes, which finely wrapping themſelues one within the other, their heads came together to the cheekes and boſſes of the bit, where they might ſeeme to bite at the horſe, and the horſe (as he champte the bit) to bite at them; and that the white foame was ingendred by the poyſonous furie of the combatt. His *Impreſa* was a *Catoblepta* which ſo long lies dead, as the Moone (whereto it hath ſo naturall a ſympathie) wants her light. The worde ſignified that

The Moone wanted not the light, but the poore beast wanted the Moones light. He had in his headpiece, a whippe, to witnesse a selfe-punishing repentaunce. Their very horses were cole-blacke too, not hauing so much as one starre to giue light to their night of blackenesse: so as one would haue thought they had bene the two sonnes of Sorrow, and were come thether to fight for their birth-right in that sorie inheritance.

Which aliance of passions so moued *Amphialus* (alredy tender-minded by the afflictions of Loue) that without staffe or sword drawne, he trotted fairely to the forsaken Knight, willing to haue put off this combat, to which his melancholy hart did (more then euer in like occasion) misgiue him: and therefore saluting him, Good Knight (said he) because we are men, and should know reason why we doo things; tell me the cause, that makes you thus eager to fight with me. Because I affirme (answered the forsaken Knight) that thou dost most rebellious iniurie to those Ladies, to whome all men owe seruice. You shall not fight with me (saide *Amphialus*) vpon that quarrell: for I confesse the same too: but it proceeds from their owne beauty, to inforce Loue to offer this force. I maintaine then (said the forsaken Knight) that thou art not worthy so to loue. And that confesse I too (said *Amphialus*) since the world is not so richly blessed, as to bring forth any thing worthie thereof. But no more vnworthy then any other, since in none can be a more worthy loue. Yes, more vnworthy then my selfe (said the forsaken Knight) for though I deserue contempt, thou deseruest both contempt, and hatred.

But *Amphialus* by that thinking (though wrongly, each indeede mistaking other) that he was his riuall, forgat all minde of reconciliation, and hauing all his thoughts bound vp in choler, neuer staying either iudge, trumpet, or his owne launce, drew out his sword, and saying, Thou lyest false villaine, vnto him; his words & blowes came so quick together, as the one seemed a lightning of the others thunder. But he found no barren ground of such seede: for it yeelded him his owne with such encrease, that though Reason and Amazement go rarely togither, yet the most reasonable eies that saw it, found reason to be amazed at the fury of their combat. Neuer game of death better plaid; neuer fury set it selfe forth in greater brauerie. The curteous *Vulcan*, when he wrought at his more curteous wiues request, *Æneas* an armour, made not his hammer beget a greater sounde, then the swords of those noble Knights did, they needed no fire to their forge, for they made the fire to shine at the meeting of their swords, & armours, ech side fetching still new spirit from the castle window, and carefull of keeping their sight that way as a matter of greater consideration in their combat, then either the aduantage of Sun or winde: which Sunne & wind (if the astonished eies of the beholders were not by the astonishmēt deceiued) did both stand still to be beholders of this rare match. For neither could their amazed eies discerne motion in the Sunne, and no breath of winde stirred, as if either for feare it would not come among such blows, or with delight had his eies so busie, as it had forgot to open his mouth. This fight being the more cruell, since both Loue and Hatred conspired to sharpen their humours, that hard it was to say, whether Loue with one trumpet, or Hatred with another, gaue the lowder alarum to their courages. Spite, rage, disdaine, shame, reuenge, came waighting vpon Hatred: of the other side came with loue-longing Desire, both inuincible Hope, and feareless Despaire, with riuallike Iealousie, which (although brought vp within doores in the schoole of *Cupid*) woulde shewe them-selues no lesse

forward, then the other duſtie band of *Mars*, to make themſelues notable in the notablenes of this combat. Of eyther ſide Confidence, vnacquainted with Loſſe, but aſſured truſt to ouercome, and good experience how to ouercome: now ſeconding their terrible blowes with cunning labouring the horſes, to winne ground of the enimie; now vnlooked-for parting one from the other, to win aduantage by an aduantageous retourne. But force againſt force, skill againſt skill, ſo enterchangeably encountred, that it was not eaſie to determine, whether enterpriſing, or preuenting came former: both, ſometimes at one inſtant, doing and ſuffring wrong, and choller no leſſe riſing of the doing, then of the ſuffring. But as the fire, the more fuell is put to it, the more hungrie ſtill it is to deuoure more: ſo the more they ſtrake, the more vnſatisfied they were with ſtriking. Their verie armour by piecemeale fell away from them: and yet their fleſh abode the wounds conſtantly, as though it were leſſe ſenſible of ſmart, then the ſenſeleſſe armour: their blood in moſt places ſtayning their blacke couler, as if it would giue a more liuely coulour of mourning, then blacke can doo. And ſo a long ſpace they fought, while neither vertue, nor fortune ſeemed partiall of either ſide: which ſo tormented the vnquiet hart of *Amphialus*, that he reſolued to ſee a quicke ende: and therefore with the violence of courage, adding ſtrength to his blow, he ſtrake in ſuch wiſe vpon the ſide of the others head, that his remembrance left that battered lodging: ſo as he was quite from himſelfe, caſting his armes abroade, and redie to fall downe; his ſword likewiſe went out of his hand; but that being faſt by a chaine to his arme, he could not looſe. And *Amphialus* vſed the fauour of occaſion, redoubling his blowes: but the horſe (weary to be beaten, as well as the maſter) carried his maſter away, til he came vnto himſelf: But then who could haue ſeene him, might well haue diſcerned ſhame in his cheekes, and reuenge in his eyes: ſo as ſetting his teeth togither with rage, he came running vpon *Amphialus*, reaching out his arme, which had gathered vp the ſword, meaning with that blow to haue cleaued *Amphialus* in two. But *Amphialus* ſeeing the blow comming, ſhunned it with nimble turning his horſe aſide; wherwith the forſaken Knight ouer-ſtrake himſelfe ſo, as almoſt he came downe with his owne ſtrength. But the more hungrie of his purpoſe, the more he was bard the food of it: diſdaining the reſiſtance, both of force, and fortune, he returned vpon the ſpurre againe, and ranne with ſuch violence vpon *Amphialus*, that his horſe with the force of the ſhocke roſe vp before, almoſt ouerturned: which *Amphialus* perceauing, with rayne and ſpurre put forth his horſe; and withall gaue a mightie blow in the deſcent of his horſe, vpon the ſhoulder of the forſaken Knight; from whence ſliding, it fell vpon the necke of his horſe, ſo as horſe and man fell to the ground: but he was ſcarce downe before he was vp on his feete againe, with braue geſture ſhewing riſing of corage, in the falling of fortune. But the curteous *Amphialus* excuſed himſelfe, for hauing (againſt his will) kild his horſe. Excuſe thy ſelfe for viler faults (anſwered the forſaken Knight) and vſe this poore aduantage the beſt thou canſt; for thou ſhalt quickly finde thou haſt neede of more. Thy folly (ſaid *Amphialus*) ſhall not make me forget my ſelfe: and therewith (trotting a little aſide) alighted from his horſe, becauſe he would not haue fortune come to claime any part of the victory. Which curteous act would haue mollified the noble harte of the forſaken Knight, if any other had done it, beſides the Iaylor of his miſtres: but that was a ſufficient defeazaunce for the firmeſt bond of good nature; and therefore he was no ſooner alighted, but that he

ranne

ranne vnto him, re-entring into as cruell a fight, as eye did euer ſee, or thought could reaſonably imagine; farre beyond the reach of weak words to bee able to expreſſe it. For what they had done on horſebacke, was but as a morſell to keep their ſtomakes in appetite, in compariſon of that, which now (being themſelues) they did. Nor euer glutton by the change of daintie diet could be brought to freſh feeding (when he might haue bene ſatiſfied before) with more earneſtnes, then thoſe (by the change of their maner of fight) fell cleane to a new fight, though any elſe would haue thought they had had their fil alredy. *Amphialus* being the taller mã, for the moſt part ſtood with his right legge before; his ſhield at the vtterm oſt length of his arme; his ſworde hie, but with the point toward his enemy. But when he ſtrake, which came ſo thick, as if euery blow would ſtriue to be foremoſt, his arme ſeemed ſtill a poſtillion of death. The forſaken Knight ſhewed with like skill, vnlike geſture, keeping himſelfe in continuall motion, proportioning the diſtance betweene them to any thing that *Amphialus* attempted: his eye guided his foote, and his foote conueighed his hand; and ſince nature had made him ſomething the lower of the two, he made art follow, and not ſtriue with nature: ſhunning rather then warding his blowes; like a cũning maſtiffe, who knowes the ſharpnes of the horne & ſtrength of the Bull, fights low to get his proper aduantage; anſwering mightines with nimblenes, and yet at times imploying his wonderfull force, wherein he was ſecond to none. In ſumme, the blowes were ſtronge, the thruſts thicke, and the auoydinges cunning. But the forſaken Knight (that thought it a degree of being conquered to be long in conquering) ſtrake him ſo mightie a blowe, that he made *Amphialus* put knee to the grounde, without any humblenes. But when hee felt himſelfe ſtriken downe, and ſaw himſelfe ſtriken downe by his riuall, then ſhame ſeemed one arme, and diſdaine another; fury in his eyes, and reuenge in his harte; ſkill and force gaue place, and they tooke the place of ſkill and force: with ſo vnwearyable a manner, that the forſaken Knight alſo was driuen to leaue the ſterne of cunning, & giue himſelfe wholly to be guided by the ſtorme of fury: there being in both (becauſe hate would not ſuffer admiration) extreame diſdaine to finde themſelues ſo matched.

What (ſaid *Amphialus* to himſelfe) am I *Amphialus*, before whom ſo many monſters and Gyantes haue falne dead, when I onely ſought cauſeleſſe aduentures? and can one Knight now withſtand me in the preſence of *Philoclea*, and fighting for *Philoclea*? or ſince I loſt my liberty, haue I loſt my courag? haue I gottẽ the hart of a ſlaue, as wel as the fortũe? If an armie were againſt me in the ſight of *Philoclea*, could it reſiſt me? O beaſt, on man reſiſts thee: thy riual reſiſts thee or am I indeed *Amphialus*? haue not paſſions kild him, and wretched I (I know not how) ſucceeded into his place? Of the other ſide the forſaken Knight with no leſſe ſpite, fell out with himſelfe; Haſt thou broken (ſaide hee to himſelfe) the commandement of thy onely Princeſſe to come now into her preſence, and in her preſence to proue thy ſelfe a coward? Doth *Aſia* and *Ægypt* ſet vp Trophes vnto thee, to be matched here by a traytor? O noble *Barſanes*, how ſhamed will thy ſoule be, that he that ſlew thee, ſhould be reſiſted by this one man? O incomparable *Pyrocles*, more grieued wilt thou be with thy friends ſhame, then with thine own impriſonment, when thou ſhalt know how little I haue bene able to doo for the deliuerie of thee, and thoſe heauenly Princeſſes. Am I worthie to be friend to the moſt valourous Prince that euer was entituled valorous, and ſhew my ſelfe ſo weake a wretch? No, ſhamed *Muſidorus*, worthie for nothing, but to keepe ſheepe, get thee a ſheephooke againe, ſince thou canſt vſe a ſworde no better.

Thus at times did they, now with one thought, then with another, ſharpen their ouer-ſharpe humors; like the Lion that beates himſelfe with his owne taile, to make himſelfe the more angrie. Theſe thoughtes indeede not ſtaying, but whetting their angrie ſwordes, which nowe had put on the apparraile of Crueltie: they bleeding ſo aboundantly, that euery bodie that ſawe them, fainted for them, and yet they fainted not in themſelues: their ſmart being more ſenſible to others eyes, then to their owne feeling: Wrath and Courage barring the common ſenſe from bringing any meſſage of their caſe to the minde: Paine, Wearines, and Weaknes, not daring to make knowen their caſe (though already in the limits of death) in the preſence of ſo violent furie: which filling the veines with rage, in ſtead of bloud, and making the minde miniſter ſpirites to the bodie, a great while held out their fight, like an arrowe ſhotte vpward by the force of the bowe, though by his owne nature he would goe downward. The forſaken Knight had the more woundes, but *Amphialus* had the ſoarer; which the other (watchinge time and place) had conningly geuen vnto him. Who euer ſaw a well-mand Galley fight with a tal ſhip, might make vnto himſelfe ſome kinde of compariſon of the difference of theſe two Knights; a better couple then which the worlde coulde not bragge of. *Amphialus* ſeemed to excell in ſtrength, the forſaken Knight in nimblenes; and yet did the ones ſtrength excell in nimblenes, and the others nimblenes excell in ſtrength: but now, ſtrength and nimblenes were both gone, and exceſſe of courage onely maintained the fight. Three times had *Amphialus* with his mightie blowes driuen the forſaken Knight to goe ſtaggering backwarde, but euery one of thoſe times he requited paine with ſmarte and ſhame with repulſe. And now, whether he had cauſe, or that ouer-much confidence (an ouer-forward ſcholer of vnconquered Courage) made him think he had cauſe, he began to perſuade himſelfe he had the aduantage of the combat, though the aduantage he toke himſelf to haue, was only that he ſhould be the later to die: which hope, Hate (as vnſecrete as Loue) could not conceale, but drawing himſelfe a little backe from him, brake out in theſe maner of words.

Ah *Amphialus* (ſaide the forſaken knight) this third time thou ſhalt not eſcape me but thy death ſhal ſatisfie thy iniury, & my malice; & pay for the cruelty thou ſhewedſt in killing the noble *Argalus*, & the fair *Parthenia*. In troth (ſaid *Amphialus*) thou art the beſt knight that euer I fought withal, which would make me willing to graũt thee thy life, if thy wit were as good as thy corage; (that beſids other follies) laiſt that to my charge, which moſt againſt my will was committed. But whether my death be in thy power, or no, let this tell thee; And vpon the word wayted a blow, which parted his ſhield into two peeces; & deſpiſing the weak reſiſtance of his already broken armor, made a great breach into his hart ſide, as if hee would make a paſſage for his loue to get out at.

But paine rather ſeemed to increaſe life, then to weaken life in thoſe champions. For, the forſaken Knight comming in with his right legge, and making it guide the force of the blowe, ſtrake *Amphialus* vpon the bellie, ſo horrible a wound, that his guts came out withall. Which *Amphialus* perceauing (fearing death, onely becauſe it ſhould come with ouerthrow) hee ſeemed to coniure all his ſtrength for one moments ſeruice; & ſo, lifting vp his, ſword with both hands, hit the forſaken knight vpon the head, a blow, wherewith his ſword brake. But (as if it would do a notable ſeruice before it died) it preuayled ſo, euen in the inſtant of breaking, that the forſaken Knight fell to the grounde; quite for that inſtant forgetting both loue and hatred:

and

& *Amphialus* (finding him ſelfe alſo in ſuch weaknes, as he looked for ſpeedy death) glad of the victorie, though little hoping to enioy it, puld vp his viſar, meaning with his dagger to giue him death; but in ſtead of death, hee gaue him life: for, the aire ſo reuiued his ſpirits, that comming to himſelfe, and ſeeing his preſent danger, with a life conquering death, he tooke *Amphialus* by the thigh, and together roſe himſelfe, and ouerturned him. But *Amphialus* ſcrambled vp againe, both nowe ſo weake indeede, as their motions rather ſeemed the afterdrops to a ſtorme, then any matter of great furie.

But *Amphialus* might repent himſelfe of his wilfull breaking his good ſword: for, the forſaken Knight (hauing with the extremitie of iuſtly-conceiued hate, and the vnpitifulnes of his owne neere-threatning death, blotted out all complements of courteſie) let flie at him ſo cruelly, that though the blowes were weake, yet weakenes vpon a weakned ſubiect, proued ſuch ſtrength, that *Amphialus* hauing attempted in vaine, once or twiſe to cloſe with him, receauing wound vpon wound, ſent his whole burden to ſtrike the earth with falling, ſince hee coulde ſtrike his foe no better in ſtanding: geuing no other tokens of himſelfe, then as of a man euen ready to take his oath to be Deathes true ſeruant.

Which when the hardie brothers of *Anaxius* perceaued, not recking lawe of armes, nor vſe of chiualrie, they flew in to defende their friende, or reuenge their loſſe of him. But they were foorth with encountred with the two braue companions of the forſaken Knight; whereof the one being all in greene, both armour and furniture, it ſeemed a pleaſant garden, wherein grew orange trees; which with their golden fruites, cunningly beaten in, and embrodered, greatly enriched the eye-pleaſing colour of greene. In his ſhield was a ſheep, feeding in a pleaſant field, with this word, *Without feare, or enuie*. And therefore was called the Knight of the ſheep. The other Knight was all in milke white, his attiring els, all cutte in ſtarres, which made of cloth of ſiluer, and ſiluer ſpangles, each waye ſeemed to caſt many aſpectes. His deuice was the very Pole it ſelfe, about which many ſtarres ſtirring, but the place it ſelfe, lefte voide. The word was, *The beſt place yet reſerued*. But theſe foure Knightes, inheriting the hate of their friends, began a moſt fierce combat: the forſaken Knight himſelfe not able to helpe his ſide, but was driuen to ſit him downe, with the extreame faintneſſe of his more and more fainting body. But thoſe valiant couples ſeeking honour by diſhonouring, and to build ſafety vpon ruine, gaue new appetites, to the almoſt glutted eies of the beholders: and now bloud began to put ſweat from the full poſſeſſion of their outſides, no aduantage being yet to bee ſeene; onely the Knight of the ſheepe ſeeming moſt deliuer, and affecting moſt all that viewed him, when a company of ſouldiers ſent by *Cecropia*, came out in boates to the Iland: and all came running to the deſtruction of the three Knights, whereof the one was vtterly vnable to defend himſelfe.

But then did the other two Knights ſhewe their wonderfull courage, and fidelitie. For turning backe to backe, and both beſtriding the black forſaken Knight (who had fainted ſo long till he had loſt the feeling of faintneſſe) they helde playe againſt the reſt, though the two brothers vnknightly helped them; til *Philanax* (who watchfully attended ſuch traiterous practiſes) ſent likewiſe ouer, both by boate and ſwimming, ſo choiſe a number as did put moſt of the other to the ſworde. Onely the two Brothers, with ſome of the braueſt of them, carrying away the body of *Amphialus*, which they would rather haue died, then haue left behind them.

So

So was the forſaken Knight (layed vpon clokes) carried home to the campe. But his two friends knowing his earneſt deſire not to be knowen, couering him from any bodies eyes, conueyed him to their owne tente: *Baſilius* himſelfe conquering his earneſt deſire to ſee him, with feare to diſpleaſe him, who had fought ſo notably in his quarrell. But Fame ſet the honour vpon his backe, which he would not ſuffer to ſhine in his face: no mans mouth being barrein of prayſes to the noble Knight, that had bettered the moſt eſteemed Knight in the worlde: euery bodie praying for his life, and thinking that therein they prayed for themſelues. But hee himſelfe, when by the diligent care of friends, and well applied cunning of ſurgeons, he came to renewe againe the league betweene his minde and body; then fell he to a freſhe warre with his owne thoughts, wrongfully condemning his manhood, laying cowardiſe to himſelfe, whome the impudenteſt backbiter would not ſo haue wronged. For his courage (vſed to vſe victory as an inheritaunce) coulde brooke no reſiſtance at any time: but now that hee had promiſed him ſelfe not onely the conqueſt of him, but the ſcaling of the walles, and deliuery of *Pamela*, though he had done beyond all others expectation, yet ſo ſhort was he of his owne; that hee hated to looke vpon the Sunne, that had ſeene him doo ſo weakely: and ſo much abhorred all viſitation or honour, whereof he thought him ſelfe vnworthy, that hee beſought his two noble friends to carrie him away to a caſtle not far of, where he might cure his woundes, and neuer bee knowne till he made ſucceſſe excuſe this (as he thought) want in him. They louingly obeyed him, leauing *Baſilius* and all the campe very ſorrie for the parting of theſe three vnknowne Knights, in whoſe proweſſe they had repoſed greateſt truſt of victory.

But they being gone, *Baſilius* and *Philanax* gaue good order to the ſtrengthning of the ſiege, fortifying themſelues, ſo as they feared no more any ſuch ſuddaine onſet, as that of *Anaxius*. And they within (by reaſon of *Anaxius* hurt, but eſpecially of *Amphialus*-is) gaue thēſelues only to diligent watch & ward, making no ſallies out, but committing the principall truſt to *Zoilus* and *Lycurgus*. For *Anaxius* was yet forced to keepe his chamber. And as for *Amphialus*, his body had ſuch wounds, and he gaue ſuch wounds to his minde; as eaſily it coulde not bee determined, whether death or he made the greater haſte one to the other: for when the diligent care of cūning ſurgeons had brought life to the poſſeſſion of his owne right, Sorrowe and Shame (like two corrupted ſeruaunts) came waiting of it, perſwading nothing but the giuing ouer of it ſelfe to deſtruction. They laide before his eyes his preſent caſe, painting euery piece of it in moſte ougly colours: they ſhewed him his loue wrapped in diſpaire, his fame blotted by ouerthrow; ſo that if before he languiſhed, becauſe he could not obtaine his deſiring, hee now lamented becauſe he durſt not deſire the obtaining. Recreant *Amphialus*, (would hee ſay to him ſelfe) how dareſt thou intitle thy ſelfe the louer of *Philoclea*, that haſt neither ſhewed thy ſelfe a faithfull coward, nor a valiant rebell, but both rebellious and cowardly, which no lawe can quite, nor grace haue pittie of? Alas life, what little pleaſure thou dooſt me, to giue me nothing but ſenſe of reproach, and exerciſe of ruine? I would ſweete *Philoclea*, I had died, before thy eyes had ſeene my weakenes: & then perchaunce with ſome ſigh thou wouldeſt haue confeſſed, thou hadſt loſt a worthy ſeruant. But nowe, caitife that I am, what euer I haue donne, ſerues but to builde vp my riuals glory. To theſe ſpeeches he would couple ſuch geſtures of vexation, and would

would fortifie the geſtures with ſuch effects of furie, as ſometimes offring to teare vp his wounds, ſometimes to refuſe the ſuſtenance of meat, and counſell of phiſitions, that his perplexed mother was driuen to make him by force to be tended, with extreame corſey to her ſelfe, and annoiance to him: till in the ende he was contented to promiſe her, he would attempt no violence vpon himſelfe, vpon condition he might be troubled by no body, but onely his Phiſitions: his melancholy deteſting all company, ſo as not the very ſurgeons nor ſeruants durſt ſpeake vnto him in doing him ſeruice: only he had praied his mother, as ſhe tendered his life, ſhe would procure him grace; and that without that, ſhe would neuer come at him more.

His mother, who had confined all her loue only vnto him, ſet only ſuch about him, as were abſolutely at her commandement, whome ſhe forbad to let him knowe any thing that paſſed in the caſtle, till his woundes were cured, but as ſhe from time to time ſhould inſtruct them: ſhe (for her ſelfe) being reſolued, nowe ſhe had the gouernment of all things in her owne handes, to ſatisfie her ſonnes loue, by their yeelding, or ſatisfie her owne reuenge in their puniſhment. Yet firſt, becauſe ſhe would be the freer from outward force, ſhe ſent a meſſenger to the campe, to denounce vnto *Baſilius*, that if he did not preſently raiſe his ſiege, ſhe would cauſe the heads of the three Ladies, priſoners, to be cut off before his eyes. And to make him the more feare a preſent performance, ſhe cauſed his two daughters and *Zelmane* to be led vnto the walls, where ſhe had made a ſcaffold, eaſie to be ſeene by *Baſilius*: and there cauſed them to be kept, as ready for the ſlaughter, till anſwere came from *Baſilius*. A ſight full of pittie it was, to ſee thoſe three (all excelling in all thoſe excellencies, wherewith Nature can beautifie any body: *Pamela* giuing ſweetnes to maieſty, *Philoclea* enriching noblenes with humblenes, *Zelmane* ſetting in womanly beautie manlike valour) to be thus ſubiected to the baſeſt iniury of vniuſt Fortune. One might ſee in *Pamela* a willingneſſe to dye, rather then to haue life at others diſcretion, though ſometimes a princely diſdaine would ſparkle out of her Princely eyes, that it ſhould be in others power to force her to dye. In *Philoclea* a pretie feare came vp, to endamaske her roſie cheekes: but it was ſuch a feare, as rather ſeemed a kindly childe to her innate humblenes, then any other diſmayednes: or if ſhe were diſmayed, it was more for *Zelmane*, then for her ſelfe; or if more for her ſelfe, it was becauſe *Zelmane* ſhould looſe her. As for *Zelmane*, as ſhe went with her hands bound (for they durſt not aduenture on her well knowne valour, eſpecially among a people which perchance might be moued by ſuch a ſpectacle to ſome reuolte) ſhe was the true image of ouermaiſtred courage, and of ſpite, that ſees no remedie. For her breaſt ſwelled withall, the bloud burſt out at her noſe, and ſhe looked paler then accuſtomed, with her eies caſt on the ground, with ſuch a grace, as if ſhe were fallen out with the heauens, for ſuffering ſuch an iniury. The lookers on were ſo moued withall, as they miſliked what themſelues did, and yet ſtill did what themſelues miſliked. For ſome, glad to rid themſelues of the dangerous annoyance of this ſiege, ſome willing to ſhorten the way to *Amphialus*-his ſucceſſion (whereon they were dependents) ſome, and the greateſt ſome, doing becauſe others did, and ſuffring becauſe none durſt begin to hinder, did in this ſort ſet their hands to this (in their owne conſcience) wicked enterpriſe.

But when this meſſage was brought to *Baſilius*, and that this pittifull preparation was

was a ſufficient letter of credit for him to beleeue it, hee called vnto him his chiefe councelors: among which, thoſe he chiefly truſted were *Philanax* & *Kalander* (lately come to the campe at *Baſilius* cõmandement, and in him ſelfe wery of his ſolitary life, wanting his ſons preſence, & neuer hauing heard from his beloued gueſtes ſince they parted from him). Now in this doubt what he ſhould do, he willed *Kalander* to giue him his aduiſe: who ſpake much to this purpoſe. You commaund me Sir (ſaid he) to ſpeake, rather becauſe you will keepe your wonted graue, and noble manner, to do nothing of importance without coũcell, then that in this cauſe (which indeed hath but one way) your mind needs to haue any councell: ſo as my ſpeech ſhall rather be to confirme what you haue alredy determined then to argue againſt any poſſibillitie of other determination. For what ſophiſtical ſcholler can find any queſtion in this, whether you will haue your incomparable daughters liue, or dye? whether ſince you be here to cauſe their deliuerance, you wil make your being here the cauſe of their deſtruction? for nothing can bee more vnſenſible, then to thinke what one doth, and to forget the end why it is done. Do therfore as I am ſure you meane to do, remoue the ſiege, and after ſeeke by practiſe, or other gentle meanes, to recouer that which by force you cannot: and therof is indeed (when it pleaſe you) more counſel to be taken. Once, in extremities the winning of time is the purchaſe of life, & worſe by no meanes then their deaths can befal vnto you. A man might vſe more words, if it were to any purpoſe to guild gold, or that I had any cauſe to doubt of your mind: But you are wiſe, and are a father. He ſaid no more, for he durſt not attempt to perſwade the marrying of his daughter to *Amphialus*, but left that to bring in at another conſultation. But *Baſilius* made ſigne to *Philanax*, who ſtanding a while in a maze as inwardly perplexed, at laſt thus deliuered his opinion.

If euer I could wiſh my faith vntried, & my counſell vntruſted, it ſhould be at this time, whẽ in truth I muſt confeſſe I would be cõtent to purchaſe ſilence with diſcredit. But ſince you command, I obey: onely let me ſay thus much, that I obey not to theſe excellent Ladies father, but to my Prince: & a Prince it is to whõ I giue coũſel. Therefore as to a Prince I ſay, that the graue & (I well know) true-minded counſell of my Lord *Kalander* had come in good time when you firſt tooke armes, before all your ſubiects gate notice of your intention, before ſo much blood was ſpent, and before they were driuen to ſeeke this ſhift for their laſt remedy. But if nowe, this force you away, why did you take armes? ſince you might be ſure when euer they were in extremitie they would haue recourſe to this threatning? and for a wiſe man to take in hand that which his enimy may with a word ouerthrow, hath in my conceit great incongruity, and as great not to forethinke what his enemy in reaſon will doo. But they threaten they wil kil your daughters. What if they promiſed you if you remoued your ſiege, they would honorably ſend home your daughters? would you bee angled by their promiſes? truly no more ought you be terrified by their threatnings. For yet of the two, promiſe binds faith more thẽ threatning. But indeed a Prince of iudgement ought not to conſider what his enimies promiſe, or threaten, but what the promiſers and threatners in reaſon wil do: and the neereſt coniecture thereunto, is what is beſt for their owne behoofe to do. They threaten if you remoue not, they wil kil your daughters, and if you doo remoue, what ſurety haue you, but that they will kil them, ſince if the purpoſe be to cut off all impediments of *Amphialus* his ambition, the ſame cauſe will continue when you are away; and ſo much the more encoraged, as the reuenging power is abſent, and they haue the more oportunitie to

draw their factious friends about them: but if it be for their ſecurity onely, the ſame cauſe will bring forth the ſame effect: and for their ſecurity they will preſerue them. But it may be ſaid, no man knows what deſperate folks wil do: it is true, and as true that no reaſon nor policie can preuent what deſperate folks wil do: & therfore they are among thoſe dangers, which wiſdome is not to recken. Only let it ſuffice to take away their deſpaire, which may be by granting pardon for what is paſt; ſo as the Ladies may be freely deliuered. And let them that are your ſubiects, truſt you that are their Prince: doo not you ſubiect your ſelfe to truſt them, who are ſo vntruſty as to be manifeſt traitors. For if they finde you ſo baſe-minded, as by their threatning to remoue your force, what indignitie is it, that they would not bring you vnto, ſtill by the ſame threatning? ſince then if Loue ſtir them, loue will keep them from murthering what they loue; and if Ambition prouoke them, ambitious they will be, when you are away, as well as while you are here: take not away your force, which bars not the one, and bridels the other. For as for their ſhewes and words they are but feare-babes, not worthy once to moue a worthy mans conceit; which muſt ſtill conſider what in reaſon they are like to do. Their deſpaire I grant you ſhall do well to preuent, which as it is the laſt of all reſolutions, ſo no man fals into it, while ſo good a way as you may offer, is open vnto them. In ſum, you are a Prince, and a father of a people, who ought with the eye of wiſdome, the hand of fortitude, and the hart of iuſtice to ſet downe all priuate conceits, in compariſon of what for the publike is profitable.

He would haue proceeded on, when *Gynecia* came running in amazed for her daughter *Pamela*, but mad for *Zelmane*: and falling at *Baſilius* feet, beſought him to make no delay: vſing ſuch geſtures of compaſſion in ſteed of ſtopped words, that *Baſilius*, otherwiſe enough tender minded, eaſily granted to raiſe the ſiege, which he ſaw dangerous to his daughters: but indeed more carefull for *Zelmane*, by whoſe beſieged perſon, the poore old man was ſtreightly beſieged: ſo as to rid him of the famine of his mind, he went in ſpeed away, diſcharging his ſouldiors: only leauing the authority, as before, in *Philanaxis* hands, he himſelfe went with *Gynecia* to a ſtrong Caſtle of his, where he tooke counſell how firſt to deliuer *Zelmane*, whom he called the poore ſtranger, as though onely Law of hoſpitalitie moued him, and for that purpoſe ſent diuers meſſengers to trafficke with *Cecropia*.

But ſhe by this meanes rid of the preſent daunger of the ſiege (deſiring *Zoilus* and *Lycurgus* to take the care, till their brother recouered, of reuictualling, and furniſhing the Citie, both with men and what els wanted, againſt any new occaſion ſhould vrge them, ſhe her ſelfe diſdaining to harken to *Baſilius*, without he would grant his daughter in mariage to her ſon, which by no means he would be brought vnto) bent all the ſharpeneſſe of her malicious wit, how to bring a comfortable graunt to her ſonne, whereupon ſhe well found no leſſe then his life depended. Therfore for a while ſhe attẽpted all meanes of eloquent praying, & flattering perſwaſion, mingling ſometimes gifts, ſomtimes threatnings, as ſhe had cauſe to hope, that either open force, or vndermining, would beſt win the caſtle of their Reſolution. And euer as much as ſhe did to *Philoclea*, ſo much did ſhe to *Pamela*, though in manner ſometimes differing, as ſhe found fit to leuell at the ones noble height, and the others ſweet lowlineſſe. For though ſhe knew her ſonnes harte had wholly giuen it ſelfe to *Philoclea*, yet ſeeing the equall gifts in *Pamela*, ſhe hoped, a faire grant would recouer the ſorrow of a faire refuſall: cruelly entending the preſent

impoyſoning the one, as ſoone as the others affection were purchaſed.

But in vaine was all her vaine oratory employed. *Pamelaes* determination was built vpon ſo braue a Rock, that no ſhot of hers could reach vnto it: and *Philoclea* (though humbly ſeated) was ſo inuironed with ſweete riuers of cleere vertue, as could neither be battred, nor vndermined: her witty perſwaſiõs had wiſe anſwers; her eloquence recompenced with ſweetnes; her threatnings repelled with diſdaine in the one, and patience in the other; her gifts either not accepted, or accepted to obey, but not to binde. So as *Cecropia* in nature violent; cruell, becauſe ambitious; hatefull, for old rooted grudge to their mother, and now ſpitefull becauſe ſhe could not preuaile with girles, as ſhe counted them; laſtly, drawne on by her loue to her ſon, and held vp by a tyrannicall authoritie, forthwith followed the byas of her own crooked diſpoſition, and doubling and redoubling her threatnings, fell to confirme ſome of her threatned effects: firſt withdrawing all comfort, both of ſeruants, & ſeruice from them. But that thoſe excellent Ladies had bene vſed vnto, euen at home, and then found in themſelues how much good the hardnes of education doth to the reſiſtance of miſery. Then diſhonorably vſing them both in dyet, and lodging, by a contempt to pull downe their thoughts to yeelding. But as before, the conſideration of a priſon had diſgraced all ornaments, ſo now the ſame conſideration made them attend al diſeaſefulnes. Then ſtil, as ſhe found thoſe not preuaile, would ſhe go forward with giuing them terrors, ſometimes with noices of horror, ſometimes with ſuddaine frightings in the night, when the ſolitary darkeneſſe thereof might eaſier aſtoniſh the diſarmed ſenſes. But to all Vertue, and Loue reſiſted, ſtrengthned one by the other, when each found itſelfe ouer-vehemently aſſaulted. *Cecropia* ſtill ſweetning her fierceneſſes with faire promiſes, if they would promiſe faire; that feeling euill, and ſeeing a way far better, their mindes might the ſooner be mollified. But they that could not taſte her behauiour, when it was pleaſing indeed, could worſe now, when they had loſt all taſte by her iniuries.

She reſoluing all extremities, rather then faile of conqueſt, purſued on her rugged way: letting no day paſſe, without new and new perplexing the poore Ladies minds, and troubling their bodies: and ſtill ſwelling, the more ſhe was ſtopped, and growing hot with her owne doings, at length, abhominable rage carried her to abſolute tyrannies, ſo that taking with her certaine olde women (of wicked diſpoſitions, and apt for enuie-ſake to be cruell to youth and beautie) with a countenance impoiſoned with malice, flew to the ſweet *Philoclea*, as if ſo many Kites ſhould come about a white Doue, and matching violẽt geſtures with miſchieuous threatnings, ſhe hauing a rod in her hand (like a fury that ſhould carry wood to the burning of *Dianas* temple) fell to ſcourge that moſt beautifull body: Loue in vaine holding the ſhield of Beautie againſt her blind cruelty. The Son drew clouds vp to hide his face frõ ſo pitifull a ſight; and the very ſtone walls did yeeld drops of ſweate for agonie of ſuch a miſchiefe: each ſenſeleſſe thing had ſenſe of pittie; onely they that had ſenſe, were ſenſeles. Vertue rarely found her worldly weakenes more, then by the oppreſſion of that day: and weeping *Cupid* told his weeping mother, that he was ſorie he was not deafe, as well as blind, that he might neuer know ſo lamentable a worke. *Philoclea*, with tearefull eyes, and ſobbing breaſt (as ſoone as her wearines rather then compaſſion, gaue her reſpite) kneeled down to *Cecropia*, & making pittie in her face honourable, and torment delightfull, beſought her, ſince ſhe hated her (for what cauſe ſhe tooke God to witneſſe ſhe knew not) that ſhe would at once

once take away her life, and not pleaſe her ſelfe with the tormenting of a poore Gentlewoman. If (ſaid ſhe) the common courſe of humanitie cannot moue you, nor the hauing me in your owne walles, cannot claime pittie: nor womanlie mercie, nor neere alliance, nor remembrance (how miſerable ſo euer now) that I am a Princes daughter; yet let the loue (you haue often tolde me) your ſonne beares me, ſo much procure, that for his ſake, one death may be thought inough for me; I haue not liued ſo many yeares, but that one death may be able to conclude them: neither haue my faults, I hope, bene ſo many, but that one death may ſatisfie them. It is no great ſuite to an enemie, when but death is deſired. I craue but that, and as for the graunting your requeſt, know for certaine you loſe your labours, being euery day furtherof-minded from becomming his wife, who vſeth me like a ſlaue. But that in ſtead of getting grace, renued againe *Cecropias* fury: ſo that (excellent creature) ſhe was newly againe tormented by thoſe helliſh monſters: *Cecropia* vſing no other words, but that ſhe was a proud and vngratefull wench: and that ſhe would teach her to know her owne good, ſince of her ſelfe ſhe would not conceaue it. So that with ſilence and patience (like a faire gorgeous armour, hammered vpon by an ilfauoured Smith) ſhe abode their pittiles dealing with her: till, rather reſeruing her for more, then meaning to end, they left her to an vncomfortable leyſure, to conſider with her ſelfe her fortune; both helpleſſe her ſelfe, being a priſoner, and hopeleſſe, ſince *Zelmane* was a priſoner: who therein onely was ſhort of the bottome of miſerie, that ſhe knew not how vnworthilie her Angell, by theſe deuils was abuſed: but wanted (God wot) no ſtings of griefe, when thoſe words did but ſtrike vpon her hart, that *Philoclea* was a captiue, and ſhe not able to ſuccour her. For well ſhe knew the confidence *Philoclea* had in her, and well ſhe knew, *Philoclea* had cauſe to haue confidence: and all troden vnder foot by the wheele of ſenſeleſſe Fortune. Yet if there be that imperious power in the ſoule, as it can deliuer knowledge to another, without bodilie organs; ſo vehement were the workings of their ſpirites, as one mette with other, though themſelues perceaued it not, but onely thought it to be the doubling of their owne louing fancies. And that was the onely worldly thing, whereon *Philoclea* reſted her minde, that ſhe knewe ſhe ſhould die beloued of *Zelmane*, and ſhould die, rather then be falſe to *Zelmane*. And ſo this moſt daintie Nimphe, eaſing the paine of her minde with thinking of anothers paine; and almoſt forgetting the paine of her bodie, through the paine of her minde, ſhe waſted, euen longing for the concluſion of her tedious tragedie.

But for awhile ſhe was vnuiſited, *Cecropia* employing her time in vſing the like crueltie vpon *Pamela*, her harte growing not onely to deſire the fruite of puniſhing them, but euen to delight in the puniſhing them. But if euer the beames of perfection ſhined through the clowdes of affliction, if euer Vertue tooke a bodie to ſhewe his (els vnconceaueable) beautie, it was in *Pamela*. For when Reaſon taught her there was no reſiſtance, (for to iuſt reſiſtance firſt her harte was enclined) then with ſo heauenly a quietnes, and ſo gracefull a calmenes, did ſhe ſuffer the diuers kindes of torments they vſed to her, that while they vexed her faire bodie, it ſeemed, that ſhe rather directed, then obeyed the vexation. And when *Cecropia* ended, and asked whether her harte woulde yeelde: ſhe a little ſmiled, but ſuch a ſmiling as ſhewed no loue, and yet could not but be louelie. And then, Beaſtlie woman (ſayde ſhee) followe on, doo what thou wilte,

and canſt vpon me: for I know thy power is not vnlimited. Thou maiſt well wracke this ſillie bodie, but me thou canſt neuer ouerthrowe. For my part, I will not doo thee the pleaſure to deſire death of thee: but aſſure thy ſelfe, both my life and death, ſhall triumph with honour, laying ſhame vpon thy deteſtable tyranny.

And ſo, in effect, conquering their doing with her ſuffering, while *Cecropia* tried as many ſorts of paines, as might rather vexe them, then ſpoyle them (for that ſhe would not do while ſhe were in any hope to winne either of them for her ſonne) *Pamela* remained almoſt as much content with triall in her ſelfe, what vertue could doo, as grieued with the miſerie wherein ſhe found her ſelfe plunged: only ſometimes her thoughts ſoftned in her, when with open wings they flew to *Muſidorus*. For then ſhe would thinke with her ſelfe, how grieuouſly *Muſidorus* would take this her miſerie; and ſhe, that wept not for her ſelfe, wept yet *Muſidorus* teares, which he would weepe for her. For gentle Loue did eaſlier yeeld to lamentation, then the conſtancy of vertue would els admitte. Then would ſhe remember the caſe wherein ſhe had left her poore ſhepheard, and ſhe that wiſhed death for her ſelfe, feared death for him; and ſhe that condemned in her ſelfe the feeblenes of ſorrow, yet thought it great reaſon to be ſory for his ſorow: and ſhe that long had prayed for the vertuous ioyning themſelues together, now thinking to die herſelfe, hartely prayed, that long time their fortunes might be ſeperated. Liue long my *Muſidorus* (would ſhe ſay) and let my name liue in thy mouth; in thy harte my memorie. Liue long, that thou mayſt loue long the chaſt loue of thy dead *Pamela*. Then would ſhe wiſh to her ſelfe, that no other woman might euer poſſeſſe his hart: and yet ſcarcely the wiſh was made a wiſh, when her ſelfe would finde fault with it, as being too vniuſt, that ſo excellent a man ſhould be baniſhed from the comfort of life. Then would ſhe fortifie her reſolution, with bethinking the worſt, taking the counſell of vertue, and comfort of loue.

So theſe diamonds of the world whom Nature had made to be preciouſly ſet in the eyes of men, to be the chiefe workes of her workemanſhip, the chiefe ornaments of the worlde, and Princeſſes of felicitie, by rebellious iniury were brought to the vttermoſt diſtres that an enemies hart could wiſh, or a womans ſpite inuent: *Cecropia* dayly in one or other ſorte puniſhing them, ſtill with her euill torments giuing them feare of worſe, making the feare it ſelfe the foreſt torment of all; that in the ende wearie of their bodies, they ſhould be content to beſtow them at her appointment. But as in labour, the more one doth exerciſe it, the more by the doing one is enhabled to doo; ſtrength growing vpon the worke, ſo as what at firſt would haue ſeemed impoſſible, after growes eaſie: ſo theſe Princeſſes ſecond to none, and far from any ſecond, only to be matched by themſelues, with the vſe of ſuffering their minds gat the habit of ſuffring ſo, as all feares and terrors were to them but ſummons to a battaile, whereof they knew before hand they would be victorious, and which in the ſuffering was painfull, being ſuffered, was a trophe to it ſelfe: whereby *Cecropia* found her ſelfe ſtill farder off: for where at firſt ſhe might perchance haue perſwaded them to haue viſited her ſonne, and haue giuen him ſome comforte in his ſickneſſe, drawing neere to the confines of Deaths kingdome, now they proteſted, that they would neuer otherwiſe ſpeake to him, then as to the enemy, of moſt vniuſt cruelty towards them, that any time or place could euer make them knowe.

This made the poiſon ſwell in her cankred breſt, perceiuing that (as in water) the

the more ſhe graſped the leſſe ſhe held: but yet now hauing run ſo long the way of rigour, it was too late in reaſon, and too contrary to her paſſion, to returne to a courſe of meekeneſſe. And therefore (taking counſell of one of her olde aſſociates who ſo far excelled in wickedneſſe, as that ſhe had not onely loſt all feeling of conſcience, but had gotten a very glory in euill) in the ende they determined, that beating, and other ſuch ſharp dealing did not ſo much pull downe a womans hart, as it bred anger, and that nothing was more enemy to yeelding, then anger; making their tender harts take on the armour of obſtinacy: (for thus did their wicked mindes blinde to the light of vertue, and owly eied in the night of wickednes interpret of it) and that therefore that was no more to be tried. And for feare of death (which no queſtion would doo moſt with them) they had bene ſo often threatned, as they began to be familiarly acquainted with it, and learned to eſteeme threatning words to be but words. Therefore the laſt, but beſt way now was, that the one ſeeing indeede the others death, ſhould perceiue, there was no dallying meant: and then there was no doubt, that a womans ſoule would do much, rather then leaue ſo beautifull a body.

This being concluded, *Cecropia* went to *Philoclea*, and tolde her, that now ſhe was to come to the laſt part of the play: for her part, though ſhe found her hard harted obſtinacie ſuch, that neither the ſweetneſſe of louing meanes, nor the force of hard meanes could preuaile with her, yet before ſhe would paſſe to a further degree of extremity; ſhe had ſought to win her ſiſter; in hope, that her ſonne might be with time ſatisfied with the loue of ſo faire a Lady: but finding her alſo rather more then leſſe wilfull, ſhe was now minded that one of their deathes ſhould ſerue for an example to the other, that deſpiſing worthy folks was more hurtfull to the deſpiſer, then the deſpiſed: that yet becauſe her ſonne eſpecially affected her, and that in her owne ſelfe ſhe was more inclinable to pittie her, then ſhe had deſerued, ſhe would begin with her ſiſter; who that afternoone ſhould haue her head cut off before her face; if in the meane time one of them, did not pull out their il-wrought ſtiches of vnkindnes, ſhe bad her looke for no other, nor longer time then ſhe told her. There was no aſſault giuen to the ſweet *Philocleas* minde, that entered ſo far, as this: for where to all paines and daungers of her ſelfe, foreſight with (his Lieutenant Reſolution) had made ready defence; now with the loue ſhe bare her ſiſter, ſhe was driuen to a ſtay, before ſhe determined: but long ſhe ſtaied not, before this reaſon did ſhine vnto her, that ſince in her ſelfe ſhe preferred death before ſuch a baſe ſeruitude, loue did teach her to wiſh the ſame to her ſiſter. Therefore croſſing her armes, and looking ſide-ward vpon the ground, Do what you will (ſaid ſhe) with vs: for my part, heauen ſhall melt before I be remoued. But if you will follow my counſell, for your owne ſake (for as for praiers for my ſake I haue felt how little they preuaile) let my death firſt ſerue for example to win her, who perchaunce is not ſo reſolued againſt *Amphialus*, and ſo ſhall you not onely iuſtly puniſh mee (who indeede doo hate both you and your ſonne) but, if that may mooue you, you ſhall doo more vertuouſly in preſeruing one moſt worthy of life, and killing an other moſt deſirous of death: laſtly in winning her, in ſteed of a peeuiſh vnhappie creature, that I am, you ſhall bleſſe your ſonne with the moſt excellent woman in all praiſe-worthy things, that the world holdeth. But *Cecropia*, (who had already ſet downe to her ſelfe what ſhe would do) with bitter both termes, and countenaunce, told her, that ſhe ſhould not neede to woo death ouer-egerly: for if her ſiſter

going before her did not teach her wit, her ſelfe ſhould quickly follow. For ſince they were not to be gotten, there was no way for her ſonnes quiet, but to knowe, that they were paſt getting. And ſo ſince no intreating, nor threatning might preuayle, ſhe bad her prepare her eies for a new play, which ſhe ſhould ſee within fewe houres in the hall of that caſtle.

A place indeed ouerfit for ſo vnfit a matter: for being ſo ſtately made that the bottome of it being euen with the ground, the roofe reached as hie as any part of the caſtle, at either ende it had conuenient lodgings. In the one ende was (one ſtorie from the ground) *Philocleas* abode, in the other of euen height, *Pamelas*, and *Zelmanes* in a chamber aboue her: but all ſo vaulted of ſtrong, and thickly built ſtone, as one could no way heare the other: each of theſe chambers had a litle windowe to looke into the hall, but becauſe the ſiſters ſhould not haue ſo much comforte, as to looke one to another, there was (of the outſides) curtaynes drawne, which they could not reach with their hands, ſo barring the reach of their ſight. But when the houre came that the Tragedie ſhould beginne, the curtaynes were withdrawen from before the windowes of *Zelmane*, and of *Philoclea*: a ſufficient challenge to call their eyes to defende themſelues in ſuch an incounter. And by and by came in at one ende of the hall, with about a dozen armed ſouldiers a Ladie, led by a couple, with her handes bounde before her: from aboue her eyes to her lippes muffled with a faire kerchiefe, but from her mouth to the ſhoulders all bare: and ſo was led on to a ſcaffold raiſed a good deale from the floore, and all couered with crimſin veluet. But neither *Zelmane*, nor *Philoclea* needed to be tolde who ſhe was: for the apparell ſhe ware made them too well aſſured, that it was the admirable *Pamela*. Whereunto the rare whiteneſſe of her naked necke gaue ſufficient teſtimonie to their aſtonniſhed ſenſes. But the fayre Ladie being come to the ſcaffold, and then made to kneele downe, and ſo lefte by her vnkinde ſupporters, as it ſeemed that ſhe was about to ſpeake ſomewhat (whereunto *Philoclea*, poore ſoule, earneſtly liſtned, according to her ſpeach euen minding to frame her minde, her harte neuer till then almoſt wauering to ſaue her ſiſters life) before the vnfortunate Ladie could pronounce three wordes, the executioner cut off the ones ſpeech, and the others attention, with making his ſworde doo his cruell office vpon that beautifull necke. Yet the pittileſſe ſworde had ſuch pittie of ſo pretious an obiect, that at firſt it did but hit flat long. But little auailed that, ſince the Ladie falling downe aſtonniſhed withall, the cruell villayne forced the ſworde with another blowe to diuorce the faire marriage of the head and body.

And this was done ſo in an inſtant, that the very act did ouerrun *Philocleas* ſorrow (ſorrow not being able ſo quickly to thunderbolt her harte thorough her ſenſes, but firſt onely oppreſt her with a ſtorme of amazement) but when her eies ſawe that they did ſee, as condemning themſelues to haue ſeene it, they became weary of their owne power of ſeeing: and her ſoule then drinking vp woe with great draughts, ſhe fell downe to deadly traunces: but her waiting iaylors with cruell pitty brought lothed life vnto her; which yet many times tooke his leaue as though he would indeed depart: but when he was ſtaied by force, he kept with him deadly Sorrow, which thus exerciſed her mourning ſpeech. *Pamela* my ſiſter, my ſiſter *Pamela*, woe is me for thee, I would I had died for thee. *Pamela* neuer more ſhall I ſee thee: neuer more ſhall I enioy thy ſweet companie, and wiſe counſell. Alas, thou arte gone to beautifie heauen, and haſt left me here, who haue nothing

good

good in me, but that I did euer loue thee, and euer will lament thee. Let this daye be noted of all vertuous folkes for moſt vnfortunate: let it neuer be mentioned, but among curſes; and curſed bee they that did this miſchiefe, and moſt accurſed bee mine eyes that behelde it. Sweete *Pamela*; that head is ſtriken of, where onely wiſedome might be ſpoken withall; that bodie is deſtroyed, which was the liuing booke of vertue. Deare *Pamela* how haſte thou lefte me to all wretchedneſſe, and miſerie? Yet while thou liuedſt, in thee I breathed, of thee I hoped. O *Pamela*, how much did I for thy excellencie honour thee, more then my mother, and loue thee more then my ſelfe? Neuer more ſhall I lie with thee: neuer more ſhall we bathe in the pleaſant riuer together: neuer more ſhall I ſee thee in thy ſhephearde apparell. But thou arte gone, and where am I? *Pamela* is dead; and liue I? O my God, And with that ſhe fell againe in a ſoune, ſo as it was a great while before they could bring her to her ſelfe againe; but being come to her-ſelfe, Alas (ſaid ſhe) vnkind women, ſince you haue giuen me ſo many deathes, torment me not now with life: for Gods ſake let me goe, and excuſe your hands of more blood. Let me follow my *Pamela*, whom euer I ſought to follow. Alas *Pamela*, they will not let me come to thee. But if they keepe promiſe, I ſhall treade thine owne ſteppes after thee. For to what am I borne (miſerable ſoule) but to be moſt vnhappie in my ſelfe, and yet more vnhappie in others? But ô that a thouſand more miſeries had chanced vnto me, ſo thou haddeſt not dyed: *Pamela*, my ſiſter *Pamela*. And ſo, like lamentable *Philomela* complained ſhe the horrible wrong done to her ſiſter, which if it ſtird not in the wickedly cloſed minds of her tormentors, a pittie of her ſorrow, yet breddeit a wearineſſe of her ſorrow: ſo as onely leauing one to preuent any harme ſhe ſhould doo her ſelfe, the reſt went away, conſulting againe with *Cecropia*, how to make profite of this their late bloodie act.

In the ende, that woman that vſed moſt to keepe company with *Zelmane*, tolde *Cecropia*, that ſhe founde by many moſt ſenſible proofes in *Zelmane*, that there was neuer woman ſo loued another, as ſhe loued *Philoclea*: which was the cauſe that ſhe (further then the commandement of *Cecropia*) had cauſed *Zelmanes* curtaines to bee alſo drawne: becauſe hauing the ſame ſpectacle that *Philoclea* had, ſhee might ſtand in the greater feare for her, whom ſhe loued ſo well: and that indeed ſhe had hit the needle in that deuiſe: for neuer ſaw ſhe creature ſo aſtoniſhed as *Zelmane*, exceedingly ſory for *Pamela*, but exceedingly exceeding that exceedingnes in feare for *Philoclea*. Therefore her aduice was, ſhee ſhoulde cauſe *Zelmane* to come and ſpeake with *Philoclea*. For there being ſuch vehemencie of friendſhip between them, it was moſt likely both to moue *Zelmane* to perſwade, and *Philoclea* to be perſwaded, *Cecropia* liked well of the counſell, and gaue order to the ſame woman to go deale therin with *Zelmane*, and to aſſure her with othe, that *Cecropia* was determined *Philoclea* ſhould paſſe the ſame way that *Pamela* had done, without ſhe did yeeld to ſatiſfie the extremitie of her ſonnes affection: which the woman did, adding thereunto many (as ſhe thought) good reaſons to make *Zelmane* thinke *Amphialus* a fit match for *Philoclea*.

But *Zelmane* (who had from time to time vnderſtood the cruell dealing they had vſed to the ſiſters, and now had her own eies wounded with the ſight of ones death) was ſo confuſed withall (her courage ſtill rebelling againſt her wit, deſiring ſtil with force to doo impoſſible matters) that as her deſire was ſtopped with power, ſo her conceit was darkned with a miſt of deſire. For blinde Loue; and inuincible valure

ſtill would cry out, that it could not bee, *Philoclea* ſhould bee in ſo miſerable eſtate, and ſhe not relieue her: and ſo while ſhee haled her wit to her courage, ſhee drew it from his owne limits. But nowe *Philocleas* death (a worde able to marſhall all his thoughts in order) being come to ſo ſhort a point either with ſmall delay to be ſuffred, or by the giuing her ſelfe to another to be preuented, ſhe was driuen to thinke, and to deſire ſome leaſure of thinking: which the woman granted for that night vnto her. A night that was not halfe ſo blacke, as her minde; not halfe ſo ſilent, as was fit for her muſing thoughts. At laſt, he that would faine haue deſperatly loſt a thouſand liues for her ſake, could not finde in his harte, that ſhe ſhould looſe any life for her owne ſake; and he that deſpiſed his owne death in reſpect of honour, yet could well nye diſpenſe with honour it ſelfe in reſpect of *Philocleas* death: for once the thought could not enter into his harte, nor the breath iſſue out of his mouth, which could conſent to *Philocleas* death for any bargaine. Then how to preuent the next degree to death (which was her being poſſeſt by another) was the point of his mindes labour: and in that he founde no other way, but that *Philoclea* ſhoulde pretend a yeelding vnto *Cecropias* requeſt; and ſo by ſpeaking with *Amphialus*, and making faire (but delaying) promiſes, procure libertie for *Zelmane*; who only wiſht but to come by a ſword, not doubting then to deſtroy them all, and deliuer *Philoclea*: ſo little did both the men, and their forces ſeeme in her eyes, looking down vpon them from the hye toppe of affections tower.

With that minde therefore (but firſt well bound) ſhee was brought to *Philoclea*, hauing already plotted out in her conceite, how ſhe would deale with her: and ſo came ſhe with hart and eyes, which did each ſacrifice either to Loue vpon the aultar of Sorrow: and there had ſhee the pleaſing diſpleaſing ſight of *Philoclea*: *Philoclea*, whō alredy the extreame ſenſe of ſorrow had brought to a dulneſſe therein, her face not without tokens that beautie had bene by many miſeries cruelly battered, and yet ſhewed it moſt the perfection of that beautie, which coulde remaine vnouerthrowne by ſuch enimies. But when *Zelmane* was ſet downe by her, and the women gone away (becauſe ſhe might be the better perſwaded when no body was by, that had heard her ſay ſhe would not bee perſwaded) then began firſt the eyes to ſpeake, and the harts to crie out: Sorrow a while would nedees ſpeake his owne language without vſing their tongues to be his interpreters. At laſt *Zelmane* brake ſilence, but ſpake with the onely eloquence of amazement: for all her long methodized oratione was inherited onely by ſuch kinde of ſpeeches. Deare Ladie, in extreame neceſſities we muſt not. But alas vnfortunate wretch that I am, that I liue to ſee this daye. And I take heauen and earth to witneſſe, that nothing: and with that her breſt ſwelled ſo with ſpite and griefe, that her breath had not leaſure to turne it ſelfe into words. But the ſweet *Philoclea* that had alredie dyed in *Pamela*, & of the other ſide had the heauines of her hart ſomething quickned in the moſt beloued ſight of *Zelmane*, gheſſed ſomewhat at *Zelmanes* mind; and therefore ſpake vnto her in this ſort. My *Pyrocles* (ſaide ſhee) I knowe this exceeding comfort of your preſence, is not brought vnto mee for any good-will that is owed vnto mee: but (as I ſuppoſe to make you perſwade me to ſaue my life with the ranſome of mine honour: although no bodie ſhoulde bee ſo vnfit a pleader in that cauſe, as your ſelfe, yet perchance you woulde haue me liue. Your honour? God forbid (ſaide *Zelmane*) that euer, for any cauſe, I ſhould yeeld to any touch of it. But a while to pretend ſome affection, til time, or my libertie might worke ſomthing for your ſeruice: this, if my aſtoniſhed

ſenſes

ſenſes would giue me leaue, I would faine haue perſwaded you.

To what purpoſe my *Pyrocles?* (ſaide *Philoclea*) of a miſerable time what gaine is there? hath *Pamelaes* example wrought no more in mee? is a captiue life ſo much worth? can euer it goe out of theſe lips, that I loue any other but *Pyrocles?* ſhall my tongue bee ſo falſe a traitor to my hart, as to ſay I loue any other but *Pyrocles?* And why ſhould I do all this? to liue? O *Pamela*, ſiſter *Pamela*, why ſhoulde I liue? onely for thy ſake *Pyrocles* I would liue: but to thee I know too well I ſhall not liue; and if not to thee, hath thy loue ſo baſe allay, my *Pyrocles*, as to wiſh mee to liue? for diſſimulation, my *Pyrocles*, my ſimplicitie is ſuch, that I haue hardly bene able to keepe a ſtraight way; what ſhall I doo in a crooked? But in this caſe there is no meane of diſſimulation, not for the cunningeſt: preſent anſwere is required, and preſent performance vpon the anſwere. Art thou ſo terrible, ô Death? No my *Pyrocles*; and for that I doo thanke thee, and in my ſoule thanke thee; for I confeſſe the loue of thee is heerein my chiefeſt vertue. Trouble mee not therefore, deare *Pyrocles*, nor double not my death by tormenting my reſolution: ſince I cannot liue with thee, I will dye for thee. Onely remember me deare *Pyrocles*; and loue the remembrance of mee: & if I may craue ſo much of thee, let me be thy laſt loue, for though I be not worthy of thee (who indeed art the worthieſt creature liuing) yet remember that my loue was a worthy loue. But *Pyrocles* was ſo ouercome with ſorrow (which wiſdome and vertue made iuſt in ſo excellent a Ladies caſe, full of ſo excellent kindnes) that words were aſhamed to come forth knowing how weak they were to expreſſe his mind, and her merit: and therefore ſo ſtayed in a deadly ſilence, forſaken of hope and forſaking comfort: till the appointed gardians came in, to ſee the fruits of *Zelmanes* labour: and then *Zelmane* warned by their preſence, fell againe to perſwade, though ſcarcely her ſelfe could tell what; but in ſum, deſirous of delayes. But *Philoclea* ſweetly continuing conſtant, and in the end puniſhing her importunity with ſilence, *Zelmane* was faine to ende. Yet crauing an other times conference, ſhee obtained it, and diuers others; till at the laſt *Cecropia* founde it was to no purpoſe, and therefore determined to follow her owne way. *Zelmane* yet ſtill deſirous to win (by any meanes) reſpit, euen waſted with ſorrow, and vncertaine, whether in worſe caſe in her preſence, or abſence, being able to doo nothing for *Philocleas* ſuccour, but by ſubmitting the greateſt corage of the earth to fall at the feete of *Cecropia*, and craue ſtay of their ſentence til the vttermoſt was ſeene, what her perſwaſions might doo.

Cecropia ſeemed much to bee moued by her importunitie, ſo as diuers dayes were wonne of painefull life to the excellent *Philoclea*: while *Zelmane* ſuffred ſome hope to cherriſh her minde, eſpecially truſting vpon the helpe of *Muſidorus*, who (ſhee knew) woulde not bee idle in this matter, till one morning a noiſe awaked *Zelmane*, from whoſe ouer-watchfull mind, the tired body had ſtolne a little ſleep: & ſtreight with the firſt opening of her eyes, Care taking his woonted place, ſhe ranne to the window which looked into the hall (for that way the noiſe guided her,) and there might ſhee ſee (the curtaine being left open euer ſince the laſt execution) ſeuen or eight perſons in a cluſter vpon the ſcaffold: who by and by retiring themſelues, nothinge was to bee ſeene thereupon, but a baſan of golde, pittifully enameled with bloud, and in the midſt of it, the head of the moſt beautifull *Philoclea*. The horriblenes of the miſchiefe was ſuch, as *Pyrocles* coulde not at firſt beleeue his owne ſenſes, but bent his woefull eyes to diſcerne it better: where too well hee might ſee it was

Philocleas

Philocleas ſelfe, hauing no veile, but beautie, ouer the face, which ſtill appeared to be aliue: ſo did thoſe eyes ſhine, euen as they were woont, and they were woont more then any other: and ſometimes as they moued, it might well make the beholder think, that death therein had borowed her beautie, and not they any way diſgraced by death: ſo ſweet and pearſing a grace they caried with them.

It was not a pitie, it was not an amazement, it was not a ſorrow which then laid hold on *Pyrocles*, but a wilde furie of deſperate agonie, ſo that hee cried out, O tyraunt heauen, traytor earth, blinde prouidence; no iuſtice, howe is this done? how is this ſuffered? hath this worlde a gouernment? If it haue; let it poure out all his miſchiefes vpon mee, and ſee whether it haue power to make mee more wretched then I am. Did ſhe excell for this? haue I prayed for this? abhominable hande that did it; deteſtable deuill that commaunded it; curſed light that beheld it: and if the light be curſed, what are then mine eyes that haue ſeene it? And haue I ſeene *Philoclea* dead, and doo I liue? and haue I liued, not to helpe her, but to talke of her? and ſtande I ſtill talking? And with that (caried with the madnes of anguiſh, not hauing a redier waye to kill himſelfe) hee ranne as hard as euer hee coulde, with his head againſt the wall, with intention to braine himſelfe: but the haſte to do it made the doing the ſlower. For, as hee came to giue the blow, his foot tript, ſo as it came not with the full force: yet forcible inough to ſtrike him downe; and withall, to depriue him of his ſenſe, ſo that he lay a while comforted by the hurt, in that hee felte not his diſcomfort.

And when he came againe to himſelfe, he heard, or he thought he heard a voice which cried, Reuenge, Reuenge vnto him; whether indeede it were his good Angell, which vſed that voice to ſtay him from vnnaturall murdering of himſelfe; or that his wandering ſpirites lighted vpon that conceite, and by their weakenes ſubiect to apprehenſions) ſuppoſed they heard it. But that indeed, helped with Vertue, and her valiant ſeruant Anger, ſtopped him from preſent deſtroying himſelfe: yeelding, in reaſon and manhoode, firſt to deſtroy, man, woman, and childe, that were any way of kinne to them that were acceſſarie to this crueltie; then to raze the Caſtle, and to builde a ſumptuous monument for her ſiſter; and a moſt ſumptuous for her ſelfe, and then, himſelfe to die vpon her tomb. This determining in himſelfe to do, and to ſeek all meanes how (for that purpoſe) to get out of priſon: he was content a while to beare the thirſt of death: and yet went he againe to the windowe, to kiſſe the beloued heade with his eies, but there ſaw hee nothing but the ſcaffold, all couered ouer with ſkarlet, & nothing but ſolitarie ſilence, to mourn this miſchiefe. But then, Sorrow hauing diſperſte it ſelfe from his harte, into all his noble partes, it proclaimed his authoritie, in cries, and teares, and with a more gentle doleſulnes, coulde poure out his inward euill.

Alas (ſaide he) and is that head taken away too, ſo ſoone from mine eyes? What, mine eyes, perhappes they enuie the excellencie of your ſorrowe? Indeede, there is nothing now left to become the eyes of all mankinde, but teares: and woe bee to me, if any exceede me in wofulnes. I doo coniure you all, my ſenſes, to accept no obiect, but of Sorrow: be aſhamed, nay, abhor to thinke of comfort. Vnhappie eyes you haue ſeene too much, that euer the light ſhoulde bee welcome to you: vnhappie eares, you ſhall neuer heare the muſicke of Muſicke in her voice: vnhappie haſt, that haſte liued to feele theſe pangues. Thou haſt done thy worſt, World, and curſed be thou, and curſed art thou, ſince to thine owne ſelfe thou haſt done the worſt

thou

thou couldeſt doo. Exiled Beautie, let onely now thy beautie bee blubbered faces, Widowed Muſicke, let now thy tunes be rorings, and lamentations. Orphane Vertue, get thee winges, and flie after her into heauen; heere is no dwelling place for thee. Why liued I, alas? Alas why loued I? to die wretched, and to be the example of the heauens hate? And hate, and ſpare not, for your worſt blow is ſtriken. Sweete *Philoclea*, thou art gone, and haſt carried with thee my loue; and haſt left thy loue in me, and I wretched man do liue; I liue, to die continually, till thy reuenge do giue me leaue to dy: & thē dy I wil, my *Philoclea*, my hart willinglie makes this promiſe to it ſelfe. Surely hee did not looke vpon thee, that gaue the cruell blow: for no eye could haue abidden to ſee ſuch beautie ouerthrowen by ſuch miſchiefe. Alas, why ſhould they diuide ſuch a head from ſuch a bodie? no other bodye is worthy of that head; no other head is worthie of that body: O yet, if I had taken my laſt leaue, if I might haue taken a holie kiſſe from that dying mouth. Where art thou Hope which promiſeſt neuer to leaue a man while he liueth? Tell me, what canſt thou hope for? nay tel me, what is ther which I would willingly hope after? Wiſhing power (which is accounted infinite) what now is left to wiſh for? She is gone, and gone with her all my hope, all my wiſhing. Loue, be aſhamed to be called Loue: cruell Hate, vnſpeakeable Hate is victorious ouer thee. Who is there nowe left, that can iuſtifie thy tyrannie, and giue reaſon to thy paſſion? O cruell diuorce of thy ſweeteſt marriage that euer was in Nature: *Philoclea* is dead, and dead is with her all goodneſſe, all ſweetnes al excellencie. *Philoclea* is dead, & yet Life is not aſhamed to continue vpon the earth. *Philoclea* is dead: O deadly word; which cōtaineth in it ſelfe the vttermoſt of al misfortunes. But happie worde when thou ſhalt be ſaid of me, and long it ſhall not be, before it be ſaid.

Then ſtopping his wordes with ſighes, drowning his ſighes in teares, and drying againe his teares in rage, he would ſitte a while in a wandring muſe, which repreſented nothing but vexations vnto him: then throwing himſelfe ſometime vpon the floore, and ſometimes vpon the bedde: then vp againe, till walking was weariſome and reſt loathſome: and ſo neither ſuffering foode, nor ſleepe to helpe his afflicted nature, all that day and night he did nothing, but weepe *Philoclea*, ſigh *Philoclea*, and crie out *Philaclea*: till as it happened (at that time vpon his bed) towarde the dawning of the day, he heard one ſtirre in his chamber, by the motion of garments; and with an angry voice asked, Who was there? A poore Gentlewoman (anſwered the partie) that wiſh long life vnto you. And I ſoone death to you (ſaide he) for the horrible curſe you haue giuen me. Certainely (ſaid ſhe) an vnkind anſwere, and far vnworthy the excellencie of your minde; but not vnſutable to the reſt of your behauiour. For moſt parte of this night I haue hearde you (being let into your chamber, you neuer perceiuing it, ſo was your minde eſtraunged from your ſenſes) and haue hearde nothing of *Zelmane*, in *Zelmane*, nothing but weake waylings fitter, for ſome nurſe of a village, then ſo famous a creature as you are. O God (cried out *Pyrocles*) that thou wert a man that vſeſt theſe wordes vnto me. I tell thee I am ſorry: I tell thee I will be ſory in deſpite of thee, and all them that woulde haue mee ioyful. And yet (replied ſhe) perchance *Philoclea* is not dead, whom you ſo much bemone I would we were both dead of that condition, ſaid *Pyrocles*. See the folly of your paſſion (ſaid ſhe) as though you ſhould be neerer to her, you being dead, and ſhe aliue; then ſhee being dead, and you aliue: and if ſhee be dead, was ſhee not borne to die? what then do you crie out for? not for her, who muſt haue died one time or other;

but

but for ſome fewe yeares: ſo as it is time, and this world that ſeeme ſo louely things, and not *Philoclea* vnto you. O noble Siſters (cried *Pyrocles*) now you be gone (who were the onely exalters of all womankind) what is left in that ſex, but babling, and buſineſſe? And truely (ſaid ſhe) I will yet a little longer trouble you. Nay, I praye you doo (ſaid *Pyrocles*) for I wiſhe for nothing in my ſhorte life, but miſchiefes, and combers: and I am content you ſhall be one of them. In truth (ſaid ſhe) you would thinke your ſelfe a greatly priuiledged perſon, if ſince the ſtrongeſt building, and laſtingeſt monarchies are ſubiect to ende, onely your *Philoclea* (becauſe ſhe is yours) ſhould be exempted. But indeede you bemone your ſelfe, who haue loſt a friende: you cannot her, who hath in one act both preſerued her honour, and leſte the miſeries of this worlde. O womans philoſophie, childiſh follie (ſaid *Pyrocles*) as though if I do bemone my ſelfe, I haue not reaſon to doo ſo, hauing loſt more then any Monarchie, nay then my life can be woorth vnto me. Alas (ſaide ſhee) comforte your ſelfe, Nature did not forget her skill, when ſhe had made them: you ſhall find many their ſuperiours, and perchaunce ſuch, as (when your eyes ſhall looke abroad) your ſelfe will like better.

But that the ſpeech put al good manners out of the conceit of *Pyrocles*; in ſo much, that leaping out of his bed, he ran to haue ſtriken her: but comming neere her (the morning then winning the field of darkeneſſe) he ſaw, or hee thought hee ſawe, indeed, the very face of *Philoclea*; the ſame ſweeteneſſe, the ſame grace, the ſame beautie: with which carried into a diuine aſtoniſhment, he fell downe at her feete. Moſt bleſſed Angell (ſaid he) well haſte thou done to take that ſhape, ſince thou wouldeſt ſubmit thy ſelfe to mortall ſenſe; for a more Angelicall forme coulde not haue bene created for thee. Alas, euen by that excellent beautie, ſo beloued of me, let it be lawfull for me to aske of thee, what is the cauſe, that ſhee, that heauenly creature, whoſe forme you haue taken, ſhoulde by the heauens bee deſtined to ſo vnripe an ende? Why ſhould vniuſtice ſo preuaile? Why was ſhe ſeene to the world ſo ſoone to be rauiſhed from vs? Why was ſhee not ſuffered to liue, to teach the worlde perfection? Doo not deceiue thy ſelfe (anſwered ſhee) I am no Angell; I am *Philoclea*, the ſame *Philoclea*, ſo truely louing you, ſo truely beloued of you. If it be ſo (ſaid he) that you are indeede the ſoule of *Philoclea*, you haue done well to keepe your owne figure: for no heauen could haue giuen you a better. Then alas, why haue you taken the paines to leaue your blisfull ſeat to come to this place moſt wretched, to mee, who am wretchednes it ſelfe, & not rather obtaine for me, that I might come where you are, there eternally to behold, and eternally to loue your beauties? you knowe (I know) that I deſire nothing but death, which I onely ſtay, to bee iuſtly reuenged of your vniuſt murtherers. Deare *Pyrocles* (ſaid ſhee) I am thy *Philoclea*, and as yet liuing: not murdred, as you ſuppoſed, and therefore bee comforted. And with that gaue him her hand, But the ſweet touch of that hand ſeemed, to his aſtraied powers ſo heauenly a thing, that it rather for a while confirmed him in his former beliefe: till ſhe, with vehement proteſtations (and deſire that it might be ſo, helping to perſwade that it was ſo) brought him to yeeld; yet doubtfully to yeelde to this height of all comfort, that *Philoclea* liued: which witneſſing with teares of ioy, Alas (ſaide he) how ſhall I beleeue mine eies any more? or doo you yet but appeare thus vnto me, to ſtay me from ſome deſperate end? For alas I ſawe the excellent *Pamela* beheaded: I ſawe your head (the head indeede, and chiefe parte of all natures workes) ſtanding in a diſhe of golde, too meane a ſhrine (God wote) for ſuch a relike. How

can

can this be, my onely deare, and you liue? or if this be not ſo, how can I beleeue mine owne ſenſes? and if I can not beleeue them, why ſhould I now beleeue theſe bleſſed tidings they bring me?

The truth is (ſaid ſhe) my *Pyrocles*, that neither I (as you finde) nor yet my deare ſiſter is dead: although the miſchieuouſly ſuttle *Cecropia* vſed ſlights to make either of vs thinke ſo of other. For, hauing in vaine attempted the fardeſt of her wicked eloquence, to make eyther of vs yeeld to her ſonne, and ſeeing that neither it, accompanied with great flatteries, and riche preſents, could get any ground of vs, nor yet the violent way ſhe fell into of cruelly tormenting our bodies, could preuayle with vs; at laſt, ſhe made either of vs thinke the other dead, and ſo hoped to haue wreſted our mindes to the forgetting of vertue: and firſt ſhe gaue to mine eyes the miſerable ſpectacle of my ſiſters (as I thought) death: but indeede it was not my ſiſter: it was onely *Arteſia*, ſhe who ſo cunningly brought vs to this miſery. Truly I am ſory for the poore Gentlewoman, though iuſtly ſhe be puniſhed for her double falſhood: but *Arteſia* muffled ſo, as you could not eaſily diſcerne her; and in my ſiſters apparell (which they had taken from her vnder colour of giuing her other) did they execute: And when I (for thy ſake eſpecially deare *Pyrocles*) could by no force, nor feare be won, they aſſayed the like with my ſiſter, by bringing me downe vnder the ſcaffolde, and (making me thruſt my head vp through a hole they had made therein) they did put about my poore necke a diſhe of gold, whereout they had beaten the bottome, ſo as hauing ſet bloud in it, you ſawe how I played the parte of death (God knowes euen willing to haue done it in earneſt) and ſo had they ſet me, that I reached but on tiptoes to the grounde, ſo as ſcarcely I could breathe, much leſſe ſpeake: And truely if they had kept me there any whit longer, they had ſtrangled me, in ſteed of beheading me: but then they tooke me away, and ſeeking to ſee their iſſue of this practiſe, they found my noble ſiſter (for the deare loue ſhe vouchſafeth to beare me) ſo grieued withall, that ſhe willed them to doo their vttermoſt crueltie vnto her: for ſhe vowed, neuer to receiue ſuſtenaunce of them, that had bene the cauſers of my murther: and finding both of vs, euen giuen ouer, not like to liue many houres longer, and my ſiſter *Pamela*, rather worſe then my ſelfe, (the ſtrength of her harte worſe bearing thoſe indignities) the good woman *Cecropia* (with the ſame pittie as folkes keepe foule, when they are not fatte inough for their eating) made vs knowe her deceipt, and let vs come one to another; with what ioye you can well imagine, who I know feele the like; ſauing that we only thought our ſelues reſerued to miſeries, and therefore fitter for condoling, then congratulating. For my part, I am fully perſwaded, it is but with a little reſpite, to haue a more feeling ſenſe of the torments ſhe prepares for vs. True it is, that one of my guardians would haue me to beleeue, that this proceedes of my gentle couſin *Amphialus*: who hauing heard ſome inckling that we were euill entreated, had called his mother to his bedſide, from whence he neuer roſe ſince his laſt combat, and beſought, and charged her vpon all the loue ſhe bare him, to vſe vs with all kindneſſe: vowing, with all the imprecations he could imagine, that if euer he vnderſtood for his ſake, that I receiued further hurt then the want of my libertie, hee would not liue an houre longer. And the good woman ſware to me that he would kill his mother, if hee knewe how I had bene dealt with; but that *Cecropia* keepes him from vnderſtanding thinges howe they paſſe, onely hauing heard

a whiſpering, and my ſelfe named, he had (of aboundaunce, forſooth, of honorable loue) giuen this charge for vs. Whereupon this enlargement of mine was growne: for my parte I know too well their cunning (who leaue no mony vnoffered that may buy mine honour) to beleeue any word they ſay, but (my deare *Pyrocles*) euen looke for the worſte, and prepare my ſelfe for the ſame. Yet I muſt confeſſe, I was content to robbe from death, and borrowe of my miſery the ſweet comfort of ſeeing my ſweet ſiſter, and moſt ſweete comfort of thee my *Pyrocles*. And ſo hauing leaue, I came ſtealing into your chamber: where (O Lord) what a ioy it was vnto me, to heare you ſolemniſe the funerals of the poore *Philoclea*? That I my ſelfe might liue to heare my death bewailed? and by whom? by my deere *Pyrocles*. That I ſaw death was not ſtrong enough to diuide thy loue from me? O my *Pyrocles*, I am too well paide for my paines I haue ſuffred: ioyfull is my woe for ſo noble a cauſe; and welcome be all miſeries, ſince to thee I am ſo welcome. Alas how I pittied to heare thy pittie of me; and yet a great while I could not finde in my hart to interrupt thee, but often had euen pleaſure to weepe with thee: and ſo kindly came forth thy lamentations, that they inforced me to lament to, as if indeed I had beene a looker on, to ſee poore *Philoclea* dye. Till at laſt I ſpake with you, to try whether I could remoue thee from ſorrow, till I had almoſt procured my ſelfe a beating. And with that ſhe pretily ſmiled, which, mingled with her teares, one could not tell whether it were a mourning pleaſure, or a delightfull ſorrow: but like when a few Aprill drops are ſcattered by a gentle *Zephyrus* among fine coloured flowers. But *Pyrocles*, who had felt (with ſo ſmall diſtance of time) in himſelfe the ouerthrow both of hope and deſpaire, knew not to what key he ſhould tune his mind, either of ioy, or ſorrow. But finding perfite reaſon in neither, ſuffred himſelf to be caried by the tide of his imagination, and his imaginations to be raiſed euen by the ſway, which hearing or ſeing, might giue vnto them: he ſaw her aliue, he was glad to ſee her aliue: he ſaw her weep, he was ſory to ſee her weep: he heard her comfortable ſpeches, nothing more gladſome: he hard her prognoſticating her own deſtruction, nothing more dolefull. But when he had a little taken breath from the panting motion of ſuch contrarietie in paſſions, he fell to conſider with her of her preſent eſtate, both comforting her, that certainely the worſt of this ſtorme was paſt, ſince alreadie they had done the worſt, which mans wit could imagine: and that if they had determined to haue killed her, now they would haue done it: and alſo earneſtly counſelling her, and inhabling his counſels with vehement prayers, that ſhe would ſo far ſecond the hopes of *Amphialus*, as that ſhe might but procure him liberty; promiſing then as much to her, as the liberalitie of louing corage durſt promiſe to himſelfe.

But who would liuely deſcribe the manner of theſe ſpeeches, ſhould paint out the lightſome coulours of affection, ſhaded with the deepeſt ſhadowes of ſorrow, finding then betweene hope and feare, a kind of ſweetenes in teares: till *Philoclea* content to receaue a kiſſe, and but a kiſſe of *Pyrocles*, ſealed vp his mouing lips, and cloſed them vp in comfort: and her-ſelfe (for the paſſage was left betweene them open) went to her ſiſter: with whom ſhe had ſtayed but a while, fortifying one another (while *Philoclea* tempered *Pamelas* iuſt diſdaine, and *Pamela* ennobled *Philocleas* ſweet humbleneſſe) when *Amphialus* cam vnto them: who neuer ſince he had heard *Philoclea* named, could bee quiet in himſelfe, although none of them about him (fearing more his mothers violence then his power) would

diſcouer

diſcouer what had paſſed: and many meſſages he ſent to know her eſtate, which brought anſweres backe, according as it pleaſed *Cecropia* to indite them, till his hart full of vnfortunate affection, more and more miſgiuing him, hauing impatiently borne the delay of the nights vnfitneſſe, this morning he gat vp, and though full of woundes (which not without daunger could ſuffer ſuch exerciſe) he apparelled himſelfe, and with a countenance, that ſhewed ſtrength in nothing but in griefe, he came where the ſiſters were; and weakely kneeling downe, he beſought them to pardon him, if they had not bene vſed in that caſtle according to their worthines, and his duetie; beginning to excuſe ſmall matters, poore Gentleman, not knowing in what ſort they had bene handled.

But *Pamelaes* hye hart (hauing conceiued mortall hate for the iniurie offred to her and her ſiſter) could ſcarcely abide his ſight, much leſſe heare out his excuſes; but interrupted him with theſe words. Traitor (ſaid ſhe) to thine owne blood, and falſe to the profeſſion of ſo much loue as thou haſt vowed, doo not defile our eares with thy excuſes; but purſue on thy crueltie, that thou and thy godly mother haue vſed towards vs: for my part, aſſure thy ſelfe, and ſo do I anſwere for my ſiſter (whoſe mind I know) I do not more deſire mine owne ſafetie then thy deſtruction. Amazed with this ſpeech, he turned his eye, full of humble ſorrowfulnes, to *Philoclea*. And is this (moſt excellent Ladie) your doome of me alſo? She, ſweete Ladie, ſate weeping: for as her moſt noble kinſman ſhe had euer fauoured him, and loued his loue, though ſhe could not be in loue with his perſon; and now partly vnkindnes of his wrong, partly pittie of his caſe, made her ſweete mind yeeld ſome teares, before ſhe could anſwere; and her anſwere was no other, but that ſhe had the ſame cauſe as her ſiſter had. He replyed no further, but deliuering from his hart two or three (vntaught) ſighes, roſe, and with moſt low reuerence went out of their chamber: and ſtreight by threatning torture, learned of one of the women, in what terrible manner thoſe Princeſſes had bene vſed. But when he heard it, crying out, O God; and then not able to ſay any more (for his ſpeech went backe to rebound woe vpon his hart) he needed no iudge to goe vpon him: for no man could euer thinke any other worthy of greater puniſhment, then he thought himſelfe. Full therefore of the horribleſt deſpaire, which a moſt guiltie conſcience could breed, with wild lookes promiſing ſome terrible iſſue, vnderſtanding his mother was vpon the top of the leades, he caught one of his ſeruants ſwords from him, and none of them daring to ſtay him, he went vp, carried by furie, in ſteede of ſtrength; where ſhe was at that time, muſing how to goe thorough with this matter, and reſoluing to make much of her Neeces in ſhew, and ſecreatly to impoiſon them; thinking ſince they were not to be wonne, her ſonnes loue would no otherwiſe be mitigated.

But when ſhe ſawe him come in with a ſworde drawne, and a looke more terrible then the ſword, ſhe ſtreight was ſtricken with the guiltines of her owne conſcience: yet the wel known humblenes of her ſonne ſomwhat animated her, till he, comming nearer her, and crying to her, Thou damnable creature, onely fit to bring forth ſuch a monſter of vnhappines as I am; ſhe fearing he would haue ſtricken her (though indeed he meant it not, but only intended to kill himſelfe in her preſence) went backe ſo farre, till ere ſhe were aware, ſhe ouerthrew her ſelfe from ouer the Leades, to receaue her deathes kiſſe at the ground: and yet was ſhe not ſo happie as preſentlie to dye, but that ſhe had time with helliſh agonie to ſee her ſonnes

miſchiefe (whom ſhe loued ſo well) before her end; when ſhe confeſt (with moſt deſperate, but not repēting mind) the purpoſe ſhe had to impoiſon the princeſſes, and would then haue had them murthered. But euerie bodie ſeing, and glad to ſee her end, had left obedience to her tyranny.

And (if it could be) her ruine increaſed woe in the noble hart of *Amphialus*, who when he ſaw her fall, had his owne rage ſtayed a little with the ſuddennes of her deſtruction. And was I not enough miſerable before (ſaid he) but that before my end I muſt be the death of my mother? who how wicked ſo euer, yet I would ſhe had receaued her puniſhment by ſome other. O *Amphialus*, wretched *Amphialus*; thou haſt liued to be the death of thy moſt deere companion and friend *Philoxenus*, and of his father, thy moſt carefull foſterfather. Thou haſt liued to kill a Ladie with thine owne hands, and ſo excellent, and vertuous a Lady, as the faire *Parthenia* was: thou haſt liued to ſee thy faithfull *Iſmenus* ſlaine in ſuccouring thee, and thou not able to defend him: thou haſt liued to ſhew thy ſelfe ſuch a coward, as that one vnknowne Knight could ouercome thee in thy Ladies preſence: thou haſt liued to beare armes againſt thy rightfull Prince, thine owne vncle: Thou haſt liued to be accounted, and iuſtly accounted, a traitor, by the moſt excellent perſons, that this world holdeth: Thou haſt liued to be the death of her, that gaue thee life. But ah wretched *Amphialus*, thou haſt liued for thy ſake, and by thy authoritie, to haue *Philoclea* tormented: O heauens, in *Amphialus* caſtle, where *Amphialus* commaunded; tormented, tormented? torment of my ſoule, *Philoclea* tormented: and thou haſt had ſuch comfort in thy life, as to liue all this while. Perchance this hande (vſed onely to miſchieuous actes) thinkes it were too good a deede to kill me; or elſe filthy hande, onely woorthy to kill women, thou art afraide to ſtrike a man. Feare not cowardly hand, for thou ſhalt kill but a cowardly traitor: and doo it gladlie; for thou ſhalt kill him, whome *Philoclea* hateth. With that, furiouſly he tare open his doublet, and ſetting the pommell of the ſworde to the grounde, and the point to his breſt, hee fell vpon it. But the ſworde more mercifull then hee to himſelfe, with the ſlipping of the pommell, the point ſwarued, and razed him but vpon the ſide: yet with the fall, his other wounds opened ſo, as he bledde in ſuch extremitie, that *Charons* boate might verie well bee carried in that flood: which yet he ſought to haſten by this meanes. As he opened his dublet, and fell, there fell out *Philocleas* kniues, which *Cecropia* at the firſt had taken from her, and deliuered to her ſonne; and he had euer worne them next his hart, as the onely relique he had of his Saint: now ſeeing them by him, (his ſword being ſo, as weakenes could not well draw it out from his doublet) he tooke the kniues, and pulling one of them out, and many times kiſſing it, and then, firſt with the paſſions of kindnes, and vnkindnes, melting in teares, O deare knives, you are come in a good time, to reuenge the wrong I haue done you all this while, in keeping you from her bleſſed ſide, and wearing you without your miſtreſſe leaue. Alas, be witnes with me, yet before I die, (and well you may, for you haue layne next my hart) that by my conſent, your excellent miſtreſſe ſhould haue had as much honour, as this poore place could haue brought foorth, for ſo high an excellencie; and now I am condemned to die by her mouth. Alas, other, far other hope would my deſire often haue giuen me: but other euent it hath pleaſed her to lay vpon me. Ah *Philoclea* (with that his teares guſhed out, as though they would ſtriue to ouerflow his bloud) I would yet thou kneweſt how I

loue

loue thee. Vnworthie I am, vnhappie I am, falſe I am; but to thee, alas, I am not falſe. But what a traitor am I, any way to excuſe him, whom ſhe condemneth? Since there is nothing left me, wherein I may do her ſeruice, but in puniſhing him, who hath ſo offended her. Deare knife, then doo your noble miſtreſſes commandement, With that, he ſtabbed himſelfe into diuers places of his breaſt, and throte, vntill thoſe wounds (with the old, freſhly bleeding) brought him to the ſenſeleſſe gate of Death. By which time, his ſeruants hauing (with feare of his furie) abſtained awhile from comming vnto him, one of them (preferring duetifull affection before fearefull duetie) came in, and there found him ſwimming in his owne bloud, giuing a pittifull ſpectacle, where the conqueſt was the conquerors ouerthrow, and ſelf-ruine the onely triumph of a battaile, fought betweene him, and himſelfe. The time full of danger, the perſon full of worthines, the maner full of horror, did greatlie aſtoniſh all the beholders; ſo as by and by, all the towne was full of it, and then of all ages came running vp to ſee the beloued body; euery body thinking, their ſafetie bled in his woundes, and their honor died in his deſtruction.

But when it came, (and quickly it came) to the eares of his proude friende *Anaxius*, (who by that time was growen well of his wound, but neuer had come abroad, diſdayning to abaſe himſelfe to the companie of any other but of *Amphialus*) he was exceedingly vexed, either with kindnes, or (if a proud hart be not capable thereof) with diſdaine, that he, who had the honor to be called the frend of *Anaxius*, ſhould come to ſuch an vnexpected ruine. Therefore, then comming abroad, with a face red in anger, and engrained in pride, with liddes rayſed, and eyes leuelling from top to toe of them that met him, treading, as though he thought to make the earth ſhake vnder him, with his hand vpon his ſword; ſhort ſpeeches, and diſdainfull anſweres, giuing ſtreight order to his two brothers, to goe take the oath of obedience, in his name, of all the ſouldiers, and Citizens in the towne: and withall, to ſweare them to reuenge the death of *Amphialus*, vpon *Baſilius*. He himſelfe went to ſee him, calling for all the ſurgeons and phyſicions there; ſpending ſome time in vewing the body, and threatning them all to be hanged, if they did not heale him. But they (taking view of his woundes, and falling downe at *Anaxius* feete) aſſured him, that they were mortall, and no poſſible meanes to keepe him aboue two dayes aliue: and he ſtood partly in doubt, to kill, or ſaue them, betweene his owne furie, and their humblenes. But vowing, with his owne hands to kill the two ſiſters, as cauſers of his friends death: when his brothers came to him, and told him they had done his commaundement, in hauing receaued the oath of allegeance, with no great difficultie: the moſt part terrified by their valure, and force of their ſeruants, and many that had bene forward actors in the rebellion, willing to do any thing, rather then come vnder the ſubiection of *Baſilius* againe; and ſuch fewe as durſt gaineſay, being cut off by preſent ſlaughter.

But withall (as the chiefe matter of their comming to him) they told *Anaxius*, that the faire Queene *Helen* was come, with an honorable retinue, to the towne: humblie deſiring leaue to ſee *Amphialus*, whom ſhe had ſought in many places of the world; & laſtly, being returned into her own countrie, ſhe heard together of the late ſiege, and of his combat with the ſtrange Knight, who had dangerouſly hurt him. Wherupon, full of louing care (which ſhe was content euen to publiſh to the world, how vngratefully ſoeuer he dealt with her) ſhe had gotten leaue of *Baſilius*, to come by his frontiers, to cary away *Amphialus* with her, to the excellēteſt ſurgeon

then knowen, whom ſhe had in her Countrey, but ſo olde, as not able to trauaile: but had giuen her ſoueraigne annointments, to preſerue his body withall, till he might be brought vnto him: and that *Baſilius* had graunted leaue: either naturall kindnes preuailing ouer all the offences done, or rather glad to make any paſſage, which might leade him out of his countrie, and from his daughters. This diſcourſe *Lycurgus* vnderſtanding of *Helene*, deliuered to his brother, with her vehement deſire to ſee the body, and take her laſt farewell of him. *Anaxius*, though hee were fallen out with all womankind (in reſpect of the hate he bare the ſiſters, whom hee accounted murtherers of *Amphialus*) yet at his brothers requeſt, graunted her leaue. And ſhe (poore Lady) with grieuous expectation, and languiſhing deſire, caried her faint legs to the place where he lay, either not breathing, or in all appearance breathing nothing but death.

In which pittious plight when ſhe ſaw him, though Sorow had ſet before her minde the pittifulleſt conceit thereof that it could paint, yet the preſent ſight went beyonde all former apprehenſions: ſo that beginning to kneele by the bodie, her ſight ranne from her ſeruice, rather then abide ſuch a ſight; and ſhe fell in a ſoune vpon him, as if ſhe could not chooſe but dye of his wounds. But when her breath (aweary to be cloſed vp in woe) broke the priſon of her faire lippes, and brought memorie (with his ſeruaunt ſenſes) to his naturall office, ſhe yet made the breath conuey theſe dolefull wordes with it. Alas (ſaid ſhe) *Amphialus*, what ſtrange diſaſters be theſe, that hauing ſought thee ſo long, I ſhould be now ſorie to finde thee? that theſe eyes ſhould looke vpon *Amphialus*, and be grieued withall? that I ſhould haue thee in my power without glory, and embrace thee without comfort? How often haue I bleſt the meanes that might bring me neere thee? Now, woe worth the cauſe that brings me ſo neere thee. Often, alas, often haſt thou diſdained my teares: but now, my deare *Amphialus*, receiue them: theſe eyes can ſerue for nothing elſe, but to weepe for thee; ſince thou wouldeſt neuer vouchſafe them thy comfort, yet diſdaine not them thy ſorrow. I would they had bene more deare vnto thee; for then hadſt thou liued. Woe is me that thy noble harte could loue who hated thee, and hate who loued thee. Alas, why ſhould not my faith to thee couer my other defects, who only ſought to make my Crowne thy foote-ſtoole, my ſelfe thy ſeruaunt? that was all my ambition; and alas thou diſdainedſt it to ſerue them, by whom thy incomparable ſelfe were diſdained. Yet (ô *Philoclea*) whereſoeuer you are, pardon me, if I ſpeake in the bitternes of my ſoule, excellent may you be in all other things (and excellent ſure you are ſince he loued you) your want of pittie, where the fault onely was infiniteneſſe of deſert, cannot be excuſed. I would, O God, I would that you had graunted his deſerued ſuite of marrying you, and that I had bene your ſeruing-maide, to haue made my eſtate the foile of your felicitie, ſo he had liued. How many weary ſteps haue I trodden after thee, while my onely complaint was, that thou wert vnkinde? Alas I would now thou wert, to be vnkind. Alas why wouldeſt thou not commaund my ſeruice, in perſuading *Philoclea* to loue thee? who could, or (if euery one could) who would haue recounted thy perfections ſo well, as I? who with ſuch kindly paſſions could haue ſtirred pittie for thee as I? who ſhould haue deliuered not only the wordes, but the teares I had of thee? and ſo ſhouldeſt thou haue exerciſed thy diſdaine in me, and yet vſed my ſeruice for thee.

With that the body mouing ſomewhat, and giuing a groneful of deaths muſick,

ſhe

ſhe fell vpon his face, and kiſt him, and with all cried out. O miſerable I, that haue onely fauour by miſerie: and then, woulde ſhee haue returned to a freſh careere of complaints, when an aged and wiſe Gentleman came to her, and beſought her, to remember what was fit for her greatneſſe, wiſdome, and honour: and with all, that it was fitter to ſhow her loue, in carying the body to her excellent Surgeon, firſt applying ſuch excellent medicines as ſhe had receiued of him for that purpoſe, rather then onely ſhew her ſelfe a woman-louer in fruitles lamentations. She was ſtreight warned with the obedience of an ouerthrowen minde, and therefore leauing ſome ſurgeons of her owne to dreſſe the body, went her ſelfe to *Anaxius*, and humbling her ſelfe to him, as lowe as his owne pride could wiſh, beſought him, that ſince the ſurgeons there had vtterly giuen him ouer, that he would let her carie him awaye in her litter with her, ſince the worſt he could haue ſhould bee to die, and to die in her armes that loued him aboue all things; and where he ſhould haue ſuch monuments erected ouer him, as were fit for her loue, and his worthines: beſeeching him withall, ſince ſhe was in a country of enemies (where ſhee truſted more to *Anaxius* valour, then *Baſilius* promiſe) that he would conuey them ſafely out of thoſe territories Her reaſons ſomething moued him, but nothinge thoroughly perſwaded him, but the laſt requeſt of his helpe: which he ſtreight promiſed, warranting all ſecuritie, as long as that ſword had his maſter aliue. She as happy therein as vnhappines coulde be (hauing receiued as ſmall comfort of her owne ſurgeons as of the others) cauſed yet the body to bee eaſily conueyed into the litter: all the people then beginning to roare and crie, as though neuer till then they had loſt their Lord. And if the terrour of *Anaxius* had not kept them vnder, they would haue mutinied, rather then ſuffered his bodie to be caried away.

But *Anaxius* him ſelfe riding before the litter, with the choyce men of that place, they were affraid euen to crie, though they were ready to crie for feare: but (becauſe that they might doo) euery bodie forced (euen with harming themſelues) to doo honour to him: ſome throwing themſelues vpon the grounde; ſome tearing their clothes, and caſting duſte vpon their heades, and ſome euen woundring themſelues and ſprinkling their owne bloud in the aire.

The generall conſort of whoſe mourning, perfourmed ſo the naturall tunes of ſorrow; that euen to them (if any ſuch were) that felt not the loſſe, yet others griefe taught them grief; hauing before their compaſſionate ſenſe ſo paſſionate a ſpectacle, of a young man, of great beautie, beautified with great honour, honoured by great valure, made of ineſtimable value, by the noble vſing of it, to lye there languiſhing, vnder the arreſt of death, and a death, where the manner could be no comfort to the diſcomfortablenes of the matter. But when the bodie was carried through the gate, and the people (ſauing ſuch as were appointed) not ſuffred to goe further, then was ſuch an vniuerſall crie, as if they had all had but one life, and all receaued but one blow.

Which ſo moued *Anaxius* to conſider the loſſe of his friend, that (his mind apter to reuenge, then tenderneſſe) hee preſently giuing order to his brother to keepe the priſoners ſafe, and vnuiſited, till his retourne from conueying *Helen* hee ſent a meſſenger to the ſiſters, to tell them this curteous meſſage: that at his retourne with his owne handes; hee woulde cut off their heades, and ſende them for tokens to their father.

This meſſage was brought vnto the ſiſters, as they ſate at that time together with

Zelmane, conferring how to carrie themſelues, hauing heard of the death of *Amphialus*. And as no expectation of death is ſo paineful, as where the reſolution is hindred by the intermixing of hopes, ſo did this new alarum, though not remoue, yet moue ſomwhat the conſtancy of their mindes, which were ſo vnconſtantly dealt with. But within a while, the excellent *Pamela* had brought her minde againe to his olde acquaintance: and then, as carefull for her ſiſter (whom moſt deerely ſhe loued) Siſter (ſaid ſhee) you ſee how many acts our Tragedy hath: Fortune is not yet a wearie of vexing vs: but what? A ſhippe is not counted ſtrong for byding one ſtorme? It is but the ſame trumpet of death, which now perhaps giues the laſt ſounde: and let vs make that profite of our former miſeries, that in them wee learned to dye willingly. Truely ſaide *Philoclea*, deare ſiſter, I was ſo beaten with the euils of life, that though I had not vertue enough to deſpiſe the ſweetneſſe of it, yet my weakneſſe bredde that ſtrength, to be wearie of the paines of it: onely I muſt confeſſe, that little hope, which by theſe late accidents was awaked in me, was at the firſt angrie withall. But euen in the darkeneſſe of that horrour, I ſee a light of comfort appeare; and how can I treade amiſſe, that ſee *Pamela* ſteppes? I would onely (O that my wiſh might take place) that my ſchoole-Miſtres might liue, to ſee mee ſay my leſſon truely. Were that a life, my *Philoclea*? ſaid *Pamela*. No, no, (ſaide ſhee) let it come, and put on his worſt face: for at the worſt it is but a bug-beare. Ioy is it to me to ſee you ſo well reſolued; and ſince the world will not haue vs, let it loſe vs. Onely (with that ſhe ſtayed a little, and ſighed) only my *Philoclea*, (then ſhe bowed downe, and whiſpered in her eare) onely *Muſidorus*, my ſhepheard, comes betwene me and death, and makes me thinke I ſhould not dye, becauſe I know he would not I ſhoulde dye. With that *Philoclea* ſighed alſo, ſaying no more, but looking vpon *Zelmane*: who was walking vp and downe the chamber, hauing heard this meſſage from *Anaxius*, and hauing in times paſt heard of his nature, thought him like enough to performe it, which winded her againe into the former maze of perplexitie. Yet debating with her ſelfe of the manner how to preuent it, ſhe continued her muſing humour, little ſaying, or indeede, little finding in her hart to ſay, in a caſe of ſuch extremitie, where peremptorily death was threatned: and ſo ſtayed they; hauing yet that comfort, that they might tarrie togither. *Pamela* nobly, *Philoclea* ſweetely, and *Zelmane* ſadly, and deſperately none of them entertaining ſleep, which they thought ſhould ſhortly begin neuer to awake.

But *Anaxius* came home, hauing ſafely conducted *Helen* and ſafely hee might well do it: For though many of *Baſilius* Knights would haue attempted ſomething vpon *Anaxius*, by that meanes to deliuer the Ladies; yet *Philanax*, hauing receaued his maſters commandement, and knowing his word was giuen, would not conſent vnto it. And the black-Knight (who by them was able to carry abroad his wounds) did not knowe thereof; but was bringing force, by force to deliuer his Lady. So as *Anaxius*, interpreting it rather feare, then faith, and making euen chance an argument of his vertue, returned: and as ſoone as hee was returned, with a felon hart calling his brothers vp with him, he went into the chamber, where they were all three togither; with full intention to kill the ſiſters with his owne handes, and ſende their heads for tokens to their father: Though his brothers (who were otherwiſe enclined) diſſwaded him: but his reuerence ſtayed their perſwaſions. But when hee was come into the chamber, with the very wordes of cholerike threatning climing vp his throate, his eyes firſt lighted vpon *Pamela*; who hearing hee was comming, and

looking

looking for death, thought ſhe would keepe her owne maieſtie in welcomming it; but the beames therof ſo ſtrake his eyes, with ſuch a counterbuffe vnto his pride, that if his anger could not ſo quickly loue, nor his pride ſo eaſily honor, yet both were forced to finde a worthineſſe.

Which while it bred a pauſe in him, *Zelmane* (who had ready in her minde both what and how to ſay) ſtept out vnto him, and with a reſolute ſtayednes (void either of anger, kindnes, diſdaine, or humbleneſſe) ſpeake in this ſort. *Anaxius* (ſaid ſhe) if *Fame* haue not bene ouerpartiall to thee, thou art a man of exceeding valour. Therefore I doo call thee euen before that vertue, & will make it the iudge between vs. And now I doo affirme, that to the eternall blot of all the faire actes that thou haſt done, thou doeſt weakely, in ſeeking without daunger to reuenge his death, whoſe life with daunger thou mightſt perhapes haue preſerued: thou dooſt cowardly, in going about by the death of theſe excellent Ladies, to preuent the iuſt puniſhment that hereafter they by the powers, which they better then their father, or any other could make, might lay vpon thee; and dooſt moſt baſely, in once preſenting thy ſelfe as an executioner; a vile office vpon men, and in a iuſt cauſe: beyond the degree of any vile worde, in ſo vniuſt a cauſe, and vpon Ladies, and ſuch Ladies. And therefore, as a hangman. I ſay, thou art vnworthy to be counted a knight, or to be admitted into the companie of Knights. Neither for what, I ſay, will I alleadge other reaſons, of wiſdome, or iuſtice, to prooue my ſpeech, becauſe I knowe thou dooſt diſdaine to be tied to their rules: but euen in thine own vertue (whereof thou ſo much glorieſt) I will make my triall: and therfore defie thee, by the death of one of vs two to proue, or diſproue theſe reproaches. Chooſe thee what armes thou likeſt, I onely demaund, that theſe Ladies (whome I defende) may in liberty ſee the combate.

When *Zelmane* began her ſpeech, the excellency of her beautie, and grace, made him a little content to heare. Beſides that, a new leſſon he had read in *Pamela* had already taught him ſome regard. But when ſhee entered into brauerie of ſpeech, hee thought at firſt, a mad, and railing humor poſſeſt her; till, finding the ſpeeches hold well together, and at length come to flatte challenge of combat; hee ſtoode leaning backe with his bodie and head, ſometimes with bent browes looking vpon the one ſide of her, ſometimes of the other, beyonde maruell maruailing, that hee, who had neuer heard ſuch ſpeeches from any Knight, ſhoulde be thus rebuffed by a woman; and that maruell made him heare out her ſpeech: which ended, he turned his head to his brother *Zoilus*, and ſaid nothing, but onely lifting vp his eyes, ſmiled. But *Zelmane* finding his minde, *Anaxius* (ſaid ſhe) perchaunce thou diſdayneſt to anſwere me becauſe, as a woman, thou thinkeſt me not fitte to bee fought with all. But I tell thee, that I haue beene trayned vp in martiall matters, with ſo good ſucceſſe, that I haue many times ouercome brauer Knightes then thy ſelfe: and am wel knowen to be equall in feates of armes, to the famous *Pyrocles*, who ſlewe thy valiaunt Vncle, the Giant *Euardes*. The remembraunce of his Vncles death ſomething netled him, ſo as he anſwered thus.

Indeed (ſaide he) any woman may bee as valiaunt as that coward, and traytorly boy, who ſlewe my Vncle trayterouſly, and after ranne from me in the plaine field. Fiue thouſand ſuch could not haue ouercome *Euardes*, but by falſhood. But I ſought him all ouer *Aſia*, following him ſtil from one of his cony-holes to another: till comming into this Countrie, I heard of my friends being beſieged, and ſo came to blow away the wretches that troubled him. But whereſoeuer the miſerable boy flie, hea-

uen,

ueen, nor hell, ſhall keepe his harte from being torne by theſe handes. Thou lyeſt in thy throate (ſaid *Zelmane*) that boye, where euer he went, did ſo noble actes, as thy harte (as proude as it is) dares not think of, much leſſe perfourme. But to pleaſe thee the better with my preſence, I tell thee, no creature can be neerer of kinne to him, then my ſelfe: and ſo well we loue, that he woulde not be ſorrier for his owne death then for mine: I being begotten by his father, of an Amazon Ladie. And therefore, thou canſt not deuiſe to reuenge thy ſelf more vpon him, then by killing me: which if thou dareſt doo manfullie, doo it; otherwiſe, if thou harme theſe incomparable Ladies, or my ſelfe without daring to fight with me, I proteſt before theſe Knights, and before heauen and earth, (that will reueile thy ſhame) that thou art the beggerlieſt daſtardly villaine, that diſhonoureth the earth with his ſteppes: and if thou leteſt me ouer-liue them, ſo will I blaze thee. But all this coulde not moue *Anaxius*, but that he onely ſaid, Euill ſhould it become the terror of the world, to fight, much worſe to ſkolde with thee.

But (ſaid he) for the death of theſe ſame (pointing to the Princeſſes) of my grace, I giue them life. And withall, going to *Pamela*, and offring to take her by the chin, And as for you, Minion (ſaide hee) yeeld but gently to my will, and you ſhall not onely liue, but liue ſo happily, Hee would haue ſaid further, when *Pamela*, diſpleaſed both with wordes, matter, and maner, putting him awaye with her faire hande, Proud beaſt (ſaid ſhee) yet thou plaieſt worſe thy Comedy, then thy Tragedy. For my part, aſſure thy ſelfe, ſince my deſtiny is ſuch, that at each moment my life and death ſtand in equall balance, I had rather haue thee, and thinke thee far fitter to be my hangman, then my huſband. Pride and anger, woulde faine haue cruelly reuenged ſo bitter an anſwere, but alredy *Cupid* had begun to make it his ſport, to pull his plumes: ſo that, vnuſed to a waye of courteſie, and put out of his byas of pride, hee haſtily went away, grumbling to himſelfe; betweene threatning and wiſhing; leauing his brothers with them: the elder of whom, *Lycurgus*, liked *Philoclea*, and *Zeilus* would needes loue *Zelmane*; or at leſt, entertaine themſelues with making them beleue ſo. *Lycurgus* more braggard, and neere his brothers humor, began, with ſetting foorth their bloud, their deedes, howe many they had deſpiſed, of moſt excellent women; how much they were bound to them, that woulde ſeeke that of them. In ſumme, in all his ſpeeches, more like the beſtower, then the deſirer of felicitie. Whom it was an excellent paſtime (to thoſe that woulde delight in the play of vertue) to ſee, with what a wittie ignorance ſhee woulde not vnderſtande: and howe: acknowledging his perfections, ſhee woulde make, that one of his perfections, not to be iniurious to Ladies. But when he knew not how to replie, then would hee fall to touching and toying, ſtil vewing his graces in no glaſſe but ſelf-liking. To which, *Philocleas* ſhamefaſtnes, and humblenes, were as ſtrong reſiſters, as choller, and diſdaine. For though ſhe yeelded not, hee thought ſhe was to bee ouercome: and that thought a while ſtayed him from further violence. But *Zelmane* had eye to his behauiour, and ſet in her memorie, vpon the ſcore of Reuenge, while ſhee her ſelfe was no leſſe attempted by *Zeilus*; who leſſe ful of bragges was forwardeſt in offering (indeede) diſhonourable violence.

But when after their fruitleſſe labours they had gone awaye called by their brother, (who began to be perplexed betweene new conceaued deſires, and diſdaine, to bee diſdained) *Zelmane* (who with moſt aſſured quietneſſe of iudgement looked

looked into their preſent eſtate) earneſtly perſwaded the two ſiſters, that to auoide the miſchiefes of prowde outrage they would onely ſo farre ſute their behauiour to their eſtates, as they might winne time; which as it coulde not bring them to worſe caſe then they were, ſo it might bring forth inexpected reliefe. And why (ſaid *Pamela*) ſhall we any longer flatter aduerſity? Why ſhoulde wee delight to make our ſelues any longer balls to iniurious *Fortune* ſince our owne parents are content to be tyraunts ouer vs, ſince our own kinne are content traitorouſly to abuſe vs? Certainly, in miſhap it may bee ſome comforte to vs, that wee are lighted in theſe fellowes handes, who yet will keepe vs from hauing cauſe of being miſerable by our friends meanes. Nothing grieues me more, then that you, noble Ladie *Zelmane* (to whome the worlde might haue made vs able to doo honour) ſhoulde receaue onely hurte by the contagion of our miſerie. As for me, and my ſiſter, vndoubtedly it becomes our birth to thinke of dying nobly, while we haue done, or ſuffered nothing, which might make our ſoule aſhamed at the parture from theſe bodies. Hope is the fawning traitour of the mind, while vnder colour of friendſhip, it robbes it of his chiefe force of reſolution. Vertuous and faire Ladie (ſaide *Zelmane*) what you ſay is true; and that truth may wel make vp a part in the harmonie of your noble thoughts. But yet the time (which ought alwaies to bee one) is not tuned for it; while that may bring foorth any good, doo not barre your ſelfe thereof: for then will bee the time to die nobly, when you can not liue nobly. Then ſo earneſtly ſhee perſuaded with them both, to referre themſelues to their fathers conſent (in obtayning wherof they knew ſome while would be ſpent) and by that meanes to temper the minds of their prowde woers; that in the ende *Pamela* yeelded to her, becauſe ſhe ſpake reaſon; and *Philoclea* yeelded to her reaſon, becauſe ſhe ſpake it.

And ſo when they were againe ſollicited in that little pleaſing petition, *Pamela* forced her ſelfe to make anſwere to *Anaxius*, that if her father gaue his conſent ſhee would make her ſelfe beleiue, that ſuch was the heauenly determination, ſince ſhee had no meanes to auoide it. *Anaxius* (who was the moſt franke promiſer to him ſelfe of ſucceſſe) nothing doubted of *Baſilius* conſent, but rather aſſured him ſelfe, he would bee his oratour in that matter: And therefore hee choſe out an officious ſeruaunt (whome he eſteemed very wiſe, becauſe hee neuer found him but iuſt of his opinion) and willed him to be his embaſſadour to *Baſilius*, and to make him knowe, that if he meant to haue his daughter both ſafe and happie, and deſired himſelfe to haue ſuch a ſonne in lawe, as woulde not onely protect him in his quiet courſe, but (if he liſted to accept it) would giue him the monarchy of the worlde, that then he ſhould receaue *Anaxius*, who neuer before knewe what it was to pray any thinge. That if he did not, he would make him know, that the power of *Anaxius* was in euery thing beyonde his will, and yet his will not to be reſiſted by any other power. His ſeruaunt with ſmiling and caſte-vp looke, deſired God to make his memorie able to containe the treaſure of that wiſe ſpeach: and therefore beſought him to repeate it againe, that by the oftener hearing it, his minde might be the better acquainted with the diuines thereof, and that being gratiouſly granted, hee then doubted not by carying with him in his conceit, the grace wherewith *Anaxius* ſpake it, to perſuade rocky minds to their owne harme: ſo little doubted he to win *Baſilius* to that, which hee thought woulde make him thinke the heauens opened, when he harde but the proffer thereof. *Anaxius* grauely allowed the probabilitie of his coniecture, and therefore ſent him away, promiſing him hee ſhoulde haue the bringing vp of his ſe-

cond

cond ſonne by *Pamela*.

The meſſenger with ſpeede perfourmed his Lords commaundement to *Baſilius*, who by nature quiet, and by ſuperſtition made doubtfull, was lothe to take any matter of armes in hande, wherein already hee had found ſo ſlowe ſucceſſe; though *Philanax* vehemently vrged him thereunto, making him ſee that his retiring backe did encourage iniuries. But *Baſilius* betwixt the feare of *Anaxius* might, the paſſion of his loue and iealouſie of his eſtate, was ſo perplexed, that not able to determine, he tooke the common courſe of men, to flie onely then to deuotion, when they want reſolution: therefore detaining the meſſenger with delaies, hee deferred the directing of his courſe to the counſell of *Apollo*, which becauſe himſelfe at that time coulde not well go to require, hee entruſted the matter to his beſt truſted *Philanax*: who (as one in whom obedience was a ſufficient reaſon vnto him) wente with diligence to *Delphos*, where being entred into the ſecrete place of the temple, and hauing performed the ſacrifices vſuall, the ſpirite that poſſeſt the propheſying woman, with a ſacred fury, attended not his demaund, but as if it would argue him of incredulitie, tolde him, not in darke wonted ſpeeches, but plainely to bee vnderſtood, what he came for, and that hee ſhould returne to *Baſilius*, and will him to denie his daughters to *Anaxius* and his brothers, for that they were reſerued for ſuch as were better beloued of the gods. That he ſhould not doubte, for they ſhould returne vnto him ſafely and ſpeedily. And that he ſhould keepe on his ſolitary courſe, til both
« *Philanax* & *Baſilius* fully agreed in the vnderſtanding of the former prophecie: withall, commaunding *Philanax* from thence forward to giue tribute, but not oblation, to humane wiſedome.

« *Philanax* then finding that reaſon cannot ſhewe it ſelfe more reaſonable, then to leaue reaſoning in things aboue reaſon, returnes to his Lorde, and like one that preferred trueth before the maintaining of an opinion, hidde nothing from him, nor from thence foorth durſte any more diſſwade him, from that which he founde by the celeſtiall prouidence directed; but hee him ſelfe looking to repayre the gouernment as much as in ſo broken an eſtate by ciuill diſſention hee might, and fortifying with notable arte, both the lodges, ſo as they were almoſt made vnaprochable, hee lefte *Baſilius* to bemone the abſence of his daughters, and to bewayle the impriſonment of *Zelmane*: yet wholly giuen holily to obey the Oracle, he gaue a reſolute negatiue vnto the meſſenger of *Anaxius*, who all this while had waited for it, yet in good termes deſiring him to ſhewe him ſelfe, in reſpect of his birth and profeſſion, ſo Princely a Knight, as without forcing him to ſeeke the waye of force, to deliuer in noble ſorte thoſe Ladies vnto him, and ſo ſhould the iniurie haue bene in *Amphialus*, and the benefite in him.

The meſſenger went backe with this anſwere, yet hauing euer vſed to ſugre any thing which his Maiſter was to receaue, he tolde him, that when *Baſilius* firſt vnderſtood his deſires, he did ouerreach ſo farre all his moſt hopefull expectations, that he thought it were too great a boldneſſe to harken to ſuch a man, in whome the heauens had ſuch intereſt, without asking the Gods counſell, and therefore had ſent his principall counſailour to *Delphos*, who although he kepte the matter neuer ſo ſecrete, yet his diligence, inſpired by *Anaxius* priuiledge ouer all worldly thinges, had founde out the ſecrete, which was, that hee ſhoulde not preſume to marrie his daughters, to one who already was enrolled among the demie-Gods, and yet much leſſe he ſhould dare the attempting to take them out of his hands.

Anaxius

Anaxius, who till then had made Fortune his creator, and Force his God, nowe began to finde an other wisedome to be aboue, that iudged so rightly of him: and where in this time of his seruauntes wayting for *Basilius* resolution, he and his brothers had courted their Ladies, as whome they vouchsafed to haue for their wiues, he resolued now to dally no longer in delayes, but to make violence his Oratour, since hee had found persuasions had gotten nothing but answeres. Which intention he opened to his brothers, who hauing all this while wanted nothing to take that way, but his authoritie, gaue spurres to his running, and, vnworthy men, neither feeling vertue in themselues, nor tendring it in others, they were headlong to make that euill consort of loue and force, when *Anaxius* had worde, that from the Tower there were descried some companies of armed men, marching towards the towne; wherefore he gaue present order to his seruauntes, and souldiers, to goe to the gates and walles, leauing none within but himselfe, and his brothers: his thoughts then so full of their intended pray, that *Mars*-his lowdest trumpet could scarcely haue awaked him.

But while he was directing what he would haue done, his yongest brother *Zoilus*, glad that he had the commission, went in the name of *Anaxius*, to tell the sisters, that since he had answere from their father, that he and his brother *Licurgus*, should haue them in what sort it pleased them, that they would now graunt them no longer time, but presently to determine, whether they thought it more honorable comfort to be compelled, or perswaded: *Pamela* made him answere, that in a matter whereon the whole state of her life depended, and wherein she had euer answered, she would not lead, but follow her parents pleasure; she thought it reason she should, either by letter, or particular messenger vnderstand somthing from thē-selues, & not haue her beleef bound to the report of their partiall seruant, and therfore, as to their words, she & her sister, had euer a simple & true resolution, so against their vniust force, God, they hoped, would either arme their liues, or take away their liues. Well Ladies (said he) I will leaue my brothers, who by and by will come vnto you, to be their owne embassadors, for my part, I must now do my selfe seruice. And with that turning vp his mustachoes, and marching as if he would begin a pauen, he went toward *Zelmane*. But *Zelmane* (hauing had all this while of the messengers being with *Basilius*, much to do to keepe those excellent Ladies from seeking by the pasport of death, to escape those base dangers wherevnto they found themselues subiect) still hoping that *Musidorus* would finde some meanes to deliuer thē; and therefore had often both by her owne example, and comfortable reasons, perswaded them to ouerpasse many insolent indignities of their proud suters, who thought it was a sufficient fauour not to do the vttermost iniurie, now come againe to the streight she most feared for them, either of death or dishonor, if heroicall courage would haue let her, she had bene beyonde herselfe amazed: but that yet held vp her wit, to attend the vttermost occasion, which euen then brought his hairie forehead vnto her: for *Zoilus* smacking his lippes, as for the Prologue of a kisse, and something aduancing himselfe, Darling (said he) let thy hart be full of ioy, and let thy faire eies be of counsell with it, for this day thou shalt haue *Zoilus*, whom many haue lōged for; but none shall haue him, but *Zelmane*. And oh, how much glory I haue to think what a race wil be betwne vs. The world, by the heauēs, the world will be too little for them: And with that, he would haue put his arme about her necke, but she, withdrawing her selfe from him, My Lord (said she)

much good may your thoughts do you, but that I may not diſſemble with you, my natiuitie being caſt by one that neuer failed in any of his prognoſtications, I haue bene aſſured, that I ſhould neuer be apt to beare children. But ſince you will honor me with ſo hie fauor, I muſt onely deſire that I may performe a vow which I made among my countriwomen, the famous *Amazons*, that I would neuer marrie none, but ſuch one as was able to withſtand me in Armes: therefore, before I make mine owne deſire ſeruiceable to yours, you muſt vouchſafe to lend me armor and weapons, that at leaſt, with a blow or two of the ſword, I may not finde my ſelfe periured to my ſelfe. But *Zoilus* (but laughing with a hartie lowdnes) went by force to embrace her; making no other anſwere, but ſince ſhe had a mind to trie his Knighthood, ſhe ſhould quickly know what a man of armes he was: and ſo, without reuerence to the Ladies, began to ſtruggle with her.

But in *Zelmane* then Diſdaine became wiſdome, and Anger gaue occaſion. For abiding no longer aboad in the matter, ſhe that had not put off, though ſhe had diſguiſed, *Pyrocles*, being farre fuller of ſtrong nimblenes, tript vp his feete, ſo that he fell downe at hers. And withall (meaning to purſue what ſhe had begun) puld out his ſword, which he ware about him: but before ſhe could ſtrike him withall, he gat vp, and ranne to a faire chamber, where he had left his two brethren, preparing themſelues to come downe to their miſtreſſes. But ſhe followed at his heeles, and euen as he came to throw himſelfe into their armes for ſuccor, ſhe hit him with his owne ſword, ſuch a blow vpon the waſte, that ſhe almoſt cut him aſunder: once, ſhe ſundred his ſoule from his body, ſending it to *Proſerpina*, an angry Goddeſſe againſt rauiſhers. But *Anaxius*, ſeing before his eyes the miſerable end of his brother, fuller of deſpite then wrath, and yet fuller of wrath then ſorow, looking with a wofull eye vpon his brother *Lycurgus*, Brother, ſaid he, chaſtice this vile creature, while I go downe, and take order leſt further miſchiefe ariſe: and ſo went downe to the Ladies, whom he viſited, doubting there had bene ſome further practiſe then yet he conceiued. But finding them only ſtrong in pacience, he went and lockt a great Iron gate, by which onely any body might mount to that part of the Caſtle, rather to conceale the ſhame of his brother, ſlaine by a woman, then for doubt of any other anoyance, and then went vp to receaue ſome comfort of the execution, he was ſure his brother had done of *Zelmane*. But *Zelmane* no ſooner ſaw thoſe brothers, of whom Reaſon aſſured her ſhe was to expect reuenge, but that ſhe lept to a target, as one that well knew the firſt marke of valure to be defence. And then accepting the oportunitie of *Anaxius* going away, ſhe waited not the pleaſure of *Lycurgus*, but without any words (which ſhe euer thought vaine, when reſolution tooke the place of perſwaſion) gaue her owne hart the contentment to be the aſſailer. *Lycurgus*, who was in the diſpoſition of his nature hazardouſe, and by the luckie paſſing through many dangers, growne confident in himſelfe, went toward her, rather as to a ſpoile, then to fight, ſo farre from feare, that his aſſuredneſſe diſdained to hope. But when her ſword made demonſtrations aboue all flattery of arguments, and that he found ſhe preſt ſo vpon him, as ſhewed that her courage ſprang not from blinde deſpaire, but was garded both with cunning and ſtrength: ſelf-loue then firſt in him diuided it ſelfe from vain-glory, and made him finde that the world of worthines had not this whole globe compriſed in his breſt, but that it was neceſſarie to haue ſtrong reſiſtance againſt ſo ſtrong aſſailing. And ſo between them, for a fewe blowes, *Mars* himſelfe might haue bin delighted to looke on. But *Zelmane*,

who

who knew that in her caſe,ſlowneſſe of victory was little better then ruine,with the bellowes of hate,blew the fire of courage,and he ſtriking a maine blow at her head, ſhe warded it with the ſhield, but ſo warded, that the ſhield was cut in two pieces, while it protected her,and withal ſhe ran in to him,and thruſting at his breſt,which he put by with his target, as he was lifting vp his ſword to ſtrike againe, ſhe let fall the piece of her ſhield, and with her left hand catching his ſword of the inſide of the pommell, with nimble and ſtrong ſleight, ſhe had gotten his ſword out of his hand before his ſence could conuey to his imagination, what was to be doubted. And hauing now two ſwords againſt one ſhield, meaning not fooliſhly to be vngratefull to good fortune, while he was no more amazed with his being vnweapned,then with the ſuddainnes therof,ſhe gaue him ſuch a wound vpon his head, in deſpite of the ſhields ouer-weake reſiſtãce,that withall he fell to the ground, aſtoniſhed with the paine,& agaſt with feare. But ſeing *Zelmane* ready to conclude her victory in his death, bowing vp his head to her, with a countenance that had forgotten all pride, Enough excellent Lady,ſaid he,thẽ honor is yours: Wherof you ſhal want the beſt witnes, if you kil me. As you haue taken from men the glory of manhood, returne ſo now againe to your owne ſex,for mercy. I will redeeme my life of you with no ſmall ſeruices, for I will vndertake to make my brother obey all your commãdements. Grant life I beſeech you,for your own honor, and for the perſons ſake that you loue beſt. *Zelmane* repreſt a while her great hart,either diſdaining to be cruell,or pitiful,& therfore not cruel: & now the image of humane condition,begã to be an Orator vnto her of compaſſiõ, whẽ ſhe ſaw, as he lifted vp his armes with a ſuppliãts grace,about one of thẽ,vnhappily tied,a garter with a Iewel, which (giuẽ to *Pyrocles* by his aunt of *Theſſalia*, & greatly eſteemed by him) he had preſented to *Philoclea*, & with inward rage promiſing extreame hatred, had ſeene *Lycurgus* with a proud force,& not without ſome hurt vnto her,pull away from *Philoclea*,becauſe at entreatie ſhe would not giue it him. But the ſight of that was like a cyphar, ſignifying all the iniuries which *Philoclea* had of him ſuffred,& that remẽbrãce feeding vpõ wrath,trod down al cõceits of mercy.And therfore ſaying no more,but No villain, dye: It is *Philoclea* that ſends thee this token for thy loue. With that ſhe made her ſword drink the blood of his hart, though he wreſting his body, & with a countenance prepared to excuſe,wold faine haue delaied the receiuing of deaths embaſſadors. But neither that ſtaied *Zelmanes* hand, nor yet *Anaxius* crie vnto her, who hauing made faſt the iron gate,euen then came to the top of the ſtaires,when, contrarie to all his imaginations,he ſaw his brother lye at *Zelmanes* mercie. Therefore crying,promiſing,and threatning to her to hold her hand: the laſt grone of his brother was the onely anſwere he could get to his vnreſpected eloquence. But then Pittie would faine haue drawne teares, which Furie in their ſpring dried; and Anger would faine haue ſpoken, but that Diſdaine ſealed vp his lippes; but in his heart he blaſphemed heauen, that it could haue ſuch a power ouer him; no leſſe aſhamed of the victorie he ſhould haue of her, then of his brothers ouerthrow: and no more ſpited, that it was yet vnreuenged, then that the reuenge ſhould be no greater, then a womans deſtruction. Therefore with no ſpeach, but ſuch a groning crie, as often is the language of ſorowfull anger, he came running at *Zelmane*, vſe of fighting then ſeruing in ſteed of patient conſideration what to do. Guided wherewith, though he did not with knowledge, yet did he according to knowledge, preſſing vpon *Zelmane* in ſuch a well defended manner, that in all the combats that euer

the had fought, ſhe had neuer more neede of quicke ſenſes, and ready vertue. For being one of the greateſt men of ſtature then liuing, as he did fully anſwere that ſtature in greatneſſe of might, ſo did he exceede both in greatnes of courage, which with a countenance formed by the nature both of his mind and body, to an almoſt horrible fiercenes, was able to haue carried feare to any minde, that was not priuie to it ſelfe of a true and conſtant worthines. But *Pyrocles*, whoſe ſoule might well be ſeparated from his body, but neuer alienated from the remembring what was comely, if at the firſt he did a little apprehend the dangerouſnes of his aduerſarie, whom once before he had ſomething tried, and now perfectly ſawe, as the very picture of forcible furie: yet was that apprehenſion quickly ſtayed in him, rather ſtrengthning, then weakning his vertue by that wreſtling; like wine, growing the ſtronger by being moued. So that they both, prepared in harts, and able in hands, did honor ſolitarines there with ſuch a combat, as might haue demaunded, as a right of fortune, whole armies of beholders. But no beholders needed there, where manhood blew the trumpet, and ſatisfaction did whet, as much as glorie. There was ſtrength againſt nimblenes; rage, againſt reſolution; fury, againſt vertue; confidence, againſt courage; pride, againſt nobleneſſe: loue, in both, breeding mutuall hatred, and deſire of reuenging the iniurie of his brothers ſlaughter, to *Anaxius*, being like *Philocleas* captiuity to *Pyrocles*. Who had ſeene the one, would haue thought nothing could haue reſiſted; who had marked the other, would haue marueiled that the other had ſo long reſiſted. But like two contrarie tides, either of which are able to carry worlds of ſhippes, and men vpon them, with ſuch ſwiftnes, as nothing ſeemes able to withſtand them: yet meeting one another, with mingling their watrie forces, and ſtrugling together, it is long to ſay whether ſtreame gets the victorie: So betweene theſe, if *Pallas* had bene there, ſhe could ſcarcely haue tolde, whether ſhe had nurced better in the feates of armes. The Iriſh greyhound, againſt the Engliſh maſtiffe; the ſword-fiſh, againſt the whale; the Rhinoceros, againſt the elephant, might be models, and but models of this combat. *Anaxius* was better armed defenſiuely: for (beſide a ſtrong caske brauely couered, wherewith he couered his head) he had a huge ſhield, ſuch perchance, as *Achilles* ſhewed to the pale walles of Troy, wherewithall that great body was couered. But *Pyrocles*, vtterly vnarmed for defence, to offend had the aduantage: for, in either hand he had a ſword, and with both handes nimbly performed that office. And according as they were diuerſly furniſhed, ſo did they differ in the manner of fighting. For *Anaxius* moſt by warding, and *Pyrocles* oftneſt by auoyding, reſiſted the aduerſaries aſſault. Both haſtie to end, yet both often ſtaying for aduantage. Time, diſtance, and motion, cuſtom made them ſo perfect in, that as if they had bene felow Counſellers, and not enemies, each knew the others minde, and knewe how to preuent it. So as their ſtrength fayled them ſooner then their skill, and yet their breath fayled them ſooner then their ſtrength. And breathles indeed they grew, before either could complaine of any loſſe of bloud.

So that conſenting by the mediation of neceſſitie, to a breathing time of truce, being withdrawen a little one frō the other; *Anaxius* ſtood leaning vpon his ſword, with his grim eye, ſo ſetled vpon *Zelmane*, as is wont to be the looke of an earneſt thought. Which *Zelmane* marking, and, according to the *Pyroclean* nature, fuller of gay brauerie in the midſt, then in the beginning of danger; What is it (ſaid ſhe) *Anaxius*, that thou ſo deeply muſeſt on? Dooth thy brothers example make thee

thinke

thinke of thy fault paſt, or of thy comming puniſhment? I thinke (ſaid he) what ſpitefull God it ſhould be, who, enuying my glory, hath brought me to ſuch a wayward caſe, that neither thy death can be a reuenge, nor thy ouerthrow a victorie. Thou dooſt well indeed (ſaid *Zelmane*) to impute thy caſe to the heauenly prouidence, which will haue thy pride finde it ſelfe (euen in that whereof thou art moſt proud) puniſhed by the weake ſex, which thou moſt contemneſt.

But then, hauing ſufficiently reſted themſelues, they renewed againe their combatte, farre more terribly then before: like nimble vaulters, who at the firſt and ſecond leape, doo but ſtirre, and (as it were) awake the fierie and aërie partes, which after in the other leapes, they doo with more excellencie exerciſe. For in this pauſing, ech had brought to his thoughts the maner of the others fighting, and the aduantages, which by that, and by the qualitie of their weapons, they might worke themſelues; and ſo againe repeated the leſſon they had ſaid before, more perfectly, by the vſing of it. *Anaxius* oftner vſed blowes, his huge force (as it were) more delighting therein, and the large protection of his ſhield, animating him vnto it. *Pyrocles*, of a more fine, and deliuer ſtrength, watching his time when to giue fitte thruſtes; as, with the quick obeying of his bodie, to his eyes quicke commaundement, he ſhunned any harme *Anaxius* could do to him: ſo would he ſoone haue made an end of *Anaxius*, if he had not found him a man of wonderfull, and almoſt matchleſſe excellency in matters of armes. *Pyrocles* vſed diuers faynings to bring *Anaxius* on, into ſome inconuenience, But *Anaxius* keeping a ſound maner of fighting, neuer offered, but ſeeing faire cauſe, and then followed it with wel-gouerned violence. Thus ſpent they a great time, ſtriuing to doo, and with ſtriuing to doo, wearying themſelues, more then with the very doing. *Anaxius* finding *Zelmane* ſo neere vnto him, that with little motion he might reach her, knitting all his ſtrength together, at that time mainly foyned at her face. But *Zelmane* ſtrongly putting it by with her right hand ſword, comming in with her left foote, and hand, would haue giuen a ſharpe viſitation to his right ſide, but that he was faine to leape awaye. Whereat aſhamed, (as hauing neuer done ſo much before in his life.)

How this combate ended, how the Ladies by the comming of the diſcouered forces were deliuered, and reſtored to Baſilius, *and how* Dorus *againe returned to his old maſter* Damætas, *is altogether vnknowne. What afterward chaunced, out of the Authors owne writings and conceits hath bene ſupplied, as ſoloweth.*

AFter that *Baſilius* (according to the oracles promiſe) had receiued home his daughters, and ſettled himſelfe againe in his ſolitary courſe and accuſtomed company, there paſſed not many dayes ere the now fully recomforted *Dorus* hauing waited a time of *Zelmanes* walking alone towards her little Arbor, tooke leaue of his maſter *Damætas* husbandry to follow her. Neere whervnto ouertaking her, and ſitting downe together among the ſweet flowers whereof that place was very plentifull, vnder the pleaſant ſhade of a broad leaued Sycamor, they recounted one to another their ſtrange pilgrimage of paſſions, omitting nothing which the open harted frendſhip is wont to lay forth, where there is cauſe to cõmunicate both ioyes & ſorows, for indeed ther is no ſweeter taſt of frendſhip, then the coupling of ſoules in this mutualitie either of condoling or comforting: where the oppreſſed minde findes it ſelf not altogether miſerable, ſince it is ſure of one which is feelingly ſory for his miſery: and the ioyfull ſpends not his ioy, either alone, or there where

it may be enuyed: but may freely ſend it to ſuch a well grounded obiect, from whence he ſhall be ſure to receiue a ſweete reflection of the ſame ioye, and, as in a cleere mirror of ſincere good will, ſee a liuely picture of his owne gladnes. But after much diſcourſe on eyther parte, *Dorus* (his hearte ſcarce ſeruing him to come to the pointe, wherevnto his then comming had bene wholie directed, as loth in the kindeſt ſorte to diſcouer to his friend his owne vnkindnes) at length, one word emboldening another made knowne to *Zelmane*, how *Pamela* vpon his vehement othe to offer no force vnto her, till hee had inueſted her in the Duchie of *Theſſalia*, had condiſcended to his ſtealing her awaie to the next ſea porte. That beſides the ſtraunge humors ſhe ſawe her father more and more falling into, and vnreaſonable reſtraint of her libertie, whereof ſhe knewe no cauſe but light grounded iealoſies, added to the hate of that manner of life, and confidence ſhe had in his vertue, the chiefeſt reaſon had wonne her to this, was the late daunger ſhe ſtoode in of looſing him, the like whereof (not vnlike to fall if this courſe were continued) ſhe choſe rather to dye then againe to vndergoe. That now they wayted for nothing elſe, but ſome fit time for their eſcape, by the abſence of their three lothſome companions, in whome follie ingendred ſuſpicion. And therefore now, ſayd *Dorus*, my deere Cozen, to whome nature began my friendſhip, education confirmed it, and vertue hath made it eternall, heere haue I diſcouered the very foundacion wherevpon my life is built: bee you the Iudge betwixt mee and my fortune. The violence of loue is not vnknowne to you: And I knowe my caſe ſhall neuer want pittie in your conſideration. How all the ioyes of my hearte doo leaue mee, in thinking I muſt for a time be abſent from you, the eternall truth is witneſſe vnto mee, I knowe I ſhould not ſo ſenſiblie feele the pangs of my laſt departure. But this enchantment of my reſtleſſe deſire hath ſuch authoritye in my ſelfe aboue my ſelfe, that I am become a ſlaue vnto it, I haue no more freedome in mine owne determinacions. My thoughtes are now all bent how to carrie awaie my burdenous bliſſe. Yet, moſt beloued Cozen, rather then I ſhould thinke I doo heerein violate that holie bande of true friendſhip, wherein I vnworthie am knit vnto you, commaund mee ſtay. Perchaunce the force of your commaundement may worke ſuch impreſſion into my hearte, that no reaſon of mine owne can imprint into it. For the Gods forbid, the foule word of abandoning *Pyrocles*, might euer be obiected to the faithfull *Muſidorus*. But if you can ſpare my preſence, whoſe preſence no way ſerues you, and by the diuiſion of theſe two Lodges is not oft with you: nay if you can thinke my abſence may, as it ſhall, ſtand you in ſtead, by bringing ſuch an armye hither, as ſhall make *Baſilius*, willing or vnwilling, to knowe his owne happe in graunting you *Philoclea*: then I will cheerefullie goe about this my moſt deſired enterpriſe, and ſhall thinke the better halfe of it alreadie atchieued, beeing begunne in the fortunate houre of my friendes contentment. Theſe wordes, as they were not knitte together with ſuch a conſtant courſe of flowing eloquence, as *Dorus* was woont to vſe: ſo was his voice interrupted with ſighes, and his countenaunce with enterchanging coulour diſmayed. So much his owne hearte did finde him faultie to vnbende any way the continuall vſe of theyr deare friendſhippe. But *Zelmane*, who had all this while gladlie hearkened to the other tydings of her friends happye ſucceſſe, when this laſt determination of *Dorus* ſtrake her attentiue eares, ſhe ſtayed a great while oppreſſed with a dead amazement.

There

Ther came ſtreight before her mind, made tender with woes, the images of her own fortune. Her tedious longings, her cauſes to deſpaire, the comberſome follie of *Baſilius*, the enraged Iealouſie of *Gynecia*, her ſelfe a Prince without retinewe; a man annoyed with the troubles of woman-kinde; lothſomely loued, and daungerouſlie louing; And now for the perfecting of all, her friend to be taken away by himſelf, to make the loſſe the greater by the vnkindnes. But within a while ſhe reſolutely paſſed ouer all in warde obiections, and preferring her friends proffitt to her owne deſire, with a quiet but hartie looke, ſhe thus aunſweared him. If I bare thee this Loue vertuous *Muſidorus*, for mine owne ſake, and that our friendſhipp grew becauſe I for my parte, might reioyce to enioye ſuch a friend: I ſhoulde nowe ſo thorowly feele mine owne loſſe, that I ſhould call the heauens and earth to witneſſe, howe cruelly yee robbe mee, of my greateſt comforte, meaſuring the breach of friendſhippe by myne owne paſſion. But becauſe indeede I loue thee for thy ſelfe, and in my iudgement iudge of thy worthines to beloued, I am content to builde my pleaſure vppon thy comforte: And then will I deeme my happe in friendſhippe great, when I ſhall ſee thee, whome I loue happie. Let me be onely ſure, thou loueſt me ſtill, the onely price of trew affection goe therefore on, worthye *Muſidorus*, with the guide of vertue, and ſeruice of fortune. Let thy loue be loued, thy deſires proſperous, thy eſcape ſafe, and thy iornye eaſie. Let euery thing yeeld his helpe to thy deſerte, for my part abſence ſhall not take thee from mine eyes, nor afflictions ſhall barre mee from gladding in thy good, nor a poſſeſſed harte ſhall keepe thee from the place it harh for euer allotted vnto thee. *Dorus* would faine haue replied againe, to haue made a liberall confeſſion that *Zelmane* had of her ſide the aduantage of well performing friendſhippe: but partelie his owne griefe of parting from one he loued ſo dearely, partly the kinde care in what ſtate hee ſhoulde leaue *Zelmane*, bredd ſuch a conflicte in his minde, that many times he wiſhed, he had either neuer attempted, or neuer reueiled this ſecreat enterpriſe. But *Zelmane*, who had now looked to the vttermoſte of it, and eſtabliſhed her minde vpon an aſſured determination, my onely friend ſaid ſhee ſince to ſo good towardnes, your courteous deſtinies haue conducted you, let not a ceremoniall conſideration of our mutuall loue, be a barre vnto it. I ioye in your preſence, but I ioye more in your good, that friendſhipp brings foorth the fruites of enmitie, which preferres his owne tendernes, before his friendes domage. For my parte my greateſt griefe herein ſhalbe, I can bee no further ſeruiceable vnto you O *Zelmane* ſaide *Dorus* with his eyes euen couered with water, I did not think ſo ſoone to haue diſplayed my determination vnto you, but to haue made my way firſt in your louing iudgement. But alas as your ſweet diſpoſition drew me ſo farre: ſo doth it now ſtrengthen me in it. To you therefore be the due commendation giuen, who can conquere me in Loue, and Loue in wiſedome. As for mee, then ſhall goodnes turne to euill, and vngratefulnes bee the token of a true harte when *Pyrocles* ſhall not poſſeſſe a principall ſeate in my ſoule, when the name of *Pyrocles* ſhall not be helde of me in deuout reuerence.

They would neuer haue come to the cruell inſtant of parting, nor to the il-faring word of farewell, had not *Zelmane* ſene a farre off the olde *Baſilius*, who hauing perfourmed a ſacrifice to *Apollo*, for his daughters, but principally for his miſtreſſe happy returne, had ſince bene euery where to ſeeke her. And nowe being come within compaſſe of diſcerning her, he beganne to frame the louelieſt coũtenance he could, ſtroking vp his legges, ſetting his bearde in due order, and ſtanding bolte vpright.

Alas ſaid *Zelmane*, behold an euill fore-token of your ſorrowfull departure. Yonder ſee I one of my furies, which doth daylie vexe me, farewell fare wel my *Muſidorus*, the Gods make fortune to waite on thy vertues, and make mee wade through this lake of wretchednes. *Dorus* burſt out into a floud of teares wringing her faſt by the hande. No, no, ſaid he, I go blindfold, whither the courſe of my ill happe caries me: for now too late my harte giues me this our ſeparating can neuer be proſperous. But if I liue, attend me here ſhortly with an army. Thus both appalled with the grieuous renting of their long Combination, (hauing firſt reſolued with thēſelues that, whatſoeuer fell vnto them, they ſhould neuer vpon no occaſion vtter their names for the cōſeruing the honour of their Royal parentage, but keep the names of *Daiphantus* & *Palladius*, as before had ben agreed betweene thē) they tooke diuerſe waies: *Dorus* to the lodg-ward, wher his heauy eyes might be ſomthing refreſhed; *Zelmane* towards *Baſilius*: ſaying to her ſelfe with a skornefull ſmiling: yet hath not my friendly fortune depriued me of a pleaſant companion. But he hauing with much ſearche come to her preſence, *Doubt* & *Deſire* bred a great quarrel in his mind. For his former experience had taught him to doubt: & true feeling of Loue made doubts daungerous, but the working of his deſire had ere long wonne the fielde. And therefore with the moſt ſubmiſſiue maner his behauiour could yeeld: O Goddeſſe, ſaid hee towardes whom I haue the greateſt feeling of Religion, be not diſpleaſed at ſome ſhew of deuotion I haue made to *Apollo*: ſince he (if he know any thing) knowes that my harte beares farre more awful reuerēce to your ſelf then to his, or any other the like *Deity*. You wil euer be deceaued in me, anſwered *Zelmane*: I wil make my ſelfe no competitor with *Apollo*, neither can blaſphemies to him be duties to me. With that *Baſilius* tooke out of his boſome certaine verſes he had written, and kneling downe, preſented them to her. They contained this:

PHæbus *farewell, a ſweeter Saint I ſerue,*
The high conceits thy heau'nly wiſedomes breed
My thoughts forget: my thoughts, which neuer ſwerue
From her, in whome is ſowne their freedomes ſeede,
And in whoſe eyes my dayly doome I reede.

Phæbus *farewell, a ſweeter Saint I ſerue.*
Thou art farre off, thy kingdome is aboue:
She heau'n on earth with beauties doth preſerue.
Thy beames I like, but her cleare rayes I loue:
Thy force I feare, her force I ſtill do proue.

Phæbus *yeelde vp thy title in my minde.*
She doth poſſeſſe, thy Image is defaſte,
But if thy rage ſome braue reuenge will finde,
On her, who hath in me thy temple raſte,
Employ thy might, that ſhe my fires may taſte.
And how much more her worth ſurmounteth thee,
Make her as much more baſe by louing me.

This is my Hymne to you, ſaid he, not left me by my aunceſtors, but begone in my ſelfe. The temple wherin it is daylie ſonge, is my ſoule: and the ſacrifice I offer to you withall is all whatſoeuer I am. *Zelmane*, who euer thought ſhee founde in his

ſpeeches

ſpeeches the ill taſte of a medecine, and the operation of a poyſon, would haue ſuffred a diſdainful looke to haue bene the onely witneſſe of her good acceptation; but that *Baſilius* began a freſh to lay before her many pittifull prayers, and in the ende to conclude that he was fully of opinion it was onely the vnfortunatenes of that place that hindered the proſperous courſe of his deſires. And therefore ſince the hatefull influence, which made him embrace this ſolitary life, was now paſt ouer him (as he doubted not the iudgment of *Philanax* would agree with his) and his late miſhapes had taught him how perillous it was to commit a Princes ſtate to a place ſo weakely guarded: He was now enclined to returne to his pallace in *Mantinea*, and there he hoped he ſhould be beter able to ſhew how much he deſired to make al he had hers: with many other ſuch honnie wordes which my penne growes almoſt weary to ſet downe: This indeede neerely pierced *Zelmane*. For the good beginning ſhee had there obtained of *Philoclea* made her deſire to continue the ſame trade, till vnto the more perfecting of her deſires: and to come to any publike place ſhee did deadly feare, leſt her maſke by many eyes might the ſooner be diſcouered, and ſo her hopes ſtopped, and the ſtate of her ioyes endaungered. Therefore while ſhee reſted, muſing at the dayly chaunging labyrinth of her owne fortune, but in her ſelfe determined it was her onely beſt to keepe him there: and with fauors to make him loue the place, where the fauors were receiued, as diſgraces had made him apte to chaunge the *Soyle*.

Therefore caſting a kinde of corner looke vpon him, it is truely ſaide, (ſaide ſhe) that age cooleth the bloud. Howe ſoone goodman you are terrified before you receaue any hurte? Doe you not knowe that daintines is kindly vnto vs? And that hard obtayning, is the excuſe of womans graunting? Yet ſpeake I not as though you were like to obtaine, or I to graũt. But becauſe I would not haue you imagin, I am to be wonne by courtely vanities, or eſteeme a man the more, becauſe he hath handſome men to waite of him, when he is affraid to liue without them. You might haue ſeene *Baſilius* humbly ſwell, and with a lowly looke ſtand vpon his tiptoes; ſuch diuerſitie her words deliuered vnto him. O *Hercules* aunſwered he; *Baſilius* afraide? Or his bloud cold, that boyles in ſuch a fournace? Care I who is with mee, while I enioy your preſence? Or is any place good or bad to me, but as it pleaſeth you to bleſſe or curſe it? O let me be but armed in your good grace, and I defie whatſoeuer there is or can be againſt mee. No, no, your loue is forcible, and my age is not without vigoure. *Zelmane* thought it not good for his ſtomacke, to receaue a ſurfet of too much fauoure, and therefore thinking he had enough for the time, to keepe him from any ſodaine remouing, with a certaine gracious bowing downe of her heade towarde him, ſhe turned away, ſaying, ſhe would leaue him at this time to ſee how temperately hee could vſe ſo bountifull a meaſure, of her kindenes. *Baſilius* that thought euery dropp a flood that bred any refreſhment, durſt not further preſſe her, but with an ancient modeſtie left her to the ſweete repaſt of her owne fancies. *Zelmane* aſſoone as he was departed went towarde *Pamelas* lodge in hope to haue ſeene her friende *Dorus*, to haue pleaſed her ſelfe with another paynefull farrewell, and further to haue taken ſome aduiſe with him touching her owne eſtate, whereof before ſorowe had not ſuffered her to thinke. But being come euen neere the lodge, ſhe ſaw the mouth of a caue, made as it ſhould ſeeme by nature in deſpite of Arte: ſo fitly did the riche growing marble ſerue to beautifie the vawt of the firſt entrie. vnderfoot, the ground ſemed mynerall, yeelding ſuch a gliſtering ſhewe of golde in it, as they ſay the ryuer

Tagus

Tagus caries in his ſandie bed. The caue framed out into many goodly ſpatious Roomes ſuch as the ſelfe-liking men, haue with long and learned delicacie founde out the moſt eaſefull. There rann through it a little ſweete Riuer, which had leſte the face of the earth to drowne her ſelfe for a ſmale waye in this darke but pleaſant manſion. The very firſt ſhewe of the place entiſed the melancholy minde of *Zelmane* to yeelde her ſelfe ouer there to the flood of her owne thoughtes. And therefore ſitting downe in the firſt entrie, of the Caues mouth, with a ſong ſhee had lately made, ſhee gaue a dolefull waye to her bitter Affectes, ſhee ſunge to this effecte:

SInce that the ſtormy rage of paſſions darcke
(Of paſſions darke, made darke of beauties light)
Whith rebell force, hath cloſde in dungeon darke
My minde ere now led foorth by reaſons light:

Since all the thinges which giue mine eyes their light
Do foſter ſtill, the fruites of fancies darke:
So that the windowes of my inward light
Do ſerue, to make my inward powers darke:

Since, as I ſay, both minde and ſences darke
Are hurt, not helpt, with piercing of the light:
While that the light may ſhewe the horrors darke
But cannot make reſolued darkenes lighte:
I like this place, whereat the leaſt the darke
May keepe my thoughtes, from thought of wonted light.

In ſteede of an inſtrument, her ſong was accompanied with the wringing of her hands, the cloſing of her weary eyes, and euen ſometime cut off with the ſwellinge of hir ſighes, which did not ſuffer the voice to haue his free and natiue paſſage. But as ſhe was a while muſing vpon her ſonge, raiſing vp her ſpirites, which were ſomething falne into the weakenes of lamentation, conſidering ſolitary complaints do no good to him whoſe helpe ſtands with out himſelfe, ſhee might a far off, firſt heare a whiſpering ſounde which ſeemed to come from the inmoſt parte of the Caue, and being kept together with the cloſe hollownes of the place, had as in a Truncke the more liberall acceſſe to her eares, and by and by ſhe might perceaue the ſame voice, deliuer it ſelfe into muſicall tunes, and with a baſe Lyra giue foorth this ſonge:

HArke plaintfull ghoſtes, infernall furies harke
Vnto my woes the hateſull heauens do ſende,
The heauens conſpir'd, to make my vitall ſparke
A wreched wracke, a glaſſe of Ruines ende.

Seeing, Alas, ſo mightie powers bende
Their ireful ſhotte againſt ſo weake a marke,

Come

Come caue, become my graue, come death, and lende
Receipte to me, within thy boſome darke.

For what is life to daylie dieng minde,
Where drawing breath, I ſucke the aire of woe:
Where too much ſight, makes all the bodie blinde,
And higheſt thoughts, downeward moſt headlong throw.
Thus then my forme, and thus my ſtate I finde,
Death wrapt in fleſh, to liuing graue aſſign'd.

And pawſing but a little, with monefull melodie it continued this octaue:

Like thoſe ſicke folkes, in whome ſtrange humors flowe,
Can taſte no ſweetes, the ſower onely pleaſe:
So to my minde, while paſſions daylie growe,
Whoſe fyrie chaines, vppon his freedome feaze,
Ioies ſtrangers ſeeme, I cannot bide their ſhowe,
Nor brooke oughte els but well acquainted woe.
Bitter griefe taſtes me beſt paine is my eaſe,
Sicke to the death, ſtill louing my diſeaſe.

O *Venus*, ſaide *Zelmane*, who is this ſo well acquainted with mee, that can make ſo liuely a portracture of my miſeries? It is ſurely the ſpirit appointed to haue care of me, which doth now in this darke place beare parte with the complaints of his vnhappie charge. For if it be ſo, that the heauens haue at all times a meaſure of their wrathefull harmes, ſurely ſo many haue come to my bliſtleſſe lot, that the reſt of the world hath too ſmall a portion, to make with cauſe ſo wailefull a lamentation. But ſaide ſhe; whatſoeuer thou be, I will ſeeke thee out, for thy muſique well aſſures me wee are at leaſt-hand fellowe prentiſes to one vngracious maſter. So raiſe ſhee and went guiding her ſelfe, by the ſtill playning voice, till ſhe ſawe vppon a ſtone a little waxe light ſet, and vnder it a piece of paper with theſe verſes verie lately (as it ſhould ſeeme) written in it:

HOwe is my Sunn, whoſe beames are ſhining bright
Become the cauſe of my darke ouglie night?
Or howe do I captiu'd in this darke plight,
Bewaile the caſe, and in the cauſe delight?

My mangled mind huge horrors ſtill doe fright,
With ſenſe poſſeſt, and claim'd by reaſons right:
Betwixt which two in me I haue this fight,
Wher who ſo wynns, I put my ſelfe to flight.

Come clowdie feares cloſe vp my daſeled ſight,
Sorrowes ſuck vp the marowe of my might,
Due ſighes blowe out all ſparkes of ioyfull light,
Tyre on deſpaier vppon my tyred ſprite.

An ende, an ende, my dulde penn cannot write,
Nor maſ de head thinke, nor faltring tonge recite.

And hard vnderneath the ſonnet, were theſe wordes written:

This caue is darke, but it had neuer light.
This waxe doth waſte it ſelfe, yet paineleſſe dyes.
Theſe wordes are full of woes, yet feele they none.

I darkned am, who once had cleareſt ſight.
I waſte my harte, which ſtill newe torment tryes.
I plaine with cauſe, my woes are all myne owne,

No caue, no waſting waxe, no wordes of griefe,
Can holde, ſhew, tell, my paines without reliefe.

She did not long ſtay to reade the wordes, for not farre off from the ſtone ſhee might diſcerne in a darke corner, a Ladie lieng with her face ſo proſtrate vpon the ground, as ſhe could neither know, nor be knowen. But (as the generall nature of man is deſirous of knowledge, and ſorrow eſpecially glad to find fellowes,) ſhe went as ſoftely as ſhe could conuey her foot, neere vnto her, where ſhe heard theſe words come with vehement ſobbings from her. O darkenes (ſaide ſhee) which doeſt light ſomly (me thinks) make me ſee the picture of my inward darknes: ſince I haue choſen thee, to be the ſecret witneſſe of my ſorows, let me receiue a ſafe receipte in thee; and eſteeme them not tedious, but if it be poſſible, let the vttering them be ſome diſcharge to my ouerloaden breaſt. Alas ſorrowe, nowe thou haſt the full ſack of my conquered ſpirits, reſt thy ſelfe a while, and ſet not ſtil new fire to thy owne ſpoiles: O accurſed reaſon, how many eyes thou haſt to ſee thy euills, and thou dimme, nay blinde thou arte in preuenting them? Forlorne creature that I am! I would I might be freely wicked, ſince wickedneſſe doth preuaile, but the foote ſteppes of my ouertroden vertue, lie ſtill as bitter accuſations vnto me: I am deuided in my ſelfe, howe can I ſtande? I am ouerthrowne in my ſelfe, who ſhall raiſe mee? Vice is but a nurſe of new agonies, and the vertue I am diuorſed from, makes the hatefull compariſon the more manyfeſt. No, no vertue, either I neuer had but a ſhadow of thee, or thou thy ſelfe, art but a ſhadow. For how is my ſoule abandoned? How are all my powers laide waſte? My deſire is payned, becauſe it cannot hope, and if hope came, his beſt ſhoulde bee but miſchiefe. O ſtrange mixture of humaine mindes! onely ſo much good lefte, as to make vs languiſh in our owne euills. Yee infernall furies, (for it is too late for mee, to awake my dead vertue, or to place my comforte in the angrie Gods) yee infernall furies I ſay, aide one that dedicates her ſelfe vnto you, let my rage bee ſatiſfied, ſince the effecte of it is fit for your ſeruice. Neither bee afraide to make me too happie, ſince nothing can come to appeaſe the ſmart of my guiltie cõſcience. I deſire but to aſſwage the ſweltring of my helliſh longing, deiected *Gynecia*. *Zelmane*, no ſooner heard the name of *Gynecia*, but that with a colde ſweate all ouer her, as if ſhe had ben ready to treade vpon a deadly ſtinging Adder, ſhe would haue withdrawne her ſelfe, but her owne paſſion made her yeelde more vnquiet motions, then ſhe had done in comming. So that ſhe was perceaued, & *Gynecia* ſodainely

riſne

riſne vp, for in deed it was *Ginecia*, gotten into this Caue, (the ſame Caue, wherein *Dametas* had ſafelie kept *Pamela* in the late vprore) to paſſe her pangs, with change of places. And as her minde ranne ſtill vpon *Zelmane*, her piercing louers eye had ſoone found it was ſhe. And ſeeing in her a countenance to flye away, ſhe fell downe at her feete, and catching faſt hold of her: Alas, ſayd ſhe, whether, or from whome dooſt thou flye awaye? the ſauageſt beaſtes are wonne with ſeruice, and there is no flint but may be mollifyed: How is *Gynecia* ſo vnworthie in thine eyes? or whome cannot aboundance of loue, make worthie? O thinke not that crueltie, or vngratefulnes, can flowe from a good minde! O weigh, Alas! weigh with thy ſelfe, the newe effectes of this mightie paſſion, that I vnfit for my ſtate, vncomely for my ſexe, muſt become a ſuppliant at thy feete! By the happie woman that bare thee, by all the ioyes of thy hart, and ſucceſſe of thy deſire, I beſeech thee turne thy ſelfe to ſome conſideration of me; and rather ſhew pittie in now helping me, then into late repenting my death which hourely threatens me. *Zelmane* imputing it, to one of her continuall miſhaps, thus to haue met with this Lady, with a full weary countenance; Without doubt Madame, ſaid ſhe, where the deſire is ſuch, as may be obtained, and the partie well deſeruing as your ſelfe, it muſt be a great excuſe that may well cullour a deniall; but when the firſt motion carries with it a direct impoſſibilitie, then muſt the only anſwere be, comfort without helpe, and ſorrow to both parties; to you not obtaining to me not able to graunt. O ſayd *Gynecia*, how good leiſure you haue to frame theſe ſcornefull anſweres? Is *Ginecia* thus to be deſpiſed? am I ſo vile a worme in your ſight? no no, truſt to it hard harted tigre, I will not be the only Actor of this Tragedy: ſince I muſt fall, I will preſſe downe ſome others with my ruines: ſince I muſt burne, my ſpitefull neighbors ſhall feele of my fire. Dooſt thou not perceaue that my diligent eyes haue pierced through the clowdie maske of thy deſguiſemēt? Haue I not told thee, ô foole, (if I were not much more foole) that I know thou wouldeſt abuſe vs with thy outward ſhew? Wilt thou ſtill attend the rage of loue in a womans hart? the girle thy well choſen miſtreſſe, perchaunce ſhall defend thee, when *Baſilius* ſhal know how thou haſt ſotted his minde with falſehood, and falſely ſought the diſhonour of his houſe. Beleeue it, beleeue it vnkind creature, I will end my miſeries with a notable example of reuenge, and that accurſed cradle of mine ſhal feele the ſmart of my wound, thou of thy tiranny, and laſtly (I confeſſe) my ſelfe of mine owne work. *Zelmane* that had long before doubted her ſelfe to be diſcouered by her, and now plainely finding it, was as the prouerbe ſaith, like them that hold the wolfe by the eares, bitten while they hold, and ſlaine if they looſe. If ſhe held her off in theſe wonted termes, ſhe ſawe rage would make her loue worke the effects of hate; to graunt vnto her, her hart was ſo bounde vpon *Philoclea*, it had ben worſe then a thouſand deaths. Yet found ſhe it was neceſſarie for her, to come to a reſolution, for *Gynecias* ſore could bide no leaſure, and once diſcouered, beſides the dāger of *Philoclea*, her deſires ſhould be for euer vtterly ſtopped. She remēbred withall the words of *Baſilius*, how apt he was to leaue this life, & returne to his court, a great barre to her hopes. Laſtly ſhe conſidered *Dorus* enterpriſe, might bring ſome ſtrange alteration of this their well liked fellowſhip. So that encompaſſed with theſe inſtant difficulties, ſhe bent her ſpirits to thinke of a remedie, which might at once both ſaue her from them, and ſerue her to the accompliſhment of her only purſuite. Laſtly, ſhe determined thus, that there was no way but to yeeld to the violence of their deſires, ſince ſtriuing did the more chafe them.

And that following their owne current, at length of it ſelfe it would bring her to the other ſide of her burning deſires.

Now in the meane while the diuided *Dorus*, long diuided betwene loue and frendſhip, and now for his loue diuided frō his frend, though indeed without preiudice of frendſhips loyaltie, which doth neuer barre the minde from his free ſatisfaction: yet ſtill a cruell iudge ouer himſelfe, thought he was ſomewayes faultie, and applied his minde how to amend it, with a ſpeedie and behouefull returne. But then was his firſt ſtudie, how to get away, whereto already he had *Pamelas* conſent, confirmed and concluded vnder the name of *Mopſa* in her owne preſence, *Dorus* taking this way, that whatſoeuer he would haue of *Pamela* he would aske her, whether in ſuch a caſe it were not beſt for *Mopſa* ſo to behaue her ſelfe, in that ſort making *Mopſas* enuie, an inſtrument of that ſhe did enuie. So hauing paſſed ouer, his firſt and moſt feared difficultie, he buſied his ſpirites how to come to the harueſt of his deſires, whereof he had ſo faire a ſhew. And therevnto (hauing gotten leaue for ſome dayes of his maiſter *Dametas*, who now accompted him as his ſonne in lawe,) he romed round about the deſart, to finde ſome vnknowne way, that might bring him to the next Sea port, as much as might be out of all courſe of other paſſengers: which all very well ſucceeding him, and he hauing hired a Bark for his liues traffick, and prouided horſſes to carrie her thither, returned homeward, now come to the laſt point of his care, how to goe beyond the loathſome watchfulnes of theſe three vncomely companions, and therin did wiſely conſider, how they were to be taken with whom he had to deale, remembring that in the particularities of euery bodies mind & fortune, there are particuler aduantages, by which they are to be held. The muddy mind of *Dametas*, he found moſt eaſily ſturred with couetouſnes. The curſt miſcheuous hart of *Miſo*, moſt apt to be tickled with iealouſie, as whoſe rotten brain could think wel of no body. But yong miſtres *Mopſa*, who could open her eys vpon nothing, that did not all to bewonder her, he thought curioſitie the fitteſt bait for her. And firſt for *Dametas*, *Dorus* hauing imploid a whole days work, about a tenne mile off from the lodge (quite contrary way to that he ment to take with *Pamela*) in digging & opening the ground, vnder an auncient oke that ſtood there, in ſuch ſort as might longeſt hold *Dametas* greedy hopes, in ſome ſhewe of comfort, he came to his maſter, with a countenance mixt betwixt cherefulnes and haſte, and taking him by the right hand, as if he had a great matter of ſecrecie to reueale vnto him: Maſter ſaid he, I did neuer thinke that the gods had appointed my mind freely brought vp, to haue ſo longing a deſire to ſerue you, but that they minded therby to bring ſome extraordinary frute to one ſo beloued of them, as your honeſty makes me think you are. This bindes me euen in conſcience, to diſcloſe that which I perſwade my ſelf is alotted vnto you, that your fortune may be of equal ballance with your deſerts. He ſaid no further, becauſe he would let *Dametas* play vpon the bit a while, who not vnderſtanding what his words entended, yet well finding, they caried no euil news, was ſo much the more deſirous to know the matter, as he had free ſcope to imagin what meaſure of good hap himſelfe would. Therefore putting off his cap to him, which he had neuer done before, & aſſuring him he ſhould haue *Mopſa*, though ſhe had bene all made of cloath of gold, he beſought *Dorus* not to hold him long in hope, for that he found it a thing his hart was not able to beare. Maiſter, anſwered *Dorus*, you haue ſo ſatisfied me, with promiſing me the vttermoſt of my deſired bliſſe, that if my duty bound me not, I were in it ſufficiently rewarded. To you

therefore

therefore ſhall my good hap be conuerted, and the fruite of all my labor dedicated. Therewith he told him, how vnder an auncient oke, (the place he made him eaſily vnderſtand, by ſufficient marks he gaue vnto him) he had found digging but a little depth, ſcatteringly lying a great number of rich Medailles, and that percing further into the ground, he had met with a great ſtone, which by the hollow ſound it yeelded, ſeemed to be the couer of ſome greater vaut, and vpon it a boxe of Cypres, with the name of the valiant *Ariſtomenes* grauen vpon it: and that within the box, he found certaine verſes, which ſignified that ſome depth againe vnder that all his treaſures lay hidden, what time for the diſcord fell out in *Arcadia* he liued baniſhed. Therwith he gaue *Dametas* certaine Medailles of gold he had long kept about him, and asked him becauſe it was a thing much to be kept ſecret, and a matter one man in twenty houres might eaſily performe, whether he would haue him go and ſeeke the bottome of it, which he had refrained to do till he knew his mind, promiſing he would faithfully bring him what he ſound, or elſe that he himſelfe would do it, and be the firſt beholder of that comfortable ſpectacle. No man need doubt which part *Dametas* would chooſe, whoſe fancie had alredy deuoured all this great riches, and euen now began to grudge at a partenor, before he ſaw his owne ſhare. Therefore taking a ſtrong Iade, loaden with ſpades and mattocks, which he ment to bring back otherwiſe laden, he went in all ſpeed thetherward, taking leaue of no body, only deſiring *Dorus* he would looke wel to the Princes *Pamela*. Promiſing him mountaines of his owne labor, which neuertheleſſe he little ment to performe, like a foole not conſidering, that no man is to be moued with part, that neglects the whole. Thus away went *Dametas*, hauing alreadie made an image in his fancie, what Pallaces he would build, how ſumptuouſly he would fare, and among all other things imagined what money to employ in making coffers to keepe his money, his tenne mile ſeemed twiſe ſo many leagues, and yet contrarie to the nature of it, though it ſeemed long, it was not wearyſome. Many times he curſſed his horſes want of conſideration, that in ſo important a matter would make no greater ſpeede: many times he wiſhed himſelf the back of an Aſſe, to help to carrie away the new ſought riches, (an vnfortunate wiſher, for if he had aſwell wiſhed the head, it had bene graunted him.) At length being come to the tree, which he hoped ſhould beare ſo golden Akornes, downe went all his inſtruments, and forthwith to the renting vp of the hurtleſſe earth, where by and by he was caught with the lime of a fewe promiſed Medailles, which was ſo perfect a pawne vnto him of his further expectation, that he deemed a great number of howers well employed in groping further into it, which with loggs and great ſtones was made as cumberſome as might be, till at length with ſweatie browes he came to the great ſtone. A ſtone, God knowes, full vnlike to the couer of a Monument, but yet there was the Cipres box with *Ariſtomenes* grauen vpon it, and theſe verſes written in it.

A Baniſht man, long bard from his deſire
By inward letts, of them his ſtate poſſeſt,
Hid heere his hopes, by which he might aſpire
To haue his harmes with wiſdomes helpe redreſt.

Seeke then and ſee, what man eſteemeth beſt,
All is but this, this is our labours hire,

Of this we liue, in this wee finde our reſt,
Who hold this faſt no greater wealth require.
Looke further then, ſo ſhalt thou finde at leaſt,
A baite moſt fit, for hungrie minded gueſt.

He opened the box, and to his great comfort read them, and with freſh courage went about to lift vp that ſtone. But in the meane time, ere *Damætas* was halfe a mile gone to the treaſure warde, *Dorus* came to *Miſo*, whom he found ſitting in the chimneys ende, babling to her ſelfe, and ſhewing me all her geſtures that ſhe was loathſomly weary of the worlde, not for any hope of a better life, but finding no one, good neyther in minde nor body, where-out ſhe might nouriſh a quiet thought, hauing long ſince hated each thing elſe, began now to hate her ſelfe. Before this ſweete humour'd Dame, *Dorus* ſet himſelfe, and framed towardes her, ſuch a ſmiling countenance, as might ſeeme to be mixt betwene a tickled mirth, and a forced pittie. *Miſo*, to whome cheerefulnes in others, was euer a ſauce of enuie in her ſelfe, tooke quicklie marke of his behauiour, and with a looke full of foreworne ſpite: Now the Deuill, ſayd ſhe, take theſe villaynes, that can neuer leaue grenning, becauſe I am not ſo fayre as miſtreſſe *Mopſa*, to ſee how this skip-iacke lookes at me. *Dorus* that had the occaſion he deſired, Truly miſtreſſe aunſwered he, my ſmiling is not at you, but at them that are from you, and in deede I muſt needes alittle accord my countenance with other ſport. And therewithall tooke her in his armes, and rocking her too and fro, In faith miſtreſſe, ſayd he, it is high time for you, to bid vs good-night for euer, ſince others can poſſeſſe your place in your owne time. *Miſo* that was neuer voide of mallice enough to ſuſpect the vttermoſt euill, to ſatisfye a further ſhrewdnes, tooke on a preſent mildnes, and gentlie deſired him, to tell her what he meant, for, ſaid ſhe, I am like enough to be knauiſhly dealt with, by that churle my husband. *Dorus* fell off from the matter againe, as if he had meant no ſuch thing, till by much refuſing her intreatie, and vehemently ſtirring vp her deſire to knowe, he had ſtrengthned a credit in her to that he ſhould ſaye. And then with a formall countenance, as if the conſcience of the caſe had touched himſelfe: Miſtreſſe, ſayd he, I am much perplexed in my owne determination, for my thoughts do euer will me to do honeſtlie, but my iudgement fayles me what is honeſt: betwixt the generall rule, that entruſted ſecreacies are holilie to be obſerued, and the particuler exception that the diſhoneſt ſecreacies are to be reuealed: eſpecially there, where by reuealing they may eyther be preuented, or at leaſt amended. Yet in this ballance, your iudgement wayes me downe, becauſe I haue confidence in it, that you will vſe what you know moderately, and rather take ſuch faults as an aduantage to your owne good deſert, then by your bitter vſing it, be contented to be reuenged on others with your own harmes. So it is miſtreſſe ſaid he, that yeſterday driuing my ſheepe vp to the ſtately hill, which lifts his head ouer the faire Citie of *Mantinea*, I hapned vpon the ſide of it, in a little falling of the ground which was a rampier againſt the Sunnes rage, to perceaue a yong maid, truly of the fineſt ſtamp of beawtie, & that which made her bewtie the more admirable, there was at all no arte added to the helping of it. For her apparell was but ſuch as Shepheards daughters are wont to weare: and as for her haire, it hoong downe at the free libertie of his goodly length, but that ſometimes falling before the cleare ſtarres of her ſight, ſhe was forced to put it behinde

her

her eares, and ſo open againe the treaſure of her perfections, which that for a while had in part hidden. In her lap there lay a Shepheard, ſo wrapped vp in that well liked place, that I could diſcerne no piece of his face, but as mine eyes were attent in that, her Angellike voice ſtrake mine eares with this ſong:

MY true loue hath my hart, and I haue his,
By iuſt exchange, one for the other giu'ne.
I holde his deare, and myne he cannot miſſe:
There neuer was a better bargaine driu'ne.

His hart in me, keepes me and him in one,
My hart in him, his thoughtes and ſenſes guides:
He loues my hart, for once it was his owne:
I cherish his, becauſe in me it bides.

His hart his wound receaued from my ſight:
My hart was wounded, with his wounded hart,
For as from me, on him his hurt did light,
So ſtill me thought in me his hurt did ſmart:
Both equall hurt, in this change ſought our bliſſe:
My true loue hath my hart and I haue his.

But as if the Shepheard that lay before her, had bene organes, which were only to be blowen by her breath, ſhe had no ſooner ended with the ioyning her ſweete lips together, but that he recorded to her muſick this rurall poeſie:

O Words which fall like ſommer deaw on me,
O breath more ſweete, then is the growing beane,
O toong in which, all honyed likoures bee,
O voice that doth, the Thruſh in ſhrilnes ſtaine,
Do you ſay ſtill, this is her promiſe due,
That ſhe is myne, as I to her am true.

Gay haire more gaie then ſtraw when haruеſt lyes,
Lips red and plum, as cherries ruddy ſide,
Eyes faire and great, like faire great oxes eyes,
O breſt in which two white ſheepe ſwell in pride:
Ioyne you with me, to ſeale this promiſe due,
That ſhe be myne, as I to her am true.

But thou white skinne, as white as cruddes well preſt,
So ſmooth as ſleekeſtone-like, it ſmoothes each parte,
And thou deare fleſh, as ſoft as wooll new dreſt,
And yet as hard, as brawne made hard by arte:
Firſt fower but ſay, next fowr their ſaying ſeale,
But you muſt pay, the gage of promiſt weale.

And with the concluſion of his ſong, he embraced her about the knees, O ſweet *Charita* ſaid he, when ſhall I enioy the reſt of my toyling thoughts? And when ſhall

your bliſſfull promiſe now due,be verified with iuſt performance? with that I drew neerer to them, and ſaw (for now he had lifted vp his face to glaſſe himſelfe in her faire eyes) that it was my maſter *Dametas*, but here *Miſo* interrupted his tale, with rayling at *Dametas*, with all thoſe exquiſite termes, which I was neuer good skolde inough to imagine. But *Dorus*,as if he had ben much offended with her impaciẽce, would proceed no further till ſhe had vowed more ſtillnes. For ſaid he, if the firſt drumme thus chafe you, what will you be when it commes to the blowes? Then he told her,how after many familiar entertainments betwixt them, *Dametas*, laying before her,his great credit with the Duke,and withall giuing her very faire preſents, with promiſe of much more, had in the ende concluded together to meete as that night at *Mantinea*, in the *Oudemian* ſtreete, at *Charitas* vncles houſe, about tenne of the clocke. After which bargaine *Dametas* had ſpied *Dorus*, and calling him to him, had with great brauery told him all his good happe, willing him in any caſe to returne to the olde witch *Miſo* (for ſo in deede miſtreſſe of liuelineſſe, and not of ill will he termed you) and to make ſome honeſt excuſe of his abſence, for ſayde he, kiſſing *Charita*, if thou didſt know what a life I lead with that driuell, it would make thee euen of pittie, receaue me into thy only comfort. Now Miſtreſſe ſayde he, exerciſe your diſcretion, which if I were well aſſured of, I would wiſh you to goe your ſelfe to *Mantinea*, and (lying ſecrete in ſome one of youre goſſypps houſes, till the time appoynted come) ſo may you finde them together, and vſing mercie, reforme my Maiſter from his euill wayes. There had nothing more enraged *Miſo*, then the prayſes *Dorus* gaue to *Charitas* bewtie, which made her iealouſie ſwell the more, with the poyſon of enuye. And that being increaſed with the preſents ſhe heard *Dametas* had giuen her (which all ſeemed torne out of her bowells) her hollow eyes, yeelded ſuch wretched lookes, as one might well thinke *Pluto* at that time, might haue had her ſoule very good cheape. But when the fire of ſpite had fully caught hold of all her inward partes, then whoſoeuer would haue ſeene the picture of *Alecto*, or with what maner of countenance *Medea* kild her owne children, needed but take *Miſo* for the full ſatisfaction of that point of his knowledge. She that could before ſcarce go,but ſupported by crutches, now flew about the houſe, borne vp with the wings of Anger, there was no one ſort of mortall reuenge, that had euer come to her eares, but preſented it ſelfe nowe to her gentle minde. At length with few words, for her words were choakt vp with the riſing of her reuengefull hart, ſhe ran downe, and with her own hands ſadled a mare of hers,a mare that 7. yeare before had not bene acquainted with a ſadle, & ſo to *Mantinea* ſhe went, caſting with her ſelfe, how ſhe might couple ſhame with the puniſhmẽt of her accurſed husband: but the perſon is not worthie in whoſe paſſion I ſhould too long ſtand. Therefore now muſt I tell you that Miſtreſſe *Mopſa* (who was the laſt party *Dorus* was to practiſe his cunning withal) was at the parting of her parents, attending vpon the Princes *Pamela*, whom becauſe ſhe found to be placed in her fathers houſe, ſhe knew it was for ſuſpicion the Duke had of her. This made *Mopſa* with a right baſe nature (which ioyes to ſee anie hard hap happen to them, they deeme happie) grow prowd ouer her, & vſe great oſtentation of her own diligẽce,in prying curiouſly into each thing that *Pamela* did. Neither is there any thing ſooner ouerthrows a weak hart,then opiniõ of authority, like too ſtrong a liquor for ſo feebl a glaſſe, which ioined it ſelf to the humor of enuying *Pamelas* beauty,ſo far, that oft ſhe would ſay to her ſelf, if ſhe had ben borne a Ducheſſe as well as *Pamela*,

her

her perfections then ſhould haue beene as well ſeene as *Pamelas*, with this manner of woman, and placed in theſe termes, had *Dorus* to play his laſt parte, which hee would quickly haue diſpatched in tying her vp in ſuch a maner, that ſhe ſhould litle haue hindred his enterpriſe. But that the vertuous *Pamela*, (whē ſhe ſaw him ſo minded,) by countenaunce abſolutlie forbad it, reſolutely determining, ſhe would not leaue behinde her any token of wrong ſince the wrong done to her ſelfe was the beſt excuſe of her eſcape. So that *Dorus* was compelled to take her in the maner hee firſt thought of, and accordingly *Pamela* ſitting muſing at the ſtrange attempt ſhee had condiſcended vnto, and *Mopſa* harde by her, (looking in a glaſſe with very partiall eyes) *Dorus* put himſelfe between them, and caſting vp his face to the top of the houſe, ſhrugging all ouer his bodie, and ſtamping ſomtimes vpon the ground, gaue *Mopſa* occaſion (who was as buſie as a Bee to know any thing) to aske her louer *Dorus* what ayled him, that made him vſe ſo ſtrange a behauiour, he, as if his ſpirits had beene rauiſhed with ſome ſupernaturall contemplation, ſtoode ſtill muett, ſomtimes rubbing his forehead, ſometime ſtarting in him ſelfe, that hee ſet *Mopſa* in ſuch an itche of inquirie, that ſhe would haue offred her maydenhead, rather then belonge kept from it. *Dorus* not yet aunſwearing to the purpoſe, ſtill keeping his amazement. O *Hercules*, ſaide he, reſolue me in this doubt. A tree to graunt ones wiſhes? Is this the cauſe of the Kinges ſolitarie life? Which parte ſhall I take? Happie in either, vnhappie becauſe I cannot know which were my beſt happ. Theſe doubtful ſelfe-ſpeches, made *Mopſa* yet in a further longing of knowing the matter, ſo that the prettie pigge, laying her ſweete burden about his neck, my *Dorus*, ſaide ſhe, tell mee theſe words, or els I know not what will befal mee, honny *Dorus* tell them me. *Dorus* hauing ſtretched her minde vpon a right laſte, extremely loued *Mopſa*, ſaide hee, the matters be ſo great, as my harte failes me in the telling them, but ſince you holde the greateſt ſeate in it, it is reaſon your deſire ſhould adde life vnto it. Ther with he told her a farre fet tale how that many millions of yeares before, *Iupiter* fallen out with *Apollo* had throwne him out of heauen, taking from him the priueledge of a God. So that poore *Apollo* was faine to leade a verie miſerable life, vnacquainted to worke and neuer vſed to begge, that in this order hauing in time learned to bee *Admetus* heardman, he had vpon occaſion of fetching a certaine breed of beaſtes out of *Arcadia*, come to that verie deſerte, where wearied with trauaile, and reſting himſelfe in the boughes of a pleaſaunt Aſhe tree, ſtoode little of from the lodge, hee had with pittifull complaintes gotten his father *Iupiters* pardon, and ſo from that tree was receaued againe to his golden ſpheare. But hauing that right nature of a God, neuer to be vngratefull, to *Admetus* hee had graunted a double life, and becauſe that tree was the chappel of his proſperous prayers, he had giuen it this equality, that whatſoeuer of ſuch eſtate, and in ſuch maner as he then was, ſate downe in that tree, they ſhould obtaine whatſoeuer they wiſhed. This *Baſilius* hauing vnderſtoode by the oracle, was the onely cauſe which had made him trie, whether framing himſelfe to the ſtate of an heardman, he might haue the preuiledge of wiſhing onely graunted to that degree, but that hauing often in vaine attempted it, becauſe indeede hee was not ſuch, he had now opened the ſecret to *Dametas*, making him ſweare hee ſhould wiſh according to his direction. But becauſe ſaid *Dorus*, *Apollo* was at that time with extreme griefe muffled, round aboute his face, with a skarlet cloake, *Admetus* had giuen him, and becauſe they that muſt wiſh muſt be muffled in like ſorte, and with like ſtuffe, my maſter *Dametas* is gone I know not whither to prouide him

a ſkarlet cloake, and to morrow doth appointe to returne with it, my Miſtreſſe I cannot tell how, hauing gotten ſome inckling of it, is trudged to *Mantinea* to get her ſelfe a cloake before him: becauſe ſhe woulde haue the firſt wiſhe. My maſter at his parting of great truſt tould me this ſecret, commaunding me to ſee no bodie ſhould clime that tree. But now my *Mopſa*, ſaid he, I haue here the like cloake of mine owne and am not ſo verie a foole as though I keep his commaundement in others to barre my ſelfe, I reſt onely extreemely perplexed, becauſe hauing nothing in the worlde I wiſh for, but the enioying you & your fauour, I think it a much pleaſanter conqueſt to come to it by your owne conſent, then to haue it by ſuch a charming force, as this is. Now therefore chooſe ſince haue you I will, in what ſorte I ſhall haue you. But neuer child was ſo deſirons of a gay puppet, as *Mopſa* was to be in the tree, and therefore without ſqueamiſhnes, promiſing all he woulde, ſhee coniured him by all her precious Loues, that ſhe might haue the firſt poſſeſſion of the wiſhing tree, aſſuring him that for the enioying her he ſhould neuer neede to clime farre. *Dorus* to whom time was precious, made no great ceremonies with her, but helping her vp to the top of the tree, from whence likewiſe ſhe could ill come downe without helpe, he muffled her round about the face, ſo truely that ſhe her ſelfe could not vndoe it. And ſo he tolde her the manner was, ſhe ſhould hold her mind in continuall deuotion to *Apollo*, without making at al any noyſe, till at the fartheſt within twelue howers ſpace, ſhe ſhould heare a voice call her by name three times, & that till the thirde time ſhee muſt in no wiſe aunſwere; & then you ſhall not need to doubt your cõming down, for at that time ſaid he, be ſure to wiſh wiſely, & in what ſhape ſoeuer he come vnto you ſpeake boldly vnto him, and your wiſh ſhall haue as certaine effecte, as I haue a deſire to enioy your ſweet Loues, in this plight did hee leaue *Mopſa*, reſolued in her hart, to be the greateſt Lady of the world, & neuer after to feede of worſe then furmentie. Thus *Dorus* hauing deliuered his hands of his three tormentors, took ſpeedely the benefit of his deuiſe, and mounting the gracious *Pamela* vpon a faire horſe he had prouided for her he thruſt himſelfe forthwith into the wildeſt part of the deſarte, where he had left markes to guide him, frõ place to place to the next ſea porte, diſguiſing her very fitly with ſcarfes although he reſted aſſured, he ſhould meet that way with no body, till he came to his barck, into which hee ment to enter by night. But *Pamela* who al this while, tranſported with deſire & troubled with feare had neuer free ſcope of iudgemẽt to look with perfect conſideratiõ into her own enterpriſe but euẽ by the lawes of loue, had bequeathed the care of her ſelf vpõ him to whom ſhe had geuẽ her ſelf. Now that the pang of deſire with euident hope was quieted, & moſt part of the feare paſſed, reaſon began to renew his ſhining in her hart, & make her ſee her ſelf in her ſelfe; & weigh with what wings ſhe flew out of her natiue contry; and vpon what ground ſhe builte ſo ſtrange a determinaciõ. But loue fortified with her louers preſence kept ſtill his own in her hart. So that as they ridde together with her hand vpon her faithfull ſeruants ſhoulder, ſodainly caſting her baſhfull eies to the ground, and yet bending her ſelf towards him, (like the clyent that committes the cauſe of all his worth to a well truſted aduocate,) frõ a milde ſpirit ſaide vnto him theſe ſweetely deliuered wordes: Prince *Muſidorus*, (for ſo my aſſured hope is I may iuſtlie call you, ſince with no other my harte woulde euer haue yeelded to goe; And if ſo I doe not rightlie tearme you, all other wordes are as booteleſſe, as my deede miſerable and I as vnfortunate, as you wicked) my Prince *Muſidorus* I ſaye nowe that the vehement ſhewes of your faithfull Loue towardes mee, haue

brought

brought my minde to anſweare it, in ſo due a proportion, that contrarie to all generall rules of reaſon, I haue layde in you, my eſtate, my life, my honour: it is your part to double your former care, and make me ſee your vertue no leſſe in preſeruing then in obtaining: and your faith to bee a faith aſmuch in freedome, as bondage. Tender now your owne workemanſhippe; and ſo gouerne your loue to wardes me as I may ſtill remaine worthie to bee loued. Your promiſe you Remember, which here by the eternall giuers of vertue, I coniure you to obſerue, let me be your owne as I am, but by no vniuſt conqueſt; let not our ioyes which ought euer to laſt, bee ſtayned in our own conſciences, let no ſhadow of repentaunce ſteale into the ſweet conſideration of our mutuall happines. I haue yeelded to bee your wife, ſtaye then till the time that I may rightly bee ſo; let no other defiled name burden my harte. What ſhoulde I more ſaye? If I haue choſen well, all doubte is paſt, ſince your action onely muſt determine, whether I haue done vertuouſly or ſhamefully in following you. *Muſidorus* that had more aboundaunce of ioye in his hart, then *Vliſſes* had what time with his owne induſtrie he ſtale the fatall *Palladium*, imagined to bee the only relicke of *Troies* ſafetie, taking *Pamelas* hand, and many times kiſſing it. What I am ſaid he, the Gods I hope will ſhortly make your owne eyes Iudges; and of my minde towards you, the meane time ſhalbe my pledge vnto you your contentment is dearer to me then mine owne, & therfore doubt not of his mind, whoſe thoughts are ſo thralled vnto you, as you are to bend or ſlack them as it ſhall ſeeme beſt vnto you. You do wrong to your ſelfe, to make any doubte that a baſe eſtate could euer vndertake ſo high an enterpriſe; or a ſpotted minde bee hable to beholde your vertues. Thus much onely I muſt confeſſe, I can neuer doe, to make the worlde ſee you haue choſen worthily, ſince all the world is not worthy of you. In ſuch delightfull diſcourſes, kept they on their Iourney, maynteining their hartes in that right harmonie of affection, which doth enterchangeably deliuer each to other the ſecret workinges of their ſoules, till with the vnuſed trauaile, the Princeſſe being weary, they lighted downe in a faire thyckwood, which did entiſe them with the pleaſantnes of it to take their reſt there. It was all of Pine trees, whoſe brodeheades meeting togither, yeelded a perfit ſhade to the ground, where their bodies gaue a ſpacious and pleaſant roome to walke in, they were ſett in ſo perfet an order, that euerie waye the eye being full, yet no way was ſtopped. And euen in the middeſt of them, were there many ſweete ſpringes, which did looſe themſelues vpon the face of the earth. Here *Muſidorus* drew out ſuch prouiſion of fruites, & other cates, as he had brought for that dayes repaſte, and laydeit downe vpon the faire Carpet of the greene graſſe. But *Pamela* had much more pleaſure to walke vnder thoſe trees, making in their barkes prettie knottes, which tyed togither the names of *Muſidorus* and *Pamela*, ſometimes entermixedly changing there, to *Pammedorus* and *Muſimela*, with twentie other flowers of her trauiling fancies, which had bounde them ſelues to a greater reſtrainte, then they could without much paine well endure, and to one tree more beholdinge to her, then the reſt ſhe entruſted the treaſure of her thoughtes in theſe verſes:

DO not diſdaine, ô ſtreight vpraiſed Pine
That wounding thee, my thoughtes in thee I graue:
Since that my thoughtes, as ſtreight as ſtreightnes thine
No ſmaller wound, alas! farr deeper haue.

Deeper

Deeper engrau'd, which ſalue nor time can ſaue,
Giu'ne to my harte, by my ſore wounded eyne:
Thus cruell to my ſelfe how canſt thou craue
My inward hurte ſhould ſpare thy outward rine?

Yet ſtill faire tree, liſte vp thy ſtately line,
Liue long, and long witneſſe my choſen ſmarte,
Which barde deſires, (barde by my ſelfe) imparte

And in this growing barke growe verſes myne.
My harte my worde, my worde hath giu'ne my harte.
The giuer giu'n from giſte ſhall neuer parte.

Vpon a roote of the tree, that the earth had lefte ſomething barer then the reſt, ſhe wrat this couplet:

SWeete roote ſay thou, the roote of my deſire
Was vertue cladde in conſtant loues attire.

Muſidorus, ſeing her fancies drawne vp to ſuch pleaſaunt contemplations, accompanied her in them, and made the trees aſweil beare the badges of his paſſions: As this ſonge engraued in them did teſtifie:

YOu goodly pines, which ſtill with braue aſſent
In natures pride your heads to heau'nwarde heaue,
Though you beſides ſuch graces earth hath lent,
Of ſome late grace a greater grace receaue,

By her who was (O bleſſed you) content,
With her faire hande, your tender barkes to cleaue,
And ſo by you (O bleſſed you) hath ſent,
Such pearcing wordes as no thoughts els conceaue:

Yet yeeld your graunt, a baſer hand may leaue
His thoughtes in you, where ſo ſweete thoughtes were ſpent,
For how would you the miſtreſſe thoughts bereaue
Of waiting thoughts all to her ſeruice ment?

Nay higher thoughtes (though thralled thoughtes) I call
My thoughtes then hers, who firſt your ryne did rente.
Then hers, to whom my thoughts a lonely thrall
Ryſing from lowe, are to the higheſt bente;
Where hers, whom worth makes higheſt ouer all
Comming from her, cannot but downewarde fall.

While *Pamela* ſitting her downe vnder one of them, and making a poſie of the fayer vndergrowinge flowers, filled *Muſidorus* eares with the heauenly ſounde of her

of her muſicke, which before he had neuer heard, ſo that it ſeemed vnto him a new aſſaulte giuen to the caſtle of his hart, alredye conquered, which to ſignifie and with all replie to her ſweete noates, hee ſang in a kinde of ſtill, but rauiſhing tune a fewe verſes, her ſong was this, and his Replie followes:

Pamela. *Like diuers flowers, whoſe diuers beauties ſerue*
To decke the earth with his well-colourde weede,
Though each of them, his priuate forme preſerue,
Yet ioyning formes one ſight of beautie breede.

Right ſo my thoughts, where on my hart I feede:
Right ſo my inwarde partes, and outward glaſſe,
Though each poſſeſſe a diuers working kinde,
Yet all well knit to one faire end do paſſe:
That he to whome, theſe ſondrie giftes I binde
All what I am, ſtill one, his owne, doe finde.

Muſidorus. *All what you are ſtill one, his owne to finde,*
You that are borne to be the worldes eye,
What were it els, but to make each thing blinde?
And to the ſunne with waxen winges to flie?

No no, ſuch force with my ſmall force to trye
Is not my skill, or reach of mortall minde.
Call me but yours, my title is moſt hye:
Holde me moſt yours, then my longe ſuite is ſignde.

You none can clayme but you your ſelfe aright,
For you do paſſe your ſelfe, in vertues might.
So both are yours: I, bound with gaged harte:
You onely yours, too farr beyond deſarte.

In this vertuous wantonnes, ſuffering their mindes to deſcend to each tender enioying their vnited thoughts, *Pamela*, hauing taſted of the fruites, and growinge extreame ſleepie, hauing ben long kept from it, with the perplexitie of her dangerous attempte, laying her head in his lappe, was inuited by him to ſleepe with theſe ſoftly vttered verſes:

Locke vp, faire liddes, the treaſure of my harte:
Preſerue thoſe beames, this ages onely lighte:
To her ſweete ſence, ſweete ſleepe ſome eaſe imparte,
Her ſence too weake to beare her ſpirits mighte.

And while ô ſleepe thou cloſeſt vp her ſight,
(Her ſight where loue did forge his fayreſt darte)
ô harbour all her partes in eaſefull plighte:
Let no ſtrange dreme make her fayre body ſtarte.

But

But yet ô dreame, if thou wilt not departe
In this rare ſubiect from the common right:
But wilt thy ſelfe in ſuch a ſeate delighte,

Then take my ſhape, and play a louers parte:
Kiſſe her from me, and ſay vnto her ſpirite,
Till her eyes ſhine, I liue in darkeſt night.

The ſweete *Pamela*, was brought into a ſweete ſleepe with this ſonge which gaue *Muſidorus* opportunity at leaſure to beholde her excellent beauties. He thought her faire forehead was a fielde where all his fancies fought; and euery haire of her heade ſemed a ſtrong chain thattied him. Her fairer liddes then hiding her fairer eyes, ſeemed vnto him ſweete boxes of mother of pearle, riche in themſelues, but contaning in them farre richer Iewells. Her cheekes with their coullour moſt delicately mixed would haue entertained his eyes ſomewhile, but that the roſes of her lippes (whoſe ſeparating was wont to bee accompanied with moſt wiſe ſpeeches) nowe by force drewe his ſight to marke how preatily they lay one ouer the other, vniting their deuided beauties: and thorough them the eye of his fancy deliuered to his memorie the lying (as in ambuſh) vnder her lippes of thoſe armed rankes, all armed in moſt pure white, and keeping the moſt preciſe order of military diſcipline. And leſt this beautie might ſeeme the picture of ſome excellent artificer, fourth there ſtale a ſofte breath, carying good teſtimony of her inward ſweetneſſe: and ſo ſtealingly it came out, as it ſeemed loath to leaue his contentfull manſion, but that it hoped to bee drawne in againe to that well cloaſed paradiſe, which did ſo tyrannize ouer *Muſidorus* affectes that hee was compelled to put his face as lowe to hers, as hee coulde, ſucking the breath with ſuch ioye, that he did determine in himſelfe, there had ben no life to a *Camæleons* if he might be ſuffered to enioye that foode. But long hee was not ſuffered being within a while interrupted by the comming of a company of clowniſh vilaines, armed with diuers ſortes of weapons, and for the reſt both in face and apparell ſo forewaſted that they ſeemed to beare a great conformity with the ſauages; who miſerable in themſelues, taught to encreaſe their miſchiefes in other bodies harmes, came with ſuch cries as they both awaked *Pamela*, and made *Muſidorus* turne vnto them full of a moſt violent rage, with the looke of a ſhee *Tigree*, when her whelpes are ſtolne away.

But *Zelmane* whome I left in the Caue hardly beſtead, hauing both great wittes and ſturring paſſions to deale with, makes me lend her my penne a while to ſee with what dexteritie ſhe could put by her daungers. For hauing in one inſtant both to reſiſt rage and goe beyond wiſedome, being to deale with a Ladie that had her witts awake in euery thing, but in helping her owne hurte, ſhe ſaw now no other remedy in her caſe, but to qualifie her rage with hope, and to ſatiſfie her witt with plaineſſe. Yet leſt to abrupt falling into it, ſhoulde yeelde too great aduantage vnto her, ſhee thought good to come to it by degrees with this kind of inſinuation. Your wiſe, but very darke ſpeeches, moſt excellent Lady, are wouen vp in ſo intricate a maner, as I know not how to proportiõ mine anſwere vnto thẽ: ſo are your prayers mixte with threates, and ſo is the ſhew of your loue hidden with the name of reuenge, the naturall effect of mortal hatred. You ſeeme diſpleaſed with the opinion you haue of my diſguiſing, and yet if bee not diſguiſed, you muſt needes be much more diſpleaſed.

Hope

Hope then (the only ſuccour of perplexed mindes) being quite cut off, you deſire my affection, and yet you your ſelfe thinke my affection already beſtowed. You pretend crueltie, before you haue the ſubiection, and are iealous of keeping that, which as yet you haue not gotten. And that which is ſtrangeſt in your iealouſie, is both the vniuſtice of it, in being loath that ſhould come to your daughter, which you deeme good, and the vaynneſſe, ſince you two are in ſo diuers reſpects, that there is no neceſſitie one of you ſhould fall to be a barre to the other. For neyther (if I be ſuch as you fancie) can I mary you, which muſt needes be the only ende I can aſpire to in her: neither neede the maryeng of her keepe me from a gratefull conſideracion how much you honor me in the loue you vouchſafe to beare me. *Gynecia*, to whome the fearefull agonies ſhe ſtill liued in made any ſmall repriuall ſweete, did quickly finde her words falling to a better way of comfort, and therefore with a minde readie to ſhewe nothing could make it rebellious againſt *Zelmane*, but to extreme tyrannie, ſhe thus ſayd: Alas too much beloued *Zelmane*, the thoughts are but outflowings of the minde, and the tongue is but a ſeruant of the thoughtes, therefore maruaile not that my words ſuffer contrarieties, ſince my minde doth hourely ſuffer in it ſelfe whole armyes of mortall aduerſaries. But, alas, if I had the vſe of mine owne reaſon, then ſhould I not neede, for want of it, to finde my ſelfe in this deſperate miſchiefe, but becauſe my reaſon is vaniſhed, ſo haue I likewiſe no power to correct my vnreaſonablenes. Do you therefore accept the protection of my minde, which hath no other reſting place, and driue it not, by being vnregarded to put it ſelfe into vnknowne extremities. I deſire but to haue my affection anſwered, and to haue a right reflection of my loue in you. That graunted, aſſure your ſelfe mine owne loue will eaſily teach me to ſeeke your contentment: and make me thinke my daughter a very meane price to keepe ſtill in mine eyes the foode of my ſpirits. But take heede that contempt driue me not into deſpaire, the moſt violent cauſe of that miſerable effect. *Zelmane* that alreadie ſawe ſome fruite of her laſt determined fancie (ſo farre as came to a mollifyeng of *Gynecias* rage) ſeeing no other way to ſatisfye ſuſpicion, which was held open with the continuall prickes of loue, reſolued now with plainneſſe to winne truſt, which truſt ſhe might after deceyue with a greater ſubtletie. Therefore looking vpon her with a more relenting grace, then euer ſhe had done before, pretending a great baſhfulnes before ſhe could come to confeſſe ſuch a fault, ſhe thus ſayde vnto her: Moſt worthye Ladye, I did neuer thinke, till now, that pittie of another coulde make me betray my ſelfe, nor that the ſounde of wordes could ouerthrow any wiſe bodies determinacion. But your words (I thinke) haue charmed me, and your grace bewitched me. Your compaſſion makes me open my hart to you, and leaue vnharboured mine owne thoughts. For proofe of it, I will diſcloſe my greateſt ſecreate, which well you might ſuſpect, but neuer knowe, and ſo haue your wandring hope in a more painefull wilderneſſe, being neither way able to be lodged in a perfect reſolucion. I will, I ſay, vnwrappe my hidden eſtate, and after make you iudge of it, perchance director. The truth is, I am a man: nay, I will ſay further to you, I am borne a Prince. And to make vp youre minde in a through vnderſtanding of mee, ſince I came to this place, I may not denye I haue had ſome ſprinkling of I knowe not what good liking to my Lady *Philoclea*. For howe coulde I euer imagine, the heauens woulde haue rayned downe ſo much of your fauour vpon me? and of that ſide there was a ſhewe of poſſible hope, the moſt comfortable

Counſellor of loue. The cauſe of this my chaunged attyre, was a iourney two yeares agoe I made among the *Amazons*, where hauing ſought to trye my vnfortunate valure, I met not one in all the Countrey but was too harde for me, till in the ende in the preſence of their Queene *Marpeſia*, I hoping to preuayle agaynſt her, challenged an olde woman of foureſcore yeares, to fight on horſſebacke to the vttermoſt with me. Who hauing ouerthrowne me, for the ſauing of my life, made me ſweare I ſhould goe like an vnarmed *Amazon*, till the comming of my beard did, with the diſcharge of my oath, deliuer me of that bondage. Here *Zelmane* ended, not comming to a full concluſion, becauſe ſhe would ſee what it wrought in *Gynecias* minde, hauing in her ſpeech ſought to winne a beliefe of her, and, if it might be, by diſgrace of her ſelfe to diminiſh *Gynecias* affection. For the firſt it had much preuailed. But *Gynecia* whoſe ende of louing her, was not her fighting, neyther could her loue too deepely grounded receiue diminiſhment; and beſides ſhe had ſeene her ſelfe, ſufficient proofes of *Zelmanes* admirable proweſſe. Therefore ſleightly paſſing ouer that poynt of her fayned diſhonor, but taking good hold of the confeſſing her manly ſexe, with the ſhamefaſte looke of that ſuitor, who hauing already obtayned much, is yet forced by want to demaunde more, put foorth her ſorrowfull ſuite in theſe words: The gods, ſayd ſhe, rewarde thee for thy vertuouſe pittie of my ouerladen ſoule, who yet hath receyued ſome breath of comfort, by finding thy confeſſion to maintayne ſome poſſibilitie of my languiſhing hope. But alas! as they who ſeeke to enrich themſelues by minerall induſtrie, the firſt labour is to finde the myne, which to their cheerefull comfort being founde, if after any vnlookedfor ſtop, or caſuall impediment keepe them from getting the deſired vre, they are ſo much the more greeued, as the late conceaued hope addes torment to their former wante. So falles it out with mee (happie or happleſſe woman as it pleaſeth you to ordayne) who am now either to receyue ſome guerdon of my moſt wofull labours, or to returne into a more wretched darkenes, hauing had ſome glimmering of my blisfull Sunne. O *Zelmane*, tread not vpon a ſoule that lyes vnder your foote: let not the abaſing of my ſelfe make me more baſe in your eyes, but iudge of me according to that I am and haue bene, and let my errors be made excuſable by the immortall name of loue. With that, vnder a fayned rage, tearing her clothes, ſhe diſcouered ſome partes of her fayre body, which if *Zelmanes* harte had not bene ſo fully poſſeſt as there was no place left for any new gueſt, no doubt it would haue yelded to that gallant aſſault. But *Zelmane* ſo much the more arming her determination, as ſhe ſawe ſuch force threatened, yet ſtill remembring ſhe muſt wade betwixt conſtancie and curteſey, embracing *Gynecia*, and once or twiſe kiſſing her, Deare Ladie, ſayd ſhe, he were a great enemy to himſelfe, that would refuſe ſuch an offer, in the purchaſe of which a mans life were bleſſedly beſtowed. Nay, how can I euer yeeld due recompence, for ſo exceſſiue a fauour? but hauing nothing to geue you but my ſelfe, take that: I muſt confeſſe a ſmall, but a very free gift what other affection ſoeuer I haue had, ſhall geue place to as great perfection, working beſides vppon the bonde of gratefulnes. The gods forbid I ſhould be ſo fooliſh, as not to ſee, or ſo wicked as not to remember, how much my ſmall deſerts are ouerballanced by your vnſpeakeable goodnes. Nay happye may I well accompt my miſhap among the *Amazons*, ſince that diſhonor hath bene ſo true a path to my greateſt honor, and the chaunging of my outward rayment, hath clothed my

minde

minde in ſuch inwarde contentacion. Take therefore noble Lady as much comfort to youre harte, as the full commandement of me can yeeld you: wipe your faire eyes, and keepe them for nobler ſeruices. And nowe I will preſume thus much to ſaye vnto you, that you make of your ſelfe for my ſake, that my ioyes of my new obtayned riches may be accompliſhed in you. But let vs leaue this place, leaſt you be too long miſſed, and henceforward quiet your minde from any further care, for I will now (to my too much ioye) take the charge vpon me, within fewe dayes to worke your ſatisfaction, and my felicitie. Thus much ſhe ſayde, and withall led *Gynecia* out of the Caue, for well ſhe ſawe the boyling minde of *Gynecia* did eaſily apprehende the fitneſſe of that lonely place. But in deede this direct promiſe of a ſhort ſpace, ioyned with the cumberſome familiar of womankinde, I meane modeſtie, ſtayed ſo *Gynecias* minde, that ſhe tooke thus much at that preſent for good payment: remayning with a paynefull ioye, and a wearyſome kinde of comfort, not vnlike to the condemned priſoner, whoſe minde ſtill running vppon the violent arriuall of his cruell death, heares that his pardon is promiſed, but not yet ſigned. In this ſort they both iſſued out of that obſcure manſion: *Gynecia* already halfe perſwaded in her ſelfe (ô weakenes of humane conceite) that *Zelmanes* affection was turned towards her. For ſuch alas! we are all, in ſuch a mould are we caſt, that with the too much loue we beare our ſelues, beeing firſt our owne flatterers, wee are eaſily hooked with our owne flattery, we are eaſily perſwaded of others loue.

But *Zelmane* who had now to playe her prize, ſeeing no waye thinges could long remayne in that ſtate, and now finding her promiſe had tyed her tryall to a ſmall compaſſe of tyme, began to throwe her thoughtes into each corner of her inuention howe ſhee might atchieue her liues enterpriſe: for well ſhee knewe deceite cannot otherwiſe be mayntayned but by deceite: and how to deceyue ſuch heedfull eyes, and how to ſatisfye, and yet not ſatisfye ſuch hopefull deſires, it was no ſmall skill. But both their thoughtes were called from themſelues, with the ſight of *Baſilius*, who then lying downe by his daughter *Philoclea*, vppon the fayre, though naturall, bed of greene-graſſe, ſeeing the ſunne what ſpeede hee made, to leaue our Weſt to doo his office in the other *Hemiſphere*, his inwarde Muſes made him in his beſt muſicke, ſing this Madrigall.

WHy dooſt thou haſte away
O Titan *faire the giuer of the daie?*
Is it to carry newes
To Weſterne wightes, what ſtarres in Eaſt appeare?
Or dooſt thou thinke that heare
Is left a Sunne, whoſe beames thy place may vſe?
Yet ſtay and well peruſe,
What be her giftes, that make her equall thee,
Bend all thy light to ſee
In earthly clothes encloſde a heauenly ſparke.
Thy running courſe cannot ſuch beawties marke:
No, no, thy motions bee
Haſtened from vs with barre of ſhadow darke,

Becauſe that thou the author of our ſight
Diſdainſt we ſee thee ſtaind with others light.

And hauing ended, Deere *Philoclea*, ſaid he, ſing ſomething that may diuerte my thoughts from the continuall taske of their ruinous harbour: She obedient to him, and not vnwilling to disburden her ſecret paſſion, made her ſweete voice be heard in theſe words:

O Stealing time the ſubiect of delaie,
(Delay, the racke of vnreſram'd deſire)
What ſtrange deſſein haſt thou my hopes to ſtaie
My hopes which do but to mine owne aſpire?

Mine owne? ô word on whoſe ſweete ſound doth pray
My greedy ſoule, with gripe of inward fire:
Thy title great, I iuſtlie chalenge may,
Since in ſuch phraſe his faith he did attire.

O time, become the chariot of my ioyes:
As thou draweſt on, ſo let my bliſſe draw neere.
Each moment loſt, part of my hap deſtroyes:

Thou art the father of occaſion deare:
Ioyne with thy ſonne, to eaſe my long annoy's.
In ſpeedie helpe, thanke worthie frends appeare.

Philoclea brake off her Song, as ſoone as her mother with *Zelmane* came neere vnto them, riſing vp with a kindly baſhfulnes, being not ignorant of the ſpite her mother bare her, and ſtricken with the ſight of that perſon, whoſe loue made all thoſe troubles, ſeeme fayre flowers of her deereſt garlond, Nay rather all thoſe troubles, made the loue encreaſe. For as the arriuall of enemyes, makes a towne ſo fortifye it ſelfe, as euer after it remaynes ſtronger, ſo that a man may ſay, enemyes were no ſmall cauſe to the townes ſtrength: So to a minde once fixed in a well pleaſed determinacion, who hopes by annoyance to ouerthrowe it, doth but teach it to knit together all his beſt grounds, and ſo perchance of a chaunceable purpoſe, make an vnchangeable reſolucion. But no more did *Philoclea* ſee, the wonted ſignes of *Zelmanes* affection towardes her; ſhe thought ſhe ſawe an other light in her eyes, with a bould and careleſſe looke vpon her which was wont to be dazeled with her beawtie; and the framing of her courteſyes rather ceremonious then affectionate, and that which worſt liked her, was, that it proceeded with ſuch quiet ſetlednes, as it rather threatned a full purpoſe, then any ſodayne paſſion. She founde her behauiour bent altogether to her mother, and preſumed in her ſelfe, ſhe diſcerned the well acquainted face of his fancies now turned to another ſubiecte. She ſawe her mothers worthines, and too well knewe her affection. Theſe ioyning theyr diuers working powers together in her minde, but yet a prentiſe in the paynefull miſterye of paſſions, brought *Philoclea* into a newe trauers of her thoughtes, and made her keepe her carefull looke the more attentiue vppon *Zelmanes* behauiour, who in deede (though with much payne, and

condemning

condemning her ſelfe to commit a ſacriledge, againſt the ſweete ſaincte that liued in her inmoſt Temple) yet ſtrengthening herſelfe in it, beeing the ſureſt waye to make *Gynecia* bite off her other baytes, did ſo quite ouerrule all wonted ſhowes of loue to *Philoclea*, and conuert them to *Gynecia*, that the parte ſhe played, did worke in both a full and liuely perſwaſion: to *Gynecia*, ſuch exceſſiue comforte, as the beeing preferred to a riuall doth deliuer to ſwelling deſire: But to the delicate *Philoclea*, whoſe calme thoughtes were vnable to nouriſh any ſtrong debate, it gaue ſo ſtinging a hurt, that fainting vnder the force of her inwarde torment, ſhe withdrewe her ſelfe to the Lodge, and there wearye of ſupporting her owne burden, caſt her ſelfe vppon her bed, ſuffering her ſorrowe to melt it ſelfe into abundance of teares, at length cloſing her eyes, as if eache thing ſhe ſawe was a picture of her miſhap, and turning vpon her hurt-ſide, which with vehement panting, did ſummon her to conſider her fortune, ſhe thus bemoned her ſelfe.

Alas *Philoclea*, is this the price of all thy paynes? Is this the rewarde of thy giuen awaye libertye? Hath too much yeelding bred crueltye? or can too greate acquaintance, make mee helde for a ſtraunger? Hath the chooſing of a companion, made mee lefte alone? or doth graunting deſire, cauſe the deſire to bee neglected? Alas, deſpiſed *Philoclea*, why diddeſt thou not holde thy thoughtes in theyr ſimple courſe, and content thy ſelfe with the loue of thy owne vertue, which would neuer haue betrayed thee? Ah ſillie foole, diddeſt thou looke for truth in him, that with his owne mouth confeſt his falſehood? for playne proceeding in him, that ſtill goes diſguiſed? They ſay the falſeſt men will yet beare outward ſhewes of a pure minde. But he that euen outwardly beares the badge of treacherie, what hells of wickednes muſt needes in the depth be contayned? But ô wicked mouth of mine, how dareſt thou thus blaſpheme the ornament of the earth, the veſſell of all vertue? O wretch that I am that will anger the gods in diſprayſing their moſt excellent worke! O no, no, there was no fault but in me, that could euer thinke ſo high eyes would looke ſo lowe, or ſo great perfections would ſtayne themſelues with my vnworthines. Alas! why could I not ſee? I was too weake a band to tye ſo heauenly a hart: I was not fit to limit the infinite courſe of his wonderfull deſtenies. Was it euer like that vpon only *Philoclea* his thoughtes ſhould reſt? Ah ſilly ſoule that couldſt pleaſe thy ſelfe with ſo impoſſible an imagination! An vniuerſall happines is to flowe from him. How was I ſo inueagled to hope, I might be the marke of ſuch a minde? He did thee no wrong, ô *Philoclea*, he did thee no wrong, it was thy weakenes to fancie the beames of the ſonne ſhould giue light to no eyes but thine! And yet, ô Prince *Pirocles*, for whome I may well begin to hate my ſelfe, but can neuer leaue to loue thee, what triumph canſt thou make of this conqueſt? what ſpoiles wilt thou carry away of this my vndeſerued ouerthrow? could thy force finde out no fitter field, then the feeble minde of a poore mayde, who at the firſt ſight did wiſh thee all happines? ſhall it be ſayde the mirrour of mankinde hath bene employed to deſtroy a hurtleſſe gentlewoman? O *Pirocles, Pirocles*, let me yet call thee before the iudgement of thine owne vertue, let me be accepted for a plaintiffe in a cauſe which concernes my life: what need hadſt thou to arme thy face, with the enchanting maſk of thy painted paſſions? what need hadſt thou to fortefy thy excellẽcies with ſo exquiſit a cunning, in making our own arts betray vs? what needeſt thou deſcend ſo far frõ thy incomparable worthines, as

to take on the habit of weake womankinde? Was all this to winne the vndefended Caſtle of a friend, which being wonne, thou wouldeſt after raze? Could ſo ſmall a cauſe allure thee? or did not ſo vniuſt a cauſe ſtop thee? ô me, what ſay I more, this is my caſe, my loue hates me, vertue deales wickedly with me, and he does me wrong, whoſe doing I can neuer accompt wrong. With that the ſweet Lady turning her ſelfe vppon her weary bed, ſhe happly ſawe a Lute, vpon the belly of which *Gynecia* had written this ſong, what time *Baſilius* imputed her iealous motions to proceed of the doubt ſhe had of his vntimely loues. Vnder which vaile ſhe contented to couer her neuer ceaſſing anguiſh, had made the Lute a monument of her minde, which *Philoclea* had neuer much marked, till now the feare of a competitour more ſturred her, then before the care of a mother. The verſes were theſe.

MY Lute which in thy ſelfe thy tunes encloſe,
Thy miſtreſſe ſong is now a ſorrow's crie,
Her hand benumde with fortunes daylie blows,
Her minde amaz'de can neithers helpe applie.
Weare theſe my words as mourning weede of woes,
Blacke incke becommes the ſtate wherein I dye.
And though my mones be not in muſicke bound,
Of written greeſes, yet be the ſilent ground.

The world doth yeeld ſuch ill conſorted ſhows,
With circkled courſe, which no wiſe ſtay can trye,
That childiſh ſtuffe which knowes not frendes from foes,
(Better deſpiſde) bewondre gaſing eye.
Thus noble golde, downe to the bottome goes,
When worthleſſe corke, aloft doth floting lye.
Thus in thy ſelfe, leaſt ſtrings are loudeſt ſounde,
And loweſt ſtops doo yeeld the hyeſt ſounde.

Philoclea read them, and throwing downe the Lute, is this the legacie you haue bequeathed me, O kinde mother of mine ſaid ſhe? did you beſtow the light vpon me for this? or did you beare me to be the Author of my buriall? A trim purchaſe you haue made of your owne ſhame; robbed your daughter to ruyne your ſelfe! The birds vnreaſonable, yet vſe ſo much reaſon, as to make neſtes for their tender young ones; my cruell Mother turnes me out of mine owne harbour; Alas, plaint bootes not, for my caſe can receaue no helpe, for who ſhould geue mee helpe? ſhall I flye to my parents? they are my murtherers, ſhall I goe to him who already being woon and loſt, muſt needs haue killed all pittie? Alas I can bring no new interceſſions, he knows already what I am is his. Shall I come home againe to my ſelf? ô me contemned wretch; I haue giuen away my ſelf. With that the poore ſoule beate her breaſt, as if that had bene guilty of her faults, neither thinking of reuenge, nor ſtudying for remedy, but ſweete creature gaue greefe a free dominion, keeping her chamber a few days after, not needing to faine her ſelf ſick, feeling euen in her ſoule the pangs of extreeme paine. But little did *Gynecia* reck that, neyther when ſhe ſawe her goe awaye from them, neyther when ſhe after found that ſicknes made her hide her faire face: ſo much had fancye preuailed againſt nature.

But

But ô you that haue euer knowen, how tender to euery motion loue makes the louers hart, how he meaſures all his ioyes vpon her contentment: & doth with reſpect ful eye hang al his behauiour vpō her eyes, iudg I praye you now of *Zelmanes* troubled thoughts, when ſhe ſaw *Philoclea*, with an amazed kinde of ſorrow, carrie awaye her ſweete preſence, and eaſely founde, (ſo happie a coniecture vnhappie affection hath) that her demeanour was guiltie of that treſpaſſe. There was neuer fooliſh ſofte harted mother, that forced to beate her childe, did weepe firſt for his paines, and doing that ſhe was loath to do, did repent before ſhe began, did finde ha'lfe that motion in her weake minde, as *Zelmane* did, now that ſhe was forced by reaſon, to giue an outward blowe to her paſſions, and for the lending of a ſmall time, to ſeeke the vſury of all her deſires. The vnkindnes ſhe conceaued, *Philoclea* might conceaue, did wound her ſoule, each teare ſhe doubted ſhe ſpent, drowned all her comforte. Her ſicknes was a death vnto her. Often woulde ſhee ſpeake to the image of *Philoclea*, which liued and ruled in the higheſt of her inwarde parte, and vſe vehement othes and proteſtations vnto her; that nothing ſhoulde euer falſifie the free choſen vowe ſhe had made. Often woulde ſhe deſire her that ſhe would looke wel to *Pyrocles* hart, for as for her ſhee had no more intereſt in it to beſtow it any way: Alas woulde ſhee ſaye onely *Philoclea* haſt thou not ſo much feeling of thine owne force, as to knowe no new conquerer can preuaile againſt thy conqueſtes? Was euer any daſeled with the moone, that had vſed his eyes to the beames of the Sunne? Is hee carried awaye with a greedie deſire of Akornes, that hath had his ſenſes rauiſhed with a garden of moſt delightfull fruites? O *Philoclea Philoclea*, be thou but as mercifull a Princeſſe to my minde, as thou arte a trewe poſſeſſour, and I ſhal haue as much cauſe of gladnes as thou haſt no cauſe of miſdoubting. O no no, when a mans owne harte is the gage of his debte, when a mans owne thoughts are willing witneſſes to his promiſe, laſtly when a man is the gaylour ouer himſelfe: There is little doubte of breaking credit, and leſſe doubt of ſuch an eſcape. In this combat of *Zelmanes* doubtfull imaginations, in the ende reaſon well backed with the vehement deſire, to bring her matters ſoone to the deſired hauen, did ouer rule the boyling of her inward kindnes, though as I ſay with ſuch a manifeſt ſtrife, that both *Baſilius* and *Gynecias* well wayting eyes, had marked her muſes had laboured in deeper ſubiecte, then ordinarie, which ſhe likewiſe perceauing they had perceaued, a waking her ſelfe out of thoſe thoughtes, and principally caring howe to ſatiſfie *Gynecia* (whoſe iudgement and paſſion ſhee ſtood moſt in regarde of) bowing her head to her attentiue eare, Madame ſaide ſhe, with practiſe of my thoughts, I haue found out a way by which your contentment ſhall draw on my happines. *Gynecia* deliuering in her face as thankfull a ioyfulnes, as her harte coulde holde, ſaide it was then time to retire themſelues to their reſt, for what, with riding abroade the day before, and late ſitting vp for Egloges, their bodyes had dearely purchaſed that nightes quiet. So went they home to their lodge, *Zelmane* framing of both ſides bountifull meaſures of louing countenaunces to eithers ioye, and neythers iealouſie; to the eſpeciall comforte of *Baſilius*, whoſe weaker bowels were ſtreight full with the leaſt liquour of hope. So that ſtill holding her by the hand, and ſometimes tickling it, he went by her with the moſt gay conceates that euer had entred his braines, growing now ſo harted in his reſolucion, that hee little reſpected *Gynecias* preſence. But with a luſtier note then wonted, clearing his voice, and chearing his ſpirits, looking ſtill vpon *Zelmane* (whome now the moone did beautifie with her ſhining almoſt at the full) as if her eyes had beene his ſonge

booke, he did the meſſage of his minde in ſinging theſe verſes:

VVHen two Sunnes do appeare
Some ſay it doth betoken wonders neare
As Princes loſſe or change:
Two gleaming Sunnes of ſplendour like I ſee,
And ſeeing feele in me
Of Princes harte quite loſt the ruine ſtrange.

But nowe each where doth range
With ouglie cloke the darke enuious night:
Who full of guiltie ſpite,
Such lining beames ſhould her black ſeate aſſaile,
Too weake for them our weaker ſighte doth vaile.

No ſaies faire moone, my lighte
Shall barr that wrong, and though it not preuaile
Like to my brothers raiſe, yet thoſe I ſende
Hurte not the face, which nothing can amende.

And by that time being come to the lodge, and viſited the ſweete *Philoclea*, with much leſſe then naturall care of the parents, and much leſſe then wonted kindenes of *Zelmane*, each partie full fraught with diuerſly working fancies, made their pillowes weake proppes of their ouer loaden heades. Yet of all other were *Zelmanes* braynes moſt tormoyled, troubled with loue both actiue and paſſiue; and laſtely and especially with care, howe to vſe her ſhorte limitted time, to the beſte purpoſe, by ſome wiſe and happie diuerting her two louers vnwelcome deſires. *Zelmane* hauing had the night her onely councellour in the buſie enterpriſe ſhee was to vndertake, and hauing all that time muſed, and yet not fully reſolued, howe ſhee might ioyne preuailing with preuenting, was offended with the daies bould entrie into her chamber, as if he had now by cuſtome growne an aſſured bringer of euill newes. Which ſhe taking a Citterne to her, did laye to *Auroras* chardge with theſe welſonge verſes.

AUrora *now thou ſhewſt thy bluſhing light*
(Which oft to hope laies out a guileſull baite,
That truſts in time, to finde the way aright
To eaſe thoſe paines, which on deſire do waite)

Bluſh on for ſhame: that ſtill with thee do light
On penſiue ſoules (in ſteede of reſt ſull baite)
Care vpon care (in ſteede of doing right)
To ouer preſſed breſtes, more greeuous waight.

As oh! my ſelfe, whoſe woes are neuer lighte
(Tide to the ſtake of doubt) ſtrange paſſions baite,
While thy known courſe, obſeruing natures right
Sturres me to thinke what dangers lye in waite.

For miſcheefes greate, daye after day doth ſhowe:
Make me ſtill feare, thy faire appearing ſhowe.

Alas ſaide ſhe, am not I runne into a ſtrange gulfe, that am faine for loue to hurt her I loue? And becauſe I deteſt the others, to pleaſe them I deteſt? O onely *Philoclea*, whoſe beautie is matched with nothing, but with the vnſpeakeable beautie of thy fayreſt minde, if thou didſt ſee vpon what a racke my tormented ſoule is ſet, little would you thinke I had any ſcope now, to leape to any new chaunge, with that, with haſtie hands ſhe got her ſelfe vp turning her ſight to euerie thinge, as if chaunge of obiecte might helpe her invention. So went ſhe againe to the caue where forthwith it came into her head, that ſhoulde bee the fitteſt place to performe her exploite, of which ſhe had now a kinde of confuſed conceipte, although ſhe had not ſet downe in her fancie, the meeting with each particularitie that might fall out. But as the painter doth at the firſt but ſhowe a rude proportion of the thing he imitates, which after with more curious hande, hee drawes to the repreſenting each lineament. So had her thoughts beating about it continually, receaued into them a ground plot of her deuiſe, although ſhe had not in each parte ſhapte it according to a full determination. But in this ſorte hauing earelie viſited the morninges beautie, in thoſe pleaſant deſartes, ſhe came to the King and Queene and tolde them, that for the performance of certaine her countrie deuotions, which onely were to be exerciſed in ſolitarines, ſhee did deſire their leaue ſhee might for a fewe daies, lodge her ſelfe in the Caue, the freſh ſweetnes of which did greately delight her, in that hot countrie; and that for that ſmal ſpace, they would not otherwiſe trouble themſelues in viſiting her, but at ſuch times as ſhe would come to waite vpon them, which ſhoulde bee euerie daye at certaine houres, neither ſhould it be long, ſhee would deſire his priuiledged abſence of them. They whoſe mindes had alredie taken out that leſſon, perfectly to yeelde a willing obedience to all her deſires, which conſenting countenaunce made her ſoone ſee her pleaſure was a lawe vnto them. Both indeede inwardlie glad of it, *Baſilius* hoping that her deuiding her ſelfe from them, might yet giue him ſome freer occaſion of comming in ſecrete vnto her, whoſe fauourable face, had lately ſtrengthened his fainting courage. But *Gynecia* of all other moſt ioyous, holding her ſelfe aſſured that this was but a prologue to the play ſhe had promiſed her. Thus both flattering them ſelues, with diuerſly grounded hopes, they rang a bell which ſerued to call certaine poore women which euer lay in cabins not far off, to do the houſhould ſeruices of both lodges, and neuer came to either but being called for: And commaunded them to carry foorthwith *Zelmanes* bed and furniture of her chamber, into the pleaſaunt Caue; and to decke it vp as finelie, as it was poſſible for them, That their ſoules reſt might reſt her body to her beſt pleaſing maner, that was with all diligence performed of them, and *Zelmane* alredie in poſſeſſion of her newe choſen lodging, where ſhe like one of *Veſtaes* nunnes, entertaind her ſelfe for a fewe dayes in all ſhowe of ſtreightnes, yet once aday comming to doe her dutie to the King and Queene, in whom the ſeldomnes of the ſight encreaſed the more vnquiet longing, though ſomwhat qualified, as her countenaunce was decked to either of them with more comforte then wonted. Eſpecially to *Gynecia* who ſeing her wholy neglecting her daughter *Philoclea*, had now promiſd her ſelfe a full poſſeſſion of *Zelmanes* harte, ſtill expecting the fruite, of the happie & hoped for inuention. But both ſhe and *Baſilius* kept ſuch a continuall watch about the Precincts of the Caue, that either of them

was

was a bar to the other from hauing any ſecret, commoning with *Zelmane*. While in the meane time the ſweete *Philoclea* forgotten of her father, deſpiſed of her mother, and in apparance lefte of *Zelmane* had yeelded vp her ſoule to be a pray to ſorow and vnkindnes, not with raging conceite of reuenge as had paſſed thorow the ſtout and wiſe harte of her mother, but with a kindly meeknes taking vpon her the weight of her owne woes, and ſuffering them to haue ſo full a courſe as it did exceedinglie weaken the eſtate of her bodie, aſwell for which cauſe as for that, ſhee could not ſee *Zelmane*, without expreſſing (more then ſhee woulde) how farr now her loue, was impriſoned in extremitie of ſorrow, ſhe bound her ſelfe firſt to the limits of her own chamber, and after, (griefe breeding ſicknes) of her bed. But *Zelmane* hauing now a full libertie to caſt about euery way, how to bring her conceaued attempt to a deſired ſucceſſe, was ofte ſo perplexed with the manifould difficultie of it, that ſometimes ſhe would reſolue by force to take her away, though it were with the death of her parents, ſomtimes to go away her ſelf with *Muſidorus* and bring both their forces, ſo to winne her. But laſtly euen the ſame day that *Muſidorus* by feeding the humor of his three loathſome gardiens, had ſtolne awaye the Princes *Pamela* (whether it were that loue ment to match them euerie waie, or that her friendes example had holpen her inuention, or that indeede *Zelmane* forbare to practiſe her deuiſe till ſhe found her friend had paſſed through his.) The ſame daye, I ſaye, ſhee reſolued on a way to rid out of the lodge her two comberſome louers, and in the night to carrie away *Philoclea*: where vnto ſhee was aſſured her owne loue, no leſſe then her ſiſters, woulde eaſely winne her conſent. Hoping that although their abrupt parting had not ſuffered her to demaund of *Muſidorus* which way he ment to direct his iorney) yet either they ſhould by ſome good fortune, finde him: or if that courſe fayled, yet they might well recouer ſome towne of the *Helotes*, neere the frontieres of *Arcadia*, who being newly againe vp in armes againſt the Nobilitie, ſhee knew would bee as glad of her preſence, as ſhe of their protection. Therefore hauing taken order for all thinges requiſite for their going, and firſt put on a ſleight vnderſute of mans apparel, which before for ſuch purpoſes ſhe had prouided, ſhe curiouſly trimmed her ſelf to the beautifiing of her beauties, that being now at her laſt triall, ſhe might come vnto it in her braueſt armour. And ſo putting on that kinde of milde countenaunce, which doth encourage the looker on to hope for a gentle anſwere, according to her late receaued maner, ſhe lefte the pleaſant darkenes of her melancholy caue, to goe take her dinner of the King and Queene, and giue vnto them both a pleaſant foode of ſeing the owner of their deſires. But euen as the *Perſians* were aunciently wont, to leaue no riſing Sun vnſaluted, but as his faire beames appeared clearer vnto thē wold they more hartely reioyce, laying vpō them a great fortoken, of their following fortunes: So was ther no time that *Zelmane* encoūtred their eies, with her beloued preſence, but that it bred a kind of burning deuotiō in thē, yet ſo much the more glading their gredy ſoules, as her coūtenance were cleared with more fauour vnto thē, which now being determinatly framed to the greateſt deſcēt of kindneſſe, it took ſuch hold of her infortunate louers, that like children aboute a tender father, from a long voyage returned, with louely childiſhnes hange about him, and yet with ſimple feare meaſure by his countenance, how farr he acceptes their boldnes: So were theſe now throwne into ſo ſeruiceable an affection, that the turning of *Zelmanes* eye, was a ſtrong ſterne enough to all their motions, wending no way, but as the inchaunting force of it; guided them. But hauing made a light repaſte of the pleaſunt, fruites of that countrye, enterlarding their foode with ſuch manner of generall

diſcourſes,

diſcourſes, as louers are woont to couer their paſſions in', when reſpecte of a thirde perſon keepes them from plaine particulars, at the earneſt entreatie of *Baſilius*, *Zelmane*, firſt ſaluting the muſes with a baſe voyal hong hard by her, ſent this ambaſſade in verſified muſicke, to both her ill requited louers.

Beautie hath force to catche the humane ſight.
Sight doth bewitch, the fancie euill awaked.
Fancie we feele, encludes all paſſions mighte,
Paſſion rebelde, oft reaſons ſtrength hath ſhaked.

No wondre then, though ſighte my ſighte did tainte,
And though thereby my fancie was infected,
Though (yoked ſo) my minde with ſicknes ſainte,
Had reaſons weight for paſſions eaſe reiected.

But now the fitt is paſt: and time hath giu'ne
Leaſure to weigh what due deſerte requireth.
All thoughts ſo ſpronge, are from their dwelling driu'n,
And wiſdome to his wonted ſeate aſpireth.
Crying in me: eye hopes deceitefull proue.
Thinges rightelie prizde, loue is the bande of loue.

And after her ſonge with an affected modeſtie, ſhee threwe downe her eye, as if the conſcience of a ſecret graunt her inward minde made, had ſodainely caſt a baſhfull vaile ouer her. Which *Baſilius* finding, and thinking now was the time, to vrge his painefull petition, beſeeching his wife with more carefull eye to accompanie his ſickly daughter *Philoclea*, being rid for that time of her, who was content to graunt him any ſcope, that ſhe might after haue the like freedome, with a geſture gouerned by the force of his paſſions, making his knees his beſt ſupporters hee thus ſaide vnto her.

Yf either, ſaid he, O Ladie of my life, my deadly pangues coulde beare delaye or that this were the firſt time the ſame were manifeſted vnto you, I woulde nowe but maintaine ſtill the remembraunce of my misfortune, without vrging any further reward, then time and pittie might procure for me. But, alas, ſince my martirdome is no leſſe painefull, then manifeſt, and that I no more feele the miſerable daunger, then you know the aſſured trueth thereof: why ſhoulde my tonge deny his ſeruice to my harte? Why ſhould I feare the breath of my words who daylie feele the flame of your workes? Embrace in ſweete conſideration I beſeech you, the miſerie of my Caſe, acknowledge your ſelfe to bee the cauſe, and thinke it is reaſon for you to redreſſe the effectes. Alas let not certaine imaginatife rules, whoſe trueth ſtandes but vpon opinion, keepe ſo wiſe a mind from gratefulnes and mercie, whoſe neuer fayling laws nature hath planted in vs. I plainly lay my death vnto you, the death of him that loues you, the death of him whoſe life you maye ſaue, ſay your abſolute determination, for hope it ſelfe is a paine, while it is ouer maſtered with feare, and if you do reſolue to be cruel, yet is the ſpeedieſt condemnation, as in euills, moſt welcome. *Zelmane* who had fully ſet to her ſelfe the traine ſhe would keepe, yet knowing that who ſooneſt meanes to yeelde doth well tomake the braueſt parley, keeping countenaunce

tenaunce aloſte. Noble prince ſaid ſhe, your wordes are to well couched, to come out of a reſtleſſe minde, and thanked be the Gods your face threatens no daunger of death. Theſe are but thoſe ſwelling ſpeeches, which giue the vttermoſt name to euerie trifle, which all were worth nothinge, if they were not enammeled with the goodly outſide of loue. Truely loue were verie vnlouely, if it were halfe ſo deadly, as your louers (ſtill liuing) tearme it I thinke well it may haue a certaine childiſh vehemencie, which for the time to one deſire will engage al the ſoule, ſo long as it laſteth. But with what impacience you your ſelfe ſhowe, who confeſſe the hope of it a paine, and thinke your owne deſire ſo vnworthy, as you would faine bee ridd of it, and ſo with ouermuch loue ſue hard for a haſtie refuſall. A refuſall! (cried out *Baſilius*, amazed with al, but perced with the laſt) Now aſſure your ſelf, when ſoeuer you vſe that word diffinitiuely, it will be the vndoubted dome of my approching death. And then ſhall your owne experience knowe in mee, how ſoone the ſpirites dryed vp with anguiſh, leaue the performaunce of their miniſterie, whereupon our life depẽdeth. But alas what a crueltie is this, not only to tormẽt but to think the tormẽt ſlighte? The terribleſt tirants would ſay by no man they killed, he dyed not, nor by no man they puniſhed, that he eſcaped free, for of all other, ther is leaſt hope of mercie where there is no acknowledging of the paine: and with like crueltie, are my wordes breathed out from a flamy harte, accompted as meſſingers of a quiet mind. If I ſpeake nothing, I choake my ſelfe, and am in no way of reliefe: if ſimplye neglected: if confuſedly not vnderſtoode: if by the bending together all my inwarde powers, they bring forth any liuely expreſſing of that they truly feele, that is a token, forſooth, the thoughts are at too much leaſure. Thus is ſilence deſperate, follie puniſhed, and witt ſuſpected. But indeed it is vaine to ſay any more, for wordes can bind no beliefe. Lady, I ſay, determine of me, I muſt confeſſe I cannot beare this battell in my minde, and therefore let me ſoone know what I may accompt of my ſelfe, for it is a hell of dolours, when the mind ſtill in doubt for want of reſolution, can make no reſiſtaunce.

In deed aunſwered *Zelmane*, if I ſhould graunt to your requeſt, I ſhould ſhew, an example in my ſelfe that I eſteeme the holy bande of chaſtitie to bee but and Imaginatife rule, as you tearmed it: and not the trueſt obſeruaunce of nature the moſte noble commaundement that mankinde can haue ouer themſelues, as indeede both learning teacheth, and inward feeling aſſureth. But firſt ſhal *Zelmanes* graue, become her marriage bedd, before my ſoule ſhall conſent to his owne ſhame, before I will leaue a marke in my ſelf of an vnredemable treſpaſſe. And yet muſt I confeſſe that if euer my hart were ſturred, it hath ben with the manifeſt & manifold ſhewes of the miſery you liue in for me. For in trueth ſo it is, nature giues not to vs her degenerate children, any more general precepte, then one to helpe the other, one to feele a true compaſſion of the others miſhappe. But yet if I were neuer ſo contented to ſpeake with you, (for further neuer ô *Baſilius* looke for at my hands) I know not howe you can auoyde your wiues iealous attendaunce, but that her ſuſpicion ſhall bring my honour into queſtion. *Baſilius* whoſe ſmall ſailes the leaſte winde did fill, was forth with as farre gonne into a large promiſing him ſelfe his deſire, as before hee was ſtriken downe with a threatned deuill. And therefore bending his browes as though he were not a man to take the matter as he had done, what ſaide hee, ſhall my wife become my miſteris? Thinke you not that thus much time hath taught mee to rule her? I will mewe the gentlewoman till ſhe haue caſt all her feathers, if ſhe rouſe her

ſelfe

ſelfe againſt me. And with that he walked vp and downe, nodding his head, as though they miſtooke him much that thought he was not his wiues maiſter. But *Zelmane* now ſeeing it was time to conclude, of your wiſdome and manhood ſayd ſhe, I doubt not, but that ſufficeth not me, for both they can hardly tame a malicious toong, and impoſſibly barre the freedom of thought, which be the things that muſt be only witneſſes, of honor, or iudges of diſhonor. But that you may ſee I doo not ſet light your affection, if to night after your wife be aſſuredly aſleepe, whereof by your loue I coniure you, to haue a moſt preciſe care, you will ſteale handſomely to the caue vnto me, there do I graunt you as great proportion as you will take of free conference with me, euer remembring you ſeeke no more, for ſo ſhall you but deceyue your ſelfe, and for euer looſe me. *Baſilius* that was olde inough to know, that women are not wont to appoint ſecreat night meetings for the purchaſing of land, holding himſelfe alreadye an vndoubted poſſeſſour of his deſires, kiſſing her hand, and lifting vp his eyes to heauen, as if the greatnes of the benefit did goe beyonde all meaſure of thankes, ſayde no more, leaſt ſturring of more words, might bring forth ſome perhaps contrarye matter. In which traunce of ioye, *Zelmane* went from him, ſayeng ſhe would leaue him to the remembrance of their appoyntment, and for her ſhe would goe viſite the Ladie *Philoclea*, into whoſe chamber being come, keeping ſtill her late taken on grauitie, and asking her how ſhe did, rather in the way of dutifull honour, then any ſpeciall affection, with extreeme inward anguiſh to them both, ſhe turned from her, and taking the Queene *Gineacia*, ledde her into a baye windowe of the ſame Chamber, determining in her ſelfe, not to vtter to ſo excellent a wit as *Gynecia* had, the vttermoſt poynt of her pretended deuiſe, but to keepe the clauſe of it for the laſt inſtant, when the ſhortnes of the time ſhould not geue her ſpirits leaſure to looke into all thoſe doubts, that eaſily enter to an open inuention. But with ſmiling eyes, and with a deliuered ouer grace, fayning as much loue to her, as ſhe did counterfeit loue to *Philoclea*, ſhe began with more credible then eloquent ſpeech to tell her, that with much conſideracion of a matter ſo neerely importing her owne fancie, and *Gynecias* honour, ſhe had nowe concluded that the night following ſhould be the fitteſt time for the ioyning together their ſeuerall deſires, what time ſleepe ſhould perfectly do his office vpon the King her husband, and that the one ſhould come to the other into the Caue. Which place, as it was the fyrſt receipt of their promiſed loue, ſo it might haue the fyrſt honour of the due performance. That the cauſe why thoſe fewe dayes paſt, ſhe had not ſought the lyke, was, leaſt the newe chaunge of her lodging, might make the Duke more apte to marke anye ſodayne euent: which nowe the vſe of it would take out of his minde. And therefore nowe, moſt excellent Ladie ſayde ſhe, there reſteth nothing but that quicklie after ſupper, you trayne vp the King to viſit his daughter *Philoclea*, and then fayning your ſelfe not well at eaſe, by your going to bedde, drawe him not long to be after you. In the meane time I will be gone home to my lodging, where I will attend you, with no leſſe deuocion, but as I hope with better fortune, then *Thisbe* did the toomuch louing and toomuch loued *Piramus*. The blood that quicklie came into *Gineecias* fayre face, was the only anſweare ſhe made, but that one might eaſily ſee, contentment and conſent were both to the full in her; which ſhe did teſtifie with the wringing *Zelmane* faſt by the hand, cloaſing her eyes, & letting her head fall, as if ſhe would geue her to knowe, ſhe was not ignorant of her fault, although ſhe were

tranſported with the violence of her euill. But in this triple agreement did the daye ſeeme tedious of all ſides, till his neuer erring courſe, had giuen place to the nightes ſucceſſion: And the ſupper by eache hande haſted, was with no leſſe ſpeede ended, when *Gynecia* preſenting a heauie ſleepines in her countenance, brought vp both *Baſilius* and *Zelmane* to ſee *Philoclea* ſtill keeping her bedde, and farre more ſicke in minde then bodye, and more greeued then comforted with any ſuch viſitacion. Thence *Zelmane* wiſhing eaſefull reſt to *Philoclea*, did ſeeme to take that nightes leaue of this princely crewe, when *Gynecia* likewiſe ſeeming ſomewhat deſeaſed, deſired *Baſilius* to ſtay a while with her daughter, while ſhe recommended her ſicknes to her beds comfort, in deede deſirous to determine agayne of the manner of her ſtealing away; to no leſſe comfort to *Baſilius*, who the ſooner ſhe was aſleepe, the ſooner hoped to come by his long purſued praye. Thus both were bent to deceaue each other, and to take the aduantage of either others diſaduantage. But *Gynæcia* hauing taken *Zelmane* into her bed-chamber, to ſpeake a little with her of their ſweete determinacion: *Zelmane* vpon a ſodaine (as though ſhe had neuer thought of it before) Now the Gods forbid, ſayde ſhe, ſo great a Lady as you are ſhould come to me: or that I ſhould leaue it to the handes of fortune, if by eyther the ill gouerning of your paſſion, or your husbands ſodayne waking, any daunger might happen vnto you. No, if there be any ſuperioritie in the poyntes of true loue, it ſhall be yours: if there be any daunger, ſince my ſelfe am the author of this deuiſe, it is reaſon it ſhould be mine. Therefore doo you but leaue with me the keyes of the gate, and vpon your ſelfe take my vpper garment, that if any of *Damætas* houſe ſee you, they may thinke you to be my ſelfe, and I will preſently lye downe in your place, ſo muffled for your ſuppoſed ſicknes, as the King ſhall nothing knowe me. And then as ſoone as he is a ſleepe, will I (as it much better becommes me) waite vpon you. But if the vttermoſt of miſchiefes ſhould happen, I can aſſure you the Kings life ſhall ſooner pay for it, then your honour. And with the ending of her words, ſhe threwe off her gowne, not geuing *Gynæcia* any ſpace to take the full image of this newe chaunge into her fancie. But ſeeing no readye obiection againſt it in her heart, and knowing that there was no time then to ſtand long diſputing; beſides, remembring the geuer was to order the maner of his gift, yeelded quickly to this conceit, in deede not among the ſmalleſt cauſes, tickled therevnto by a certayne wanton deſire, that her husbands deceipt might be the more notable. In this ſort did *Zelmane*, nimbly diſarayeng her ſelfe, poſſeſſe *Gynæcias* place, hiding her head in ſuch a cloſe manner, as grieuous and ouerwatched ſickneſſe is wont to inuite to it ſelfe the ſolace of ſleepe. And of the other ſide the Queene putting on *Zelmanes* vtmoſt apparell, went fyrſt into her cloſet, there quickly to beawtifie her ſelfe, with the beſt and ſweeteſt night deckings. But there, caſting an haſtie eye ouer her precious things, which euer ſince *Zelmanes* comming, her head otherwiſe occupied had left vnſeene, ſhe hapned to ſee a bottle of golde, vpon which downe along were graued theſe verſes:

Let him drinke this, whome long in armes to ſolde
Thou doeſt deſire, and with free power to holde.

She remembred the bottle, for it had bene kept of long time by the Kings of *Cyprus*, as a thing of rare vertue, and giuen to her by her mother, when ſhe being very

very young maried to her husband of much greater age, her mother perſwaded it was of propertie to force loue, with loue effects, had made a precious preſent of it to this her beloued child, though it had bene receiued rather by tradition to haue ſuch a qualitie, then by any approued experiment. This *Gynacia*, (according to the common diſpoſition, not only (though eſpeciallie) of wiues, but of all other kindes of people, not to eſteeme much ones owne, but to thinke the labor loſt employed about it) had neuer cared to geue to her husband, but ſuffred his affection to runne according to his owne ſcope. But now that loue of her particular choyſe had awaked her ſpirits, and perchance the very vnlawfulnes of it had a litle blowne the coale: among her other ornaments with glad minde ſhe tooke moſt part of this liquor, putting it into a faire cup, all ſet with diamonds: for what dares not loue vndertake armed with the night, and prouoked with luſt? And thus downe ſhe went to the Caue-ward, guyded only by the Moones faire ſhining, ſuffering no other thought to haue any familiaritie with her braines, but that which did preſent vnto her a picture of her approching contentment. She that had long diſdayned this ſolitary life her husband had entred into, now wiſhed it much more ſolitary, ſo ſhe might only obtaine the priuate preſence of *Zelmane*. She that before would not haue gone ſo farre, eſpecially by night, and to ſo darke a place, now tooke a pride in the ſame courage, and framed in her minde a pleaſure out of the payne it ſelfe. Thus with thicke doubled paces ſhe went to the Caue, receyuing to her ſelfe, for her firſt contentment, the only lying where *Zelmane* had done: whoſe pillow ſhe kiſt a thouſand times, for hauing borne the print of that beloued head. And ſo keeping, with panting heart, her trauelling fancies ſo attentiue, that the winde could ſtirre nothing, but that ſhe ſtirred her ſelfe, as if it had bene the pace of the longed-for *Zelmane*, ſhe kept her ſide of the bed; defending only and cheriſhing the other ſide with her arme, till after a while wayting, counting with her ſelfe how many ſteps were betwixt the Lodge and the Caue, and oft accuſing *Zelmane* of more curious ſtay then needed, ſhe was viſited with an vnexpected gueſt.

For *Baſilius*, after his wife was departed to her fayned repoſe, as long as he remayned with his daughter, to geue his wife time of vnreadying her ſelfe, it was eaſily ſeene it was a very thorny abode he made there: and the diſcourſes with which he entertayned his daughter, not vnlike to thoſe of earneſt players, when, in the middeſt of their game, trifling queſtions be put vnto them, his eyes ſtill looking about, and himſelfe ſtill changing places, beginne to ſpeake of a thing, and breake it off before it were halfe done. To any ſpeach *Philoclea* miniſtred vnto him, with a ſodayne ſtarting, and caſting vp his head, make an anſwere farre out of all Grammer: a certayne deepe muſing, and by and by out of it: vncertayne motions, vnſtayed graces. Hauing borne out the limit of a reaſonable time with as much payne as might be, he came darkeling into his chamber, forcing himſelfe to treade as ſoftly as he coulde. But the more curious he was, the more he thought euery thing creaked vnder him: and his minde being out of the way with another thought, and his eyes not ſeruing his turne in that darke place, each Coffer or Cupbord he met, one ſaluted his ſhinnes, another his elbowes: ſometimes ready in reuenge to ſtrike them agayne with his face. Till at length, fearing his wife were not fully aſleepe, he came lifting vp the cloathes, as gently as (I thinke) poore *Pan* did, when, in ſtead of *Ioles* bedde, he came into the rough imbracings of *Hercules*: and laying himſelfe downe, as tenderly as a new Bride, reſted a while

with a very open eare, to marke each breath of his ſuppoſed wife. And ſometimes he himſelfe would yeeld a long fetched ſigh, as though that had bene a muſike to drawe one another to ſleepe, till within a very little while, with the other parties well counterfeyt ſleepe (who was as willing to be rid of him, as he was to be gone thence) aſſuring himſelfe he left all ſafe there, in the ſame order ſtale out agayne, and putting on his night gowne, with much groping and ſcrambling, he gate himſelfe out of the little houſe, and then did the Moone-light ſerue to guide his feete. Thus with a great deale of payne, did *Baſilius* goe to her whome he fledde, and with much cunning left the perſon for whome he had employed all his cunning. But when *Baſilius* was once gotten (as he thought) into a cleare coaſt what ioye he then made, how each thing ſeemed vile in his ſight, in compariſon of his fortune, how farre already he deemed himſelfe in the chiefe tower of his deſires, it were tedious to tell: once his heart could not chooſe but yeeld this ſong, as a fayring of his contentment.

GEt hence foule Griefe, the canker of the minde:
Farewell Complaint, the miſers only pleaſure:
Away vayne Cares, by which fewe men do finde
Their ſought-for treaſure.

Ye helpleſſe Sighes, blowe out your breath to nought,
Teares, drowne your ſelues, for woe (your cauſe) is waſted,
Thought, thinke to ende, too long the frute of thought
My minde hath taſted.

But thou, ſure Hope, tickle my leaping heart.
Comfort, ſtep thou in place of wonted ſadnes.
Fore-felt Deſire, begin to ſauour parts
Of comming gladnes.

Let voice of Sighes into cleare muſike runne,
Eyes, let your Teares with gazing now be mended,
In ſtede of Thought, true pleaſure be begunne,
And neuer ended.

Thus imagining as then with himſelfe, his ioyes ſo held him vp, that he neuer touched ground. And, like a right olde beaten ſouldiour, that knewe well enough the greateſt Captaynes do neuer vſe long Orations, when it commes to the very point of execution, as ſoone as he was gotten into the Caue, and to the ioyfull (though ſilent) expectation of *Gynecia*, come cloſe to the bed, neuer recking his promiſe to looke for nothing but conference, he lept into that ſide reſerued for a more welcome gueſt. And layeng his louingeſt hold vpon *Gynecia*: O *Zelmane*, ſayd he, embrace in your fauor this humble ſeruant of yours: hold within me my heart, which pantes to leaue his maiſter to come vnto you. In what caſe poore *Gynecia* was, when ſhe knewe the voyce, and felt the bodie of her husband, faire Ladies, it is better to knowe by imagination then experience. For ſtraight was her minde aſſaulted, partly with the being depriued of her vnquenched deſire, but principallie

pallie with the doubt that *Zelmane* had betrayed her to her husband, beſides the renewed ſting of iealoſie, what in the meane time might befall her daughter. But of the other ſide, her loue, with a fixed perſwaſion ſhe had, taught her to ſeeke all reaſon of hopes. And therein thought beſt before diſcouering of her ſelfe, to marke the behauiour of her husband; who, both in deedes and wordes ſtill vſing her, as taking her to be *Zelmane*, made *Gynecia* hope that this might be *Baſilius* owne enterpriſe, which *Zelmane* had not ſtayed, leaſt ſhe ſhould diſcouer the matter which might be perfourmed at another time. Which hope accompanyed with *Baſilius* maner of dealing, (he being at that time fuller of huelier fancies, then many yeares before he had bene) beſides the remembrance of her daughters ſickneſſe, and late ſtrange countenance betwixt her & *Zelmane*, all comming together into her mind, which was loth to condemne it ſelfe of an vtter ouerthrow, made her frame her ſelfe, not truly with a ſugred ioye, but with a determinate patience to let her husband thinke, he had found a very gentle and ſupple-minded *Zelmane*; which he good man making full reckening of, did melt in as much gladneſſe as ſhe was oppreſſed with diuers vngratefull burthens.

But *Pyrocles* who had at this preſent no more to play the part of *Zelmane*, hauing ſo naturally meaſured the maner of his breathing, that *Baſilius* made no doubt of his ſounde ſleeping, and layne a preatie while with a quiet vnquietnes to perfourme his entended enterpriſe, as ſoone as by the debate betwixt *Baſilius* ſhinnes and the vnregarding fourmes he perceiued that he had fully left the Lodge: after him went he with ſtealing ſteps, hauing his ſword vnder his arme (ſtill doubting leaſt ſome miſchance might turne *Baſilius* backe againe) downe to the gate of the Lodge. Which not content to locke faſt, he barred and fortified with as many deuiſes, as his wit and haſte would ſuffer him, that ſo he might haue full time both for making readye *Philoclea*, and conueying her to her horſe, before any might come in to finde them miſſing. For further endes of thoſe endes, and what might enſue of this action, his loue and courage well matched neuer looked after, houlding for an aſſured grounde, that whoſoeuer in great things will thinke to preuent all obiections, muſt lye ſtill, and doo nothing. This determination thus wayed, the firſt part thus perfourmed, vp to *Philocleas* chamber dore went *Pyrocles*, rapt from himſelfe with the exceſſiue fore-feeling of his (as he aſſured himſelfe) neere comming contentment. What euer paynes he had taken, what daungers, he had runne into, and eſpecially thoſe ſawcy pages of loue, doubts, griefes, languiſhing hopes, and threatning deſpayres, came all now to his minde, in one ranke to beawtifye his expected blisfulneſſe, and to ſerue for a moſt fit ſawce, whoſe foureneſſe might giue a kinde of life to the delightfull cheare his imagination fed vpon. All the great eſtate of his father, all his owne glorie, ſeemed vnto him but a trifling pompe, whoſe good ſtands in other mens conceit, in cõpariſon of the true comfort he found in the depth of his mind, and the knowledge of any miſerie that might enſue this ioyous aduenture, was recked of but as a ſlight purchaſe of poſſeſſing the top of happines, for ſo farre were his thoughts paſt through all perils, that alreadie he conceyued himſelfe ſafelie arriued with his Ladie at the ſtately pallace of *Pella*, among the exceeding ioyes of his father, and infinite congratulacions of his frends, geuing order for the royall entertayning of *Philoclea*, and for ſumptuous ſhewes and triumphes againſt their mariage. In the thought wherof as he found extremity of ioy, ſo well found he that extremitie is not without a certayne ioyfull paine,

by extending the heart beyond his wonted limits, and by ſo forcible a holding all the ſenſes to one obiect, that it confounds their mutuall working, not without a charming kinde of rauiſhing them, from the free vſe of their owne function. Thus grieued only with too much gladnes, being come to the doore, which ſhould be the entrie to his happines, he was met with the latter end of a ſong, which *Philoclea* like a ſolitarie Nightingale, bewayling her guiltleſſe puniſhment, and helpleſſe misfortune, had newly deliuered ouer, meaning none ſhould be iudge of her paſſiõ, but her owne conſcience. The ſong hauing bene accorded to a ſweetly playde on Lute, conteyned theſe verſes, which ſhe had lately with ſome arte curiouſly written, to enwrap her ſecret and reſolute woes.

VErtue, beawtie, and ſpeach, did ſtrike, wound, charme,
My harte, eyes, eares, with wonder, loue, delight:
Firſt, ſecond, laſt, did binde, enforce, and arme,
His workes, ſhowes, ſuites, with wit, grace, and vow's might.

Thus honour, liking, truſt, much, farre, and deepe,
Held, pearſt, poſſeſt, my iudgement, ſence, and will,
Till wrong, contempt, deceipt, did growe, ſteale, creepe,
Bandes, fauour, faith, to breake, defile, and kill.

Then greefe, vnkindnes, proofe, tooke, kindled, tought,
Well grounded, noble, due, ſpite, rage, diſdaine,
But ah, alas! (In vayne) my minde, ſight, thought,
Doth him, his face, his words, leaue, ſhunne, refraine,
For no thing, time, nor place, can looſe, quench, eaſe,
Mine owne, embraced, ſought, knot, fire, deſeaſe.

The force of loue to thoſe poore folke that feele it, is many wayes very ſtrange, but no way ſtranger, then that it doth ſo enchaine the louers iudgement vpon her that holdes the raines of his minde, that what ſoeuer ſhe doth is euer in his eyes beſt. And that beſt, being by the continuall motion of our changing life, turned by her to any other thing, that thing againe becommeth beſt. So that nature in each kinde ſuffring but one ſuperlatiue, the louer only admits no poſitiue. If ſhe ſit ſtill, that is beſt, for ſo is the conſpiracie of her ſeuerall graces held beſt together to make one perfect figure of beawtie. If ſhe walke, no doubt that is beſt, for beſides the making happie the more places by her ſteps, the very ſturring addes a pleaſing life to her natiue perfectiõs. If ſhe be ſilent, that without compariſon is beſt, ſince by that meanes the vntroubled eye, moſt freely may deuoure the ſweetnes of his obiect. But if ſhe ſpeake, he will take it vpon his death that is beſt, the quinteſſence of each worde, beeing diſtilled downe into his affected ſoule. Example of this was well to be

ſeene

ſeene in the giuen ouer *Pyrocles*, who with panting breath, and ſomtime ſighes, not ſuch as ſorrowe reſtrayning the inwarde partes doth make them glad to deliuer, but ſuch as the impacience of delay, with the vnſuretie of neuer ſo ſure hope, is wont to breath out nowe being at the doore, of the one ſide, hearing her voice, which hee thought if the Philoſophers ſaid true of the heauenly ſeuen ſphered harmony, was by her not only repreſented, but farre ſurmounted, and of the other hauing his eyes ouerfilled with her beautie, (for the King at his parting had left the chamber open, and ſhe at that time laye, as the heate of that countrie did wel ſuffer, vpon the toppe of her bedd, hauing her beauties eclipſed with nothing but with a faire ſmock, wrought al in flames of aſh-coullour ſilke and golde, lying ſo vpō her right ſide, that the left thigh downe to the foote, yeelded his delightfull proportion to the full vew which was ſeene by the helpe of a ritche lampe, which thorowe the curtaines a little drawne caſte forth a light vpon her, as the moone doth when it ſhines into a thinne wood) *Pyrocles* I ſaye was ſtopped with the violence of ſo many dartes, caſt by *Cupid* altogether vpon him, that quite forgetting him ſelfe, and thinking therein alreadie he was in the beſt degree of felicitie, he would haue loſt much of his time, and with too much loue omitted the enterpriſe vnder taken for his loue, had not *Philocleas* pittifull accuſing of him forced him to bring his ſpirites againe, to a newe bias, for ſhee laying her hand vnder her faire cheek, vpon which there did priuilie tickle the ſweet droppes of her delightfull though ſorrowfull teares, made theſe wordes waite vpon her monefull ſonge. And hath that cruell *Pyrocles* ſaide ſhee, deſerued thus much of me, that I ſhould for his ſake lift vp my voice in my beſt tunes, and to him continually, with powring out my plainte, make a diſdayned oblacion? Shall my ſoule ſtill doe this honour to his vnmercyfull tirranie, by my lamenting his loſſe, to ſhow his worthines and my weakenes? He heares thee not ſimple *Philoclea*, he heares thee not; and if he did, ſome hartes grow the harder, the more they find their aduantage. Alas what a miſerable conſtitution of minde haue I! I diſdaine my fortune, and yet reuerence him that diſdaines me. I accuſe his vngratefulnes, and haue his vertue in admiration. O yee deafe heauens, I would either his iniury could blot out myne affection, or my affection could forget his iniury. With that geuing a pittiful but ſweet ſhriche, ſhee tooke againe the lute, and beganne to ſing this ſonnet which might ſerue as an explaining to the other:

THe loue which is imprinted in my ſoule
With beauties ſeale, and vertue faire diſguiſ'de,
With inward cries putts vp a bitter role
Of huge complaintes, that now it is deſpiſ'de.

Thus thus the more I loue, the wronge the more
Monſtrous appeares, long trueth receaued late,
Wrong ſturres remorſed greefe, griefes deadly ſore
Vnkindnes breedes, vnkindnes foſtreth hath.

But ah the more I hate, the more I thinke
Whome I doe hate, the more I thinke on him,
The more his matchleſſe giftes do deepely ſinck
Into my breſte, and loues renewed ſwimme.

What medicin then, can ſuch deſeaſe remoue
Where loue draws hate, and hate engendreth loue?

But *Pyrocles* that had heard his name accuſed, & cõdemned by the mouth which of all the world, and more then all the world, he moſt loued: had then cauſe enough to call his minde to his home, and with the moſt haſte he could (for true loue feares the accident of an inſtant) to match the excuſing of his faulte, with declaration of his arrand thither. And therefore blowne vp & downe with as many contrary paſſions, as *Æolus* ſent out windes vpon the troian reliques, guided vpon the ſea by the valiant *Æneas*, hee went into her chamber with ſuch a pace as reuerent feare doth teach, where kneeling downe, and hauing prepared a long diſcourſe for her, his eies were ſo filled with her ſight that as if they woulde haue robbed all their fellowes of their ſeruices, both his hart fainted, and his toung fayled in ſuch ſorte, that he could not bring forth one word, but referred her vnderſtanding to his eyes language. But ſhe in extremitie amazed to ſee him there, at ſo vndue a ſeaſon, & aſhamed that her beautifull body made ſo naked a proſpect, drawing in her delicate lims into the weake guard of the bedd, and preſenting in her face to him ſuch a kinde of pittifull anger, as might ſhew, this was only a fault, therfore becauſe ſhe had a former grudge vnto him, turning away her face from him ſhe thus ſaid vnto him: O *Zelmane* or *Pyrocles*, (for whether name I vſe it much skils not, by the one I was firſt deceiued, & by the other now betrayed) what ſtrange motion is the guide of thy cruel mind hither? Doſt thou not thinke the day torments thou haſt giuen me ſufficient, but that thou doeſt enuie me the nights quiet? Wilt thou giue my ſorrowes no truce, but by making me ſee before mine eyes how much I haue loſt, offer me due cauſe of cõfirming my plainte? Or is thy hart ſo full of rancour, that thou doſt deſire to feede thine eyes with the wretched ſpectacle of thine ouerthrowen enemie, and ſo to ſatisfie the full meaſure of thy vndeſerued rage, with the receuing into thy ſight the vnreleuable ruines of my deſolate life? O *Pyrocles*, *Pyrocles* for thine own vertues ſake, let miſeries be no muſique vnto thee, & be content to take to thy ſelfe ſome coloure of excuſe, that thou dideſt not knowe to what extremitie thy inconſtancie, or rather falſhood hath brought me. *Pyrocles* to whom euery ſillable ſhe pronounced, was a thunderboult to his hart, equally diſtraught betwixt amaſement & ſorow, abaſhed to ſe ſuch a ſtop of his deſires, greued with her paine, but torm̃eted to find himſelf the author of it, with quaking lips, & pale cheere, alas diuine Lady ſaid he, your diſpleaſure is ſo contrary to my deſerte, & your words ſo farre beyond all expectatiõs, that I haue leaſt abilitie now I haue moſt need, to ſpeake in the cauſe vpõ which my life dependeth. For my troth is ſo vndoubtedly cõſtãt vnto you, my hart is ſo aſſured a witnes to it ſelf, of his vnſpotted faith, that hauing no one thing in me, wherout any ſuch ſacriledg might ariſe, I haue likewiſe nothing in ſo direct a thing to ſay for my ſelfe, but ſincere & vehem̃t proteſtatiõs, for in truth, there may moſt words be ſpent, where there is ſome probabilitie, to breed of both ſids cõiectural allegatiõs. But ſo perfect a thing as my loue is of you, as it ſuffers no queſtiõ, ſo it ſemes to receiue iniurie by additiõ of any words vnto it. Yf my ſoule could haue ben polluted with treachery, it woulde likewiſe haue prouided for it ſelf, due furniture of coullourable anſweres, but as it ſhould vpõ the naked cõſcience of his vntouched dutie, ſo I muſt cõfes it is altogether vnarmed againſt ſo vniuſt a violẽce as you lay vpõ me, alas! let not the paines I haue takẽ toſerue you, be now accoũted iniurious vnto you, let not the dãgerous cũning I haue vſed to pleaſure you be demed a treaſõ againſt you, ſince I haue deceued thẽ whom

you

you feare for your ſake, doe not you deſtroye mee for their ſake what can I without you further doe? Or to what more forwardnes can any counſell bring our deſired happines? I haue prouided whatſoeuer is needfull for our going, I haue rid them both out of the lodge, ſo that there is none here to bee hinderers or knowers of our departure, but only the almightie powers, whom I inuoke as triers of mine innocencie and witneſſes of my wel meaning. And if euer my thoughts did receiue ſo much as a fainting in their affections: if they haue not continually with more and more ardoure, from time to time purſued the poſſeſſion of your ſweeteſt fauour; if euer in that poſſeſſion they receaued either ſpott, or falſhoode: Then let their moſt horrible plagues fall vpon me, let mine eyes be depriued of the light which did abaſe the heauenly beames that ſtrake them, let my falſified toung ſerue to no vſe but to bee more mine owne wretchednes, let my harte empoyſoned with deteſtable treaſon, be the ſeate of infernall ſorrowe, let my ſoule with the endles anguiſh of his conſcience become his owne tormentor. O falſe mankind cried out the ſweete *Philoclea*. How can an impoſtumed heart, but yeelde forth euill matter by his mouth? Are oathes there to be beleeued, where vowes are broken? No no, who doth wounde the eternall iuſtice of the Gods, cares little for abuſing their names: and who in doing wickedly doth not feare due recompencing plagues, doth little feare that inuoking of plagues, will make them come euer a whit the ſooner. But alas what ayleth this new conuerſation, haue you yet another ſleight to playe, or doe you think to deceaue me in *Pyrocles* forme, as you haue done in *Zelmanes*? Or rather now you haue betrayed me in both, is ſome third ſex left you, into which you can transforme your ſelfe to inueigle my ſimplicitie? Enioye, enioye the conqueſt you haue already wone: and aſſure your ſelfe you are come to the fartheſt pointe of your cunning. For my parte vnkinde *Pyrocles*, my only defence ſhalbe beleefe of nothing, my comforte my faithfull innocencie, and the puniſhment I deſire of you ſhalbe your owne conſcience. *Philocleas* hard perſeuering in this vniuſt condemnation of him, did ſo ouerthrowe all the might of *Pyrocles* minde (who ſaw that time woulde not ſerue to proue by deedes, and that the better wordes he vſed, the more they were ſuſpected of deceiptfull cunning.) That voide of all counſell, and depriued of all comforte, finding beſt deſertes puniſhed, and neareſt hopes preuented, hee did abandon the ſuccour of himſelfe, and ſuffered griefe ſo to cloſe his harte, that his breath fayling him, with a deathfull ſhutting off his eyes hee fell downe at her bedſide, hauing had time to ſay no more, but oh whom doeſt thou kil *Philoclea*? She that litle looked for ſuch an extreame euent of her doinges, ſtarte out of her bedd, like *Venus* riſing from her mother the ſea, not ſo much ſtriken downe with amazement, and griefe of her faulte, as lifted vp with the force of loue and deſire to helpe, ſhe laide her faire body ouer his breſt, and throwing no other water in his face, but the ſtreame of her teares nor giuing him other blowes but the kiſſing of her welformed mouth, her onely cries were theſe lamentations: O vnfortunate ſuſpicion, ſaide ſhee, the very meane to looſe that we moſt ſuſpect to looſe. O vnkind kindneſſe of mine, which returnes an imagined wrong with an effectuall iniury. O foole to make quarell my ſupplication or to vſe hate as the mediator of loue, childiſh *Philoclea*, had thou throwne away the Iewell wherein all thy pride conſiſted? Haſt thou with too much haſt ouerrun thy ſelfe? Then would ſhe renew her kiſſes: O yet not finding the life retourne, redouble her plaintes in this manner: O diuine ſoule, ſaide ſhe, whoſe vertue can poſſeſſe no leſſe then the higheſt place in heauen, if for mine eternall plague, thou haſte

vtterly

vtterly leſte this moſt ſweet manſion, before I follow thee with *Thisbes* puniſhment for my raſhe vnwarineſſe, heare this proteſtation of mine: That as the wrong I haue done thee proceeded of a moſt ſincere, but vnreſiſtable affection: ſo led with this pittifull example it ſhall ende in the mortall hate of my ſelfe, and (if it may be) I will make my ſoule a tombe of thy memory. At that worde with anguiſh of minde and weakenes of body encreaſed one by the other, and both augmented by this feareful accident, ſhe had falne downe in a ſounde: but that *Pyrocles* then firſt ſeuering his eye liddes, and quickly apprehending her daunger, to him more then death, beyond all powers ſtriuing to recouer the commaundement of al his powers, ſtaied her from falling: and then, lifting the ſweet burthen of her body in his armes, laid her againe in her bedd. So that ſhe, but then the Phyſition, was nowe become the pacient: & he, to whom her weakneſſe had bene ſeruiceable, was now enforced to do ſeruice to her weakneſſe, which performed by him with that hartie care, which the moſt carefull loue on the beſt loued ſubiect in greateſt extremitie could employ, preuailed ſo farre, that ere long ſhee was able (though in ſtrength exceedingly deiected) to call home her wandering ſenſes, to yeelde attention to that her beloued *Pyrocles* had to deliuer. But he lying downe on the bed by her, holding her hand in his, with ſo kind an accuſing her of vnkindnes, as in accuſing her he condemned himſelf, began from pointe to pointe to diſcouer vnto her all that had paſſed betwene his loathed louers & him. How he had entertained, & by entertaining deceiued, both *Baſilius* & *Gynecia*: & that with ſuch a kind of deceipt, as either might ſee the cauſe in the other but neither eſpie the effect in themſelues. That al his fauors to thē had tended only to make them ſtrangers to this his actiō: & al his ſtrangnes to her to the final obtaining of her long promiſed, & now to be perfourmed fauour. Which deuiſe ſeing it had ſo well ſucceeded to the remouing all other hinderances, that only her reſolutiō remained for the taking their happy iournie, he coniured her by al the loue ſhe had euer borne him, ſhee would make no longer delay to partake with him whatſoeuer honors the noble kingdōe of *Macedon*, & al other *Euarchus* dominiōs might yeeld him, eſpecially ſince in this enterpriſe he had now waded ſo farr, as he could not poſſibly retire himſelf back, without being ouerwhelmed with daūger & diſhōour. He neded not haue vſed further arguments of perſwaſiō: for that only coniuratiō had ſo forcibly bound all her ſpirits, that could her body haue ſecōded her mind, or her mind haue ſtrengthened her body, without reſpect of any worldly thing, but only feare to be againe vnkind to *Pyrocles*, ſhe had condiſcended to goe with him. But raiſing her ſelfe a litle in her bed, & finding her own vnabilitie in any ſorte to endure the aire: My *Pyrocles* ſaid ſhe (with teareſull eyes & a pittifull coūtenance, ſuch as well witneſſed ſhe had no will to deny any thing ſhe had power to performe) if you can conuey me hence in ſuch plight as you ſee me; I am moſt willing to make my extreameſt daūger a teſtimonie, that I eſteme no daūger in regard of your vertuous ſatisfaction. But if ſhee fainted ſo faſte, that ſhe was not able to vtter the reſt of her conceiued ſpeech: which alſo turned *Pyrocles* thoughts from expecting further anſwere, to the neceſſary care of reuiuing her, in whoſe fainting himſelf was more thē ouerthrown. And that hauing effected with al the ſweet meās his wits could deuiſe, though his higheſt hopes were by this vnexpected downfall ſunke deeper thē any degree of diſpaire: yet leſt the appearāce of his inward grief might occaſiō her further diſcōfort, hauing racked his face to a more cōfortable ſemblāce, he ſought ſome ſhew of reaſon, to ſhew ſhee had no reaſon, either for him, or for her ſelfe ſo to be afflicted. Which in the ſweete minded *Philoclea*, whoſe conſideration was limited by his wordes, and whoſe

conceite

conceite pearced no deeper then his outwarde countenaunce, wrought within a while ſuch quietneſſe of mind, and that quietneſſe againe ſuch repoſe of bodie, that ſlepe by his harbingers weakeneſſe, wearines, and watchfulnes, had quickly taken vp his lodging in all her ſenſes. Then indeed had *Pyrocles* leaſure to ſit in iudgement on himſelfe, and to heare his reaſon accuſe his raſhnes, who, without forecaſte of doubte, without knowledge of his friende, without acquainting *Philoclea* with his purpoſe or being made acquainted with her preſent eſtate, had falne headlong into that attempt, the ſucceſſe whereof hee had long ſince ſet downe to himſelfe as the meaſure of all his other fortunes. But calling to minde howe weakely they do that rather finde faulte with what cannot be amended, then ſeek to amend wherein they haue beene faultie: he ſoone turned him from remembring what might haue beene done to conſidering what was now to be done, and when that conſideration fayled what was now to be expected. Wherein hauing runne ouer all the thoughts, his reaſon called to the ſtricteſt accountes could bring before him, at length he lighted on this: That as long as *Gynecia* bewraied not the matter (which he thought ſhe woulde not doe, aſwell for her owne honour and ſafetie, as for the hope ſhe might ſtil haue of him, which is loth to die in a louers hart) all the reſt might turne to a preatie meryment, and enflame his louer *Baſilius*, againe to caſt aboute for the miſſed fauour. And as naturally the harte ſtuffed vp with wofulnes is glad greedelie to ſucke the thinneſt aire of comforte: ſo did hee, at the firſt, embrace this conceite as offeringe great hope, if not aſſurance of well doing. Till looking more neerely into it, and not able to anſwere the doubts and difficulties he ſawe therein more and more ariſing the night being alſo farre ſpent, his thoughtes euen wearie of their owne burthens, fell to a ſtraying kind of vncertaintie: and his minde ſtanding onely vpon the nature of inward intelligences lefte his bodie to giue a ſleeping reſpite to his vitall ſpirites, which he, according to the qualitie of Sorrow, receiued with greater greedines then euer in his life before. According to the nature of ſorrow, I ſay, which is paſt cares remedie. For care ſturring the braines, and making thinne the ſpirites breaketh reſt: but thoſe griefes wherein one is determined there is no preuenting, do brede a dull heauineſſe which eaſely clothes it ſelfe in ſleepe. So as laid downe ſo neare the beautie of the worlde *Philoclea*, that their neckes were ſubiect each to others chaſte embracements, it ſeemed loue had come thither to laye a plott in that picture of death how gladly, if death came, their ſoules would goe together.

The thirde Egloges.

Thyrſis not with many painted words nor falſified promiſes, had wone the conſent of his beloued *Kala*, but with a true & ſimple making her know he loued her not forcing himſelfe beyond his reach to buy her affection, but giuing her ſuch preatie preſentes, as neither coulde wearie him with the giuing, nor ſhame her for the taking. Thus the firſt Strawberies he could find, were euer in a cleane waſht diſh ſent to *Kala* thus poeſies of the ſpring flowers were wrapt vp in a litle grene ſilke and dedicated to *Kalas* breſtes, thus ſomtimes his ſweeteſt Creame, ſometimes the beſt Cakebread his mother made, were reſerued for *Kalas* taſte. Neither would hee ſtick to kil a lambwhen ſhe would be content to come ouer the way vnto him. But thē lo, how the houſe was ſwept & rather no fire thē any ſmoke lefte to trouble her. Then loue ſonges were not daintie, when ſhe would heare them, and as much manerlie

nerlie ſilence when ſhee would not: in going to Church great worſhip to *Kala*. So that all the pariſh ſaid, neuer a maide they knew ſo well wayted on: and when dauncing was about the Maypole, no body taken out but ſhe, and he after a leape or two to ſhewe her his owne actiuitie, would frame all the reſt of his dauncing, onely to grace her. As for her fathers ſheepe, he had no leſſe care of them then his owne: ſo that ſhe might play her as ſhe would, warranted with honeſt *Thyrſis* carefulnes. But if he ſpied *Kala* fauourd any one of the flocke more then his fellowes, then that was cheriſhed: ſhearing him ſo (when ſhorne he muſt be) as might moſt become him: but while the wole was on, wrapping within it ſome verſes, wherin *Thyrſis* had a ſpeciall giſte, and making the innocent beaſt his vnweting meſſinger. Thus conſtantly continuing, though he were none of the fayreſt, at length he wanne *Kalas* harte, the honeſteſt wenche in all thoſe quarters. And ſo with conſent of both parents (without which nether *Thyrſis* would aske, nor *Kala* grant) their marring day was appointed, which becauſe it fell out in this time, I thinke it ſhall not be impertinent, to remember a little our ſhepheards, while the other greater perſons, are either ſleeping or otherwiſe troubled. *Thyrſis* mariage time once knowne, there needed no inuiting of the neighbours in that valley, for ſo well was *Thyrſis* beloued, that they were already to doe him credit, neither yet came they like Harpies to deuoure him: but on bought a fat pigge, the other a tender kidd, the thirde a great gooſe: as for cheſe, milke, & butter, were the goſſips preſents. Thither came of ſtrange ſhepheards onely the melancholy *Philiſides*, for the vertuous *Coridon* had long ſince left off al his ioyful ſolemnities. And as for *Strephon* and *Klaius*, they had loſt their miſtreſſe, which put them into ſuch extreme ſorrowes as they could ſcarcely abide the light of the daye, much leſſe the eyes of men. But of the *Arcadian* borne ſhepheardes, thither came good olde *Geron*, young *Hiſtor*, though vnwilling, and vpright *Dicus*, mery *Paſſ* and iolly *Nico*. As for *Dametas* they durſt not preſume (his pride was ſuch) to inuite him: and *Dorus* they founde might not bee ſpared. And there vnder a bower was made of bowes (for *Thyrſis* houſe was not able to receaue them) euery one placed according to his age. The women (for ſuch was the maner of the country) kept together to make good cheare among themſelues, from which otherwiſe a certaine painefull modeſtie reſtraines them, and there might the ſadder matrones giue good counſel to *Kala*: who poore ſoule wept for feare of that ſhe deſired. But among the ſhepheards was al honeſt libertie, no feare of daungerous tel-tales, who hunt greater prayes, nor indeede mindes in them to giue tell-tales any occaſion; but one queſtioning with another of the manuring his ground, and gouerning his flock, the higheſt pointe they reached to was to talke of the holines of mariage, to which purpoſe aſſoone as their ſober dynner was ended, *Dycus* inſteede of thankes, ſange this ſonge with a cleare voice and cheerfull countenaunce.

LEt mother earth now decke her ſelfe in flowers,
To ſee her offſpring ſeeke a good increaſe,
Where iuſteſt loue doth vanquiſh Cupids *powers*
And ware of thoughts is ſwallow'd vp in peace
Which neuer may decreaſe
But like the turtells faire
Liue one in two, a well vnited paire,
Which that no chaunce may ſtaine,

O Himen *long their coupled ioyes maintaine.*

O heau'n awake ſhewe forth thy ſtately face,
Let not theſe ſlumbring clowds thy beawties hide,
But with thy cheereſull preſence helpe to grace
The honeſt Bridegroome, and the baſhfull Bride,
Whoſe loues may euer bide,
Like to the Elme and Vyne,
With mutuall embracements them to twyne:
In which delightfull paine,
O Himen *long their coupled ioyes maintaine.*

Yee Muſes all which chaſte affects allow,
And haue to Thyrſis *ſhewd your ſecret skill,*
To this chaſte loue your ſacred fauours bow,
And ſo to him and her your giftes diſtill,
That they all vice may kill:
And like to lillies pure
May pleaſe all eyes, and ſpotleſſe may endure.
Where that all bliſſe may raigne,
O Himen *long their coupled ioyes maintaine.*

Yee Nymphes which in the waters empire haue,
Since Thyrſis *muſick oft doth yeeld you praiſe,*
Graunt to the thing which we for Thyrſis *craue.*
Let one time (but long firſt) cloſe vp their daies,
One graue their bodies ſeaze:
And like two riuers ſweete,
When they though diuers do together meete:
One ſtreame both ſtreames containe,
O Himen *long their coupled ioyes maintaine.*

Pan, *father* Pan, *the god of ſilly ſheepe,*
Whoſe care is cauſe that they in number growe,
Haue much more care of them that them do keepe,
Since from theſe good the others good doth flowe,
And make their iſſue ſhowe
In number like the hearde
Of yonglings, which thy ſelfe with loue haſt reard.
Or like the drops of raine.
O Himen *long their coupled ioyes maintaine.*

Vertue (if not a God) yet Gods chiefe parte,
Be thou the knot of this their open vowe,
That ſtill he be her head, ſhe be his harte,
He leane to her, ſhe vnto him do bow:
Each other ſtill allow:

Like Oke and Miſſletoe.
Her ſtrength from him, his praiſe from her do growe.
In which moſt lowely traine,
O Himen *long their coupled ioyes maintaine.*

But thou ſoule Cupid *fyre to lawleſſe luſt,*
Be thou farre hence with thy empoyſon'd darte,
Which though of glittring golde, ſhall heere take ruſt
Where ſimple loue, which chaſtneſſe doth imparte,
Auoydes thy hurtfull arte,
Not needing charming skill,
Such mindes with ſweet affections for to fill,
Which being pure and plaine,
O Himen *long their coupled ioyes maintaine.*

All churliſh wordes, ſhrewd anſweres, crabbed lookes,
All priuatenes, ſelfe-ſeeking, inward ſpite,
All waywardnes, which nothing kindly brookes,
All ſtrife for toyes, and clayming maſters right:
Be hence aye put to flight,
All ſturring husbands hate
Gainſt neighbors good for womaniſh debate
Be fled as things moſt vaine,
O Himen *long their coupled ioyes maintaine.*

All peacock pride, and fruites of peacocks pride
Longing to be with loſſe of ſubſtance gay
With retchleſnes what may thy houſe betide,
So that you may on hyer ſlippers ſtay
For euer hence awaye:
Yet let not ſluttery,
The ſinke of filth, be counted huſwifery:
But keeping holeſome meane,
O Himen *long their coupled ioyes maintaine.*

But aboue all away vile iealouſie,
The euill of euils iuſt cauſe to be vniuſt,
(How can he loue ſuſpecting treacherie?
How can ſhe loue where loue cannot win truſt?)
Goe ſnake hide thee in duſt,
Ne dare once ſhew thy face,
Where open hartes do holde ſo conſtant place,
That they thy ſting reſtraine,
O Himen *long their coupled ioyes maintaine.*

The earth is deckt with flowers, the heau'ns diſplaid,
Muſes graunt guiftes, Nymphes long and ioyned liſe,

Pan *ſtore of babes, vertue their thoughts well ſtaid,*
Cupids *luſt gone, and gone is bitter ſtrife,*
Happy man, happy wife.
No pride ſhall them oppreſſe,
Nor yet ſhall yeeld to loathſome ſluttiſhnes,
And iealouſie is ſlaine:
For Himen *will their coupled ioyes maintaine.*

Truly *Dicus*, ſayd *Nico*, although thou didſt not graunt me the price the laſt day, when vndoubtedly I wan it, yet muſt I needes ſay, thou for thy parte haſt ſoong well and thriftelie. *Pas* ſtraight deſired all the companie they would beare witnes, that *Nico* had once in his life ſpoken wiſely; for ſayde he, I will tell it his father, who will be a glad man when he heares ſuch newes. Very true, ſayd *Nico*, but indeede ſo would not thine in like caſe, for he would looke thou ſhouldeſt liue but one houre longer, that a diſcreate word wandred out of thy mouth. And I pray thee (ſayd *Pas*) gentle *Nico*, tell me what miſchaunce it was that brought thee to taſte ſo fine a meate? Mary goodman blockhead ſayde *Nico*, becauſe hee ſpeakes againſt iealouſie, the filthie traytor to true affection, and yet diſguiſing it ſelfe in the rayment of loue. Sentences, Sentences, cried *Pas*. Alas howe ripe witted theſe young folkes be now adayes! But well counſelled ſhall that husband be, when this man commes to exhort him not to be iealous. And ſo ſhall he, aunſwered *Nico*, for I haue ſeene a freſh example, though it be not very fit to be knowen. Come, come, ſayde *Pas*, be not ſo ſqueamiſh, I knowe thou longeſt more to tell it, then we to heare it. But for all his wordes *Nico* would not beſtowe his voyce till he was generally entreated of all the reſt. And then with a merry marriage looke, he ſang this following diſcourſe, for with a better grace he could ſing then tell.

A Neighbor mine not long agoe there was,
(But nameleſſe he, for blameleſſe he ſhall be)
That married had a trick and bonny laſſe
As in a ſommer day a man might ſee:
But he himſelfe a ſoule vnhanſome groome,
And farre vnfit to hold ſo good a roome.

Now whether mou'd with ſelfe vnworthines,
Or with her beawtie fit to make a pray,
Fell iealouſie did ſo his braine oppreſſe,
That if he abſent were but halfe a day,
He geſt the worſt (you wot what is the worſt)
And in himſelfe new doubting cauſes nurſt.

While thus he fear'd the ſilly innocent,
Who yet was good, becauſe ſhe knewe none ill,
Vnto his houſe a iollie ſhepeheard went,
To whome our prince did beare a great good will,

Becauſe in wreſtling and in paſtorall
He farre did paſſe the reſt of Shepheards all.

And therefore he a courtier was benamed,
And as a courtier was with cheere receaued,
(For they haue toongs to make a poore man blamed.
If he to them his dutie miſconceaued)
And for this Courtier ſhould well like his table,
The goodman bad his wife be ſeruiceable.

And ſo ſhe was, and all with good intent,
But fewe dayes paſt while ſhe good maner vſde,
But that her husband thought her ſeruice bent
To ſuch an end as he might be abuſde.
Yet like a coward fearing ſtrangers pride,
He made the ſimple wench his wrath abide.

With chumpiſh lookes, hard words, and ſecret nips,
Grumbling at her when ſhe his kindnes ſought,
Asking her how ſhe taſted Courtiers lips,
He forſt her thinke that which ſhe neuer thought.
In fine he made her geſſe, there was ſome ſweet
In that which he ſo fear'd that ſhe ſhould meet.

When once this entred was, in womans hart,
And that it had enflam'd a new deſire,
There reſted then, to play a womans part,
Fuell to ſeeke and not to quench the fire:
But (for his iealous eye ſhe well did finde)
She ſtudied cunning how the ſame to blinde.

And thus ſhe did. One day to him ſhe came,
And (though againſt his will) on him ſhe leand,
And out gan cry, ah well away for ſhame,
If you helpe not our wedlocke will be ſtaind,
The goodman ſtarting, askt what did her moue?
She ſigh'd and ſayd, the bad gueſt ſought her loue.

He little looking that ſhe ſhould complaine
Of that, whereto he ſeard ſhe was enclinde,
Buſſing her oft, and in his hart full faine,
He did demaunde what remedy to finde;
How they might get that gueſt, from them to wend,
And yet the prince (that lou'd him) not offend.

Husband, quoth ſhe, go to him by and by,
And tell him you do finde I doo him loue,

And therefore pray him that of courteſie
He will abſent himſelfe, leaſt he ſhould moue
A young girles hart, to that were ſhame for both,
Whereto you knowe, his honeſt harte were loath.

Thus ſhall you ſhow that him you do not doubt,
And as for me (ſweete husband) I muſt beare.
Glad was the man when he had heard her out,
And did the ſame, although with mickle feare.
For feare he did, leaſt he the young man might
In choller put, with whom he would not fight.

The Courtlie ſhepheard much agaſt at this,
Not ſeeing earſt ſuch token in the wife,
Though full of ſcorne, would not his duty miſſe,
Knowing that euill becommes a houſhold ſtrife,
Did goe his way, but ſoiourn'd neere thereby,
That yet the ground hereof he might eſpie.

The wife thus hauing ſettled husbands braine,
Who would haue ſworne his ſpouſe Diana was,
Watched when ſhe a further point might gaine,
Which little time did fitlie bring to paſſe.
For to the Courte her man was calld by name,
Whither he needes muſt goe for feare of blame.

Three dayes before that he muſt ſure depart,
She written had (but in a hand diſguiſde)
A letter ſuch which might from either part
Seeme to proceede, ſo well it was deuiſde.
She ſeald it firſt, then ſhe the ſealing brake,
And to her iealous husband did it take.

With weeping eyes (her eyes ſhe taught to weepe)
She told him that the Courtier had it ſent:
Alas, quoth ſhe, thus womens ſhame doth creepe.
The goodman read on both ſides the content,
It title had, Vnto my only loue,
Subſcription was, Yours moſt, if you will proue.

The piſtle ſelfe, ſuch kinde of wordes it had,
My ſweeteſt ioy, the comfort of my ſprite,
So may thy flockes encreaſe thy deere hart glad,
So may each thing, euen as thou wiſheſt lighte,
As thou wilt deigne to reade and gentlie reede
This mourning inck, in which my hart doth bleede.

Long haue I lou'd, (alas thou worthy arte)
Long haue I lou'd, (alas loue craueth loue)
Long haue I lou'd thy ſelfe, alas my harte
Doth breake, now toong vnto thy name doth moue,
And thinke not that thy anſwere anſwere is,
But that it is my doome of bale or bliſſe.

The iealous wretch muſt now to Court be gone:
Ne can he faile, for prince hath for him ſent:
Now is the time we may be here alone,
And geue a long deſire a ſweet content.
Thus ſhall you both reward a louer true,
And eke reuenge his wrong ſuſpecting you.

And this was all, and this the husband read
With chafe enough, till ſhe him pacified:
Deſiring, that no griefe in him he bread
Now that he had her words ſo truely tried:
But that he would, to him the letter ſhow
That with his fault he might her goodnes know.

That ſtreight was done with many a boiſtrous threat,
That to the King, he would his ſinne declare,
But now the Courtier gan to ſmell the feate,
And with ſome words which ſhewed little care,
He ſtayd vntill the goodman was departed,
Then gaue he him the blow which neuer ſmarted.

Thus may you ſee, the iealous wretch was made
The Pandare of the thing, he moſt did feare,
Take heed therefore, how you enſue that trade,
Leaſt the ſame markes of iealouſie you beare.
For ſure, no iealouſie can that preuent,
Whereto two parties once be full content.

Behold, ſayd *Pas*, a whole dicker of wit: he hath pickt out ſuch a tale with intention to keepe a husband from iealouſie, which were enough to make a ſanctified husband iealous, to ſee ſubtleties ſo much in the feminine gender. But, ſayd he, I will ſtrike *Nico* dead, with the wiſe words ſhall flowe out of my gorge. And without further entreatie thus ſang.

WHo doth deſire that chaſte his wife ſhould be,
Firſt be he true, for truth doth truth deſerue:
Then ſuch be he, as ſhe his worth may ſee,
And one man ſtill credit with her preſerue.

Not toying kinde, nor cauſleſly vnkinde,

Not ſturring thoughts, nor yet denying right
Not ſpying faults, nor in plaine errors blinde,
Neuer hard hand, nor euer raines too light.

As farre from want, as farre from vaine expence,
(The one doth force, the later doth entiſe)
Allow good company, but kepe from thence
All filthy mouth's that glory in their vice.
This done, thou haſt no more, but leaue the reſt
To vertue, fortune, time & womans breſt.

Wel cõcluded ſaid *Nico*, When he hath done al, he leaues the matter to his wiues diſcretion. Now whenſoeuer thou marieſt, let her diſcretion decke thy head with *Actæons* ornament, *Pas* was ſo angrie with his wiſh, being in deede towards marriage, that they might perchaunce haue falne to buffets, but that *Dicus* deſired *Philiſides* (who as a ſtranger ſate among them, reuoluing in his mind al the tempeſts of euil fortunes hee had paſſed) that he woulde doe ſo much grace to the companie, as to ſing one of his country ſonges. *Philiſides* knowing it no good maners to be ſquemiſh of his comming, hauing put himſelf in their company, without further ſtudie began to vtter that, wherewith his thoughtes were then (as alwaies) moſt buſied: and to ſhew what a ſtraunger he was to himſelfe, ſpake of himſelfe as of a thirde perſon, in this ſorte.

THe ladd Philiſides
Lay by a riuers ſide,
In flowry fielde a gladder eye to pleaſe:
His pipe was at his foote
His lambs were him beſides,
A widow turtle neere on bared rootes
Sate wailing without bootes.
Each thing both ſweet & ſadd
Did draw his boyling braine
To thinke, & thinke with paine
Of Miras *beames eclipſt by abſence bad.*
And thus, with eyes made dimme
With teares, he ſaide, or ſorrow ſaid for him.
O earth, once anſwere giue,
So may thy ſtately grace
By north, or ſouth ſtill rich adorned liue:
So Mira *Long may be*
On thy then bleſſed face,
Whoſe foote doth ſet a heau'n on curſed thee,
I aske, now anſwere me.
If th' author of thy bliſſe
Phœbus, *that ſhepheard high*
Do turne from thee his eye,
Doth not thy ſelfe, when he long abſent is,

Like Rogue, all ragged goe,
And pine away with daily waſting woe?
Tell me you wanton brooke,
So may your ſliding race
Shunn lothed-louing bankes with conning crooke:
So in you euer new
Mira may looke her face,
And make you faire with ſhadow of her hue:
So when to pay your due
To mother ſea you come,
She chide you not for ſtay,
Nor beat you for your play,
Tell me if your diuerted ſprings become
Abſented quite from you,
Are you not dried? Can you your ſelues renew?
Tell me you flowers faire
Cowſlipp & Columbine,
So may your Make this wholſome ſpringtime aire
With you embraced lie,
And lately thence vntwine:
But with dew dropps engendre children hy:
So may you neuer dy,
But pulld by Miras hande
Dreſſe boſome hers or hedd,
Or ſcatter on her bedd,
Tell me, if husband ſpringtime leaue your lande,
When he from you is ſent,
Whither not you, languiſht with diſcontent?
Tell me my ſeely pipe,
So may thee ſtill betide
A clenly cloth thy moiſtnes for to wipe:
So may the cheries redd
Of Miras lipps diuide
Their ſugred ſelues to kiſſe thy happy hedd:
So may her eares be ledd,
Her eares where Muſique liues,
To heare, & not deſpiſe
The liribliring cries,
Tell, if that breath, which thee thy ſounding giues,
Be abſent farre from thee,
Abſent alone canſt thou then piping be:
Tell me my lamb of gold,
So maiſt thou long abide
The day well fed; the night in faithfull folde:
So grow thy wooll of note,
In time that richly di de
It may be part of Miras peticoate,

Tell

Tell me, if wolues the throte
Haue cought of thy deare damme,
Or she from thee be staide,
Or thou from her be straide,
Canst thou, poore lamme, become anothers lamme?
Or rather till thou die
Still for thy Dam with bea-waymenting crie?
Tell me ô Turtle true,
So may no fortune breed
To make thee nor thy better-loued rue:
So may thy blessings swarme
That Mira may thee feede
With hand & mouth, with lapp & brest keepe warme,
Tell me if greedy arme,
Do fondly take away
With traitor lime the one,
The other left alone,
Tell me poore wretch, parted from wretched pray
Disdaine not you the greene,
Wayling till death shun you not to be seene?
Earth, brooke, flowr's, pipe, lambe, Doue
Say all, & I with them,
Absence is death, or worse, to them that loue.
So I vnlucky lad
Whome hills from her do hemme,
What fitts me now but teares, & sighings sadd?
O fortune too too badd,
I rather would my sheepe
Thad'st killed with a stroke,
Burnt Caban lost my cloke,
When want one hower those eyes which my ioyes keepe.
Oh! what doth wailing winne?
Speeche without ende were better not begin.
My song elime thou the winde
Which holland sweet now gently sendeth in,
That on his wings the leauell thou maist finde
To hit, but Kissing hit
Her ear's the weights of wit.
If thou know not for whome thy Master dies,
These markes shall make thee wise:
She is the heardesse faire that shines in darke
And giues her kidds no food, but willow's barke.
This said, at length he ended,
His oft sigh-broken dittie,
Then raise, but raise on leggs: which faintnes bended,
With skinne in sorrow died,
With face the plot of pittie,

With thoughts which thoughts their owne tormentors tried,
He raſe, & ſtreight eſpied
His Ramme, who to recouer
The Ewe another loued,
With him proud battell proued.
He enuied ſuch a death in ſight of louer,
And alwaies weſtward eying
More enuied Phœbus *for his weſterne flying.*

The whole company would gladly haue taken this occaſion of requeſting *Philiſides* in plainer ſorte to diſcouer vnto them his eſtate. Which he willing to preuent (as knowing the relation thereof more fit for funeralles then the time of a mariage) began to ſing this ſong he had learned before he had euer ſubiected his thoughts to acknowledge no Maſter, but a Miſtreſſe.

AS I my little flocke on Iſter *banke*
(A little flocke, but well my pipe the couthe)
Did piping leade, the Sunne already ſanke
Beyond our worlde, and ere I got my boothe
Each thing with mantle black the night doth ſcothe,
Sauing the glowe worme, which would curteous be
Of that ſmall light oft watching ſhepheards ſee.

The welkin had full niggardly encloſed
In cofer of dimme clowdes his ſiluer groates,
Icleped ſtarres, each thing to reſt diſpoſed:
The caues were full, the mountaines voide of goates:
The birds eyes cloſd cloſed their chirping notes.
As for the Nightingale woodmuſiques King,
It Auguſt *was, he dayndc not then to ſing.*

Amid my ſheepe, though I ſawe nought to feare
Yet (for I nothing ſawe) I feared ſore,
Then founde I which thing is a charge to beare
As for my ſheepe I dradded mickle more
Then euer for my ſelfe ſince I was bore.
I ſate me downe: for ſee to goe ne could,
And ſange vnto my ſheepe leſt ſtray they ſhould.

The ſonge I ſange old Lanquet *had me taught,*
Lanquet, *the ſhepheard beſt ſwift* Iſter *knewe,*
For clerkly reed, and hating what is naught,
For faithfull hart, cleane hands, and mouth as true:
With his ſweet skill my skilleſſe youth he dreawe,
To haue a feeling taſt of him that ſitts
Beyond the heauen, far more beyond your witts.

He ſaid, the Muſique beſt thilke powers pleaſd
Was iumpe concorde betweene our wit and will:
Where higheſt notes to godlines are raiſd,
And loweſt ſinke not downe to iote of ill:
With old true tales: he woont mine eares to fill,
How ſheepheards did of yore, how now they thriue,
Spoiling their flock, or while twixt them they ſtriue.

He liked me, but pitied luſtfull youth:
His good ſtrong ſtaffe my ſlippry yeares vphore:
He ſtill hop'd well, becauſe he loued truth;
Till forſte to parte, with harte and eyes euen ſore,
To worthy Coriden he gaue me ore,
But thus in okes true ſhade recounted he
Which now in nights deepe ſhade ſheep heard of me.

Such maner time there was (what time I n'ot)
When all this Earth, this damme or mould of ours
Was onely won'd with ſuch as beaſtes begot:
Vnknowne as then were they that builded towers:
The cattell wild, or tame, in natures bowers
Might freely rome, or reſt, as ſeemed them:
Man was not man their dwellings into hem.

The beaſtes had ſure ſome beaſtly pollicie:
For nothing can endure where order n'is.
For once the Lion by the Lambe did lie;
The feareſull Hinde the Leopard did kiſſe:
Hurtles was Tygers pawe and Serpents hiſſe.
This thinke I well, the beaſts with courage clad
Like Senators a harmeles empire had.

At which whether the others did repine,
(For enuie harbreth moſt in feebleſt hartes)
Or that they all to chaunging did encline,
(As euen in beaſts their dammes leaue chaunging partes)
The multitude to Ioue a ſuite empartes,
With neighing, blaying, braying, and barking,
Roring, and howling for to haue a King.

A King, in language theirs they ſaid they would:
(For then their language was a perfect ſpeech)
The birdes likewiſe with chirpes, and puing could
Cackling, and chattering, that of Ioue beſeech.
Onely the owle ſtill warnde them not to ſeech
So haſtily that which they would repent:
But ſawe they would, and he to deſerts went.

Ioue wiſely ſaid (for wiſedome wiſely ſayes)
O beaſts, take heed what you of me deſire.
Rulers will thinke all things made them to pleaſe,
And ſoone forget the ſwincke due to their hire,
But ſince you will, part of my heau'nly fire
I will you lende; the reſt your ſelues muſt giue,
That it both ſeene and felte may with you liue.

Full glad they were and tooke the naked ſprite,
Which ſtreight the Earth yclothed in his claye:
The Lion, harte; the Ounce gaue actiue might;
The Horſe, good ſhape; the Sparrow, luſt to playe;
Nightingale, voice, entiſing ſonges to ſaye.
Elephant gaue a perfect memorie:
And Parot, ready tongue, that to applie.

The Foxe gaue crafte; the Dog gaue flatterie;
Aſſe, pacience; the Mole, a working thought;
Eagle, high looke; Wolfe ſecrete cruelſie:
Monkie, ſweet breath; the Cow, her faire eyes brought;
The Ermion, whiteſt skinne, ſpotted with nought;
The ſheep, mild-ſeeming face; climing, the Beare;
The Stagge did giue the harme eſchewing feare.

The Hare, her ſleights; the Cat, his melancholie;
Ante, induſtrie; and Connie, skill to builde;
Cranes, order; Storkes, to be appearing holie;
Camaleon, eaſe to chaunge; Ducke, eaſe to yelde;
Crocodile, teares, which might be falſely ſpilde:
Ape great thing gaue, though he did mowing ſtand,
The inſtrument of inſtruments, the hand.

Ech other beaſt likewiſe his preſent brings:
And (but they drad their Prince they ought ſhould want)
They all conſented were to giue him wings:
And aye more awe towards him for to plant,
To their owne worke this priuiledge they graunt,
That from thencefurth to all eternitie,
No beaſt ſhould freely ſpeake, but onely he.

Thus Man was made, thus Man their Lord became:
Who at the firſt, wanting, or hiding pride,
He did to beaſtes beſt vſe his cunning frame;
With water drinke, herbes meate, and naked hide,
And fellow-like let his dominion ſlide;
Not in his ſayings ſaying I, but we:
As if he meant his lordſhip common be.

But when his ſeate ſo rooted he had found,
That they now skilld not, how from him to wend;
Then gan in guiltleſſe earth full many a wound,
Iron to ſeeke, which gainſt it ſelfe ſhould bend,
To teare the bowels, that good corne ſhould ſend.
But yet the common Damme none did bemone;
Becauſe (though hurt) they neuer heard her grone.

Then gan the factions in the beaſtes to breed;
Where helping weaker ſort, the nobler beaſtes,
(As Tygers, Leopards, Beares, and Lions ſeed)
Diſdaind with this, in deſerts ſought their reſtes;
Where famine ranine taught their hungrie cheſtes,
That craftily he forſt them to do ill,
Which being done he afterwards would kill.

For murthers done, which neuer erſt was ſeene,
By thoſe great beaſtes, as for the weakers good,
He choſe themſelues his guarders for to bene,
Gainſt thoſe of might, of whom in feare they ſtood,
As horſe and dogge, not great, but gentle blood:
Blith were the commons cattell of the fielde,
Tho when they ſaw their foen of greatnes kilde.

But they or ſpent, or maide of ſlender might,
Then quickly did the meaner cattell finde,
The great beames gone, the houſe on ſhoulders light:
For by and by the horſe faire bitts did binde:
The dogge was in a coller taught his kinde.
As for the gentle birds like caſe might rewe
When falcon they, and goſſehauke ſaw in mewe.

Worſt fell to ſmalleſt birds, and meaneſt heard,
Whom now his owne, full like his owne he vſed.
Yet firſt but wooll, or fethers off he teard:
And when they were well vs'de to be abuſed,
For hungrie teeth their fleſh with teeth he bruſed:
At length for glutton taſte he did them kill:
At laſt for ſport their ſillie lines did ſpill.

But yet ô man, rage not beyond thy neede:
Deeme it no glorie to ſwell in tyrannie.
Thou art of blood; ioy not to ſee things bleede:
Thou feareſt death; thinke they are loth to die.
A plaint of guiltleſſe hurt doth pierce the skie.
And you poore beaſtes, in patience bide your hell,
Or know your ſtrengths, and then you ſhall do well.

Thus did I ſing, and pipe eight ſullen houres
To ſheepe, whom loue, not knowledge, made to heare,
Now fancies fits, now fortunes baleſull ſtowers:
But then I homewards call'd my lambkins deare:
For to my dimmed eyes began t'appeare
The night growne old, her blacke head waxen gray,
Sure ſhepherds ſigne, that morne ſhould ſoone fetch day.

ACcording to the nature of diuerſe eares, diuerſe iudgements ſtreight followed: ſome praiſing his voice, others his words fit to frame a paſtorall ſtile, others the ſtrangenes of the tale, and ſcanning what he ſhould meane by it. But old *Geron* (who had borne him a grudge euer ſince in one of their Eclogues he had taken him vp ouer-bitterly) tooke hold of this occaſion to make his reuenge, and ſayd, He neuer ſaw thing worſe proportioned, then to bring in a tale of he knewe not what beaſtes at ſuch a ſport-meeting, when rather ſome ſong of loue, or matter for ioyfull melody was to be brought forth. But, ſaid he, This is the right conceipt of young men, who thinke, then they ſpeake wiſelieſt, when they cannot vnderſtand themſelues. But little did the melancholike ſhepherd regard either his diſpraiſes, or the others praiſes, who had ſet the foundation of his honour there; where he was moſt deſpiſed. And therefore he returning againe to the traine of his deſolate penſiueneſſe, *Geron* inuited *Hiſtor* to anſwere him in Eclogue-wiſe; who indeed hauing bene long in loue with the faire *Kala*, and now by *Lalus* ouergone; was growne into a deteſtation of mariage. But thus it was.

Geron. Hiſtor.

Geron. *IN faith, good* Hiſtor, *long is your delay,*
From holy marriage ſweete and ſureſt meane:
Our fooliſh luſt in honeſt rules to ſtay.
I pray thee doo to Lalus *ſample leane:*
Thou ſeeſt, how friske, and iolly now he is,
That laſt day ſeem'd, he could not chew a beane.
Beleeue me man, there is no greater bliſſe,
Then is the quiet ioy of louing wife;
Which who ſo wants, halfe of himſelfe doth miſſe.
Friend without change, playfellow without ſtriſe,
Foode without fulnes, counſaile without pride,
Is this ſweet doubling of our ſingle life.

Hiſtor. *No doubt to whom ſo good chance did betide,*
As for to finde a paſture ſtrawed with golde,
He were a foole, if there he did not bide.
Who would not haue a Phœnix *if he could?*
The humming Waſpe, if it had not a ſting,
Before all flies the Waſpe accept I would.
But this bad world, few golden fieldes doth bring,
Phœnix *but one, of Crowes we millions haue:*

The Waſpe ſeemes gay, but is a combrous thing.
If many Kalaes our Arcadia gaue,
Lalus example I would ſoone enſue,
And thinke, I did my ſelfe from ſorrow ſaue.
But of ſuch wiues we finde a ſlender crew;
Shrewdnes ſo ſtirres, pride ſo puffes vp the hart,
They ſeldome ponder what to them is due.
With meager lookes, as if they ſtill did ſmart;
Puiling, and whimpring, or elſe ſcolding flat,
Make home more paine then following of the cart.
Either dull ſilence, or eternall chat;
Still contrarie to what her husband ſayes;
If he do praiſe the dog, ſhe likes the cat.
Auſtere ſhe is, when he would honeſt playes;
And gameſome then, when he thinkes on his ſheepe;
She bids him goe, and yet from iorney ſtayes.
She warre doth euer with his kinsfolke keepe,
And makes them fremb'd, who friends by nature are,
Enuying ſhallow toyes with malice deepe.
And if forſooth there come ſome new found ware,
The little coine his ſweating browes haue got,
Muſt goe for that, if for her lowres he care:
Or els; Nay faith, mine is the luckleſt lot,
That euer fell to honeſt woman yet:
No wife but I hath ſuch a man, God wot.
Such is their ſpeech, who be of ſober wit;
But who doo let their tongues ſhew well their rage,
Lord, what bywords they ſpeake, what ſpite they ſpit?
The houſe is made a very lothſome cage,
Wherein the birde doth neuer ſing but cry;
With ſuch a will as nothing can aſſwage.
Dearely the ſeruants doo their wages buy,
Reuil'd for ech ſmall fault, ſometimes for none:
They better liue that in a gaile doo lie.
Let other fowler ſpots away be blowne;
For I ſeeke not their ſhame, but ſtill me thinkes,
A better life it is to lye alone.

Geron. Who for ech fickle feare from vertue ſhrinkes,
Shall in his life embrace no worthy thing:
No mortall man the cuppe of ſuretie drinkes.
The beau'ns doo not good haps in handfuls bring,
But let vs pike our good from out much bad:
That ſtill our little world may know his king.
But certainly ſo long we may be glad,
While that we doo what nature doth require,
And for th'euent we neuer ought be ſad.

Man oft is plag'de with aire, is burnt with fire,
In water drownd, in earth his buriall is;
And ſhall we not therefore their vſe deſire?
Nature aboue all things requireth this,
That we our kind doo labour to maintaine;
Which drawne-out line doth hold all humane bliſſe.
Thy father iuſtly may of thee complaine,
If thou doo not repay his deeds for thee,
In granting vnto him a grandſires gaine.
Thy common-wealth may rightly grieued be,
Which muſt by this immortall be preſerued,
If thus thou murther thy poſteritie.
His very being he hath not deſerued,
Who for a ſelfe-conceipt will that forbeare,
Whereby that being aye muſt be conſerued.
And God forbid, women ſuch cattell were,
As you paint them: but well in you I finde,
No man doth ſpeake aright, who ſpeakes in feare.
Who onely ſees the ill is worſe then blind.
Theſe fiftie winters maried haue I beene;
And yet finde no ſuch faults in womankind.
I haue a wife worthie to be a Queene,
So well ſhe can command, and yet obay;
In ruling of a houſe ſo well ſhee's ſeene.
And yet in all this time betwixt vs tway,
We beare our double yoke with ſuch conſent,
That neuer paſt foule word, I dare well ſay.
But theſe be your loue-toyes, which ſtill are ſpent
In lawleſſe games, and loue not as you ſhould,
But with much ſtudie learne late to repent.
How well laſt day before our Prince you could
Blinde Cupids workes with wonder teſtifie?
Yet now the roote of him abaſe you would.
Goe to, goe to, and Cupid now applie
To that where thou thy Cupid maiſt auowe,
And thou ſhalt finde, in women vertues lie.
Sweete ſupple mindes which ſoone to wiſdome bowe
Where they by wiſdomes rule directed are,
And are not forſt fonde thraldome to allow.
As we to get are fram'd, ſo they to ſpare:
We made for paine, our paines they made to cheriſh:
We care abroad, and they of home haue care.
O Hiſtor, ſeeke within thy ſelfe to flouriſh:
Thy houſe by thee muſt liue, or els be gone:
And then who ſhall the name of Hiſtor nouriſh?
Riches of children paſſe a Princes throne;
Which touch the fathers hart with ſecret ioy,

When without ſhame he ſaith, theſe be mine owne.
Marrie therefore; for marriage will deſtroy
Thoſe paſsions which to youthfull head doo clime,
Mothers and Nurſes of all vaine annoy.

He ſpake theſe wordes with ſuch affection, as a curious eye might eaſilie haue perceyued he liked *Thyrſis* fortune better then he loued his perſon. But then in deede did all ariſe, and went to the women, where ſpending all the day, and good part of the night in dauncing, carolling, and waſſalling. Laſtly, they left *Thyrſis*, where he long deſired to be left, and with many vnfayned thankes returned euerie man to his home. But ſome of them hauing to croſſe the way of the two Lodges, might ſee a Ladie making dolefull lamentations ouer a bodie which ſeemed dead vnto them. But me thinkes *Damatas* cries vnto me, if I come not the ſooner to comfort him, he will leaue off his golden worke that hath alreadie coſt him ſo much labour and longing.

The ende of the third Booke.

THE FOVRTH BOOKE OF THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA.

(:)

THE almightie wiſedome euermore delighting to ſhewe the world, that by vnlikelieſt meanes greateſt matters may come to concluſion: that humane reaſon may be the more humbled, and more willinglie geue place to diuine prouidence: as at the firſt it brought in *Damætas* to play a part in this royall pageant, ſo hauing continued him ſtill an actor, now that all things were growne ripe for an end, made his folly the inſtrument of reuealing that, which far greater cunning had ſought to conceale. For ſo it fell out that *Damætas* hauing ſpent the whole day in breaking vp the cumberſome worke of the paſtor *Dorus*, and feeling in all his labour no paine ſo much, as that his hungrie hopes receiued any ſtay, hauing with the price of much ſweate and wearineſſe gotten vp the huge ſtone, which he thought ſhould haue ſuch a golden lining, the good man in the great bed that ſtone had made, founde nothing but theſe two verſes, written vpon a broad piece of velume:

Who hath his hire, hath well his labour plaſt:
Earth thou didſt ſeeke, and ſtore of earth thou haſt.

What an inward diſcountenance it was to maiſter *Damætas*, to finde his hope of wealth turned to poore verſes, for which he neuer cared much, nothing can deſcribe, but either the feeling in ones ſelfe the ſtate of ſuch a minde *Damætas* had, or at leaſt the bethinking what was *Midas* fancie, when after the great pride he conceiued to be made Iudge betweene Gods, he was rewarded with the ornament of an Aſſes eares. Yet the deepe apprehenſion he had receiued of ſuch riches, could not ſo ſodainlie looſe the coullor that had ſo throughlie died his thicke braine, but that he turned and toſſed the poore bowels of the innocent earth, till the comming on of the night, and the tediouſnes of his fruteleſſe labor made him content rather to exerciſe his diſcontentation at home then there. But forced he was (his horſe being otherwiſe burthened with digging inſtruments) to returne, as he came, moſt part of the way on foote: with ſuch grudging lamentations as a nobler minde would (but more noblie) make for the loſſe of his miſtreſſe. For ſo farre had he fed his fooliſh ſoule with the expectation of that which he reputed felicitie, that he no leſſe accompted himſelfe miſerable, then if he had falne from ſuch an eſtate his fancie had embraced. So then home againe went *Damætas*, puniſhed in conceite, as in conceite he had erred, till he founde himſelfe there from a fancied loſſe falne to eſſentiall miſerie. For entring into his houſe three houres within

within night, in ſteede of the lightſome countenance of *Pamela*, which gaue ſuch an inwarde decking to that lodge, as prowdeſt pallaces might haue cauſe to enuie it; and of the gratefull conuerſation of *Dorus*, whoſe wittie behauiour made that lonelines to ſeeme ful of good company: in ſteed of the loude ſcolding of *Miſo*, and the buſie rumbling vp and downe of *Mopſa*, which though they were ſo ſhorte, as quite contrarie to the others praiſe-worthines, yet were they farre before them in filling of a houſe: he founde nothing but a ſolitarie darkeneſſe; which as naturally it breedes a kinde of irkſome gaſtfulnes, ſo it was to him a moſt preſent terror, remembring the charge he had left behinde, which hee well knew imported no leſſe then his life vnto him. Therefore lighting a candle, there was no place a mouſe could haue dwelled in, but that he with quaking diligence ſought into. But when he ſaw hee could ſee nothing of that hee moſt cared for, then became hee the right patterne of a wretch deiected with feare: for crying and howling, knockinge his head to the wall hee began to make pittifull complaintes where no body coulde heare him: and with too much dread he ſhould not recouer her, leaue all conſideration how to recouer her. But at length looking like a ſhe goate, when ſhe caſts her kidd, for verie ſorrow he tooke in his owne behalfe, out of the lodge hee went running as hard as he could; hauing now receiued the verie forme of hanging into his conſideration. Thus running as a man would gladly haue runne from himſelfe, it was his fooliſh fortune to eſpie, by the glim'ring light of the moone did then yeelde him, one ſtanding aloft among the bowes of a faire aſhe. He that would haue asked counſell at that time of a dogg, caſt vp his face, as if his tooth had bene drawing: and with much bending his ſight perceiued it was miſtres *Mopſa*, fitly ſeated there for wit and dignitie: There (I wil not ſay with ioye, for how could he taſt of ioy, whoſe imagination was falne from a pallace, to a gallowes?) But yet with ſome refreſhing of comfort, in hope he ſhould learne better tidings: of her, he began to crie out: O *Mopſa* my beloued chicken, here am I thine owne father *Dametas*, neuer in ſuch a towardnes of hanging, if thou canſt not helpe me. But neuer a word coulde his eloquence procure of *Mopſa*, who indeed was there attending for greater matters. This was yet a newe burthen to poore *Dametas*, who thought all the worlde was conſpired againſt him: and therefore with a ſeely choler he began another tune. Thou vile *Mopſa*, ſaide he, now the vengeance of my fatherly curſe light ouerthwart thee, if thou doe not ſtreight anſwere me. But neither bleſſing nor curſing coulde preuaile *Mopſa*, who was now great with childe, with the expectation of her may-game hopes, and did long to be deliuered with the thirde time being named. Which by and by followed. For *Dametas* rubbing his elbowe, ſtamping and whining, ſeing neither of theſe take place, began to throwe ſtones at her, and withall to coniure her by the name of helliſh *Mopſa*. But when he had named her the third time, no chime can more ſodainly follow the ſtriking of a Clocke, then ſhee, verily thinking it was the God, that vſed her fathers voice, throwing our armes abroade, and not conſidering ſhe was muffled vpon ſo high a tree, came fluttering down, like a hooded hawke; like enough to haue broken her neck, but that the tree full of bowes toſſed her from one bow to another, and laſtly well bruſed brought her to receiue an vnfrindly ſalutation of the earth. *Dametas*, as ſoone as ſhe was downe, came running to her: and finding her ſo cloſe wrapt, pulled of the ſcarlet cloake: in good time for her, for with the ſoreneſſe of the fall, if ſhe had not had breath giuen her, ſhe had deliuered a fooliſh ſoule to *Pluto*. But then *Dametas* began a freſh to deſire his daughter not to for-

get the paines he had taken for her in her childhoode (which he was ſure ſhe could not remember) and to tell him where *Pamela* was. O good *Apollo*, ſaide *Mopſa*, if euer thou dideſt beare loue to *Phaethons* mother, let me haue a King to my husband Alas, what ſpeakeſt thou of *Phaethon?* Saide *Dametas:* If by thy circumſpect meanes I finde not out *Pamela*, thy father will be hanged to morow. It is no matter though he be hanged, anſwered *Mopſa:* doe but thou make *Dorus* a King, and let him bee my husband, good *Apollo:* for my courage doth much pricke mee towarde him. Ah *Mopſa*, cryed out *Dametas*, where is thy witt? Doeſt thou not know thy father? How haſt thou forgotten thy ſelfe? I do not aske witt of thee mine owne God, ſaid ſhee: but I ſee thou wouldeſt haue me remember my father, and indeede forget my ſelfe. No, no, a good husband, thou ſhalt haue thy fill of husbandes ſaide *Dametas*, and doe but anſwere me my queſtion. O I thanke thee ſaide *Mopſa*, withall my harte hartely: but let them bee all Kinges. *Dametas* ſeing no other way preuaile fel downe on his knees, *Mopſa Mopſa*, ſaide he, doe not thus cruelly torment me: I am already wretched enough, alas either helpe me or tell me thou canſt not. She that woulde not bee behinde *Apollo* in curteſie, kneeled downe on thother ſide, I wil neuer leaue tormenting thee ſaid *Mopſa*, vntill thou haſt ſatisfied my longing, but I will proclaime thee a promiſe breaker, that euen *Iupiter* ſhall heare it. Now by the foſtring thou haſt receaued in this place ſaue my life ſaide *Dametas*, now by the faire Aſh aunſwered *Mopſa*, where thou dideſt receaue ſo great a good turne, graunt poſt haſte to my burning fancie. O where is *Pamela* ſaide *Dametas?* O a luſtie husband, ſaide *Mopſa*; *Dametas* that nowe verely aſſured himſelfe, his daughter was madd, beganne vtterly to diſpaire of his life, and therefore amazedly catching her in his armes, to ſee whether hee coulde bring her to her ſelfe, hee might feele the weight of of a greate cudgell light vpon his ſhoulders, and for the firſt greeting hee knew his wife *Miſos* voice, by the calling him ribaulde villaine, & asking him whether ſhe coulde not ſerue his turne as well as *Charita?* For *Miſo* hauing according to *Dorus* counſaile, gone to *Mantinea*, and there harboured her ſelfe in an olde acquaintaunce houſe of hers, as ſoone as tenne of the clocke was ſtriken (where ſhee had remayned cloſely all that while, I thinke with ſuch an amiable cheare, as when iealous *Iuno* ſate croſſe-legged, to hinder the child-birth of her husbands loue) with open mouth ſhee went to the Magiſtrate appointed ouer ſuch matters, and there with the moſt ſcolding inuectiue, her rage rather then eloquence could bring forth, ſhe required his ayde to take *Dametas*, who had lefte his dutie to the Kinge and his daughter, to cõmit adultery in the houſe of *Charitas* vncle, in the Ondemian ſtreete. But neither was the name of *Charita* remembred, nor any ſuch ſtreete knowne. Yet ſuch was the generall miſlike all men had of *Dametas* vnworthy aduancement, that euery man was glad to make himſelfe a miniſter of that, which might redounde to his ſhame, and therfore with *Panike* cries and laughters, there was no ſuſpected place in all the cittie but was ſearched for vnder the title of *Dametas*; *Miſo* euer formoſt encowraging them withall the ſhamefull blaſings of his demeanoure, encreaſing the ſporte of hunting her husband, with her diligent barking, till at length hauing already done both him and her ſelfe, as much infamous ſhame, as ſuch a tonge in ſuch an action might performe, in the end not being, able to find a thing that was not, to her mare again ſhe wẽt hauing neither ſuſpition nor rage any thing mitigated. But (leauing behinde her a ſufficient comedie of her tragicall fancies) away homeward ſhe came,

came, imputing the not finding her husband, to any chaunce, rather then to his innocencie. For her harte being apt to receaue and nouriſh a bitter thought it had ſo ſwallowed vp a determinate condemnation, that in the verie anotomie of her ſpirits one ſhould haue found nothing but diueliſh diſdaine, and hatefull iealouſie. In this ſorte grunting out her miſcheuous ſpite, ſhee came by the tree, euen as *Dametas* was making that ill vnderſtoode interceſſion, to his fooliſh *Mopſa*. As ſoone as ſhe harde her husbands voice, ſhe verily thought ſhe had her playe: and therefore ſtealing from her mare as ſoftely as ſhe coulde, ſhee came creeping and halting behinde him, euen as he thinking his daughters little witts had quite lefte her great nowle; beganne to take her in his armes; thinking perchaunce her ſeeling ſence might call her mind partes vnto her. But *Miſo* who ſawe nothing but thorowe the coulloure of reuenge-full anger, eſtabliſhed vpon the fore-iudgement of his treſpaſſe, vndoubtedly reſoluing that *Mopſa* was *Charita*, *Dorus* had tolde her of, mumping out her hoarſe chafe, ſhe gaue him the wooden ſalutation you hearde of. *Dametas* that was not ſo ſenſible in any thing as in blows, turned vp his blubbred face like a great lowt newe whipte: Alas thou woman, ſaid hee, what hath thy poore husband deſerued to haue his owne ill lucke loaden with thy diſpleaſure? *Pamela* is loſt, *Pamela* is loſt. *Miſo* ſtill holding on the courſe of her former fancie, what telleſt thou mee naughtie varlet of *Pamela*, doeſt thou thinke that doth aunſweare me, for abuſing the lawes of marriage? Haue I brought thee children, haue I bene a true wife vnto thee, to bee diſpiſed in mine olde age? And euer among ſhee woulde ſawce her ſpeeches with ſuch Baſtonados, that poore *Dametas* beganne now to thinke, that either a generall madding was falne, or elſe that all this was but a viſion. But as for viſions the ſmarte of the cudgell put out of his fancie: and therefore againe turning to his wife, not knowing in the world what ſhe ment, *Miſo* ſaid hee, hereafter thou maieſt examine me, doe but now tell me what is become of *Pamela*. I will firſt examine this drabbe ſaid ſhe, and withall let fall her ſtafe as hard as ſhe could vpon *Mopſa*, ſtill taking her for *Charita*. But *Mopſa* that was alredy angry, thinking that ſhe had hindred her from *Apollo*, lepte vp and caught her by the throte, like to haue ſtrangled her, but that *Dametas* from a condemned man was faine to become a iudge and part this fraye, ſuch a picture of a rude diſcord, where each was out with the other two. And then getting the opportunitie of their falling out, to holde himſelfe in ſuretie, who was indeede, the verieſt coward of the three, he renewed his earneſt demaund of them. But it was a ſporte to ſee, how the former conceites *Dorus* had printed in their imaginations, kept ſtill ſuch dominion in them, that *Miſo* though now ſhee founde and felte it was her daughter *Mopſa*, yet did *Charita* cõtinually paſſe through her thoughts which ſhe vttered with ſuch crabbed queſtions to *Dametas*, that hee not poſſiblie conceauing any parte of her doubt, remained aſtoniſhed, and the aſtoniſhment encreaſed her doubt. And as for *Mopſa*, as firſt ſhe did aſſuredly take him to be *Apollo* and thought her mothers comming did marre the bargaine: So now much talkinge to and fro, had deliuered ſo much light, into the miſtie mould of her capacitie, as to know him to be her father: Yet remayned there ſuch foote-ſteppes of the foretaken opinion, that ſhee thought verily her father and mother were haſted thether to gett the firſt wiſhe. And therefore to whatſoeuer they asked of her, ſhe would neuer anſwere, but embracing the tree, as if ſhe feared it had bene running awaye, nay ſayes ſhee I will haue the firſt wiſh for I was here firſt; which they vnderſtoode no more, then *Dametas* did what *Miſo* ment by *Charita*: till at length with much vrging them,

being

being indeede better able to perſwade both, then to meete hande to hand with either, he preuailed ſo much with them, as to bring them into the lodge to ſee what loſſe their necligence had ſuffered. Then indeede the nere neighborhood they bare to themſelues, made them leaue other toyes, and look into what dangerous plight they were all faln, aſſone as the King ſhould know his daughters eſcape. And as for the wemen they beganne a freſh to enter into their brawling, whether were in the faulte. But *Damætas* who did feare that among his other euills, the thunderbolt of that ſtorme would fall vpon his ſhoulders, ſlipte away from them, but with ſo maigre a cheare as might much ſooner engender laughter then pittie. O true *Arcadia* would he ſay (tearinge his haire and bearde, & ſomtime for too much woe, making vnweldie ſomerſaults) how dareſt thou beare vpon thee ſuch a felonious traytor as I am? And you falſe harted trees, why woulde you make no noyſe, to make her vngratious departure known? Ah *Pamela Pamela*, how often whē I brought thee in fine poſies of all coulored flowers wouldeſt thou clappe me on the cheek, and ſay thou wouldſt be on day euen with me? Was this thy meaning to bring me to an cuē paire of gallows? Ah il taught *Dorus* that cameſt hither to learne good maners of me? Did I euer teach thee to make thy maiſter ſweate out his hart for nothing, & in the meane time to run away with thy miſtres? O my dun cow, I did think ſōe euil was towards me, euer ſince the laſt day thou didſt run away from me, & held vp thy taile ſo pitifully: did not I ſe an eagle kil a Cuckoe, which was a plain fore token vnto me *Pamela* ſhould be my deſtructiō? O wife *Miſo* (if I durſt ſay it to thy face) why didſt thou ſuſpect thy husbād, that loueth a peece of cheſe better then a womā? And thou litle *Mopſa* that ſhalt inherite the ſhame of thy fathers death, was it time for thee to clime trees, which ſhould ſo ſhortly be my beſt buriall? ô that I could liue without death, or die before I were aware. O hart why haſt thou no hands at commaundement to diſpatch thee? O hands why want you a hart to kill this villanie? In this ſorte did he inuey againſt euery thing, ſometimes thinking to haue away, while it was yet night: but he that had included all the world within his ſhepecote, thought that worſe thē any death ſometime for dread of hanging hee ment to hange himſelfe: finding as in deede it is, that feare is farre more paynfull to cowardiſe, then death to a true courage. But his fingers were nothing nimble in that action; & any thing was let inough thereto, he being a true louer of himſelfe without any ryuall. But laſtly guided by a farre greater conſtellacion then his owne, he remembred to ſearch the other lodge where it might be *Pamela* that night had retired her ſelfe. So thether with trembling hammes hee carried himſelfe, but employinge his double keye which the Kinge for ſpeciall credit had vnworthylie beſtowed vpon him, hee found all the gates ſo barred, that his key could not preuaile, ſauing onely one trapt doore which went down into a vault by the ſellerwhich as it was vnknowen of *Pyrocles* ſo had he lefte it vnregarded. But *Damætas* that euer knew the buttery better then any other place, got in that way and paſing ſoftly to *Philocleas* chamber, where he thought moſt likely to finde *Pamela*, the doore being left open hee entred in, and by the light of the lampe, he might diſcerne on in bed with her: which he although hee tooke to bee *Pamela*, yet thinking no ſuretie enough in a matter touchinge his necke, hee went heard to the bedſide of theſe vnfortunate louers, whoe at that time being not much before the breake of day (whether it were they were ſo diuinely ſurpriſed, to bring this whole matter to be deſtinied concluſion, or that the vnreſiſtable force of their ſorrowes, had ouerthrowne the wakefull vſe of their ſenſes) were as then poſſeſſed,

with a mutuall ſleep) yet not forgetting with viny embracements, to giue any eye a perfect modell of affection. But *Damætas* looking with the lampe in his hande but neither with ſuch a face nor mind) vpon theſe excellent creatures, as *Pſyche* did vpon her vnknowen louer, and giuing euery way freedome to his fearefull eyes, did not onely perceaue it was *Zelmane* and therefore much different from the Lady hee ſought: but that this ſame *Zelmane* did more differ from the *Zelmane* hee and others had euer taken her for, wherein the chaunge of her apparell chiefely confirmed his opinion ſatiſfied with that, and not thinking it good to awake the ſleeping Lyon, he went downe againe, taking with him *Pyrocles* ſworde, (wherewith vpon his ſleight vnderſute *Pyrocles* came onely apparelled thether) being ſure to leaue no weapon in the chamber, and ſo making the doore as faſt as hee coulde on the outſide, hopinge with the reuealing of this, (as hee thought greater fault) to make his owne the leſſe, or at leaſt that this iniurie would ſo fill the Kinges head, that he ſhould not haue leyſure to chaſtice his negligence (like a fool not conſidering that the more rage breeds the crueller puniſhment) he went firſt into the Kings chamber, and not finding him there, he ranne downe crying with open mouth, the Kinge was betrayde, and that *Zelmane* did abuſe his daughter. The noiſe he made being a man of no few wordes ioyned to the yelping ſound of *Miſo*, and his vnpleaſant enheritrix brought together ſome number of the ſhepheards, to whom he without any regard of reſeruing it for the Kinges knowledge ſpattered out the bottom of his ſtomacke, ſwearing by him he neuer knew that *Zelmane* whom they had taken all that while to be a woman, was as arrant a man as himſelfe was, whereof hee had ſeene ſufficient ſignes and tokens; and that hee was as cloſe as a butterflie with the Ladie *Philoclea*, the poore men iealous of their Princes honour, were readie with weapons to haue entred the lodge; ſtanding yet in ſome pauſe, whether it were not beſt, firſt to heare ſome newes from the King himſelfe, when by the ſodaine comming of other ſhepheards which with aſtoniſhed lookes ranne from one crie to the other their griefes were ſurcharged, with the euil tydings of the Kings death. Turning therefore all their minds and eyes that way, they ranne to the Caue where they ſaid he lay dead, the Sunne beginning now to ſend ſome promiſe of comming light, making haſt I thinke to bee ſpectator of the folowing tragedies. For *Baſilius* hauing paſt ouer the night more happie in contemplation then action, hauing had his ſpirits ſublymed with the ſweete imagination of embraſing the moſt deſired *Zelmane*, doubting leaſt the Caues darknes might deceaue him in the dayes approch, thought it nowe ſeaſon to returne to his wedlocke bed, remembring the promiſe he had made *Zelmane*, to obſerue due orders towards *Gynecia*. Therefore departing but not departing without bequeathing by a will of wordes, ſealed with many kiſſes, a full guifte of all his loue and life to his miſconceaued bedfellowe, he went to the mouth of the Caue, there to apparel himſelfe, in which doing the motion of his ioye coulde not bee bridled from vttering ſuch like wordes. Bleſſed be thou O night ſaid he, that haſt with thy ſweete winges ſhrowded mee in the vale of bliſſe it is thou that art the firſt gotten childe of time, the day hath bene but an vſurper vpon thy delightfull inheritaunce, thou inuiteſt all liuing thinges to comfortable reſt, thou arte the ſtop of ſtrife and the neceſſarie truce of aproching battels. And therewith hee ſange theſe verſes, to confirme his former prayſes:

O *Night the eaſe of care the pledge of pleaſure,*

Deſires

Deſires beſt meane, harneſt of hartes affected,
The ſeate of peace, the throne which is erected
Of humane life to be the quiet meaſure,

Be victor ſtill of Phœbus *golden treaſure:*
Who hath our ſight with too much ſight infected,
Whoſe light is cauſe we haue our liues neglected
Turning all natures courſe to ſelfe diſpleaſure.

Theſe ſtately ſtarrs in their now ſhining faces,
With ſinleſſe ſleepe, and ſilence wiſdomes mother,
Witneſſe his wrong which by thy helpe is eaſed:

Thou arte therefore of theſe our deſart places
The ſure refuge, by thee and by no other
My ſoule is bliſte, ſence ioyde, and fortune rayſed.

And yet farther would his ioyes needes breake foorth. O *Baſilius*, ſayde he, the reſt of thy time, hath bene but a dreame vnto thee: it is now onely thou beginneſt to liue, now onely thou haſt entred into the way of blisfulnes. Should fancie of marriage keepe me from this paradiſe? Or opinion of I know not what promiſe binde me from paying the right duties to nature and affection? O who woulde haue thought there could haue bene ſuch difference betwixt women? Bee iealous no more O *Gynecia*, but yeelde to the preheminence of more excellent guiftes, ſupporte thy ſelfe with ſuch marble pillers as ſhe doth, decke thy breſt with thoſe alablaſter boules that *Zelmane* doth: then accompanied with ſuch a tittle, perhapes thou maiſt recouer the poſſeſſion of my otherwiſe enclined loue. But alas *Gynecia* thou canſt not ſhew ſuch euidence; therefore thy plea is vaine. *Gynecia* hearde all this hee ſaide who had caſt about her *Zelmanes* garment, wherein ſhe came thether, and had followed *Baſilius* to the Caues entrie; full of inward vexation, betwixt the deadly accuſation of her own guiltines, and the ſpitefull doubt ſhee had *Zelmane* had abuſed her. But becauſe of the one ſide (finding the King did thinke her to be *Zelmane* ſhe had libertie to imagine it might rather be the Kings owne vnbridled enterpriſe, which had barred *Zelmane*, then *Zelmanes* cunning deceiuing of her, and that of the other if ſhee ſhoulde heddilie ſeeke a violent reuenge her owne honour might bee as much intereſſed, as *Zelmane* endaungered: ſhe fell to this determination. Firſt with fine handling of the King to ſettle in him a perfect good opinion of her, and then as ſhee ſhoulde learne, how things had paſſed, to take into her ſelfe new deuiſed counſaile, but this beinge her firſt action, hauing geuen vnlooked for attendaunce to the King, ſhe heard with what partiality he did prefer her to her ſelf, ſhe ſaw in him how much fancy doth not onely darken reaſō but beguile ſence ſhee foūd opinion Miſtres of the louers iudgement, which ſeruing as a good leſſon to her good conceite, ſhe went out to *Baſilius*, ſetting her ſelfe in a graue behauiour and ſtately ſilence before him: vntill he, (who at the firſt thinking her by ſo much ſhadow as he could ſee to bee *Zelmane*, was beginning his louing ceremonies) did now being helped by the peeping light, wherewith the morning did ouercome the nights darkenes, knowe her face and his error, which acknowledging in himſelf with ſtarting back from her, ſhe thus with a moeſt

bitternes

bitternes ſpake vnto him: Alas my Lorde, well did your wordes diſcipher your minde, and well be thoſe wordes confyrmed with this geſture. Verie loathſome muſt that woman be, from whome a man hath cauſe to goe backe; and little better liked is that wife, before whome the husband preferrs them hee neuer knewe. Alas, hath my faithfull obſeruing my parte of ducty made you thinke your ſelfe euer a whit the more exempted? Hath that which ſhould claime gratefulnes, bene a cauſe of contempt? Is the being the mother of *Pamela*, become an odious name vnto you? If my life hetherto ledde haue not auoyded ſuſpicion? If my violated truth to you be deſeruing of any puniſhment, I refuſe not to be chaſtiſed with the moſt cruell torment of your diſpleaſure, I refuſe not miſery, purchaſed by mine owne merite. Hard I muſt needes ſaye, (although till now I neuer thought I ſhould haue had cauſe to ſaye) is the deſtinie of womankinde, the tryall of whoſe vertue muſt ſtande vpon the louing of them, that employe all theyr induſtrie not to be beloued. If *Zelmanes* young yeares had not had ſo much grauitie hidden vnder a youthfull face, as your graye heares haue bene but the viſar of vnfitting youthfulnes, your vicious minde had brought ſome fruites of repentance, and *Gynæcia* might then haue bene with much more right ſo baſely deſpiſed.

Baſilius that was more aſhamed to ſee himſelfe ſo ouertaken, then *Vulcan* was, when with much cunning hee proued himſelfe a Cuckolde, beganne to make certayne extrauagant excuſes: but the matter in it ſelfe hardly brooking any purgacion, with the ſuddainnes of the time, which barred any good conioyned inuention, made him ſometimes alledge one thing, to which by and by he would bring in a contrarye, one time with flat denyall, another time with mitigating the fault, now braue, then humble, vſe ſuch a ſtammering defenſiue, that *Gynæcia*, the violence of whoſe ſore in deede ranne another waye, was content thus to faſten vp the laſt ſtitch of her anger. Well, well my Lorde, ſayde ſhe, it ſhall well become you ſo to gouerne your ſelfe, as you may be fit rather to direct me, then to be iudged of me; and rather to be a wiſe maiſter of me, then an vnskilfull pleader before me. Remember the wrong you haue done is not onely to me, but to your children, whome you had of mee: to your countrey, when they ſhall finde they are commaunded by him, that can not commaund his owne vndecent appetites: laſtly to your ſelfe, ſince with theſe paynes you do but build vp a houſe of ſhame to dwell in: if from thoſe moueable goods of nature (wherewith, in my fyrſt youth my royall parents beſtowed me vppon you) bearing you children, and encreaſe of yeares haue withdrawen me, conſider I pray you, that as you are cauſe of the one, ſo in the other, time hath not left to worke his neuer-fayling effectes in you. Truly, truly Sir, very vntimely are theſe fyres in you: it is time for vs both to let reaſon enioye his due ſoueraigntie. Let vs not plant anewe thoſe weedes, which by natures courſe are content to fade.

Baſilius that would rather then his life the matter had bene ended, the beſt rethorike he had, was flat demanding pardon of her, ſwearing it was the very force of *Apollos* deſtenye which had caryed him thus from his owne bias; but that nowe like as farre trauellers were taught to loue their owne countrie, he had ſuch a leſſon without booke, of affection vnto her, as he would repay the debt of this error with the intereſt of a great deale more true honour then euer before he had done her:

neyther am I to geue pardon to you my Lord, ſayd ſhe, nor you to beare honour to me. I haue taken this boldnes for the vnfayned loue I owe vnto you, to deliuer my ſorrowe vnto you; much more for the care I haue of your well doing, then for any other ſelfe fancie. For well I knowe that by your good eſtate my life is mayntayned, neyther, if I would, can I ſeparate my ſelfe from your fortune. For my parte therefore I clayme nothing but that which may be ſafeſt for your ſelfe; my life, will, honor, and what ſoeuer elſe, ſhall be but a ſhadow of that bodie. How much *Baſilius* owne ſhame had found him culpable, and had alreadie euen in ſoule read his owne condemnacion, ſo much did this vnexpected mildnes of *Gynecia* captiue his harte vnto her, which otherwiſe perchaunce would haue growne to a deſperat careleſnes. Therefore embracing her, and confeſſing that her vertue ſhined in his vice, he did euen with a true reſolued minde vowe vnto her, that as long as he vnworthie of her did liue, ſhe ſhould be the furtheſt and onlie limit of his affection. He thanked the deſtenies, that had wrought her honour out of his ſhame, and that had made his owne ſtriuing to goe amiſſe, to be the beſt meane euer after to hold him in the right pathe. Thus reconciled to *Baſilius* great contentacion, who began ſomething to marke himſelfe in his owne doings, his hard hap guided his eye to the cuppe of golde, wherein *Gynecia* had put the lickourment for *Zelmane*, and hauing fayled of that gueſt, was now carrying it home agayne. But he whome perchaunce ſorrowe, perchaunce ſome long diſaccuſtomed paynes, had made extremely thirſtie, tooke it out of her handes, although ſhe directly tolde him, both of whome ſhe had it, what the effect of it was, and the little proofe ſhe had ſeene thereof; hiding nothing from him, but that ſhe ment to miniſter it to another pacient. But the Duke whoſe belly had no eares, and much drouthe kept from the deſiring a taſter, finding it not vnpleaſant to his pallate, dranke it almoſt off, leauing very little to couer the cuppes bottome. But within a while that from his ſtomacke the drincke had deliuered to his principall vaynes his noyſome vapours, firſt with a painefull ſtretching, and forced yawning, then with a darke yellownes dyeng his skinne, and a colde deadlie ſweate principally about his temples, his bodie by naturall courſe longing to deliuer his heauie burden to his earthly damme, wanting force in his knees, which vtterly abandoned him, with heauie fall gaue ſome proofe whether the operation of that vnknowne potion tended. For with pang-like grones, and gaſtly turning of his eyes, immediatlie all his limmes ſtiffened, and his eyes fixed, he hauing had time to declare his caſe only in theſe wordes. O *Gynecia* I dye. Haue care: of what or how much further he would haue ſpoken, no man can tell. For *Gynecia* hauing well perceyued the changing of his cullour, and thoſe other euill ſignes, yet had not looked for ſuch a ſodaine ouerthrowe, but rather had bethought her ſelfe what was beſt for him, when ſhe ſodainely ſawe the matter come to that periode, comming to him, and neyther with any cryes getting a worde of him, nor with any other poſſible meanes, able to bring any liuing action from him, the height of all ouglie ſorrowes did ſo horriblie appeare before her amazed minde, that at the firſt, it did not only diſtract all power of ſpeech from her, but almoſt wit to conſider, remayning as it were quicke buried in a graue of miſeries. Her paynefull memorie had ſtreight filled her with the true ſhapes of all the fore-paſt miſchiefes, her reaſon began to crye out againſt the filthye rebellion of ſinfull ſenſe, and to teare it ſelfe with anguiſh, for hauing made ſo weake a reſiſtance, her conſcience a terrible witnes

of

of the inwarde wickednes, ſtill nouriſhing this debatefull fyre; her complaynte nowe not hauing an ende to be directed vnto ſomething to disburden ſorrowe, but a neceſſary downefall of inwarde wretchednes. She ſawe the rigour of the lawes was like to lay a ſhamefull death vpon her, which being for that action vndeſerued, made it the more inſupportable, and yet in deapth of her ſoule moſt deſerued, made it more miſerable. At length letting her tong goe as her dolorous thoughts guided it, ſhe thus with lamentable demeanour ſpake.

O bottomles pit of ſorrowe, in which I cannot conteyne my ſelfe, hauing the fyrebrands of all furyes within me, ſtill falling, and yet by the infinitenes of it neuer falne. Neyther can I ridde my ſelfe, being fettred with the euerlaſting conſideracion of it. For whether ſhould I recommend the protection of my diſhonored fall? to the earth? it hath no life, and waites to be encreaſed by the reliques of my ſhamed carcaſſe: to men? who are alwayes cruell in their neighboures faultes, and make others ouerthrowe become the badge of their ill masked vertue? to the heauens? ô vnſpeakeable torment of conſcience, which dare not looke vnto them. No ſinne can enter there, oh there is no receipt for polluted mindes. Whether then wilt thou leade this captiue of thine, ô ſnakye deſpayre? Alas, alas, was this the free-holding power that accurſed poyſon hath graunted vnto me, that to be held the ſurer it ſhould depriue life? was this the folding in mine armes promiſed, that I ſhould fould nothing but a dead body? O mother of mine, what a deathfull ſucke haue you geuen me? O *Philoclea, Philoclea,* well hath my mother reuenged vppon me my vnmotherly hating of thee. O *Zelmane,* to whome yet (leaſt any miſerye ſhould fayle me) remayne ſome ſparkes of my deteſtable loue, if thou haſt (as now alas! now my minde aſſures me thou haſt) deceaued me, there is a fayre ſtage prepared for thee, to ſee the tragicall ende of thy hated loues. With that worde there flowed out two riuers of teares out of her fayre eyes, which before were drye, the remembraunce of her other miſchiefes being dryed vp in a furious fyre of ſelfe deteſtation, loue only according to the temper of it melting it ſelfe into thoſe briny tokens of paſſion. Then turning her eyes agayne vpon the body, ſhe remembred a dreame ſhe had had ſome nights before, wherein thinking her ſelfe called by *Zelmane,* paſſing a troubleſome paſſage, ſhe found a dead body which tolde her there ſhould be her only reſt. This no ſooner caught holde of her remembraunce, then that ſhe determining with her ſelfe, it was a directe viſion of her fore-appoynted ende, tooke a certayne reſolucion to embrace death, aſſoone as it ſhould be offred vnto her, and no way to ſeeke the prolonging of her annoyed life. And therefore kiſſing the cold face of *Baſilius*; And euen ſo will I reſt ſayd ſhe, and ioyne this faultye ſoule of mine to thee, if ſo much the angry gods will graunt mee.

As ſhee was in this plight, the Sunne nowe climing ouer our Horizon, the firſt Shepherds came by, who ſeeing the King in that caſe, and hearing the noyſe *Damætas* made of the Lady *Philoclea,* ranne with the dolefull tidings of *Baſilius* death vnto him, who preſently with all his company came to the Caues entrye where the Kings body lay. *Damætas* for his parte more glad for the hope he had of his priuate eſcape, then ſorye for the publike loſſe his Countrie receaued for a Prince not to be miſliked. But in *Gynæcia* nature preuayled aboue iudgement; and the ſhame ſhee conceaued to be taken in that order, ouercame for that inſtant the former reſolucion, ſo that aſſoone as ſhe ſawe the formoſt of the paſtorall

troupe, the wretched Princeſſe ranne to haue hid her face in the next woods, but with ſuch a minde, that ſhe knewe not almoſt her ſelfe what ſhe could wiſh to be the grounde of her ſafetie. *Dametas* that ſawe her runne awaye in *Zelmanes* vpper rayment, and iudging her to be ſo, thought certaynely all the ſpirits in hell were come to play a Tragedie in theſe woods, ſuch ſtrange change he ſawe euery way. The King dead at the Caues mouth; the Queene as hee thought abſent; *Pamela* fledde away with *Dorus*; his wife and *Mopſa* in diuers franzies. But of all other things *Zelmane* conquered his capacitie, ſodainly from a woman growne to a man; and from a lockt chamber gotten before him into the fieldes, which hee gaue the reſt quicklie to vnderſtande; for in ſteede of doing any thing as the exigent required, he beganne to make circles, and all thoſe fantaſticall defences that hee had euer hearde were fortifications againſt Diuells. But the other Shepheards who had both better wittes, and more faith, forthwith deuided themſelues, ſome of them running after *Gynecia*, and eſteeming her running away, a great condemnation of her owne guiltineſſe; others going to their Prince, to ſee what ſeruice was left for them eyther in recouerie of his life, or honoring his death. They that went after the Queene, had ſoone ouertaken her, in whome nowe the fyrſt feares were ſtayde, and the reſolucion to dye had repoſſeſſed his place in her minde. But when they ſawe it was the Queene, to whome beſides the obedient dutie they ow'de to her ſtate, they had alwayes carried a ſinguler loue, for her courteous liberalities, and other wiſe and vertuous partes, which had filled all that people with affection and admiracion. They were all ſodainely ſtopped, beginning to aske pardon for their followinge her in that ſorte, and deſiring her to be their good Ladie, as ſhe had euer bene. But the Queene who nowe thirſted to be ridde of her ſelfe, whome ſhe hated aboue all thinges with ſuch an aſſured countenance as they haue, who alreadie haue diſpenſed with ſhame, and digeſted the ſorrowes of death, ſhe thus ſayde vnto them. Continue, continue, my friends: your doing is better then your excuſing, the one argues aſſured faith, the other want of aſſurance. If you loued your Prince, when he was able and willing to doo you much good, which you could not then requite to him; doo you now publiſh your gratefulnes, when it ſhall be ſeene to the world, there are no hopes left to leade you vnto it. Remember, remember you haue loſt *Baſilius* a Prince to defend you, a Father to care for you, a companyon in your ioyes, a friend in your wants. And if you loued him, ſhew you hate the author of his loſſe. It is I, faithfull *Arcadians*, that haue ſpoyled the Countrie of their protector. I, none but I, was the miniſter of his vnnaturall end. Cary therfore my blood in your hãds, to teſtifie your own innocencie, neither ſpare for my titles ſake, but conſider it was he that ſo entituled me. And if you think of any benefits by my meanes, thinke with it that I was but the inſtrumẽt and he the ſpring. What ſtay ye Shepheards whoſe great Shepheard is gone? you neede not feare a woman, reuerence your Lords murtherer, nor haue pittie of her, who hath not pittie of her ſelf. With this ſhe preſented her faire neck; ſome by name, others by ſignes, deſired them to do iuſtice to the world, dutie to their good king, honor to themſelues, and fauour to her. The poore men looked one vpon the other, vnuſed to be arbiters in Princes matters, and being now falne into a great perplexitie, betwixt a Prince dead and a Princeſſe aliue. But once for them ſhe might haue gone whether ſhe would, thinking it a ſacriledge to touch her perſon, when ſhe finding

ſhe finding ſhe was not a ſufficiēt oratour to perſwade her own death by their hāds, well, ſaid ſhe, it is but ſo much more time of miſerie, for my part I will not geue my life ſo much pleaſure from hence forward as to yeeld to his deſire of his own choiſe of death; ſince all the reſt is taken away, yet let me excell in miſerie. Leade me therfore whether you will; only happy, becauſe I can not be more wretched. But neyther ſo much would the honeſt Shepheards do, but rather with many teares bemoned this encreaſe of their former loſſe, till ſhe was faine to leade them, with a very ſtrange ſpectacle, either that a Princeſſe ſhould be in the hands of Shepheards, or a priſoner ſhould direct her gardiens: laſtly, before either witnes or accuſer, a Lady condemne her ſelfe to death. But in ſuch monefull march they went towards the other Shepheards, who in the meane time had left nothing vnaſſaied to reuiue the King, but all was bootles; and their ſorrowes encreaſed the more they had ſuffred any hopes vainly to ariſe. Among other trialls they made to know at leaſt the cauſe of his end, hauing eſpied the vnhappy cup, they gaue the little liquor that was left to a dogge of *Dametas*, in which within a ſhort time it wrought the like effect; although *Dametas* did ſo much to recouer him, that for very loue of his life he daſht out his braines. But now all togither and hauing *Gynecia* among them, who to make her ſelfe the more odious, did continuallie record to their mindes the exceſſe of their loſſe, they yelded themſelues ouer to all thoſe formes of lamentacion that dolefull images do imprint in the honeſt but ouer tender hartes; eſpecially when they thinke the rebound of the euill falls to their owne ſmart. Therefore after the auncient greeke maner, ſome of them remembring the nobilitie of his birth, continued by being like his Aunceſtors: others his ſhape, which though not excellent, yet fauour and pittie drew all things now to the higheſt point; others his peaceable gouernment, the thing which moſt pleaſeth men reſolued to liue of their owne; others his liberalitie, which though it cannot light vpon all men, yet men naturallie hoping it may be, they make it a moſt amiable vertue. Some calling in queſtion the greatnes of his power, which encreaſed the compaſſion to ſee the preſent change, (hauing a dolefull memorie how he had tempered it with ſuch familier curteſie among them, that they did more feele the fruites, then ſee the pompes of his greatnes) all with one conſent geuing him the ſacred titles of good, iuſt, mercifull, the father of the people, the life of his Countrie, they ranne about his body, tearing their beards and garments; ſome ſending their cryes to heauen, other inuenting perticular howling muſicke; manie vowing to kill themſelues at the day of his funeralls, generallie geuing a true teſtimonye, that men are louing creatures when iniuries put them not from their naturall courſe: and howe eaſily a thing it is for a Prince by ſucceſſion, deeplie to ſinke into the ſoules of his ſubiects, a more liuely monument then *Mauſolus* Tombe. But as with ſuch hartie lamentacion, they diſperſed among thoſe woods their reſounding ſhrikes, the Sunne the perfecteſt marke of time, hauing now gotten vp two howres iourney in his dayly changing Circle, their voice helped with the only anſwering Echo, came to the eares of the faithfull and worthy Gentleman *Philanax*: who at that time was comming to viſite the King, accompanyed with diuers of the worthie *Arcadian* Lords, who with him had viſited the places adioyning for the more aſſurance of *Baſilius* ſolitarines, a thing after the late mutinie he had vſually done, and ſince the Princeſſes returne more diligentlie continued, which hauing nowe likewiſe performed, thinking it as well his duty to ſee the King as of good purpoſe,

being ſo neare, to receyue his further direction: accompanied as aboue ſayd he was this morning comming vnto him, when theſe vnpleaſant voices gaue his minde an vncertaine preſage of his neere approching ſorow. For by and by he ſaw the bodie of his dearely eſteemed Prince, and heard *Gynecias* lamenting: not ſuch as the turtle-like loue is wont to make for the euer ouer-ſoone loſſe of her only loued make, but with curſings of her life, deteſting her owne wickednes, ſeeming only therefore not to deſire death, becauſe ſhe would not ſhew a loue of any thing. The Shepheards, eſpecially *Dametas*, knowing him to be the ſecond perſon in Auctoritie, gaue forthwith relacion vnto him, what they knewe and had proued of this dolorous ſpectacle, beſides the other accidents of his children. But he principally touched with his maiſters loſſe, lighting from his horſe with a heauie cheare, came and kneeled downe by him, where finding he could do no more then the Shepheards had for his recouerie, the conſtancie of his minde, ſurpriſed before he might call together his beſt rules, could not refraine ſuch like words. Ah deere maiſter, ſayd he, what change it hath pleaſed the Almightie Iuſtice to worke in this place? How ſoone (not to your loſſe, who hauing liued long to nature, and to time longer by your well deſerued glorie, but longeſt of all in the eternall manſion you now poſſeſſe) But how ſoone I ſay to our ruine, haue you left the fraile barke of your eſtate? O that the words in moſt faithfull dutie deliuered vnto you, when you firſt entred this ſolitarie courſe, might haue wrought as much perſwaſion in you, as they ſprang from truth in me perchaunce your ſeruaunt, *Philanax* ſhould not nowe haue cauſe in your loſſe, to bewayle his owne ouerthrowe. And therewith taking himſelfe; and in deede euill fitteth it me, ſayde he, to let goe my harte to womaniſh complaints, ſince my Prince being vndoubtedly well, it rather ſhewes loue of my ſelfe, which makes me bewaile mine owne loſſe. No, the true loue muſt be proued in the honor of your memorie, and that muſt be ſhewed with ſeeking iuſt reuenge vpon your vniuſt and vnnaturall enemies; and farre more honorable it will be for your Tombe, to haue the blood of your murderers ſprinkled vpon it, then the teares of your friendes. And if your ſoule looke downe vppon this miſerable earth, I doubt not it had much rather your death were accompanyed with well deſerued puniſhment of the cauſers of it, then with the heaping on it more ſorrowes with the ende of them, to whome you vouchſafed your affection, let them lament that haue wouen the webbe of lamentacion; let theyr owne deathes make them crye out for your death that were the authors of it. Therewith carying manfull ſorowe and vindicatiſe reſolucion in his face, he roſe vp, ſo looking on the poore guiltleſſe princeſſe tranſported with an vniuſt iuſtice, that his eyes were ſufficient herauldes for him, to denounce a mortall hatred. She, (whome furies of loue, firebrands of her conſcience, ſhame of the world, with the miſerable loſſe of her husband, towardes whome nowe the diſdaine of her ſelfe bred more loue; with the remembrance of her viſion, wherewith ſhe reſolued aſſuredly the Gods had appointed that ſhamefull end to be her reſting place, had ſet her mind to no other way but to death) vſed ſuch like ſpeeches to *Philanax*, as ſhe had before to the Shepheards; willing him not to looke vpon her as a woman, but a monſter; not as a princeſſe, but a traytor to his prince; not as *Baſilius* wife, but as *Baſilius* murtherer. She tolde him howe the worlde required at his handes, the iuſt demonſtration of his friendſhip, if hee nowe forgot his Prince, hee ſhoulde ſhewe hee had neuer loued but hys fortune:

like

like thoſe vermine that ſucke of the liuing bloud, and leaue the body aſſoone as it is dead, poore Princeſſe needeleſly ſeeking to kindle him, who did moſt deadly deteſt her, which he vttered in this bitter anſwere. Madame ſaide he, you do well to hate your ſelfe, for you cannot hate a worſe creature; and though we feele enough your helliſh diſpoſition, yet we neede not doubt you are of counſell to your ſelfe of much worſe then we know. But now feare not, you ſhall not long be combred with being guided by ſo euell a ſoule, therefore prepare your ſelfe that if it be poſſible you may deliuer vp your ſpirit ſo much purer, as you more waſh your wickednes with repentaunce. Then hauing preſently giuen order for the bringing from *Mantinea*, a great number of tents, for the receipt of the principall *Arcadians*: the maner of that countrie being, that where the Prince died, ther ſhould be orders taken for the countries gouernment, and in the place any murther was committed, the iudgement ſhould be giuen ther, before the body was buried, both concurring is this matter, and alredy great parte of the Nobilitie being ariued, he deliuered the Princes to a gentelman of greate truſt, and as for *Dametas* taking from him the keyes of both the lodges, calling him the moth of his Princes eſtate, and onely ſpot of his iudgement, he cauſed him with his wife and daughter, to bee fettered vp in as manye chaines and clogges, as they coulde beare, and euery thirde howre to bee cruelly whipt, till the determinate iudgement ſhould be giuen of all theſe matters. That done hauing ſent alredy at his comming, to all the quarters of the countrie to ſeeke *Pamela*, although with ſinal hope of ouertaking them, he himſelf went wel accompanied to the lodge where the two vnfortunate louers were attending a cruell concluſion, of their long painefull, and late moſt painefull affection, *Dametas* clowniſh eyes, hauing ben the onely diſcouerers of *Pyrocles* ſtratagem, had no ſooner taken a full vewe of them (which in ſome ſightes would rather haue bred any thing, then an accuſing minde) and locked the doore vpon theſe two yong folkes, now made priſoners for loue, as before they had bene priſoners to loue; But that imediatly vpon his going downe, (whether with noyſe *Dametas* made, or with the creeping in of the light, or rather that as extreame griefe had procured his ſleepe, ſo extreame care had meaſured his ſleepe, giuinge his ſences a very early *ſalue* to come to themſelues) *Pyrocles* awaked; And being vp the firſt euill hanſell he had of the ill caſe wherein he was, was the ſeeing himſelfe depriued of his ſworde, from which he had neuer ſeperated himſelfe in any occaſion, and euen that night firſt by the Kinges bedd, and then there had laid it, as he thought ſafe: putting great parte of the truſt of his well doing in his owne cowrage ſo armed. For indeed the confidence in ones ſelf is the chiefe nurſe of magnanimitie, which confidence notwithſtanding doth not leaue the care of neceſſarie furnitures, for it: and therefore of all the Grecians *Homere* doth euer make *Achilles* the beſt armed. But that, as I ſay, was the firſt ill token: but by and by he perceaued he was a priſoner before any areſt, for the doore which he had lefte open was made ſo faſt of the outſide, that for all the force he could employe vnto it he could not vndo *Dametas* doing, then went he to the windowes, to ſee if that waye, there were any eſcape for him and his deare Lady, but as vaine hee founde all his employment there not hauing might to breake out but onely one barre, wherin notwithſtanding he ſtrained his ſinewes to the vttermoſt. And that he rather took out to vſe for other ſeruice, then for any poſſibilitie he had to eſcape, for euen then it was, that *Dametas* hauing gathered together the firſt comming ſheepheards, did blabber out what hee had founde in the Ladye *Philoclea* chamber, *Pyrocles* markingly harkned to all that

Dametas ſaid, whoſe voice and minde, acquaintance had taught him ſufficiently to know. But when he aſſuredly perceaued that his being with the Lady *Philoclea* was fullie diſcouered; & by the follie or malice, or rather malicious follie of *Dametas* her honour therein touched in the hieſt degree; remembring withal the crueltie of the *Arcadian* lawes which without exception did condemn al to death, who were foũd (as *Dametas* reported of them) in acte of mariage without ſolemnitie of mariage; aſſuring himſelfe beſides the law, the King & the Queene, woulde vſe ſo much more hate againſt their daughter, as they had found themſelues ſotted by him, in the purſute of their loue; Laſtly ſeing they were not only in the way of death, but fittly encaged for death, looking with a hartie griefe vpon the honour of loue, the fellowes *Philoclea*, (whoſe innocent ſoule now enioying his owne goodnes did little knowe the daunger of his euer faire then ſleeping harbour) his excellent wit ſtrengthened with vertue but guided by loue, had ſoone deſcribed to himſelfe a perfect viſion of their preſent condition, wherein hauing preſently caſt a reſolute reckoning of his owne parte of the miſery, not only the chiefe but ſole burthen of his anguiſh conſiſted in the vnworthy caſe, which was like to fall vpon the beſt deſeruing *Philoclea*. He ſaw the misfortune not the miſmeaning of his worke, was like to bring that creature to end, in whom the worlde as he thought did begin to receaue honour hee ſaw the weake iudgement of man, woulde condemne that as death deſeruing voice in her, which had in troth neuer broken the bonds of a true liuing vertue, & how often his eye turned to his attractiue adamant: ſo often did an vnſpeakable horror ſtrike his noble hart: to cõſider ſo vnripe yeares, ſo fautles a beautie, the manſion of ſo pure goodnes, ſhould haue her youth ſo vntimely cut off, her naturall perfections vnnaturallie cõſumed, her vertue rewarded with ſhame, ſomtimes he would accuſe himſelfe of necligence, that had not more curiouſly looked to al the houſe entries, & yet coulde hee not imagine the way *Dametas* was gotten in, & to call backe what might haue ben to a mã of wiſdom & courage, caries but a vaine ſhadow of diſcourſe ſomtimes he could not choſe but with a diſſolutiõ of his inward might lamentably conſider with what face he might looke vpon his (till then) ioy *Philoclea*, when the next light waking ſhould deliuer vnto her, ſhould perchaunce be the laſt of her hurtles life. And that the firſt time ſhe ſhould bend her excellent eyes vpon him, ſhee ſhould ſee the accurſed aucthor of her dreadfull end, & euen this conſideration more then any other, did ſo ſet it ſelfe in his well diſpoſed minde, that diſperſing his thoughts to all the wayes that might be of her ſafetie, finding a verye ſmall diſcourſe in ſo narrowe lymits of time and place, at length in many difficulties he ſaw none beare any likelyhood for her life, but his death. For thẽ he thought it would fal out that when they foũd his body dead, hauing no accuſer but *Dametas* as by his ſpeach he found there was not, it might iuſtly appeare that either *Philoclea* in defending her honour, or els he himſelf in diſpaire of atchieuing, had left his carcaſe profe of his intent but witnes of her clearenes, hauing a ſmall while ſtaied vpon the greatnes of his reſolution and loked to the furtheſt of it, be it ſo ſaid the valiant *Pyrocles*: neuer life for better cauſe, nor to better end was beſtowed, for if death be to follow this doing, which no death of mine could make me leaue vndon, who is to die ſo iuſtly as my ſelf? And if I muſt die, who can be ſo fit executioners as mine owne hands? Which as they were acceſſaries to the doing, ſo in killing me they ſhall ſuffer their owne puniſhment. But then aroſe ther a new impediment, for *Dametas* hauing caried away any thing, which he thought might hurt as tender a man as himſelfe, hee coulde finde no fit inſtrument

which

which might geue him a finall diſpatch, at length makinge the more haſte, leaſte his Lady ſhould awake, taking the Iron barre, (which being ſharper ſomething at the one end, then the other, he hoped ioynd to his willing ſtrength, might breake of the former threed of mortallitie, truely ſaid he, fortune thou haſt well perſeuered mine enemie, that wilt graunt me no fortune, to be vnfortunate, nor let me haue an eaſie paſſage now I am to troubl thee no more. But ſaid he O bar bleſſed in that thou haſt done ſeruice to the chamber of the paragon of life, ſince thou couldeſt not help me to make a perfitter eſcape, yet ſerue my turne I pray thee, that I may eſcape from my ſelfe, there withall yet once looking to fetch the laſt repaſt of his eyes and newe againe tranſported with the pittifull caſe hee lefte her in, kneeling downe he thus prayed. O great maker and great ruler of this worlde, ſaide hee, to thee do I ſacrifice this bloud of mine, and ſuffer Lorde the errors of my youth, to paſſe away therein, and let not the ſoule by thee made, and euer bending vnto thee, be now reiected of thee, neither be offended that I do abandon this body, to the gouernment of which thou hadſt placed me, without thy leaue, ſince how cā I know but that thy vnſearchable minde is, I ſhould ſo doe, ſince thou haſt taken from me all meanes longer to abide in it? And ſince the difference ſtāds but in a ſhort time of dying, thou that haſt framed my ſoule enclyned to do good, howe can I in this ſmal ſpace of mine, benefit ſo much all the humane kinde, as in preſeruing thy perfitteſt workmanſhip, their chiefeſt honour? O iuſtice it ſelfe, howſoeuer thou determineſt of me, let this excellent innocency not bee oppreſſed! Let my life pay her loſſe, O Lord geue me ſome ſigne that I may die with this comfort. (And pawſing a little as if he had hoped for ſome token) and when ſoeuer to the eternall darknes of the earth ſhe doth followe me, let our ſpirits poſſeſſe one place, and let them bee more happie in that vniting. With that word ſtriking the barre vpon his harte ſide, withall the force he had, and falling withall vpon to giue it the thorower paſſage, the barre in troth was to blunt to do the effect, although it pearced his skinne and bruſed his ribbes very ſore, ſo that his breath was almoſt paſt him. But the noyſe of his fall, draue away ſleepe from the quiet ſences of the deere *Philoclea*, whoſe ſweete ſoule had an earely ſalutation of a deadly ſpectacle vnto her, with ſo much more aſtoniſhment, as the falling a ſleepe but a litle before ſhe had retired her ſelfe from the vttermoſt pointe of wofulnes, and ſawe now againe before her eyes the moſt cruell enterpriſe that humane nature can vndertake without diſcerning any cauſe therof. But the liuely ſprinte of her affection had ſoone taught her not to ſtay long vpon diliberation, in ſo vrgent a neceſſitie, therefore getting with ſpeede her weake though well accorded limmes out of her ſweetned bedd, as when Iuells are haſtely pulled out of ſome riche coffer, ſhe ſpared not the nakednes of her tender feete, but I thincke borne as faſt with deſire as feare carried *Daphne*, ſhe came running to *Pyrocles*, and finding his ſpirits ſomthing troubled with the fall; ſhe put by the barre that lay cloſe to him, and ſtrayning him in her moſt beloued embracement, my comforte, my ioye, my life ſaide ſhee, what haſte haue you to kill your *Philoclea* with the moſt cruell torment that euer Lady ſuffred? Do you not yet perſwade your ſelfe that any hurte of yours is a death vnto me? And that your death ſhoulde bee my hell? Alas, if any ſodaine miſlike of mee (for other cauſe I ſee none) haue cauſed you to loath your ſelfe, if any fault or defect of mine hath bred this terribleſt rage in you, rather let mee ſuffer the bitternes of it, for ſo ſhal the deſeruer be puniſhed, mankind preſerued from ſuch a ruine, & I for my part ſhall haue that comforte, that I dye by the nobleſt hande that euer drew ſword. *Py-*

rocles

rocles greued with his fortune that he had not in one inſtant cut of all ſuch deliberation, thinking his life onely reſerued to be bound to bee the vnhappie newes teller: Alas ſaid he, my onely Starre, why doe you this wrong to God, your ſelfe and me, to ſpeake of faultes in you, no, no, moſt faultleſſe, moſt perfet Lady, it is your excellencie that makes me haſten my deſired end, it is the right I owe to the generall nature, that (though againſt priuate nature) makes me ſeek the preſeruation of all that ſhe hath done in this age, let me, let me dye. There is no way to ſaue your life moſt worthy to be conſerued, then that my death be your clearing, then did he with farre more paine and backward loathnes, then the ſo neere killing himſelfe was (but yet driuen with neceſſitie to make her yeeld, to that hee thought was her ſafetie) make her a ſhort but pithie diſcourſe, what he had heard by *Damætas* ſpeeches, confirming the reſt with a plaine demonſtratiō of their impriſonment. And then ſought he new meanes of ſtopping his breath, but that by *Philocleas* labour, aboue her force, he was ſtayed to heare her. In whom a man might perceue, what ſmal difference in the working there is, betwixt a ſimple voidnes of euill, & a iudiciall habit of vertue. For ſhe, not with an vnſhaked magnanimity, wherewith *Pyrocles* wayed & diſpiſed death, but with an innocent guiltleſſnes, not knowing why ſhe ſhould feare to deliuer her vnſtayned ſoule to God, helped with the true louing of *Pyrocles*, which made her think no life without him, did almoſt bring her minde to as quiet attending all accidents, as the vnmaſtred vertu of *Pyrocles*. Yet hauing with a prety palenes (which did leaue milken lines, vpon her roſie cheekes) payd a little dutie to humane feare, taking the Prince by the hand, and kiſſing the wound he had giuen himſelfe; O the only life of my life, and (if it fall out ſo) the comforte of my death, ſaide ſhee, farre farre from you, be the doing me ſuch wronge, as to thinke I will receaue my life as a purchaſe of your death, but well may you make my death ſo much more miſerable, as it ſhall any thinge be delayed after my onely felicitie. Doe you thincke I can accompte of the moment of death, like the vnſpeakeable afflictions my ſoule ſhoulde ſuffer, ſo ofte as I call *Pyrocles* to my minde, which ſhould be as ofte as I breathed? Should theſe eyes guide my ſteppes, that had ſeene your murder? ſhould theſe hands feede me that had not hindred ſuch a miſchiefe? Should this harte remaine within me, at euery pant to count the continuall clock of my miſeries? O no, if die we muſt, let vs thanke death, he hath not deuided ſo true an vnion! And truely my *Pyrocles*, I haue heard my father, and other wiſe men ſay that the killing ones ſelfe is but a falſe coulloure, of true courage; proceeding rather of feare of a further euil, either of torment or ſhame. For if it were a not reſpecting the harme, that woulde likewiſe make him not reſpect what might be done vnto him: and hope, being of al other, the moſt contrary thing to feare: this being an vtter baniſhment of hope, it ſeemes to receaue his ground in feare. Whatſoeuer (would they ſay) comes out of deſpaire, cannot beare the title of valure, which ſhould bee lifred vp to ſuch a hight, that holding al things vnder it ſelfe, it ſhould be able to maintaine his greatnes euen in the middeſt of miſeries. Laſtly they would ſaye, God had appointed vs Captaines of theſe our boddylie fortes, which without treaſon to that Maieſtie, were neuer to be deliuered ouer till they were redemaunded. *Pyrocles*, who had that for a lawe vnto him, not to leaue *Philoclea* in any thing vnſatisfied, although hee ſtill remained in his former purpoſe, and knew that time would grow ſhort for it, yet hearing no noyſe (the ſhepheardes being as then run to *Baſilius*) with ſetled and humbled countenaunce, as a man that ſhould haue ſpoken of a thing that did not concerne himſelf, bearing euē in his eyes

ſufficient

ſufficient ſhowes, that it was nothing but *Philocleas* danger, which did any thinge burden his harte, farre ſtronger then fortune, hauing with vehement embracinges of her, got yet ſome fruite of his delayed end, he thus aunſwered the wiſe innocency of *Philoclea*. Lady moſt worthy not only of life, but to be the verie life of al things the more notable demonſtrations you make of the loue, ſo farre beyond my deſerte, with which it pleaſeth you to ouercome fortune, in making mee happye; the more am I euen in courſe of humanitie (to leaue that loues force, which I neither can nor will leaue) bound, to ſeeke requitals witnes, that I am not vngratefull, to do which the infinitnes of your goodnes being ſuch as it cãnot reach vnto it, yet doing al I can and paying my life, which is all I haue, though it be farre (without meaſure) ſhorte of your deſarte, yet ſhall I not die in debt, to mine owne dutie. And truly the more excellent arguments you made, to keep me from this paſſage, imagined farre more terrible then it is; the more plainely it makes mee ſee what reaſon I haue, to preuent the loſſe not only of *Arcadia*, but all the face of the earth ſhould receaue, if ſuch a tree (which euen in his firſt ſpring, doth not onely beare moſt beautifull bloſſomes, but moſt rare fruites) ſhould be ſo vntimely cut off. Therefore, ô moſt truely beloued Lady, to whom I deſire for both our goods, that theſe may bee my laſt wordes, geue me your conſent euen out of that wiſedome which muſt needes ſee, that (beſids your vnmatched betterneſſe, which perchaunce you will not ſee) it is fitter one diethẽ both. And ſince you haue ſufficiently ſhowed you loue me, let me claime by that loue, you will be content rather to let me die contentedly, then wretchedly: rather with a cleare and ioyfull conſcience, then with deſperate condemnation in my ſelfe, that I accurſed villaine, ſhoulde bee the meane of baniſhing from the ſight of men the true example of vertue. And becauſe there is nothing lefte me to be imagined, which I ſo much deſire, as that the memory of *Pyrocles*, may euer haue an allowed place in your wiſe iudgement, I am content to drawe ſo much breath longer, as by aunſwearing the ſweete obiections you alledged, maye bequath (as I thinke) a right conceate vnto you, that this my doinge is out of iudgement, and not ſprong of paſſion. Your father you ſay, was wont to ſay, that this like action doth more proceed of feare, of furder euil or ſhame, then of a true courage, Truly firſt, they put a very geſſing caſe, ſpeaking of them who can euer after come to tell, with what minde they did it. And as for my parte, I call the immortall truth to witnes, that no feare of torment can apall me: who know it is but diuerſe manners of apparelling death: and haue long learned, to ſet bodely paine but in the ſecond fourme of my being. And as for ſhame, how can I be aſhamed of that, for which my well meaning conſcience wil anſweare for me to God, and your vnreſiſtable beautie to the world? But to take that argument in his owne force, and graunt it done for auoyding of further paine or diſhonour, (for as for the name of feare, it is but an odious title of a paſſion, giuen to that which true iudgement performeth) graunt, I ſay, it is, to ſhun a worſe caſe, & truly I do not ſee, but that true fortitude, loking into al humaine things with a perſiſting reſolutiõ, carried away neither with wonder of pleaſing things, nor aſtoniſhment of the vnpleaſaunt, doth not yet depriue it ſelfe, of the diſcerning the difference of euill, but rather is the onely vertue, which with an aſſured tranquillitye ſhunnes the greater by the valiant entring into the leſſe. Thus for his countries ſafety he wil ſpend his life, for the ſauing of a lym, he will not niggardly ſpare his goods; for the ſauing of all his body, hee will not ſpare the cutting of a lym, where indeed the weake harted man will rather dye, then ſee the face of a ſurgeon: who might with as

good

good reaſon ſaye, that the conſtant man abides the painefull ſurgery, for feare of a further euill: but he is content to waite for death it ſelfe, but neither is true; for neither hath the one any feare, but a well chooſing iudgement; nor the other hath any contentment, but onely feare; and not hauing a harte actiuely to performe a matter of paine, is forced paſſiuely to abide a greater damage. For to doe, requires a whole harte; to ſuffer falleth eaſelieſt in the broken minds. And if in bodely torment thus, much more in ſhame; wherein ſince vallure is a vertue, and vertue is euer limited, we muſt not runne ſo infinitely, as to thinke the valiant man is willinglie to ſuffer any thing, ſince the very ſuffering of ſome things is a certaine proofe of want of courage. And if any thing vnwillinglie among the chiefeſt may ſhame goe: for if honour be to be held deere, his contrarye is to be abhorred, and that not for feare, but of a true election. For which is the leſſe inconuenient, either the loſſe of ſome yeares more or leſſe (for once we knowe our liues be not immortall) or the ſubmitting our ſelues to each vnworthy miſery, which the fooliſh world may lay vpon vs? As for their reaſon, that feare is contrary to hope, neither do I defend feare, nor much yeeld to the aucthoritye of hope; to eyther of which great enclining ſhewes but a feeble reaſon, which muſt be guided by his ſeruaunts; and who builds not vppon hope, ſhall feare no earthquake of deſpaire. Their laſt alleadging of the heauenly powers, as it beares the greateſt name, ſo it is the only thing, that at all bred any combate in my minde. And yet I do not ſee, but that if God hath made vs maiſters of any thing, it is of our owne liues; out of which without doing wrong to any body, we are to iſſue at our owne pleaſure. And the ſame Argument would aſmuch preuayle to ſay we ſhould for no neceſſitie lay away from vs, any of our ioyntes, ſince they being made of him, without his warrant we ſhould not depart from them; or if that may be, for a greater cauſe we may paſſe to a greater degree. And if we be Lieutenants of God, in this little Caſtle, do you not thinke we muſt take warning of him to geue ouer our charge when he leaues vs vnprouided, of good meanes to tarrye in it? No certainelie do I not anſwered the ſorrowfull *Philoclea*, ſince it is not for vs to appoint that mightie Maieſtie, what time he will helpe vs: the vttermoſt inſtant is ſcope enough for him, to reuoke euery thing to ones owne deſire. And therefore to preiudicate his determinacion, is but a doubt of goodnes in him, who is nothing but goodnes. But when in deede he doth either by ſicknes, or outward force lay death vpon vs, then are we to take knowledge, that ſuch is his pleaſure, and to knowe that all is well that he doth. That we ſhould be maiſters of our ſelues, we can ſhewe at all no title, nor clayme; ſince neyther we made our ſelues, nor bought our ſelues, we can ſtand vpon no other right but his guift, which he muſt limit as it pleaſeth him. Neyther is there any proporcion, betwixt the loſſe of any other limme and that, ſince the one bends to the preſeruing all, the other to the deſtruction of all; the one takes not away the minde from the actions for which it is placed in the world, the other cuts off all poſſibilitie of his working. And truly my moſt deere *Pyrocles*, I muſt needes proteſt vnto you, that I can not thinke your defence euen in rules of vertue ſufficient. Sufficient and excellent it were, if the queſtion were of two outward things, wherein a man might by natures freedome determine, whether he would preferre ſhame to payne; preſent ſmaller torment, to greater following, or no. But to this (beſides the compariſon of the matters vallewes) there is added of the one part a direct euill doing, which maketh the ballance of that ſide too much vnequall. Since a vertuous man without

any

any reſpect, whether the griefe be leſſe or more, is neuer to do that which he can not aſſure himſelfe is allowable before the euerliuing rightfulnes. But rather is to thinke honoures or ſhames, which ſtande in other mens true or falſe iudgements, paynes or not paynes, which yet neuer approach our ſoules, to be nothing in regarde of an vnſpotted conſcience. And theſe reaſons do I remember, I haue heard good men bring in, that ſince it hath not his ground in an aſſured vertue, it proceedes rather of ſome other diſguiſed paſſion. *Pyrocles* was not ſo much perſwaded as delighted, by her well conceaued and ſweetely pronounced ſpeaches; but when ſhe had cloaſed her pittifull diſcourſe, and as it were ſealed vp her delightfull lippes, with the moiſtnes of her teares, which followed ſtill one another like a precious rope of pearle, now thinking it hye time. Be it as you ſaye (ſayde hee moſt vertuous beawtye) in all the reſt, but neuer can God himſelfe perſwade me, that *Pyrocles* life is not well loſt, for to preſerue the moſt admirable *Philoclea*. Let that be if it be poſſible written on my Tombe, and I will not enuye *Codrus* honour. With that he would agayne haue vſed the barre, meaning if that failde, to leaue his braynes vppon the wall. When *Philoclea* now brought to that ſhe moſt feared, kneeled downe vnto him, and embracing ſo his legges, that without hurting her, (which for nothing he would haue done) he could not ridde himſelfe from her, ſhe did with all the coniuring wordes, which the authoritye of loue may laye, beſeeche him, he would not nowe ſo cruelly abandon her, he woulde not leaue her comfortleſſe in that miſerye, to which he had brought her. That then in deede ſhe woulde euen in her ſoule accuſe him, to haue moſt fouly betrayed her; that then ſhe ſhould haue cauſe, to curſe the time that euer the name of *Pyrocles* came to her eares, which otherwiſe no death could make her do. Will you leaue me, ſayde ſhe, not onely diſhonoured as ſuppoſed vnchaſte with you, but as a murderer of you? Will you geue mine eyes ſuch a picture of hell, before my neere approaching death, as to ſee the murdred bodie of him, I loue more then all the liues that nature can geue? With that ſhe ſware by the hyeſt cauſe of all deuocions, that if he did perſeuer in that cruell reſolucion, ſhe would (though vntruly) not onely confeſſe to her father, that with her cõſent this acte had bene committed, but if that would not ſerue (after ſhe had puld out her owne eyes, made accurſed by ſuch a ſight) ſhe would geue her ſelfe ſo terrible a death, as ſhe might think the paine of it would counteruaile the neuer dying paine of her minde. Now therefore kill your ſelfe, to crowne this vertuous action with infamy: kill your ſelfe to make me (whome you ſay you loue) as long as I after liue, change my louing admiracion of you, to a deteſtable abhorring your name. And ſo indeede you ſhall haue the ende you ſhoote at, for in ſteede of one death, you ſhall geue me a thouſand, and yet in the meane time, depriue me of the helpe God may ſende me. *Pyrocles* euen ouerwayed with her ſo wiſely vttred affection, finding her determinacion ſo fixed, that his ende ſhould but depriue them both of a preſent contentment, and not auoyde a comming euill (as a man that ranne not vnto it, by a ſodayne qualme of paſſion, but by a true vſe of reaſon, preferring her life to his owne) nowe that wiſedome did manifeſt vnto him, that waye woulde not preuayle, he retired himſelfe, with as much tranquillitie from it, as before he had gone vnto it. Like a man, that had ſet the keeping or leauing of the bodye, as a thing without himſelfe, and ſo had thereof a freed and vntroubled conſideracion. Therefore throwing away the barre from him, and taking her vp from the place,

where he thought the conſummating of all beawties, very vnworthely lay, ſuffring all his ſences to deuoure vp their chiefeſt foode, which he aſſured himſelfe they ſhould ſhortly after for euer be depriued of: well, ſaid he, moſt deere Lady, whoſe contentment I preferre before mine own, and iudgement eſteeme more then mine owne, I yeeld vnto your pleaſure. The gods ſend you haue not woon your owne loſſe. For my part they are my witneſſes, that I thinke I do more at your commaundement, in delayeng my death, then another would in beſtowing his life. But now, ſayd he, as thus farre I haue yeelded vnto you, ſo graunt me in recompence thus much againe, that I may finde your loue in graunting, as you haue found your authoritye in obteyning. My humble ſuite is, you will ſay I came in by force into your Chamber, for ſo am I reſolued now to affirme, and that will be the beſt for vs both; but in no caſe name my name, that whtſoeuer come of me my houſe be not diſhonored. *Philoclea* fearing leaſt refuſall would turne him backe againe, to his violent refuge, gaue him a certayne countenance, that might ſhewe ſhe did yeeld to his requeſt, the latter part whereof indeed ſhe meant for his ſake to performe. Neyther could they ſpend more wordes together, for *Philanax*, with twentie of the nobleſt perſonages of *Arcadia* after him, were come into the Lodge, *Philanax* making the reſt ſtay belowe, for the reuerence he bare to womanhood, as ſtillie as he could came to the dore, and opening it, drewe the eyes of theſe two dolefull louers vpon him. *Philoclea* cloaſing againe for modeſtie ſake, within her bed the ritcheſſe of her beawties, but *Pyrocles* tooke holde of his barre, minding at leaſt to dye, before the excellent *Philoclea* ſhould receyue any outrage. But *Philanax* reſted awhile vppon himſelfe, ſtricken with admiracion at the goodlie ſhape of *Pyrocles*, whome before he had neuer ſeene, and withall remembring beſides others the notable acte he had done (when with his courage and eloquence, he had ſaued *Baſilius*, perchaunce the whole ſtate from vtter ruyne) he felte a kinde of relenting minde towardes him. But when that ſame thought, came waighted on, with the remembraunce of his maiſters death, which he by all probabilities thought he had bene of Councell vnto with the Queene, compaſſion turned to hatefull paſſion, and leſte in *Philanax* a ſtraunge medley, betwixt pittie and reuenge, betwixt lyking and abhorring. O Lorde, ſayde hee to himſelfe, what wonders doth nature in our tyme, to ſet wickedneſſe ſo beawtifully garniſhed? and that which is ſtraungeſt, out of one ſpring to make wonderfull effectes both of vertue and vice to iſſue? *Pyrocles* ſeeing him in ſuch a muſe, neyther knowing the man, nor the cauſe of his comming, but aſſuring himſelfe, it was for no good, yet thought beſt to begin with him in this ſort. Gentleman ſayde hee, what is the cauſe of your comming to my Lady *Philocleas* chamber? is it to defende her from ſuch violence, as I might goe about to offer vnto her? if it be ſo, truly your comming is vayne, for her owne vertue hath bene a ſufficient reſiſtaunce, there needes no ſtrength to be added to ſo inuiolate chaſtetie, the excellencie of her mind, makes her bodie impregnable. Which for mine own part I had ſoone yelded to confeſſe, with going out of this place (where I found but little comfort being ſo diſdainefully receiued) had I not bene, I know not by whom preſently vpon my cõming hether, ſo locked into this chamber, that I could neuer eſcape hence: where I was fettred in the moſt gilty ſhame, that euer mã was, ſeing what a paradice of vnſpotted goodnes, my filthy thoughts ſought to defile. If for that therfore you come, alredy I aſſure you, your arrãt is performed; but if it be to bring me to any puniſhmẽt whatſoeuer,

whatſoeuer, for hauing vndertaken ſo vnexcuſable preſumption. Truly I beare ſuch an accuſer about me of mine own conſcience, that I willingly ſubmit my ſelfe vnto it. Only this much let me demaund of you, that you will be a witneſſe vnto the King what you heare me ſay, & oppoſe your ſelfe, that neither his ſodaine fury, nor any other occaſion may offer any hurt to this Lady; in whome you ſee nature hath accompliſhed ſo much, that I am faine to lay mine owne faultines, as a foile of her pureſt excellency. I can ſay no more, but looke vppon her beawtie, remember her bloud, conſider her yeares, and iudge rightly of her vertues, and I doubt not a gentlemans mind, will then be a ſufficient enſtructer vnto you, in this I may tearme it miſerable chaunce, happened vnto her by my vnbridled audacitie. *Philanax* was content to heare him out, not for any fauour he owed him, but to ſee whether he would reueale any thing of the originall cauſe, and purpoſe of the kings death. But finding it ſo farre from that, that he named *Baſilius* vnto him, as ſuppoſing him aliue, thinking it rather cunning then ignorance: Yong man, ſaid he, whome I haue cauſe to hate before I haue meane to know, you vſe but a point of skill, by confeſſing the manifeſt ſmaller fault, to be beleeued hereafter in the deniall of the greater. But for that matter, all paſſeth to one end, and hereafter we ſhal haue leiſure by torments to ſeke the truth, if the loue of truth it ſelfe will not bring you vnto it. As for my Lady *Philoclea*, if it ſo fall out as you ſay, it ſhall be the more fit for her yeares, & comely for the great houſe ſhe is come of, that an ill gouerned beawtie hath not cancelled the rules of vertue. But howſoeuer it be, it is not for you to teach an *Arcadian*, what reuerent duty we owe to any of that progeny. But, ſaid he, come you with me without reſiſtance, for the one cannot auaile, and the other may procure pitie. Pitie? ſaid *Pyrocles* with a bitter ſmiling, diſdained, with ſo curriſh an anſwere: no, no, *Arcadian*, I can quickly haue pitie of my ſelfe, and I would think my life moſt miſerable, which ſhould be a gift of thine. Only I demaund this innocent Ladies ſecuritie, which vntill thou haſt cõfirmed vnto me by an oath, aſſure thy ſelfe, the firſt that layes hands vpõ her, ſhall leaue his life for a teſtimony of his ſacriledge. *Philanax* with an inward ſtorme, thinking it moſt manifeſt they were both, he at leaſt, of counſell with the kings death: well, ſaid he, you ſpeake much to me of the king: I do here ſweare vnto you, by the loue I haue euer borne him, ſhe ſhal haue no worſe, howſoeuer it fal out, then her own parents. And vpon that word of yours I yeld, ſaid the poore *Pyrocles*, deceiued by him that ment not to deceiue him. Then did *Philanax* deliuer him into the hands of a noble man in the company, euery one deſirous to haue him in his charge, ſo much did his goodly preſence (wherin true valure ſhined) breede a delightfull admiration in all the beholders. *Philanax* himſelfe ſtayed with *Philoclea*, to ſee whether of her he might learne ſome diſcloſing of this former concluſion. But ſhe ſweet Lady whom firſt a kindly ſhamefaſtnes had ſeparated from *Pyrocles*, (hauing bene left in a more open view then her modeſty would well beare) then the attending her fathers comming, and ſtudying how to behaue her ſelfe towards him for both their ſafeties, had called her ſpirits all within her: now that vpon a ſodaine *Pyrocles* was deliuered out of the chamber from her, at the firſt ſhe was ſo ſurprized with the extreame ſtroke of the wofull ſight, that, like thoſe that in their dreames are taken with ſome ougly viſion, they would fain cry for help, but haue no force, ſo remained ſhe awhile quite depriued not only of ſpeach, but almoſt of any other liuely actiõ. But whẽ indeed *Pyrocles* was quite drawne frõ her eys, & that her vital ſtrẽgth begã to return vnto her, now not knowing what they did to *Pyrocles*, but (according

the nature of loue) fearing the worſt, wringing her hands, and letting abundance of teares be the firſt part of her eloquence, bending her Amber-crowned head ouer her bed ſide to the hard-hearted *Philanax*: O *Philanax, Philanax,* ſayd ſhe, I knowe how much authoritye you haue with my father: there is no man whoſe wiſedome he ſo much eſteemes, nor whoſe faith ſo much he repoſeth vpon. Remember how oft you haue promiſed your ſeruice vnto me, how oft you haue geuen me occaſion to beleeue that there was no Lady in whoſe fauor you more deſired to remayne: and, if the remembrance be not vnpleaſant to your mind, or the rehearſall vnfitting for my fortune, remember there was a time when I could deſerue it. Now my chaunce is turned, let not your truth turne. I preſent my ſelfe vnto you, the moſt humble and miſerable ſuppliant liuing, neither ſhall my deſire be great: I ſeeke for no more life then I ſhall be found worthy of. If my bloud may waſh away the diſhonor of *Arcadia,* ſpare it not, although through me it hath in deede neuer bene diſhonored. My only ſute is you wil be a meane for me, that while I am ſuffered to enioy this life, I may not be ſeparated from him, to whom the Gods haue ioyned me, and that you determine nothing of him more cruelly then you do of me. If you rightly iudge of what hath paſt, wherein the Gods (that ſhould haue bene of our mariage) are witneſſes of our innocencies: then procure, we may liue together. But if my father will not ſo conceiue of vs, as the fault (if any were) was vnited, ſo let the puniſhmẽt be vnited alſo. There was no man that euer loued either his Prince, or any thing pertaining to him with a truer zeale then *Philanax* did. This made him euen to the depth of his heart receiue a moſt vehemẽt griefe, to ſee his maſter made as it were more miſerable after death. And for himſelfe, calling to mind in what ſort his life had bene preſerued by *Philoclea,* what time taken by *Amphialus* he was like to ſuffer a cruell death, there was nothing could haue kept him from falling to all tender pittie, but the perfect perſwaſion he had, that all this was ioyned to the packe of his maiſters death, which the miſconceiued ſpeech of marriage made him the more beleeue. Therefore firſt muttering to himſelfe ſuch like words: The violence the gentleman ſpake of, is now turned to mariage: he alledged *Mars,* but ſhe ſpeakes of *Venus.* O vnfortunate maiſter. This hath bene that faire diuell *Gynecia:* ſent away one of her daughters, proſtituted the other, empoyſoned thee, to ouerthrowe the diademe of *Arcadia.* But at length thus vnto her ſelfe he ſayde: If your father, Madame, were now to ſpeake vnto, truly there ſhould no body be found a more ready aduocate for you, then my ſelfe. For I would ſuffer this fault, though very great to be blotted out of my minde, by your former led life, your benefit towards my ſelfe, and being daughter to ſuch a father. But ſince among your ſelues you haue taken him away, in whome was the only power to haue mercy, you muſt now be clothed in your owne working: and looke for none other, then that which dead pittileſſe lawes may allot vnto you. For my part, I loued you for your vertue, but now where is that? I loued you in reſpect of a priuate benefit, what is that in compariſon of the publike loſſe? I loued you for your father, vnhappy folks you haue robbed the world of him. Theſe words of her father were ſo little vnderſtood by the only well vnderſtanding *Philoclea,* that ſhe deſired him to tell her, what he meant to ſpeake in ſuch darke ſort vnto her of her lord and father, whoſe diſpleaſure was more dreadfull vnto her, then her puniſhment: that ſhe was free in her owne conſcience, ſhe had neuer deſerued euill of him, no not in this laſt fact: wherein if it pleaſed him to proceed with patience, he ſhould finde her choiſe had not bene vnfortunate. He

that

that ſaw her words written in the plaine table of her faire face, thought it impoſſible there ſhou'd therin be contained deceite: and therfore ſo much the more abaſhed: Why, ſaid he, Madame, would you haue me thinke, you are not of conſpiracy with the Princeſſe *Pamelas* flight, and your fathers death? with that word the ſweet Lady gaue a pittifull cry, hauing ſtreight in her face & breaſt abundance of witneſſes, that her hart was far from any ſuch abhominable conſent. Ah of all ſides vtterly ruined *Philoclea*, ſaid ſhe, now in deed I may well ſuffer all conceite of hope to dye in mee. Deare father where was I, that might not do you my laſt ſeruice before ſoone after miſerably following you? *Philanax* perceiued the demonſtracion ſo liuely & true in her, that he eaſily acquited her in his heart of that fact, and the more was moued to ioyne with her in moſt heartie lamentation. But remembring him, that the burthen of the ſtate, and puniſhment of his maſters murderers, lay all vpon him: Well, ſayde he, Madame, I can do nothing, without all the ſtates of *Arcadia*: what they will determine of you, I know not, for my part your ſpeaches would much preuaile with me, but that I finde not how to excuſe, your geuing ouer your body to him, that for the laſt proofe of his treaſon, lent his garments to diſguiſe your miſerable mother, in the moſt vile fact ſhe hath cõmitted. Hard ſure it will be to ſeparate your cauſes, with whome you haue ſo neerely ioyned your ſelfe. Neither do I deſire it, ſaid the ſweetly weeping *Philoclea*: whatſoeuer you determine of him, do that likewiſe to me; for I knowe, from the fountaine of vertue nothing but vertue could euer proceede; only as you finde him faultleſſe, let him finde you fauourable, and build not my diſhonor vpõ ſurmiſes. *Philanax* feeling his hart more & more mollifieng vnto her, renewed the image of his dead maſter in his fancy, and vſing that for the ſpurres of his reuẽgefull choller, went ſodainly, without any more ſpeach, from the deſolate Lady, to whome now fortune ſeemed to threaten vnripe death, and vndeſerued ſhame among her leaſt euils. But *Philanax* leauing good guard vpon the Lodge, went himſelfe to ſee the order of his other priſoners, whome euen then as he iſſued, he found increaſed by this vnhoped meanes.

The noble *Pamela* hauing deliuered ouer the burthen of her fearefull cares to the naturall eaſe of a well refreſhing ſleepe, repoſed both mind & body vpõ the truſted ſupport of her princely ſhepheard, whẽ with the brayeng cryes of a raſcall company ſhe was robbed of her quiet, ſo that at one inſtãt ſhe opened her eyes, & the enraged *Muſidorus* roſe frõ her, enraged betwixt the doubt he had what theſe men would go about, & the ſpite he conceiued againſt their ill-pleaſing preſence. But the clownes, hauing with their hideous noyſe brought them both to their feet, had ſoone knowledge what gueſts they had found, for in deede theſe were the skummy remnant of thoſe rebels, whoſe naughty minds could not truſt ſo much to the goodnes of their Prince, as to lay their hangworthy necks vpõ the conſtancy of his promiſed pardon. Therfore whẽ the reſt (who as ſhepe had but followed their fellowes) ſo ſheepiſhly had ſubmitted thẽſelues, theſe only cõmitted their ſafety to the thickeſt part of thoſe deſert woods, who as they were in the conſtitution of their mindes little better then beaſtes, ſo were they apt to degenerate to a beaſtly kinde of life, hauing now framed their gluttoniſh ſtomackes to haue for foode the wilde benefites of nature, the vttermoſt ende they had, being but to drawe out (as much as they could) the line of a tedious life. In this ſorte vagabonding in thoſe vntroden places, they were guided by the euerlaſting Iuſtice, vſing themſelues to bee puniſhers of theyr faultes, and making theyr owne actions the beginning of their chaſtizements, (vnhappely both for him and themſelues) to light on *Muſidorus*. Whom as ſoone

as they ſaw turned towards them, they full well remembred it was he, that accompanyed with *Baſilius*, had come to the ſuccour of *Zelmane*: and had left among ſome of them bloudie tokens of his valure. As for *Pamela*, they had many times ſeene her. Thus fyrſt ſturred vp with a ruſticall reuenge againſt him, and then deſire of ſpoyle, to helpe their miſerable wants, but chiefly thinking it was the way to confirme their owne pardon, to bring the Princeſſe backe vnto her father (whome they were ſure he would neuer haue ſent ſo farre ſo ſleightlie accompanyed) without any other denouncing of warre, ſet altogither vpon the worthy *Muſidorus*. Who being before hand aſmuch enflamed againſt them, gaue them ſo braue a welcome, that the ſmart of ſome made the reſt ſtand further off, crying and prating againſt him, but like bad curres, rather barking then cloaſing; he in the meane time placing his trembling Lady to one of the Pyne trees, and ſo ſetting himſelfe before her, as might ſhewe the cauſe of his courage grewe in himſelfe, but the effect was only employed in her defence. The villaines that now had a ſecond proofe, how ill wordes they had for ſuch a ſword, turned all the courſe of their violence into throwing dartes and ſtones, in deede the only way to ouermaiſter the valure of *Muſidorus*. Who finding them ſome already touch, ſome fall ſo neere his chiefeſt life *Pamela*, that in the ende ſome one or other might happe to doo an vnſuccourable miſchiefe, ſetting all his hope in deſpaire, ranne out from his Lady among them. Who ſtreight like ſo many ſwyne, when a hardy maſtife ſets vpon them, diſperſed themſelues. But the firſt he ouertooke, as he ranne awav, carying his head as farre before him, as thoſe maner of runnings are wont to doo, with one blowe ſtrake it ſo cleane off, that it falling betwixt the handes, and the body falling vppon it, it made a ſhewe as though the fellow had had great haſte to gather vp his head agayne. Another the ſpeede he made to runne for the beſt game, bare him full butte agaynſt a tree, ſo that tumbling backe with a bruſed face, and a dreadfull expectation, *Muſidorus* was ſtreight vpon him: and parting with his ſword one of his legges from him, left him to make a roaring lamentation that his morter-treading was marred for euer. A third finding his feete too ſlowe, aſwell as his handes too weake, ſodaynely turned backe, beginning to open his lippes for mercye. But before hee had well entred a rudely compilde oration, *Muſidorus* blade was come betweene his iawes into his throate, and ſo the poore man reſted there for euer with a very euill mouthfull of an anſwere. *Muſidorus* in this furious chafe would haue followed ſome other of theſe hatefull wretches, but that he heard his Lady cry for helpe, whome three of this villanous crue, had (whiles *Muſidorus* followed their fellowes) compaſſing about ſome trees, ſodainly come vpon and ſurprized, threatning to kill her if ſhe cried, and meaning to conuey her out of ſight, while the Prince was making his bloud-thirſtie chaſe. But ſhe that was reſolued, no worſe thing could fall vnto her, then the being depriued of him, on whome ſhe had eſtabliſhed all her comfort, with a pittifull cry fetched his eyes vnto her: who then thinking ſo many weapons thruſt into his eyes, as with his eyes he ſawe bent againſt her, made all hartie ſpeede to her ſuccour. But one of them wiſer then his companions, ſet his dagger to her Alablaſter throate, ſwearing if hee threwe not away his ſword, he would preſently kill her. There was neuer poore ſcholler, that hauing in ſtede of his booke ſome playing toy about him, did more ſodainly caſt it from him, at the child-feared preſence of a cruell Scholemaiſter. Then the valiant *Muſidorus*, diſcharged himſelfe of his only defence,

when

whē he ſaw it ſtood vpō the inſtāt point of his Ladies life. And holding vp his noble hands to ſo vnworthy audience, O *Arcadians*, it is I that haue done, you the wrong; ſhe is your Princeſſe (ſaid he) ſhee neuer had will to hurt you, and you ſee ſhee hath no power. Vſe your choller vpō me that haue better deſerued it, do not your ſelues the wrong to doe her any hurte, which in no time nor place will euer bee forgiuen you. They that yet truſted not to his courteſie, bad him ſtande further off from his ſword, which he obediently did. So farre was loue aboue al other thoughts in him. Then did they call together the reſt of their fellowes, who though they were fewe, yet according to their number poſſeſſed many places. And then began theſe ſauage Senators to make a conſultation, what they ſhould do: ſome wiſhing to ſpoile them of their Iewels and let them go on their iourney, (for that if they carried them back they were ſure they ſhould haue leaſt parte of their pray) others preferring their old homes to any thing, deſired to bring them to *Baſilius* as pledges of their ſurety: and ther wanted not which cried the ſafeſt way was to kill them both; to ſuch an vnworthy thraldom were theſe great and excellent perſonages brought. But the moſt part reſiſted to the killing of the Princeſſe, fore-ſeing their liues would neuer bee ſafe after ſuch a fact committed: and beganne to wiſh rather the ſpoyle then death of *Muſidorus*: when the villaine that had his legge cut off, came ſcrawling towardes them, and being helped to them by one of the companie, began with a growning voice, and a diſfigured face, to demaunde the reuenge of his blood: which ſince hee had ſpent with them in their defence, it were no reaſon he ſhould be ſuffered by them to die diſcontented. The onely contentment he required was that by their helpe with his own hands he might put his murderer to ſome cruel death, he would faine haue cried more againſt *Muſidorus*, but that the much loſſe of bloud helped on with this vehemencie, choked vp the ſpirits of his life, leauing him to make betwixt his body and ſoule an ill fauoured partition. But they ſeing their fellow in that ſorte die before their faces, did ſwell in newe mortall rages: All reſolued to kill him, but nowe onely conſidering what manner of terrible death they ſhould inuent for him. Thus was a while the agrement of his ſlaying, broken by the diſagrement of the manner of it; & extremitie of cruelty grew for a time, to be the ſtop of crueltie. At length they were reſolued, euery one to haue a pece of him and to become all aſwell hangmen as iudges: when *Pamela* tearing her heare, and falling downe among them, ſomtimes with al the ſorte of humble praiers, mixt with promiſes of great good turnes, (which they knew her ſtate was able to performe) ſometimes threatning them, that if they kild him and not her, ſhe would not onely reuenge it vpon them, but vpon all their wiues and children; bidding them conſider that though they might thinke ſhee was come away in her fathers diſpleaſure, yet they might be ſure hee would euer ſhewe himſelfe a father, that the Gods woulde neuer if ſhee liued, put her in ſo baſe eſtate, but that ſhe ſhould haue abilitie to plague ſuch as they were returning a freſh to prayers and promiſes, and mixing the ſame againe with threatninges, brought them (who were now growne colder in their fellowes cauſe, who was paſt aggrauating the matter, with his cryes) to determine with themſelues there was no way, but either to kil them both or ſaue them both. As for the killing, already they hauing aunſweared themſelues that that was a way to make them Cittezens of the woodes for euer; they did in fine conclude they would retourne them backe againe to the King which they did not doubt, would bee cauſe of a greate reward, beſides their ſafetie from their fore-deſerued puniſhment. Thus hauing either by fortune, or the force of

thoſe two louers inward working vertue, ſetled their cruel harts to this gẽtler courſe they tooke the two horſes, and hauing ſet vpon them their princely priſoners, they retorned towards the lodge. The villaines hauing decked al their heads with lawrel branches, as thinking they had done a notable acte, ſinging and ſhowting, ranne by them in hope to haue brought them the ſame day againe to the King. But the time was ſo farre ſpent, that they were forced to take vp that nights lodging in the middeſt of the woods. Where while the clownes continued their watch about them, nowe that the night, according to his darke nature, did add a kind of deſolation to the penſiue harts of theſe two afflicted louers, *Muſidorus* taking the tender hand of *Pamela*, & bedewing it with his teares, in this ſort gaue an iſſue to the ſwelling of his harts grief. Moſt excellent Lady ſaid hee; in what caſe thinke you am I with my ſelfe, howe vnmerciful iudgements do I lay vpon my ſoule, now that I know not what God, hath ſo reuerſſed my wel meaning enterpriſe, as in ſteed of doing you that honour which I hoped (and not without reaſon hoped) *Theſſalia* ſhould haue yeelded vnto you, am now like to become a wretched inſtrumẽt of your diſcomfort? Alas how contrary an end haue al the enclinations of my mind taken! my faith falls out a treaſon vnto you, and the true honour I beare you, is the fielde wherein your diſhonour is like to bee ſowen! But I inuoke that vniuerſal and only wiſdome, (which examining the depth of harts, hath not his indgement fixed vpon the euent) to beare teſtimonie with me that my deſire though in extremeſt vehemencie, yet did not ſo ouercharge my remembrance, but that as farre as mans wit might be extended, I ſought to preuent al things that might fall to your hurt. But now that all the euil fortunes of euil fortune haue croſſed my beſt framed entent, I am moſt miſerable in that, that I cannot only not geue you helpe, but which is worſt of all; am barred from giuing you counſail. For how ſhould I open my mouth to counſaile you in that, wherein by my councel you are moſt vndeſeruedly fallen? The faire and wiſe *Pamela*, although full of cares of the vnhappie turning of this matter, yet ſeing the greefe of *Muſidorus* onely ſtirred for her, did ſo treade downe all other motions with the true force of vertue, that ſhe thus aunſwered him, hauing firſt kiſſed him, which before ſhe had neuer done either loue ſo cõmaunding her, which doubted how long they ſhould enioy one another; or of a liuely ſpark of noblenes, to deſcend in moſt fauour to one, when he is loweſt in affliction. My deere and euer deere *Muſidorus* ſaid ſhee, agreater wronge, doe you to your ſelfe, that will torment you thus with griefe, for the fault of fortune. Since a man is bound no further to himſelfe, then to doe wiſely; chaunce is only to trouble them, that ſtand vpon chaunce. But greater is the wronge (at leaſt if any thinge that comes from you, may beare the name of wrong) you doe vnto me, to thinke me either ſo childiſh, as not to perceaue your faithful faultleſſnes; or perceauing it, ſo baſely diſpoſed, as to let my harte be ouerthrown, ſtanding vpon it ſelfe in ſo vnſpotted a purenes. Hold for certaine moſt worthy *Muſidorus*, it is your ſelfe I loue, which can no more be diminiſhed by theſe ſhowers of euill hap, then flowers are marred with the timely raynes of Aprill. For how can I want comforte that haue the true and liuing comforte of my vnblemiſhed vertue? And how can I want honour as long as *Muſidorus* in whom indeed honour is, doth honour me? Nothing bred from my ſelf can diſcomfort me: & fooles opinions I wil not recken as diſhonour. *Muſidorus* looking vp to the ſtarres, O mind of minds ſaid he, the liuing power of all things which doſt with al theſe eies behold our euer varying actiõs, accept into thy fauorable eares this praier of mine. Yf I may any longer hold out this dwelling on the earth, which is

called

called a life, graunt me abilitie to deſerue at this Ladies handes the grace ſhee hath ſhewed vnto me; graunt me wiſdome to know her wiſdome, and goodnes ſo to encreaſe my loue of her goodnes, that all mine owne choſen deſires, be to my ſelfe but ſecond to her determinations. What ſoeuer I be, let it be to her ſeruice, let me herein be ſatisfied, that for ſuch infinite fauours of vertue, I haue ſome way wrought her ſatisfaction. But if my laſt time aprocheth, and that I am no longer to be amongſt mortall creatures, make yet my death ſerue her to ſome purpoſe, that hereafter ſhee may not haue cauſe to repent her ſelfe that ſhe beſtowed ſo excellent a minde vpon *Muſidorus*, *Pamela*, coulde not chooſe, but accord the conceite of their fortune to theſe paſſionate prayers, in ſo much that her conſtant eyes yeelded ſome teares, which wiping from her faire face with *Muſidorus* hande, ſpeaking ſoftly vnto him as if ſhe had feared more any body ſhould be witnes of her weakenes, then of any thing els ſhee had ſaid, you ſee ſaid ſhe my Prince and onely Lord, what you worke in me by your much greuing for me. I praye you thinke I haue no ioye but in you, and if you fill that with ſorrow what do you leaue for mee? What is prepared for vs we know not; but that with ſorrow we cannot preuent it, wee knowe. Now let vs turne from theſe things, and thinke you how you will haue me behaue my ſelfe towardes you in this matter. *Muſidorus* finding the authoritie of her ſpeach confirmed with direct neceſſitie, the firſt care came to his minde was of his deare friend and coſin *Pyrocles*: with whome long before hee had concluded what names they ſhoulde beare, if vpon any occaſion they were forced to geue them ſelues out for great men, and yet not make them ſelues fully knowen. Now fearing leaſt if the Princes ſhould name him for *Muſidorus*, the fame of their two being together, would diſcouer *Pyrocles*; holding her hand betwixt his handes a good while together: I did not thinke moſt excellent Princeſſe ſaide hee, to haue made any further requeſt vnto you, for hauing bene alredie to you ſo vnfortunate a ſuiter, I knowe not what modeſtie can beare any further demaũd. But the eſtate of on young man whom (next to you, far aboue my ſelfe) I loue more then all the world, one worthy of all well being for the notable conſtitution of the mind, and moſt vnworthy to receaue hurt by me, whom he doth in all faith and conſtancie loue, the pittie of him onely goes beyond all reſolution to the contrarie. Then did hee to the Princeſſe great admiration tell her the whole ſtory as farre as he knew of it, and that when they made the greuous diſiũction of their long company, they had concluded, *Muſidorus* ſhould entitle himſelf *Paladius*, Prince of *Iberia*, and *Pyrocles* ſhould be *Daiphantus* of *Lycia*.

Now ſaid *Muſidorus* he keeping a womans habit is to vſe no other name then *Zelmane*, but I that finde it beſt, of the on ſide for your honour, you went away with a Prince and not with a ſheepheard: of the other ſide accompting my death leſſe euil, then the betraying of that ſweete frende of mine, will take this meane betwixt both, and vſing the name of *Paladius* if the reſpect of a Prince will ſtop your fathers furie, that will ſerue aſwell as *Muſidorus* vntil *Pyrocles* fortune being ſom way eſtabliſhed, I may freely geue good proofe that the noble contrie of *Theſſalia* is mine: and if that will not mitigate your fathers opinion to me wards (nature I hope working in your excellencies wil make him deale well by you) for my parte the image of death is nothing fearefull vnto me: and this good I ſhall haue reaped by it, that I ſhall leaue my moſt eſteemed friend in no danger to be diſcloſed by me. And beſides (ſince I muſt confeſſe, I am not without a remorſe of his caſe) my vertuous mother ſhal not know her ſonnes violent death hid vnder the fame will goe of *Paladius*. But as long as her

yeares

yeares now of good number be counted among the liuing, ſhee may ioye her ſelfe with ſome poſſibilitie of my returne. *Pamela* promiſing him vpon no occaſion euer to name him, fell into extremytie of weping, as if her eyes had beene content to ſpend all their ſeing moiſtnes, now that there was ſpeech of the loſſe of that, which they held as their chiefeſt light. So that *Muſidorus* was forced to repaire her good counſailes, with ſweete conſolations, which continued betwixt them vntill it was about midnight, that ſleep hauing ſtolne into their heauie ſences and now abſolutely commaunding in their vitall powers, lefte them delicately wound on in anothers armes quietly to waite for the comming of the morning. Which as ſoone as ſhee appeared to play her parte, laden (as you haue heard) with ſo many well occaſioned lamentations. Their lobbiſh garde (who all night had kept themſelues awake, with prating how valiant deedes they had done when they ranne away: and how faire a death their felowe had died, who at his laſt gaſpe ſued to bee a hangman) awaked them, and ſet them vpon their horſes, to whom the very ſhining force of excellent vertue, though in a very harriſh ſubiect, had wrought a kinde of reuerence in them; *Muſidorus* as he rid among them, (of whom they had no other holde but of *Pamela*) thinking it want of a well ſquared iudgement, to leaue any meane vnaſſayed of ſauing their liues, to this purpoſe ſpake to his vnſeemly gardians, vſing a plaine kind of phraſe to make his ſpeach the more credible. My maiſters ſaid he, there is no man that is wiſe but hath in what ſoeuer hee doth ſome purpoſe whereto hee directes his doinges, which ſo long he followes, till he ſee that either that purpoſe is not worth the paines, or that another doinge caries with it a better purpoſe. That you are wiſe in what you take in hand I haue to my coſt learned: that makes me deſire you to tell me, what is your ende in carying the Princeſſe and me backe to her father. Pardon, ſaide one, rewarde cried another, well ſaide he take both; although I know you are ſo wiſe to remember, that hardly they both will goe togeather, being of ſo contrary a making, for the ground of pardon is an euill, neither any man pardons but remembers an euill done, the cauſe of rewarde is the opinion of ſome good acte, and who ſo rewardeth that, holdes the chief place of his fancie. Now one man of one companie, to haue the ſame conſideration both of good and euill, but that the conceite of pardoning, if it bee pardoned, will take away the minde of rewarding, is very hard, if not impoſſible. For either euen in iuſtice will he puniſh the fault as well as reward the deſert, or els in mercie ballance the one by the other: ſo that the not chaſtiſing ſhalbe a ſufficient ſatisfiing. Thus then you may ſee that in your owne purpoſe, reſts greate vncertaintie. But I will graunt that by this your deede you ſhall obtaine your double purpoſe. Yet conſider I pray you whether by another meane, that may not better be obtained, & then I doubt not your wiſdomes wil teach you to take hold of the better. I am ſure you knowe, any body were better haue no neede of a pardon then enioy a pardon; for as it carries with it the ſuretie of a preſerued life, ſo beares it a continuall note of a deſerued death. This therefore (beſides the daunger you may runne into, my Lady *Pamela* being the vndoubted enheritrixe of this ſtate, if ſhee ſhall hereafter ſeeke to reuenge your wrong done her) ſhall bee continually caſt in your teeth, as men dead by the lawe; the honeſter ſorte will diſdaine your company & your children ſhalbe the more baſely reputed of, & you your ſelues in euery ſlight fault hereafter, as men once condemned, apteſt to bee ouerthrowne. Now if you will, (I doubt not you will, for you are wiſe) turne your courſe, and garde my Lady *Pamela* thither ward, whether ſhee was going: firſt you neede not doubt to aduen-

ture

ture your fortunes where ſhee goes, and there ſhall you be aſſured in a countrie as good and rich as this, of the ſame manners and language, to bee ſo farre from the conceate of a pardon, as we both ſhall be forced to acknowledge, we haue receaued by your meanes what ſoeuer we holde deere in this life. And ſo for rewarde iudge you whether it be not more likely, you ſhall there receaue it where you haue done no euill, but ſinguler and vndeſerued goodnes; or here where this ſeruice of yours ſhalbe diminiſhed by your dutie, and blemiſhed by your former fault. Yes I proteſt and ſweare vnto you, by the faire eyes of that Lady, there ſhall no Gentlemen in all that country bee preferred. You ſhall haue riches, eaſe, pleaſure, and that which is beſt to ſuch worthy mindes, you ſhall not bee forced to crie mercy for a good facte. You onely of all the *Arcadians*, ſhall haue the prayſe in continuing in your late valiaunt attempte, and not baſely bee brought vnder a halter for ſeeking the libertie of *Arcadia*. Theſe wordes in their mindes, who did nothing for any loue of goodnes, but onely as their ſenſes preſented greater ſhowes of proffit, beganne to make them wauer, and ſome to clappe their hands and ſcratch their heades, and ſweare it was the beſt way. Others that would ſeeme wiſer then the reſt to capitulate what tenements they ſhould haue, what ſubſidies they ſhould pay, others to talke of their wiues, in doubt whether it were beſt to ſend for thē, or to take new wher they went, moſt, (like fooles) not reddely thinking what was next to bee done, but imagining what cheere they woulde make when they came there, one or two of the leaſt diſcourſes beginning to turne their faces towards the woods which they had lefte. But being nowe come within the plaine neere to the lodges, vnhappily they eſpied a troupe of horſmen. But then their falſe harts had quickly for the preſent feare, forſaken their laſt hopes, and therfore keeping on the way toward the lodge, with ſonges of cries and ioye, the horſemen who were ſome of them. *Philanax* had ſent out to the ſearch of *Pamela* came gallowping vnto them; marueyling who they were that in ſuch a generall mourning, durſt ſinge ioyfull tunes, and in ſo publicke a ruine were the lawrell tokens of victorie. And that which ſeemed ſtraungeſt, they might ſee two among them vnarmed like priſoners, but riding like captaines. But when they came neerer, they perceaued the one was a Lady, and the Lady *Pamela*. Then glad they had by happ found that which they ſo litle hoped to meete withall, taking theſe clownes (who firſt reſiſted them, for the deſire they had to be the deliuerers of the two excellent priſoners, learning that they were of thoſe rebells, which had made the daungerous vprore, aſwell vnder cullour to puniſh that, as this their laſt withſtanding them, but indeed their principal cauſe being, becauſe they themſelues would haue the onely praiſe of their owne queſt, they ſuffered not one of them to liue. Marry three of the ſtubberneſt of them they lefte their bodies hanging vppon the trees, becauſe their doing might carry the likelier forme of iudgement. Such an vnlooked for end did the life of iuſtice worke, for the naughtie minded wretches, by ſubiects to be executed, that would haue executed Princes: and to ſuffer that without lawe, which by lawe they had deſerued. And thus theſe yonge folkes twiſe priſoners, before any due arreſt, deliuered of their iayloures but not of their iayle, had rather change then reſpit of miſery, theſe ſouldiers that tooke them with verie fewe wordes of entertainement, haſting to carrie them to their Lorde *Philanax*: to whom they came, euen as he going out of the Lady *Philocleas* chamber, had ouertaken *Pyrocles*, whom before hee had deliuered to the cuſtody of a noble man of that countrie. When *Pyrocles* led towardes his priſon ſawe his friend *Muſidorus*, with the noble

noble Lady *Pamela* in that in expected ſorte returned, his grieſe, (if any grieſe were in a minde which had placed euery thing according to his natur all worthe) was verie much augmented, for beſides ſome ſmall hope hee had, if *Muſidorus* had once bene cleere of *Arcadia*, by his dealing and auethoritie to haue brought his onely gladſome deſires to a good iſſue: The hard eſtate of his friend did no leſſe nay rather more vexe him, then his owne. For ſo indeede it is euer founde, where valure and friendſhipp are perfectly coopled in one hart, the reaſon being, that the reſolute man, hauing once diſgeſted in his iudgement the worſt extremitie of his owne caſe, and hauing either quiet expelled, or at leaſt repelled, all paſſion, which ordinarilie followes an ouerthrowne fortune, not knowing his friendes minde ſo well as his owne, nor with what pacience he brookes his caſe, (which is as it were the materiall cauſe of making a man happie or vnhappie) doubts whether his friend accomptes not him ſelfe more miſerable, and ſo indeede bee more lamentable. But aſſoone as *Muſidorus* was brought by the ſouldiers neere vnto *Philanax*, *Pyrocles* not knowing whether euer after hee ſhould bee ſuffered to ſee his friende, and determining there could be no aduauntage by diſſembling a not knowing of him leapt ſodainelie from their hands that helde him, and paſſing with a ſtrength ſtrengthened with a true affection, thorowe them that encompaſſed *Muſidorus*, he embraſed him as faſt as hee coulde in his armes. And kiſſing his cheekes, O my *Palladius* ſaide he, let not our vertue now abandon vs; let vs proue our mindes are no ſlaues to fortune, but in aduerſitie can tryumph ouer aduerſitie. Deere *Daiphantus* aunſweared *Muſidorus* (ſeing by his apparell his being a man was reuealed) I thanke you for this beſt care of my beſt parte. But feare not, I haue kept too long company with you to want nowe a thorowe determination of theſe things, I well know there is nothing euill but within vs, the reſt is either naturall or accidentall. *Philanax* finding them of ſo neare acquaintaunce, be ganne preſently to examine them a parte: but ſuch reſolution hee mett with in them, that by no ſuch meanes hee coulde learne furder, then it pleaſed them to deliuer. So that he thought beſt to put them both in one place, with eſpiall of there wordes and behauiour, that waye to ſifte out the more of theſe fore paſſed miſcheifes. And for that purpoſe gaue them both vnto the nobleman, whoe before had the cuſtodie of *Pyrocles*, by name *Simpathus*, leauing a truſtie ſeruant of his owne to geue dilligent watch to what might paſſe betwixte them. No man that hath euer paſſed thorow the ſchoole of affectiō, needs doubt what a tormenting grief it was to the noble *Pamela*, to haue the company of him taken from her, to whoſe vertuous company ſhe had bound her life. But waying with her ſelf, it was fit for her honour, till her doing were clearely manifeſted, that they ſhoulde remaine ſeperate: kept downe the riſing tokens of greefe; ſhewing paſſion in nothing but her eyes, which accompanied *Muſidorus* euen vnto the tent, whether he and *Pyrocles* were ledde. Then with a countenaunce more princely then ſhe was woont, according to the woont of hieſt hartes (like the Palme tree ſtriuing moſt vpwarde, when he is moſt burdened) ſhe commaunded *Philanax* to bring her to her father and mother, that ſhe might render them accompte of her doings. *Philanax* ſhewing a ſullaine kinde of reuerence vnto her, as a man that honoured her as his Maiſters heire, but much miſliked her for her, in his conceite, diſhonorable proceedings, tolde her what was paſt, rather to anſwere her, then that hee thought ſhee was ignoraunt of it. But her good ſpirite did preſently ſuffer a true compaſſionate affliction of thoſe hard aduentures: which croſſing her armes, looking a greate while on the grounde, with thoſe

eyes

eyes which let fall many teares, ſhe well declared. But in the ende remembring howe neceſſarye it was for her, not to looſe her ſelfe in ſuch an extremitye, ſhe ſtrengthened her well created hearte, and ſtoutely demaunded *Philanax*, what aucthoritye then they had to laye handes of her perſon, who being the vndoubted heyre, was then the lawfull Princeſſe of that Kingdome. *Philanax* anſwered, her Grace knewe the auncient lawes of *Arcadia* bare, ſhe was to haue no ſwaye of gouernment till ſhe came to one and twentye yeares of age, or were marryed. And marryed I am replyed the wiſe Princeſſe, therefore I demaunde your dewe allegeaunce. The gods forbid ſayde *Philanax*, *Arcadia* ſhoulde be a dowery of ſuch marriages. Beſides hee toulde her, all the States of her Countrye were euill ſatisfyed, touching her Fathers death; whiche likewiſe according to the Statutes of *Arcadia*, was euen that daye to bee iudged of, before the bodye were remoued, to receyue his princely funeralls. After that paſt, ſhe ſhoulde haue ſuch obedience, as by the Lawes was due vnto her, deſyring God ſhe woulde ſhowe her ſelfe better in publicke gouernment, then ſhe had done in priuate. She woulde haue ſpoken to the Gentlemen and people gathered about her: but *Philanax* fearing leaſt thereby ſome commotion mighte ariſe, or at leaſt a hinderaunce of executing hys maiſters murderers, which hee longed after more then any thing, haſted her vp to the Lodge, where her Siſter was, and there with a choſen companye of Souldyers to garde the place, lefte her with *Philocles*, *Pamela* proteſting they layde violent handes of her, and that they entred into rebellious attemptes agaynſt her. But hye tyme it was for *Philanax* ſo to doo, for alreadye was all the whole multitude fallne into confuſed and daungerous deuiſions.

There was a notable example, how great diſſipations, Monarchall gouernement are ſubiect vnto. For nowe theyr Prince and guide had lefte them, they had not experience to rule, and had not whome to obaye. Publicke matters had euer bene priuately gouerned, ſo that they had no liuely taſte what was good for themſelues. But euery thing was eyther vehemently deſirefull, or extreamely terrible. Neighbours inuaſions, ciuill diſſention, crueltye of the comming Prince, and whatſoeuer in common ſence carries a dreadfull ſhewe, was in all mens heads, but in fewe how to preuent: harkening on euery rumor, ſuſpecting euery thing, condemning them whome before they had honoured, making ſtrange and impoſſible tales of the Kings death, while they thought themſelues in daunger, wiſhing nothing but ſafetye, aſſoone as perſwaſion of ſafetie tooke them, deſiring further benefitts, as amendment of forepaſſed faultes, (which faultes notwithſtanding none could tell eyther the groundes or effectes of) all agreeing in the vniuerſall names of liking or miſliking, but of what in eſpeciall poyntes, infinitely diſagreeing. Altogether like a falling ſteeple, the partes whereof, as windowes, ſtones, and pinnacles, were well, but the whole maſſe ruinous. And this was the generall caſe of all, wherein notwithſtanding was an extreame medly of diuerſified thoughts; the great men looking to make themſelues ſtrong by factions, the gentlemen ſome bending to them, ſome ſtanding vpon themſelues, ſome deſirous to ouerthrowe thoſe few which they thought were ouer thē, the ſouldiers deſirous of trouble, as the nurſe of ſpoile, and not much vnlike to them, though in another way, were all the needy ſorte, the riche fearefull,

the wiſe carefull. This compoſicion of conceytes, brought foorth a daungerous tumulte, which yet woulde haue bene more daungerous, but that it had ſo many partes, that no body well knewe againſt whome chiefely to oppoſe themſelues. For ſome there were that cried to haue the ſtate altred, and gouerned no more by a Prince; marry in the alteration, many would haue the *Lacedemonian* gouernment of fewe choſen Senatours; others the *Athenian*, where the peoples voyce helde the chiefe aucthoritye. But theſe were rather the diſcourſing ſorte of men, then the actiue, being a matter more in imaginacion then practiſe. But they that went neereſt to the preſent caſe, (as in a countrie that knewe no gouernment, without a Prince) were they that ſtroue, whome they ſhould make. Whereof a great number there were, that would haue the Princeſſe *Pamela* preſently to enioy it: ſome diſdayning that ſhe had as it were abandoned her owne Countrie, enclining more to *Philoclea*; and there wanted not of them, which wiſhed *Gynecia* were deliuered, and made Regent till *Pamela* were worthely marryed. But great multitudes there were, which hauing bene acquainted with the iuſt gouernment of *Philanax*, meant to eſtabliſh him as Lieutenant of the ſtate: and theſe were the moſt populer ſorte, who iudged by the commodities they felte. But the principall men in honor and might, who had long before enuyed his greatnes with *Baſilius*, did much more ſpurne againſt any ſuch preferment of him. For yet before theyr enuye had ſome kinde of breathing out his rancour, by layeng his greatnes as a fault to the Princes iudgement, who ſhewde in *Damætas* he might eaſely be deceyued in mens valewe. But nowe if the Princes choice, by ſo many mouthes ſhould be confyrmed, what coulde they obiect to ſo rightly eſteemed an excellencye? They therefore were diſpoſed, ſooner to yeeld to anything, then to his rayſing: and were content (for to croſſe *Philanax*) to ſtoppe thoſe actions, which otherwiſe they could not but thinke good. *Philanax* himſelfe, as much hindred by thoſe, that did immoderatly honour him, (which brought both more enuye, and ſuſpicion vppon him) as by them that did manifeſtly reſiſt him, (but ſtanding onely vppon a conſtant deſire of iuſtice, and a cleere conſcience) went forwarde ſtoutly in the action of his maiſters reuenge, which he thought himſelfe particularly bound to. For the reſt, as the ordering of the gouernment, he accompted himſelfe but as one, wherein notwithſtanding he would imploy all hys loyall indeauour.

But among the Noble men, hee that moſt openly ſet himſelfe againſt him, was named *Timantus*, a man of middle age, but of extreame ambition, as one that had placed his vttermoſt good in greatnes, thinking ſmall difference by what meanes he came by it. Of commendable wit, if he had not made it a ſeruaunt to vnbrideled deſires. Cunning to creepe into mens fauours, which hee prized onely as they were ſeruiceable vnto him. He had bene brought vp in ſome ſouldiery, which he knewe how to ſet out, with more then deſerued oſtentacion. Seruile (though enuious) to his betters: and no leſſe tirannycallie minded to them hee had aduauntage of. Counted reuengefull, but in deede meaſuring both reuenge and rewarde, as the partye might eyther helpe or hurt him. Rather ſhameleſſe then bolde, and yet more bolde in practiſes, then in perſonall aduentures. In ſumme, a man that could be as euill as he liſted, and liſted as much, as any aduancement might thereby be gotten. As for vertue, hee counted it but a ſchoole name. Hee euen at the fyrſt aſſembling together, finding the

the great ſtroke *Philanax* carried among the people, thought it his readyeſt way of ambition, to ioyne with him: which though his pride did hardly brooke, yet the other vice carrying with it a more apparant obiect, preuayled ouer the weaker, ſo that with thoſe liberall proteſtacions of friendſhip, which men that care not for their word are wont to beſtowe, he offred vnto him the choiſe in marriage, of eyther the ſiſters, ſo he would likewiſe helpe him to the other, and make ſuch a particion of the *Arcadian* eſtate. Wiſhing him, that ſince he loued his maiſter, becauſe he was his maiſter, which ſhewed the loue began in himſelfe, he ſhould rather now occaſion was preſented, ſeeke his owne good ſubſtancially, then affect the ſmoke of a glory, by ſhewing an vntimely fidelitie to him, that could not reward it; and haue all the fruite he ſhould get in mens opinions, which would be as diuers, as many; fewe agreeing to yeeld him due prayſe of his true heart. But *Philanax*, who had limitted his thoughtes in that he eſteemed good, (to which he was neyther carryed by the vayne tickling of vncertayne fame, nor from which he would be tranſported by enioying any thing, whereto the ignorant world geues the excellent name of goodes) with great miſlike of his offer, he made him ſo peremtorye an anſwere, not without threatning, if he found him foſter any ſuch fancie, that *Timantus* went with an inward ſpite from him, whome before he had neuer loued; and meaſuring all mens marches by his owne pace, rather thought it ſome further fetch of *Philanax*, (as that he would haue all to himſelfe alone) then was any way taken with the loucly beawtie of his vertue; whoſe image he had ſo quite defaced in his owne ſoule, that he had left himſelfe no eyes to beholde it, but ſtayde wayting fitt oportunitie, to execute his deſires both for himſelfe, and againſt *Philanax*, which by the bringing backe of *Pamela*, the people being deuided into many motions, (which both with murmuring noyſes, and putting themſelues in ſeuerall troupes, they well ſhewed) he thought apt time was layde before him, the waters being, as the prouerbe ſayth, troubled, and ſo the better for his fiſhing. Therefore going amongſt the chiefeſt Lordes, whome he knewe principally to repine at *Philanax*, and making a kinde of conuocation of them, he inueighed againſt his proceedings, drawing euery thing to the moſt malicious interpretacion, that malice itſelfe could inſtruct him to doe. He ſayde, it was ſeaſon for them to looke to ſuch a weede, that elſe would ouergrowe them all. It was not nowe time to conſult of the dead, but of the liuing: ſince ſuch a ſlye wolfe was entred among them, that could make iuſtice the cloake of tirannye, and loue of his late maiſter the deſtruction of his now being children. Do you not ſee, ſayde hee, howe farre his corruption hath ſtretched, that hee hath ſuch a number of raſcalls voyces, to declare him Lieutenant, readye to make him Prince, but that he inſtructs them, matters are not yet ripe for it? As for vs, becauſe we are too ritch to be bought, he thinkes vs the fitter to be killed. Hath *Arcadia* bredd no man but *Philanax*? is ſhe become a ſtepmother to all the reſt, and hath geuen all her bleſſings to *Philanax*? Or if there be men amongſt vs, let vs ſhewe wee diſdayne to bee ſeruaunts to a ſeruaunt. Let vs make hym knowe, wee are farre worthier not to bee ſlaues, then hee to bee a mayſter. Thinke you hee hath made ſuch haſte in theſe matters, to geue them ouer to another mans hande? Thincke you, he durſt become the gaylor of his Princeſſe, but either meaning to be her maiſter, or her murtherer? and all this for the dere good wil forſoth he beares to the kings memory, whoſe authority as he abuſed

in his life, ſo he would now perſeuer to abuſe his name, after his death. O notable affection, for the loue of the father to kill the wife, and diſenherit the children! O ſingle minded modeſtie to aſpire to no leſſe then to the princely Diademe! No, no, he hath vired all this while, but to come the ſooner to his affected ende. But let vs remember what we be, in quallitie his equalls, in number farre before him, let vs deliuer the Queene, and our naturall Princeſſes, and leaue them no longer vnder his authoritye; whoſe proceedings would rather ſhewe, that he himſelfe, had bene the murderer of the King, then a fit Gardien of his poſteritye. Theſe wordes pearſt much into the mindes, already enclined that way. Inſomuch that moſt part of the nobilitye, confirmed *Timantus* ſpeech, and were readye to execute it: when *Philanax* came among them, and with a conſtant but reuerent behauiour, deſired them they would not exerciſe priuate grudges, in ſo common a neceſſitye. Hee acknowledged himſelfe a man, and a faultye man, to the cleering or ſatisfyeng of which, he would at all times ſubmit himſelfe, ſince his ende was to bring all things to an vpright iudgement, it ſhould euill fitt him to flye the iudgement. But ſayde he, my Lordes, let not *Timantus* rayling ſpeech (who whatſoeuer he findes euill in his owne ſoule, can with eaſe lay it vppon another) make me looſe your good fauour. Conſider that all well doing, ſtands ſo in the middle betwixt his two contrarye euils, that it is a readye matter to caſt a ſlaunderous ſhade vpon the moſt approued vertues. Who hath an euill toong, can call ſeueritie, crueltie, and faithfull dilligence, dilligent ambition. But my ende is not to excuſe my ſelfe, nor to accuſe him: for both thoſe, hereafter will be time enough. There is neyther of vs, whoſe purging or puniſhing may ſo much import to *Arcadia*. Now I requeſt you, for your owne honours ſake, and require you by the ducty you owe to this eſtate, that you doo preſently (according to the lawes) take in hande, the chaſtizement of our maiſters murderers, and laying order for the gouernment: by whom ſoeuer it be done, ſo it be done, and iuſtly done, I am ſatisfyed. My labour hath bene to frame things ſo, as you might determine: now it is in you to determine. For my part, I call the heauens to witneſſe, the care of my heart ſtands to repaye that, wherein both I, and moſt of you were tyed to that Prince; with whome, all my loue of worldly action is dead.

As *Philanax* was ſpeaking his laſt wordes, there came one running to him, with open mouth, and fearefull eyes, telling him, that there were a great number of the people, which were bent to take the young men out of *Sympathus* hands, and as it ſhould ſeeme by their acclamacions, were like inough to proclayme them Princes. Nay, ſayde *Philanax* (ſpeaking alowde, and looking with a iuſt anger vppon the other noble men) it is nowe ſeaſon to heare *Timantus* idle ſlanders, while ſtrangers become our Lordes, and *Baſilius* murderers ſit in his throne. But who ſoeuer is a true *Arcadian*, let him followe me. With that he went towarde the place he heard of, followed by thoſe that had euer loued him, and ſome of the noble men. Some other remayning with *Timantus*, who in the meane time was conſpiring by ſtrong hand to deliuer *Gynecia*, of whome the weakeſt guard was had. But *Philanax* where he went, found them all in an vprore, which thus was fallne out. The greateſt multitude of people, that were come to the death of *Baſilius*, were the *Mantineans*, as being the neareſt Citie to the lodges. Among theſe, the chiefe man both in authoritye and loue was *Kalander*, he that not long before had bene hoſte to the two Princes, whome though he knewe not ſo much as

by

by name, yet beſides the obligacion he ſtood bound to them in, for preſeruing the liues of his ſonne or nephewe, theyr noble behauiour had bred ſuch loue in his heart towardes them, as both with teares he parted from them, when they left him (vnder promiſe to returne) and did keepe their iewells and apparrell as the relicks of two demy gods. Among others, he had entred the priſon, and ſeene them, which forthwith ſo inueſted his ſoule, both with ſorrowe and deſire to helpe them (whome he tendred as his children) that calling his neighbours the *Mantineans* vnto him, he tould them, all the prayſes of thoſe two young men, ſwearing he thought the gods had prouided for them better, then they themſelues could haue imagined. He willed them to conſider, that when all was done, *Baſilius* children muſt enioy the ſtate; who ſince they had choſen, and choſen ſo as all the world could not mende their choiſe, why ſhould they reſiſt Gods doing, and theyr Princeſſes pleaſure? This was the only way to purchaſe quietnes without blood, where otherwiſe they ſhould at one inſtant, crowne *Pamela* with a Crowne of golde, and a diſhonoured title. Which whether euer ſhe would forget, he thought it fit for them to way: ſuch ſaid he, heroicall greatnes ſhines in their eyes, ſuch an extraordinary maieſtie in all their actions, as ſurely either fortune by parentage, or nature in creation, hath made them Princes. And yet a ſtate already we haue, we neede but a man, who ſince he is preſented vnto you by the heauenly prouidence, embraced by your vndoubted Princeſſe, worthy for their youth of compaſſion, for their beawtie of admiracion, for their excellent vertue to be monarkes of the world, ſhall we not be content with our owne bliſſe? Shall we put out our eyes, becauſe another man cannot ſee? or rather like ſome men, when too much good happens vnto them, they thinke themſelues in a dreame, and haue not ſpirits to taſte their owne goods? No no my friends, beleeue me, I am ſo vnpartiall, that I knowe not their names, but ſo ouercome with their vertue, that I ſhall then thinke, the deſtenyes haue ordayned a perpetuall floriſhing to *Arcadia*, when they ſhall allot ſuch a gouernor vnto it. This ſpoken by a man graue in yeares, great in authoritie, neere allyed to the Prince, and knowen honeſt, preuayled ſo with all the *Mantineans*, that with one voyce they ranne to deliuer the two Princes. But *Philanax* came in time to withſtand them, both ſides yet ſtanding in armes, and rather wanting a beginning, then mindes to enter into a bloudy conflict. Which *Philanax* foreſeeing, thought beſt to remoue the priſoners ſecretly, and if neede were, rather without forme of iuſtice to kill them, then againſt iuſtice (as hee thought) to haue them vſurpe the ſtate. But there agayne aroſe a new trouble. For *Sympathus* (the noble man that kept them) was ſo ſtricken in compaſſion, with their excellent preſence, that as he would not falſifye his promiſe to *Philanax*, to geue them libertye, ſo yet would he not yeeld them to himſelfe, fearing he would do them violence. Thus tumult vppon tumult ariſing, the Sunne I thinke aweary to ſee theyr diſcords, had alreadye gone downe to his Weſterne lodging. But yet to knowe what the poore Shepherds did, who were the fyrſt deſcryers of theſe matters, will not to ſome eares perchance be a tedious digreſſion.

Heere endes the fourth booke or acte.

The fourth Eglogues.

THE Shepheards finding no place for them in theſe garboyles, to which their quiet hearts (whoſe higheſt ambition was in keeping themſelues vp in goodnes) had at all no aptnes, retired themſelues from among the clamorous multitude: and as ſorowe deſires company, went vp together to the Weſterne ſide of a hill, whoſe proſpect extended it ſo farre, as they might well diſcerne many of *Arcadias* beawtyes. And there looking vpon the Sunnes as then declining race, the poore men ſate penſiue of their preſent miſeries, as if they founde a wearines of theyr wofull wordes: till at laſt good olde *Geron* (who as he had longeſt taſted the benefites of *Baſilius* gouernment, ſo ſeemed to haue a ſpeciall feeling of the preſent loſſe) wiping his eyes and long white bearde bedeawed with greate dropps of teares, began in this ſorte to complayne. Alas poore ſheepe, ſayde hee, which hitherto haue enioyed your fruiteful paſture, in ſuch quietnes, as your wooll amongſt other things hath made this Countrie famous, your beſt dayes are now paſt: now you muſt become the vittaile of an armye, and perchaunce an armye of foraine enemyes: you are now not onely to feare home Wolues, but alien Lions; now, I ſay now, that our right *Baſilius* is deceaſed. Alas ſweete paſtures! Shall ſouldiours that knowe not how to vſe you, poſſeſſe you? Shall they that can not ſpeake *Arcadian* language be Lordes ouer your Shepheards? For alas with good cauſe may we looke for any euill, ſince *Baſilius* our only ſtrength is taken from vs. To that all the other Shepheards preſent vttered pittifull voyces, eſpecially the very borne *Arcadians*. For as for the other, though humanitie moued them to pittie humane caſes, eſpecially in a Prince, vnder whome they had founde a refuge of their miſeries, and iuſtice equally adminiſtred: yet could they not ſo naturally feele the liuely touch of ſorrowe. Neuertheleſſe, of that number one *Agelaſtus*, notably noted among them, aſwell for his skill in Poetry, as for an auſterely mayntayned ſorrowfulnes, wherewith hee ſeemed to deſpiſe the workes of nature, framing an vniuerſall complaint in that vniuerſall miſchiefe, vttered it in this ſeſtine.

SInce wayling is a bud of cauſefull ſorowe,
Since ſorow is the follower of euill fortune,
Since no euill fortune equalls publique damage:
Now Princes loſſe hath made our damage publique,
Sorow, pay we to thee the rights of Nature,
And inward griefe ſeale vp with outward wailing.

Why ſhould we ſpare our voice from endleſſe wailing,
Who iuſtly make our hearts the ſeate of ſorow?
In ſuch a caſe where it appeares that nature
Doth add her force vnto the ſting of fortune:
Chooſing alas! this our theatre publique,
Where they would leaue trophees of cruell damage,

Then ſince ſuch pow'rs conſpir'd vnto our damage

(Which

(Which may be know'n, but neuer help't with wailing)
Yet let vs leaue a monument in publique
Of willing teares, torne haires, & cries of ſorrow.
For loſt, loſt is by blowe of cruell fortune
Arcadias gemme the nobleſt childe of nature,

O nature doting olde, ô blinded nature,
How haſt thou torne thy ſelfe! ſought thine owne damage!
In graunting ſuch a ſcope to filthy fortune,
By thy impes loſſe to fill the world with wailing.
Caſt thy ſtepmother eyes vponour ſorowe,
Publique our loſſe: ſo, ſee, thy ſhame is publique.

O that we had, to make our woes more publique,
Seas in our eyes, & braſen tongues by nature,
A yelling voice, & heartes compoſ'd of ſorow,
Breath made of flames, wits knowing nought but damage,
Our ſports murdering our ſelues, our muſiques wailing,
Our ſtudies fixt vpon the falles of fortune.

No, no, our miſchiefe growes in this vile fortune,
That priuate paines can not breath out in publique
The furious inward griefes with helliſh wailing:
But forced are to burthen feeble nature
With ſecret ſenſe of our eternall damage,
And ſorow feede, feeding our ſoules with ſorow.

Since ſorow then concludeth all our fortune
With all our deathes ſhew we this damage publique.
His nature feares to die who lines ſtill wailing.

It ſeemed that this complaint of *Agelaſtus* had awaked the ſpirits of the *Arcadians*, aſtoniſhed before with exceedingnes of ſorow. For hee had ſcarcely ended, when diuerſe of them offred to follow his example, in be wayling the generall loſſe of that countrie which had bene aſwell a nurſe to ſtraungers, as a mother to *Arcadians*. Among the reſt one accounted good in that kinde, and made the better by the true feeling of ſorowe, roared out a ſong of lamentation, which (as well as might bee) was gathered vp in this forme:

SInce that to death is gone the ſhepheard hie,
Who moſt the ſilly ſhepheards pipe did pryſe,
Your dolefull tunes ſweete Muſes now applie.

And you ô trees (if any life there lies
In trees) now through your porous barkes receaue
The ſtraunge reſounde of theſe my cauſefull cries:
And let my breath vpon your braunches cleaue,

My breath diſtinguiſh'd into wordes of woe,
That ſo I may ſignes of my ſorrowe leaue.
But if among your ſelues ſome one tree growe,
That apteſt is to figure miſerie,
Let it embaſſage beare your grieues to ſhowe.
The weeping Mirrhe I thinke will not denie
Her helpe to this, this inſteſt cauſe of plaint.
Your doleſull tunes ſweet Muſes now applie.

And thou poore Earth, whom fortune doth attaint
In Natures name to ſuffer ſuch a harme,
As for to looſe thy gemme, and ſuch a Sainct,
Vpon thy face let coaly Rauens ſwarme:
Let all the Sea thy teares accounted be:
Thy bowels with all killing mettals arme.
Let golde now ruſt, let Diamonds waſte in thee:
Let pearls be wan with woe their damme doth beare:
Thy ſelfe henceforth the light doo neuer ſee.
And you, ô flowers, which ſometimes Princes were,
Till theſe ſtraunge altrings you did hap to trie,
Of Princes looſe your ſelues for tokens reare,
Lilly in mourning blacke thy whitenes die:
O Hyacinthe let Ai be on thee ſtill.
Your doleſull tunes ſweet Muſes now applie.

O Echo, all theſe woods with roaring fill,
And doo not onely marke the accents laſt,
But all, for all reach out my wailefull will:
One Echo to another Echo caſt
Sounde of my griefes, and let it neuer ende,
Till that it hath all woods and waters paſt.
Nay to the heau'ns your inſt complaining ſende,
And ſtay the ſtarrs inconſtant conſtant race,
Till that they doo vnto our dolours bende:
And aske the reaſon of that ſpeciall grace,
That they, which haue no liues, ſhould liue ſo long,
And vertuous ſoules ſo ſoone ſhould looſe their place?
Aske, if in great men good men doo ſo thronge,
That he for want of elbowe roome muſt die?
Or if that they be skante, if this be wronge?
Wiſedome this our wretched time eſpie
In one true cheſt to rob all Vertues treaſure?
Your doleſull tunes ſweete Muſes now applie.

And if that any counſell you to meaſure
Your doleſull tunes, to them ſtill playning ſay,
To well felte griefe, plainte is the onely pleaſure.

O light of Sunne, which is entitled day,
O well thou dooſt that thou no longer bideſt;
For mourning light her blacke weedes may diſplay.
O Phœbus with good cauſe thy face thou hideſt,
Rather then haue thy all-beholding eye
Fould with this ſight, while thou thy chariot guideſt.
And well (me thinks) becomes this vaultie skie
A ſtately tombe to couer him deceaſed.
Your dolefull tunes ſweet Muſes now applie.

O Philomela with thy breſt oppreſſed
By ſhame and griefe, helpe, helpe me to lament
Such curſed harmes as cannot be redreſſed.
Or if thy mourning notes be fully ſpent,
Then giue a quiet eare vnto my playning:
For I to teach the world complainte am bent.
You dimmy clowdes, which well employ your ſtayning
This cheerefull aire with your obſcured cheere,
Witneſſe your woſull teares with dayly rayning.
And if, ô Sinne, thou euer didſt appeare,
In ſhape, which by mans eye might be perceaued;
Vertue is dead, now ſet the triumph here.
Now ſet thy triumph in this world, bereaued
Of what was good, where now no good doth lie;
And by the pompe our loſſe will be conceaued.
O notes of mine your ſelues together tie:
With too much griefe me thinkes you are diſſolued.
Your dolefull tunes ſweet Muſes now applie,

Time euer old, and yong is ſtill reuolued
Within it ſelfe, and neuer taſteth ende:
But mankind is for aye to nought reſolued.
The filthy ſnake her aged coate can mende,
And getting youth againe, in youth doth flouriſh:
But vnto Man, age euer death doth ſende.
The very trees with grafting we can cheriſh,
So that we can long time produce their time:
But Man which helpeth them, helpleſſe muſt periſh.
Thus, thus the mindes, which ouer all doo clime,
When they by yeares experience get beſt graces,
Muſt finiſh then by deaths deteſted crime.
We laſt ſhort while, and build long laſting places:
Ah let vs all againſt foule Nature crie:
We Natures workes doo helpe, ſhe vs defaces.
For how can Nature vnto this reply?
That ſhe her child, I ſay, her beſt child killeth?
Your dolefull tunes ſweete Muſes now apply.

Alas,

Alas, me thinkes, my weakned voice but ſpilleth,
The vehement courſe of this iuſt lamentation:
Me thinkes, my ſound no place with ſorrow filleth.
I know not I, but once in deteſtation
I haue my ſelfe, and all what life containeth,
Since Death on Vertues fort hath made inuaſion.
One word of woe another after traineth:
Ne doo I care how rude be my inuention,
So it be ſeene what ſorrow in me raigneth.
O Elements, by whoſe (men ſay) contention,
Our bodies be in liuing power maintained,
Was this mans death the fruite of your diſſention?
O Phiſickes power, which (ſome ſay) hath reſtrained
Approch of death, alas thou helpeſt meagerly,
When once one is for Atropos diſtrained.
Great be Phyſitions brags, but aid is beggerly,
When rooted moiſture failes, or groweth drie,
They leaue off all, and ſay, death commes too eagerlie.
They are but words therefore that men do buy
Of any, ſince God Æſculapius ceaſed.
Your dolefull tunes ſweete Muſes now apply.

Iuſtice, iuſtice is now (alas) oppreſſed:
Bountifulnes hath made his laſt concluſion:
Goodnes for beſt attire in duſt is dreſſed.
Shepheards bewaile your vttermoſt confuſion;
And ſee by this picture to you preſented,
Death is our home, life is but a deluſion.
For ſee alas, who is from you abſented?
Abſented? nay I ſay for euer baniſhed
From ſuch as were to dye for him contented?
Out of our ſight in turne of hand is vaniſhed
Shepherd of ſhepherds, whoſe well ſetled order
Priuate with welth, publike with quiet garniſhed.
While he did liue, farre, farre was all diſorder;
Example more preuailing then direction,
Far was homeſtrife, and far was foe from border.
His life a law, his looke a full correction:
As in his health we healthfull were preſerued,
So in his ſickneſſe grew our ſure infection.
His death our death. But ah; my Muſe hath ſwarued,
From ſuch deepe plaint as ſhould ſuch woes deſcrie,
Which he of vs for euer hath deſerued.
The ſtile of heauie hart can neuer ſtie
So high, as ſhould make ſuch a paine notorious:
Ceaſe Muſe therfore: thy dart ô Death applie,
And farewell Prince, whom goodneſſe hath made glorious.

Many

Many were readie to haue followed this course, but the day was so wasted, that onely this riming *Sestine* deliuered by one of great account among them, could obtaine fauour to be heard.

FArewell ô Sunn, Arcadias *cleareſt light:*
Farewell ô pearl, the poore mans plenteous treaſure:
Farewell ô golden ſtaffe, the weake mans might:
Farewell ô Ioy, the ioyfulls onely pleaſure.
Wiſdome farewell, the skilleſſe mans direction:
Farewell with thee, farewell all our affection.

For what place now is lefte for our affection,
Now that of pureſt lampe is quench'd the light,
Which to our darkned mindes was beſt direction?
Now that the mine is loſt of all our treaſure?
Now death hath ſwallow'd vp our worldly pleaſure,
We Orphans made, void of all publique might?

Orphans in deede, depriu'd of fathers might:
For he our father was in all affection,
In our well-doing placing all his pleaſure,
Still ſtudying how to vs to be a light.
As well he was in peace a ſafeſt treaſure:
In warr his wit & word was our direction.

Whence, whence alas, ſhall we ſeeke our direction!
When that we feare our hatefull neighbours might,
Who long haue gap't to get Arcadians *treaſure.*
Shall we now finde a guide of ſuch affection,
Who for our ſakes will thinke all trauaile light,
And make his paine to keepe vs ſafe his pleaſure?

No, no, for euer gone is all our pleaſure;
For euer wandring from all good direction;
For euer blinded of our cleareſt light;
For euer lamed of our ſured might;
For euer baniſh'd from well plac'd affection;
For euer robd of all our royall treaſure.

Let teares for him therefore be all our treaſure,
And in our wailfull naming him our pleaſure:
Let hating of our ſelues be our affection,
And vnto death bend ſtill our thoughts direction.
Let vs againſt our ſelues employ our might,
And putting out our eyes ſeeke we our light.

Farewell our light, farewell our ſpoiled treaſure:

Farewell

Farewell our might, farewell our daunted pleaſure:
Farewell direction, farewell all affection.

The night beganne to caſt her darke Canopie ouer them, and they euen wearie with their woes bended homewardes: hoping by ſleepe forgetting themſelues, to eaſe their preſent dolours. When they were mett with a troupe of twentie horſe, the chiefe of which asking them for the Kinge, and vnderſtanding the hard newes, thereupon ſtayed among them expecting the returne of a meſſenger whome with ſpeede he diſpatched to *Philanax*.

The ende of the fourth Booke.

THE

THE FIFTH BOOKE OF THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA.

THE daungerous diuiſion of mens mindes, the ruinous renting of all eſtates, had nowe brought *Arcadia* to feele the pangs of vttermoſt perill (ſuch convulſions neuer comming, but that the life of that gouernment drawes neere his neceſſarye periode) when to the honeſt and wiſe *Philanax*, equally diſtracted betwixt deſire of his maiſters reuenge and care of the ſtates eſtabliſhment, there came (vnlooked for) a *Macedonian* Gentleman, who in ſhort, but pithye maner deliuered vnto him, that the renowmed *Euarchus*, King of *Macedon*, purpoſing to haue viſited his olde friend and confederate the King *Baſilius*, was nowe come within halfe a mile of the Lodges, where hauing vnderſtoode be certayne Shepheards, the ſodayne death of theyr Prince, had ſent vnto him, (of whoſe authoritye and faith he had good knowledge) deſiring him to aduertiſe him, in what ſecuritie hee might reſt there for that night, where willinglye hee woulde (if ſafely hee might) helpe to celebrate the funeralls of his auncient companion and alye, adding hee neede not doubt, ſince hee had brought but twentye in his companye, hee woulde be ſo vnwiſe as to enter into any forcible attempte with ſo ſmall force. *Philanax* hauing entertayned the Gentleman, aſwell as in the middeſt of ſo many tumultes hee coulde, pauſing awhile with himſelfe, conſidering howe it ſhoulde not onely be vniuſt, and againſt the lawe of Nations, not well to receyue a Prince whome good will had brought among them, but (in reſpecte of the greatnes of his might) very daungerous to geue him any cauſe of due offence; remembring withall the excellent tryalls of his equitie, which made him more famous then his victoryes, hee thought hee might bee the fitteſt inſtrumente to redreſſe the ruynes they were in, ſince his goodnes put hym without ſuſpicion, and hys greatneſſe beyonde enuye. Yet weighing with himſelfe howe harde many heads were to be brideled, and that in this monſtrous confuſion ſuch miſchiefe mighte

be attempted, of which late repentance ſhould after be but a ſimple remedie: he iudged beſt firſt to knowe how the peoples mindes would ſway to this determinacion. Therefore deſiring the Gentleman to returne to the King his maiſter, and to beſeech him (though with his paynes) to ſtay for an houre or two, where he was, till he had ſet things in better order to receiue him: he himſelfe went fyrſt to the Noble men, then to *Kalander* and the principall *Mantineans*, who were moſt oppoſite vnto him; deſiring them, that as the night had moſt bleſſedly ſtayed them from entring into ciuill bloud, ſo they would be content in the night to aſſemble the people together, to heare ſome newes, which he was to deliuer vnto them. There is nothing more deſirous of nouelties, then a man that feares his preſent fortune. Therefore they, whome mutuall diffidence made doubtfull of their vtter deſtruction, were quickly perſwaded to heare of any newe matter, which might alter at leaſt, if not helpe the nature of their feare. Namely the chiefeſt men, who as they had moſt to loſe, ſo were moſt iealous of their owne caſe, and were alreadye growne as wearye to be followers of *Timantus* ambition, as before they were enuyers of *Philanax* worthineſſe. As for *Kalander* and *Sympathus*, as in the one a vertuous friendſhip had made him ſeeke to aduaunce, in the other a naturall commiſeration had made him willing to protect the excellent (though vnfortunate) priſoners, ſo were they not againſt this conuocation. For hauing nothing but iuſt deſires in them, they did not miſtruſt the iuſtifyeng of them. Only *Timantus* laboured to haue withdrawne them from this aſſemblye, ſayeng, it was time to ſtop their eares from the ambitious charmes of *Philanax*. Let them fyrſt deliuer *Gynacia*, and her daughters, which were fit perſons to heare, and then they might begin to ſpeake. That this was but *Philanax* comming, to linke broyle vpon broyle, becauſe he might auoyd the anſwering of his treſpaſſes, which as he had long intended, ſo had he prepared coullored ſpeeches to diſguiſe them. But as his words expreſſed rather a violence of rancour, then any iuſt ground of accuſation, ſo pierced they no further, then to ſome partiall eares, the multitude yeelding good attention to what *Philanax* would propoſe vnto them: Who, like a man whoſe beſt building was a well-framed conſcience, neyther with plauſible words, nor fawning countenance, but euen with the graue behauiour of a wiſe father, whome nothing but loue makes to chide, thus ſayd vnto them. I haue, ſaid he, a great matter to deliuer vnto you, and thereout am I to make a greater demaund of you: But truly ſuch hath this late proceeding bene of yours, that I knowe not what is not to be demaunded of you. Me thinkes I may haue reaſon to require of you, as men are woont among Pirates, that the life of him that neuer hurt you, may be ſafe. Me thinkes I am not without apparence of cauſe, as if you were *Cyclopes* or *Cannibals*, to deſire that our Princes body, which hath thirtie yeares maintained vs in a flouriſhing peace, be not torne in pieces, or deuoured among you, but may be ſuffred to yeeld it ſelfe, which neuer was defiled with any of your blouds, to the naturall reſt of the earth. Me thinkes, not as to *Arcadians*, renowmed for your faith to Prince, and loue of Country, but as to ſworne enemyes of this ſweete ſoyle, I am to deſire you, that at leaſt, if you will haue ſtraungers to your Princes, yet you will not deliuer the ſeignory of this goodly Kingdome to your noble Kings murtherers. Laſtly, I haue reaſon, as if I had to ſpeake to mad men, to deſire you to be good to your ſelues: For before God, what either barbarous violence, or vnnaturall follie, hath not

this

this day had his ſeate in your mindes, and left his footſteps in your actions? But in troth I loue you too well, to ſtand long diſplayeng your faults: I would you your ſelues did forget them, ſo you did not fall againe into them. For my part, I had much rather be an orator of your prayſes. But now (if you will ſuffer attentiue iudgement, and not foreiudging paſſion, to be the waigher of my wordes) I will deliuer vnto you what a bleſſed meane the Gods haue ſent vnto you, if you liſt to embrace it. I thinke there is none among you ſo young, either in yeares, or vnderſtanding, but hath heard the true fame of that iuſt Prince *Euarchus* King of *Macedon*. A Prince with whom our late maiſter did euer holde moſt perfit alliance. He, euen he, is this day come, hauing but twenty horſe with him, within two miles of this place, hoping to haue found the vertuous *Baſilius* aliue, but now willing to do honor to his death. Surely, ſurely the heauenly powers haue in ſo full a time beſtowed him on vs, to vnite our diuiſions. For my part therefore I wiſh, that ſince among our ſelues we can not agree in ſo manifold partialities, we do put the ordering of all theſe things into his hands, aſwell touching the obſequies of the King, the puniſhment of his death, as the mariage and crowning of our Princeſſe. He is both by experience and wiſedome taught how to direct: his greatneſſe ſuch, as no man can diſdaine to obey him: his equitie ſuch, as no man neede to feare him. Laſtly, as he hath all theſe qualities to helpe, ſo hath he (though he would) no force to hurt. If therfore you ſo thinke good, ſince our lawes beare that our Princes murther be chaſtized before his murthered bodie be buried, we may inuite him to ſit to morowe in the iudgement ſeate; which done, you may after proceede to the buriall. When *Philanax* firſt named *Euarchus* landing, there was a muttring murmur among the people, as though in that euil ordered weaknes of theirs he had come to conquer their country. But when they vnderſtood he had ſo ſmall a retinue, whiſpring one with another, and looking who ſhould begin to confirme *Philanax* propoſition, at length *Sympathus* was the firſt that allowed it, then the reſt of the Noblemen, neither did *Kalander* ſtriue, hoping ſo excellent a Prince could not but deale graciouſly with two ſuch young men, whoſe authoritie ioyned to *Philanax*, all the popular ſort followed. *Timantus* ſtill blinded with his owne ambitious haſte (not remembring factions are no longer to be truſted, then the factious may be perſwaded it is for their owne good) would needes ſtriue againſt the ſtreame, exclaiming againſt *Philanax*, that now he ſhewed who it was, that would betray his country to ſtraungers. But well he found, that who is too buſie in the foundation of an houſe, may pull the building about his eares. For the people alreadie tyred with their owne diuiſions, (of which his elampring had bene a principall nurſe) and beginning now to eſpye a hauen of reſt, hated any thing that ſhould hinder them frō it: asked one another whether this were not he, whoſe euill toong no man could eſcape? whether it were not *Timantus* that made the firſt mutinous oration, to ſtrengthen the troubles? whether *Timantus*, without their conſent, had not gone about to deliuer *Gynæcia*? And thus enflaming one another againſt him, they threwe him out of the aſſembly, and after purſued him with ſtones and ſtaues, ſo that with loſſe of one of his eyes, ſore wounded & beaten, he was faine to flye to *Philanax* feete, for ſuccour of his life: geuing a true leſſon, that vice it ſelfe is forced to ſeeke the ſanctuarie of vertue. For *Philanax* who hated his euill, but not his perſon, and knewe that a iuſt puniſhment might by the maner be vniuſtly done; remembring withall, that although herein the peoples rage might haue hit rightly,

yet if it were nouriſhed in this, no man knewe to what extremities it might extend it ſelfe: with earneſt dealing, and employeng the vttermoſt of his authority, he did protect the trembling *Timantus*. And then hauing taken a generall oth, that they ſhould in the noneage of the Princeſſe, or till theſe things were ſettled, yeeld full obedience to *Euarchus*, ſo farre as were not preiudiciall to the lawes, cuſtomes, and liberties of *Arcadia*: and hauing taken a particular bonde of *Sympathus* (vnder whome he had a ſeruaunt of his owne) that the priſoners ſhould be kept cloſe, without conference with any man: he himſelfe honorablie accompanyed, with a great number of torches went to the king *Euarchus*, whoſe comming in this ſort into *Arcadia* had thus falne out.

The wofull Prince *Plangus* receyuing of *Baſilius* no other ſuccours but only certayne to conduct him to *Euarchus*, made all poſſible ſpeede towards *Byzantium*, where he vnderſtood the King, hauing concluded all his warres with the winning of that towne, had now for ſome good ſpace made his abode. But being farre gone on his way, he receyued certayne intelligence, that *Euarchus* was not only ſome dayes before returned into *Macedon*, but ſince was gone with ſome haſte to viſit that coaſt of his country that lay towards *Italy*. The occaſion geuen by the *Latines*, who hauing already gotten into their hands, partly by conqueſt, and partly by confederacie, the greateſt part of *Italie*, and long gaped to deuoure *Greece* alſo (obſeruing the preſent oportunitie of *Euarchus* abſence, and *Baſilius* ſolitarines, which two Princes they knewe to be in effect the whole ſtrength of *Greece*) were euen readye to lay an vniuſt gripe vpon it, which after they might beawtifie with the noble name of conqueſt. Which purpoſe though they made not knowne by any ſolemne denouncing of warre, but contrarywiſe gaue many tokens of continuing ſtill their former amitie: yet the ſtayeng of his ſubiects ſhippes, traffiquing as Merchants into thoſe partes, together with the dayly preparation of ſhipping, and other warlike prouiſions in Portes, moſt conuenient for the tranſporting of ſouldyers, occaſioned *Euarchus* (not vnacquainted with ſuch practizes) firſt to ſuſpect, then to diſcerne, laſtly, to ſeeke to preuent the intended miſchiefe. Yet thinking warre neuer to be accepted, vntill it be offred by the hand of neceſſitie, he determined ſo long openly to hold them his friends, as open hoſtilitie bewraied them not his enemies; not ceaſing in the meane time by letters & meſſages to moue the States of *Greece* by vniting their ſtrength, to make timely prouiſion againſt this perill: by many reaſons making them ſee, that, though in reſpect of place ſome of thē might ſeeme further remoued from the firſt violence of the ſtorme, yet being imbarqued in the ſame ſhip, the finall wrack muſt needs be common to them all. And knowing the mighty force of example, with the weake effect of faire diſcourſes not waited on with agreeable actions, what he perſwaded them, himſelfe performed, leauing in his owne realme nothing either vndone or vnprouided, which might be thought neceſſary for withſtanding an inuaſion. His firſt care was to put his people in a readineſſe for warre, and by his experienced ſouldiers to traine the vnskilfull to martiall exerciſes. For the better effecting whereof, as alſo for meeting with other inconueniences in ſuch doubtful times incident to the moſt ſetled ſtates, making of the diuers regions of his whole kingdome ſo many diuiſions as he thought conuenient, he appointed the charge of them to the greateſt, and of greateſt truſt he had about him: arming them with ſufficient authoritie to leauie forces within their ſeuerall gouernments, both for reſiſting the inuading enemy, and puniſhing the diſ-

ordered

ordered ſubiect. Hauing thus prepared the body, and aſſured the heart of his countrey againſt any miſchiefe that might attaint it, he then tooke into his carefull conſideration the externall parts, geuing order both for the repairing and encreaſing his nauy, and for the fortifying of ſuch places, eſpecially on the ſea coaſt, as either commoditie of landing, weakenes of the countrey, or any other reſpect of aduantage was likelyeſt to drawe the enemy vnto. But being none of them who thinke all things done, for which they haue once geuē direction, he folowed euery where his cōmandement with his preſence: which witnes of euery mans ſlacknes or diligēce, chaſtizing the one, & encouraging the other, ſuffred not the frute of any profitable counſaile for want of timely taking to be loſt. And thus making one place ſuccede another in the progreſſe of wiſedome & vertue, he was now come to *Aulon* a principall porte of his realme, whē the poore *Plangus* extremely wearied with his long iourney (deſire of ſuccouring *Erona* no more relieuing, then feare of not ſuccouring her in time aggrauating his trauaile) by a lamētable narratiō of his childrēs death, called home his cares frō encoūtring foraine enemies, to ſuppreſſe the inſurrection of inward paſſions. The matter ſo hainous, the maner ſo villanous, the loſſe of ſuch perſons, in ſo vnripe yeares, in a time ſo daungerous to the whole ſtate of *Greece*, how vehemētly it moued to griefe & compaſſiō others, only not blind to the light of vertue, nor deafe to the voice of their country, might perchance by a more cunning workman in liuely cullors be deliuered. But the face of *Euarchus* ſorow, to the one in nature, to both in affection, a father, and iudging the world ſo much the more vnworthely depriued of thoſe excellēcies, as himſelfe was better iudge of ſo excellēt worthines, cā no otherwiſe be ſhadowed out by the skilfulleſt pencel, thē by couering it ouer with the vaile of ſilēce. And in deed that way himſelf took, with ſo pacienta quietnes receiuing this pitifull relation, that all words of weakenes ſuppreſſed, magnanimity ſeemed to triumph ouer miſery. Only receiuing of *Plangus* perfit inſtruction of all things cōcerning *Plexirtus* & *Artaxia*, with promiſe not only to aid him in deliuering *Erona*, but alſo with vehemēt proteſtation, neuer to returne into *Macedon*, til he had purſued the murtherers to death: he diſpatched with ſpeed a ſhip for *Byzantium*, cōmanding the gouernor to prouide all neceſſaries for the war againſt his owne comming, which he purpoſed ſhould be very ſhortly. In this ſhip *Plangus* would needs go, impacient of ſtay, for that in many days before he had vnderſtood nothing of his Ladies eſtate. Soone after whoſe departure, newes was brought to *Euarchus*, that all the ſhips detained in *Italy* were returned. For the *Latines* finding by *Euarchus* procedings their intent to be fruſtrate (as before by his ſodaine returne they doubted it was diſcouered) deeming it no wiſdom to ſhew the will, not hauing the abilitie to hurt, had not only in free & frendly maner diſmiſſed them, but for the time wholy omitted their enterpriſe, attending the oportunitie of fitter occaſion. By meanes wherof *Euarchus*, rid frō the cumber of that war (likely otherwiſe to haue ſtaied him longer) with ſo great a fleete as haſte would ſuffer him to aſſemble, forthwith imbarqued for *Byzantium*. And now followed with freſh windes he had in ſhort time runne a long courſe, when on a night encountred with an extreme tempeſt, his ſhippes were ſo ſcattered, that ſcarcely any two were leſte together. As for the Kings owne ſhippe, depriued of all company, ſore bruſed, and weather-beatē, able no lōger to brooke the ſeas churliſh entertainmēt, a litle before day it recouered the ſhore. The firſt light made thē ſee it was the vnhappy coaſt of *Laconia*: for no other country could haue ſhown the like euidēce of vnnatural war.

Which hauing long endured betwene the nobilitie and the *Helotes*, and once compounded by *Pyrocles*, vnder the name of *Daiphantus*, imediately vpon his departure had broken out more violently then euer before. For the King taking the oportunitie of their captaines abſence, refuſed to performe the condicions of peace, as extorted from him by rebellious violence. Whereupon they were againe deepely entred into warre, with ſo notable an hatred towardes the very name of a King, that *Euarchus* (though a ſtraunger vnto them) thought it not ſafe there to leaue his perſon, where neither his owne force could be a defence, nor the ſacred name of Maieſtie, a protection. Therefore calling to him an *Arcadian* (one that comming with *Plangus* had remained with *Euarchus*, deſirous to ſee the warres) hee demaunded of him for the next place of ſuretie, where hee might make his ſtaye, vntill hee might heare ſomewhat of his fleete, or cauſe his ſhip to bee repaired. The gentleman glad to haue this occaſion of doing ſeruice to *Euarchus*, and honour to *Baſilius* (to whom he knew hee ſhoulde bring a moſt welcome gueſte) tolde him, that if it pleaſed him to commit himſelfe to *Arcadia*, (a parte whereof laie open to their vewe) he woulde vndertake ere the next night were farre ſpen tto guide him ſafely to his maſter *Baſilius*. The preſent neceſſitie much preuailed with *Euarchus*, yet more a certaine vertuous deſire to trie, whether by his authoritie he might withdrawe *Baſilius* from burying himſelfe aliue, and to imploy the reſt of his olde yeares in doing good, the onely happie action of mans life. For beſides the vniuerſall caſe of *Greece* depriued by this meanes of a principall piller, he weighed and pitied the pittyfull ſtate of the *Arcadian* people, who were in worſe caſe then if death had taken away their Prince. For ſo yet their neceſſitie would haue placed ſome one to the helme: now, a Prince being, and not doing like a Prince, keeping and not exerciſing the place, they were in ſo much more euill caſe, as they coulde not prouide for their euill. Theſe rightly wiſe & vertuous cõſideratiõs eſpecially moued *Euarchus* to take his iourny towards the deſert, where arriuing within night, and vnderſtanding to his great griefe the newes of the Princes death, hee wayted for his ſafe conduct from *Philanax*: in the meane time taking his reſt vnder a tree, with no more affected pompes, then as a man that knew, how ſoeuer he was exalted, the beginning and end of his body was earth. But *Philanax* as ſoone as he was in ſight of him, lighting from his horſe, preſented himſelfe vnto him in all thoſe humble behauiours, which not only the great reuerence of the partie but the conceit of ones owne miſerie, is woont to frame. *Euarchus* raſe vp vnto him with ſo gratious a coũtenaunce, as the goodnes of his mind had long exerciſed him vnto: carefull ſo much more to deſcend in all curteſies, as he ſawe him beare a lowe repreſentation of his afflicted ſtate. But to *Philanax*, aſſoone as by neere looking on him, he might perfectly behold him, the grauitie of his countenaunce, and yeares, not much vnlike to his late deceaſſed, but euer beloued maſter brought his forme ſo liuely vnto his memorie, and reuiued ſo all the thoughtes of his wonted ioyes within him, that in ſteede of ſpeaking to *Euarchus*, hee ſtoode a while like a man gone a farre iorney from himſelfe, calling as it were with his minde an account of his loſſes: imagining that this paine needed not, if nature had not ben violently ſtopped of her owne courſe: and caſting more louing then wiſe conceites, what a world this woulde haue bene, if this ſodaine accident had not interrupted it. And ſo farre ſtrayed hee, into this rauing melancholy, that his eyes nimbler then his tounge let fall a floud of teares, his voice being ſtopped with extremitie of ſobbing, ſo much had his friendſhippe caried him to *Baſilius*, that hee thought no age

was

was timely for his death. But at length taking the occaſion of his owne weeping, he thus did ſpeake to *Euarchus*. Let not my teares moſt worthely renowmed Prince make my preſence vnpleaſant, or my ſpeach vnmarked of you. For the iuſtnes of the cauſe, takes away the blame of any weakenes in me; and the affinitie that the ſame beareth to your greatnes, ſeemes euen lawfully to clayme pitty in you: A Prince of a Princes fall, a louer of iuſtice, of a moſt vniuſt violence. And geue me leaue excellent *Euarchus* to ſay, I am but the repreſenter of all the late floriſhing *Arcadia*, which now with mine eyes doth weepe, with my toong doth complaine, with my knees doth lay it ſelfe at your feete, which neuer haue bene vnreadie to carie you, to the vertuous protecting of innocents. Imagine, vouchſafe to imagine moſt wiſe and good King, that heere is before your eyes, the pittifull ſpectacle of a moſt dolorouſly ending tragedie: wherein I do but play the part, of all the newe miſerable prouince, which being ſpoiled of their guide, doth lye like a ſhip without a Pilot, tumbling vp and downe in the vncertaine waues, till it either runne it ſelfe vpon the rockes of ſelfe-diuiſion, or be ouerthrowne by the ſtormie winde of forreine force. *Arcadia* finding her ſelfe in theſe deſolate tearmes, doth ſpeake, and I ſpeake for her, to thee not vainly puiſſant Prince, that ſince now ſhe is not only robbed of the naturall ſupport of her Lord, but ſo ſodainly robbed, that ſhe hath not breathing time to ſtande for her ſafetie: ſo vnfortunately, that it doth appall their mindes, though they had leiſure: and ſo miſcheuouſly, that it doth exceede both the ſodainnes and infortunatenes of it: thou wilt lend thine arme vnto her, and as a man, take compaſſion of mankinde, as a vertuous man chaſtice moſt abhominable vice, and as a Prince protect a people, which all haue with one voyce called for thy goodnes: thinking that as thou art only able, ſo thou art fullie able, to redreſſe their imminent ruines. They do therefore with as much confidence as neceſſitie, flie vnto you for ſuccour, they lay themſelues open to you: to you, I meane your ſelfe, ſuch as you haue euer bene: that is to ſay one, that hath alwayes had his determinaciõs bounded with equitie. They only reſerue the right to *Baſilius* blood; the maner to the auncient preſcribing of their lawes. For the reſt without exception, they yeld ouer vnto you, as to the elected protectour of this kingdome, which name and office they beſeech you till you haue layde a ſufficient foundacion of tranquilitie, to take vpon you the particularitie both of their ſtatutes and demands, you ſhal preſently after vnderſtand. Now only I am to ſay vnto you, that this countrie falls to be a faire field, to prooue whether the goodlie tree of your vertue, will liue in all ſoiles. Heere I ſay will be ſeene, whether either feare can make you ſhort, or the likorouſnes of dominion make you beyond iuſtice. And I can for concluſion ſay no more but this, you muſt thinke vpon my words and your anſwere, depend not only the quiet, but the liues of ſo many thouſands, which for their auncient confederacie in this their extreame neceſſity, deſire neither the expence of your treaſure, nor hazard of your ſubiects, but only the benefit of your wiſedome, whoſe both glory and encreaſe ſtands in the exerciſing of it. The ſumme of this requeſt was vtterly vnlooked for of *Euarchus*, which made him the more diligent in marking his ſpeach, and after his ſpeach take the greater pauſe for a perfect reſolucion. For as of the one ſide, he thought nature required nothing more of him then that he ſhould be a helpe, to them of like creation, and had his heart no whit commanded with feare, thinking his life well paſſed, hauing ſatisfyed the tyrannie of time which the courſe of many yeares, the expectation of the world with more then ex-

pected honour, laſtly the tribute due to his own mind with the daily offring of moſt vertuous actions: ſo of the other hee wayed the iuſt reproach that followed thoſe, who eaſely enter into other folkes buſines, with the opinion might be conceaued, loue of ſeignorie rather then of iuſtice, had made him embarke himſelfe thus, into a matter nothing pertaining to him, eſpecially in a time when erneſt occaſion of his owne buſines ſo greatly required his preſence: But in the ende wiſedome being an aſſentiall and not an opinionate thing, made him rather to bend to what was in it ſelfe good, then what by euill mindes might bee iudged not good. And therein did ſee, that though that people did not belong vnto him, yet doing good which is not encloſed within any tearmes of people did belong vnto him, and if neceſſitie forced him for ſome time to abide in *Arcadia*, the neceſſitie of *Arcadia* might iuſtly demaund ſome fruite of abiding. To this ſecreat aſſurance of his owne worthines (which although it bee neuer ſo well cloathed in modeſtie, yet alwaies liues in the worthyeſt mindes) did much puſh him forward ſaying vnto himſelfe, the treaſure of thoſe inward guifts he had, were beſtowed by the heauens vpon him, to be beneficiall and not idle. On which determination reſting and yet willing before hee waded any further, to examine well the depth of the others proffer, hee thus with that well appeaſed geſture, vnpaſſionate nature beſtoweth vpon mankind, made anſwere to *Philanax* moſt vrgent peticion. Although long experience hath made me knowe, all men (& ſo Princes which be but men) to be ſubiect to infinite caſualties, the verie conſtitution of our liues remaining in continuall change: yet the affaires of this countrie, or at leaſt my meeting ſo iumply with them, makes mee a baſhed with the ſtrangenes of it. With much paine I am come hither to ſee my long approued friend and now I finde if I will ſee him, I muſt ſee him dead: after, for mine owne ſecuritie, I ſeeke to be waranted mine owne life: And their ſodainely am I appointed to be a iudge of other mens liues, though a friend to him, yet am I a ſtranger to the countrie, and now of a ſtranger you would ſodainely make a director. I might obiect to your deſire my weakenes, which age perhaps hath wrought in mind and body: and iuſtly I may pretend the neceſſitie of mine owne affaires, which as I am by all true rules moſt neerely tyed ſo can they not long beare the delaye of my abſence. But though I woulde and coulde diſpence with theſe difficulties, what aſſurance can I haue of the peoples will? Which hauing ſo many circles of imaginations can hardly be encloſed in one pointe. Who knowes a people, that knowes not ſodaine opinion makes them hope, which hope if it be not anſwered, they fall in hate? Chooſing and refuſing, erecting, and ouerthrowing, according as the preſentnes of any fancie caries them. Euen this their haſtie drawing to me, makes me thinke they wil be as haſtiely withdrawen form me, for it is but one ground of inconſtancie, ſoone to take or ſoone to leaue. It may be they haue hard of *Euarchus* more thē cauſe: their own eies wilbe perhaps more curious iudges, out of heareſay they may haue builded many conceites, which I can not perchaunce wil not performe, then wil vndeſerued repentance be a greater ſhame and iniurie vnto me, then their vndeſerued proffer, is honour. And to conclude I muſt be fully enformed, how the pacient is minded, before I can promiſe to vndertake the cure. *Philanax* was not of the moderne mindes, who make ſuiters magiſtrates: but did euer thinke the vnwilling worthy man, was fitter then the vndeſeruing deſirer. Therefore the more *Euarchus* drewe backe, the more hee founde in him that the cunningeſt pilot, doth moſt dread the rockes, the more earneſtly hee purſued his publique requeſt vnto him. Hee deſired him

not

not to make anye weake excuſes of his weakeneſſe, ſince ſo manye examples had well proued his minde, was ſtronge to ouerpaſſe the greateſt troubles, and his body ſtrong enough to obey his minde; and that ſo long as they were ioyned together, he knew *Euarchus* would thinke it no weariſome exerciſe, to make them veſſells of vertuous actions. The dutie to his countrie, he acknowledged, which as hee had ſo ſetled, as it was not to feare any ſoddaine alteration, ſo ſince it did want him, as well it might endure a fruictfull as an idle abſence. As for the doubt he conceaued of the peoples conſtancie in this their election, hee ſaide it was ſuch a doubt as al humane actions are ſubiect vnto: yet as much as in politique matters, which receaue not geometricall certainties, a man may aſſure himſelfe there was euident likelyhoode to bee conceaued, of the continuance, both in their vnanimitie, and his worthynes: wherof the on was apt to be held, & the other to hold, ioyned to the preſent neceſſitie, the firmeſt band of mortall mindes. In ſum hee alledged, ſo many reaſons to *Euarchus* his minde, (alredy enclined to enter into any vertuous action) that he yeelded to take vpon him ſelfe the iudgement of the preſent cauſe, ſo as hee might finde in deede that ſuch was the peoples deſire out of iudgement and not faction. Therefore mounting on their horſes they haſted to the lodges, where they found though late in the night, the people wakefully watching, for the iſſue of *Philanax* embaſſage. No man thinking the matter would be well done, without he had his voice in it, and each deeming his owne eyes the beſt gardiens of his throte in that vnaccuſtomed tumult. But when they ſaw *Philanax* returne, hauing on his right hande the King *Euarchus* on whome they had nowe placed the greateſt burthen of their feares, with ioyfull ſhoutes and applawding acclamations, they made him and the world quickly know that one mans ſufficiencie is more auailable then ten thouſands multitude. So euill ballanced be the extremities of popular mindes: and ſo much naturall imperiouſnes there reſts in a well formed ſpirit. For as if *Euarchus* had ben borne of the princely bloud of *Arcadia*, or that long and well acquainted proofe had engrafted him in their countrie, ſo flocked they about this ſtraunger, moſt of them alredie, from deiected feares, riſing to ambitious conſiderations, who ſhould catch the firſt hold of his fauour. And then from thoſe crying welcomes to babling one with the other, ſome prayſing *Philanax* for his ſucceeding paine, others likinge *Euarchus* aſpect, & as they iudged his age by his face, ſo iudging his wiſedome by his age, *Euarchus* paſſed thorow them like a man that did neither diſdaine a people nor yet was any thing tickled with their flatteries. But alwayes holding his owne, a man might reade a conſtant determination in his eyes. And in that ſorte diſmounting among them, he forthwith demaunded the conuocation to bee made, which accordingly was done, with as much order and ſilence: as it might appeare. *Neptune* had not more force to appeaſe the rebelliouswinde, then the admiration of an extraordinary vertue hath, to temper a diſordered multitude. He being rayſed vp vppon a place more hie then the reſt, where he might be beſt vnderſtoode, in this ſorte ſpake vnto them. I vnderſtande ſaide hee, faithfull *Arcadians*, by my L. *Philanax*, that you haue with one conſent, choſen me to be the iudge of the late euills hapned: orderer of the preſent diſorders: and finally protector of this countrie, til therein it be ſeene what the cuſtomes of *Arcadia* require. He could ſaye no further, being ſtopped with a generall crie, that ſo it was; geuing him all the honourable titles, and happie wiſhes, they could imagin. He beckned vnto them for ſilence, and then thus againe proceeded, well ſaide hee, how good choiſe you haue made, the attending muſt bee in

you

you, the proofe in me. But becauſe it many times falls out, we are much deceaued in others, we being the firſt to deceaue our ſelues, I am to require you, not to haue an ouerſhooting expectation of mee: the moſt cruell aduerſary of all honourable doings. Nor promiſe your ſelues wonders, out of a ſodaine lyking: but remember I am a man, that is to ſay a creature, whoſe reaſon is often darkned with error. Secondly, that you will laye your hearts voyde of foretaken opinions: els whatſoeuer I doe or ſay, will be meaſured by a wronge rule, like them that the haue yellow Iaundiſe, euery thing ſeeming yellowe vnto them. Thirdly, whatſoeuer debates haue ryſen among you, may be vtterly extinguiſhed, knowing that euen among the beſt men are diuerſities of opinions, which are no more in true reaſon to breed hatred, then one that loues black, ſhould be angrie with him that is clothed in white, for thoughts & conceits are the verie apparel of the mind. Laſtly, that you do not eaſely iudge of yonr iudge, but ſince you will haue me to command, thinke it is your part to obay. And in rewarde of this, I will promiſe and proteſt vnto you, that to the vttermoſt of my skill; but in the generall lawes of nature, eſpecially of *Greece*, and particular of *Arcadia* (wherein I muſt confeſſe I am not vnacquainted) I will not onely ſee the paſſed euills duly puniſhed, and your weale here after eſtabliſhed; but for your defence in it, if need ſhall requeir, I wil imploy the forces and treaſures of mine owne country. In the meane time, this ſhalbe the firſt order I will take, that no man vnder paine of greeuous puniſhment, name me by any other name but protector of *Arcadia*. For I will not leaue any poſſible culloure, to any of my naturall ſucceſſors, to make claime to this, which by free election you haue beſtowed vpon me. And ſo I vowe vnto you, to depoſe my ſelf of it aſſoone as the iudgement is paſſed, the King buried, and his lawfull ſucceſſor appointed. For the firſt whereof (I meane the trying; which be guiltie of the Kings death, and theſe other haynous treſpaſſes, becauſe your cuſtomes require ſuch haſte I will no longer delay it, then till to morrowe as ſoone as the Sunne ſhall giue vs fit opportunitie. You may therefore retire your ſelues to your reſt, that you may be reddier to be preſent, at theſe ſo great important matters. Which many allowing tokens, was *Euarchus* ſpeech heard, who nowe by *Philanax* (that tooke the principall care, of doing all due ſeruices vnto him) was offred a lodging made ready for him, (the reſt of the people aſwell as the ſmall commoditie of that place, would ſuffer yeelding their weery heads to ſleepe) when loe the night thorowly ſpent, in theſe mixed matters, was for that time baniſhed the face of the earth, and *Euarchus*, ſeing the daye beginne to diſcloaſe his comfortable beauties, deſiring nothing more, then to ioyne ſpeede with iuſtice, willed *Philanax*, preſently to make the iudgement place bee put in order: and aſſoone as the people (who yet were not fully diſperſed) might be brought together, to bring foorth the priſoners and the Kings body. Which the manner was, ſhould in ſuch caſes be held in ſight, though couered with blacke veluet, vntill they that were accuſed to be the murderers were quitted or condemned, whether the reaſon of the law were to ſhew the more gratefull loue to their Prince, or by that ſpectacle, the more to remember the iudge of his dutie. *Philanax* who now thought in himſelf, he approached by the iuſt reuenge he ſo much deſired, went withall care and diligence to performe his charge. But firſt it ſhalbe well to knowe, how the poore and princely priſoners, paſſed this tedious night. There was neuer tyrante exerciſed his rage with more grieuous torments, vpon any he moſt hated; then afflicted *Gynecia* did cruſifie her owne ſoule, after the guiltines of her harte, was ſurcharged with the ſodainenes of her

husbands

husbãds death, for although that effect came not frõ her minde yet her mind being euil, & the effect euill, ſhe thought the iuſtice of God, had for the beginning of her paines copled thẽ together. This inceſſantly boyled in her breſt, but moſt of al, whẽ *Philanax* hauing cloaſely impriſoned her, ſhe was lefte more freely to ſuffer, the fier-brands of her owne thoughts, eſpecially when it grewe darke, and had nothing left by her, but a little lampe, whoſe ſmall light to a perplexed mind, might rather yeld feareful ſhadowes, then any aſſured ſight. Then beganne the heapes of her miſeries, to waye downe the platforme of her iudgement, then beganne deſpaire to laye his ougly clawes vpon her, ſhee beganne then, to feare the heauenly powers (ſhee was woont to reuerence) not like a childe, but like an enemie, neither kept ſhe her ſelfe, from blaſphemous repyning againſt her creation. O Gods would ſhe crye out, why did you make me to deſtruction? If you loue goodnes, why did you not geue me a good minde? Or if I cannot haue it without your gifte, why doe you plague mee? Is it in me to reſiſt the mightines of your power? Then would ſhe imagine ſhe ſawe ſtrange ſights, and that ſhe heard the cries of helliſh ghoſtes, then would ſhe skritch out for ſuccour, but no man comming vnto her ſhee woulde faine haue killed her helfe, but knewe not how. At ſometimes againe, the very heauines of her imaginations, would cloaſe vp her ſenſes to a little ſleepe: but then did her dreames become her tormentors. One time it would ſeeme vnto her, *Philanax* was haling her by the heare of the head, and hauing put out her eyes, was redy to throw her into a burning fornace. Another time ſhe would thinke ſhe ſawe her husband making the complainte of his death to *Pluto*, and the magiſtrates of that infernall region, contending in great debate, to what eternal puniſhment they ſhould allot her. But long her dreaming would not hold, but that it woulde fall vpon *Zelmane*: to whom ſhee would think ſhe was crying for mercy, and that ſhe did paſſe away by her in ſilence without any ſhew of pittying her miſchief. Then waking out of a broken ſleep, and yet wiſhing ſhe might euer haue ſlept, new formes but of the ſame miſeries, would ſeaze her minde, ſhee feared death, and yet deſired death, ſhee had paſſed the vttermoſt of ſhame, and yet ſhame was one of her cruelleſt aſſaulters, ſhe hated *Pyrocles* as the originall of her mortall ouerthrowe: and yet the loue ſhee had conceaued to him, had ſtill a hie authoritie of her paſſions. O *Zelmane*, would ſhe ſay (not knowing how neere he himſelfe was to as great a daunger) now ſhalt thou glut thy eyes, with the diſhonoured death of thy enemie! Enemie alas enemie, ſince ſo theu haſte wel ſhewed, thou wilt haue me accompt thee, couldeſt thou not aſwel haue giuẽ me a determinate deniall, as to diſguiſe thy firſt diguiſing, with a doble diſſembling? Perchaunce if I had bene vtterly hopeleſſe, the vertue was once in me, might haue called together his forces, and not haue beene led captiue to this monſtrous thraldome of puniſhed wickednes. Then would her owne knowing of good enflame a new the rage of deſpaire: which becomming an vnreſiſted Lorde in her breſt, ſhee had no other comforte but in death, which yet ſhe had in horror, when ſhe thought of. But the weariſome deteſting of her ſelfe, made her long for the dayes approach, at which time ſhee determined to continue her former courſe in acknowledginge any thing, which might haſten her ende: Wherein although ſhee did not hope for the end of her torments, feeling alreadye the beginning of hell agonies; yet according to the nature of paine, the preſente being moſt intollerable, ſhee deſired to change that, and put to aduenture the enſuing. And thus reſted the reſtleſſe *Gynecia*, no leſſe ſorrowfull, though leſſe ragefull were the mindes of the Princeſſe *Pamela*,

and

and the Lady *Philoclea*, whoſe only aduantages were, that they had not conſented to ſo much euill, and ſo were at greater peace with themſelues: and that they were not lefte alone, but might mutually beare parte of each others woes. For when *Philanax* not regarding *Pamelas* princely proteſtations, had by force left her vnder garde with her ſiſter, and that the two ſiſters were matched, aſwell in the diſgraces of fortune, as they had beene in the beſt beauties of nature: thoſe thinges that till then, baſhfullnes and miſtruſt had made them holde reſerued, one from the other, now feare the vnderminer of all determinations, and neceſſitie the victorious rebell of all lawes, forced them enterchaungeably to lay open. There paſſions then ſo ſwelling in them, as they woulde haue made Auditors of ſtones, rather then haue ſwallowed vp in ſilence, the choking aduentures were ſalne vnto them. Truely the hardeſt hartes, which haue at any time thought womans teares to be a matter of ſleight compaſſion (imagining that faire weather, will quickly after followe) would now haue beene mollyfied: and bene compelled to confeſſe, that the fayrer a diamond is, the more pittie it is it ſhoulde receaue a bleamiſh. Although no doubte their faces, did rather beautifie ſorrow, then ſorrow coulde darken that, which euen in darkenes did ſhine. But after they had ſo long, as their other afflictions would ſuffer them, with doleful ceremonies bemoned their fathers death: they ſate downe together apparrelled as their miſaduentures had founde them. *Pamela* in her iourneying weedes nowe conuerted to a nother vſe: *Philoclea* onely in her night gowne, which ſhe thought ſhould bee the rayment of her funeralls. But when the excellent creatures, had after much panting (with their inwarde trauell) gotten ſo much breathing power, as to make a pittifull diſcourſe one to the other, what had befallne them; and that by the plaine comparing the caſe they were in, they thorowlye founde, that their greiues, were not more like in regarde of themſelues, then like in reſpecte of the ſubiecte (the two Princes (as *Pamela* had learned of *Muſidorus*) being ſo minded, as they woulde euer make both their fortunes one) it did more vnite, and ſo ſtrengthen their lamentation: ſeing the one coulde not bee miſerable, but that it muſt neceſſarilie make the other miſerable alſo. That, therfore was the firſt matter their ſweet mouths deliuered, the declaring the paſſionate beginning, trobleſome proceeding, and daungerous ending, their neuer ending loues had paſſed. And when at any time they entred into the prayſes of the young Princes, to long it woulde haue exerciſed their tonges, but that their memory foorthwith warned them, the more prayſe worthy they were the more at that time they were worthy of lamentation. Then againe to crying and wringing of handes; and then a newe, as vnquiet greefe ſought each corner, to newe diſcourſes, from diſcourſes to wiſhes, from wiſhes to prayers. Eſpecially the tender *Philoclea*, who as ſhe was in yeares yonger, and had neuer lifted vp her minde to any opinion of ſouereignetie, ſo was ſhe the apter to yeelde to her misfortune; hauing no ſtronger debates in her minde, then a man maye ſaye a moſt wittie childehoode is woont to nouriſh: as to imagine with her ſelfe, why *Philanax* and the other noble men, ſhoulde deale ſo cruelly by her, that had neuer deſerued euill of any of them? And howe they could finde in their hartes, to impriſon ſuch a perſonage, as ſhe did figure *Pyrocles*, whome ſhee thought all the worlde was bounde to loue, aswell as ſhee did? But *Pamela*, although endewed with a vertuous mildenes, yet the knowledge of her ſelfe, and what was due vnto her, made her hart full of a ſtronger diſdaine, againſt her aduerſitie.

So

So that ſhe ioyned the vexacion for her friend, with the ſpite to ſee her ſelfe as ſhe thought rebelliouſly detayned, and mixed deſirous thoughts to helpe, with reuengefull thoughts if ſhe could not helpe. And as in pangs of death, the ſtronger hart feeles the greater torment, becauſe it doth the more reſiſt to his oppreſſour; ſo her minde, the nobler it was ſet, and had already embraced the hyer thoughtes, ſo much more it did repine; and the more it repined, the more helpleſſe wounds it gaue vnto it ſelfe. But when great part of the night was paſſed ouer the dolefull muſicke of theſe ſweete Ladies complaints, and that leaſure though with ſome ſtrife, had brought *Pamela* to know, that an Eagle when ſhe is in a Cage, muſt not thinke to do like an Eagle, remembring with themſelues, that it was likely the next day, the Lords would proceed againſt thoſe they had impriſoned. They imployed the reſt of the night, in writing vnto them, with ſuch earneſtnes as the matter required, but in ſuch ſtiles as the ſtate of their thoughts was apt to faſhion. In the meane time, *Pyrocles* and *Muſidorus*, were recommended to ſo ſtrong a guard, as they might well ſee it was meant, they ſhould pay no leſſe priſe then their liues, for the getting out of that place, which they like men in deede, (fortifying courage with the true Rampier of patience) did ſo endure, as they did rather appeare gouernours of neceſſitie, then ſeruaunts to fortune. The whole ſumme of their thoughts reſting vpon the ſafetie of their Ladyes, and their care one for the other: Wherein (if at all) their harts did ſeeme to receyue ſome ſoftnes. For ſometimes *Muſidorus* would feele ſuch a motion to his friend, and his vnworthy caſe, that he would fall into ſuch kinde ſpeeches. My *Pyrocles* would he ſay, how vnhappy may I thinke *Theſſalia*, that hath bene as it were, the middle way to this euill eſtate of yours? For if you had not bene there brought vp, the Sea ſhould not haue had this power, thus to ſeuer you from your deere father. I haue therefore, (if complayntes do at any time become a mans hart) moſt cauſe to complayne, ſince my Countrie, which receyued the honor of *Pyrocles* educacion, ſhould be a ſtep to his ouerthrowe, if humane chances can be compted an ouerthrowe to him, that ſtands vppon vertue. Oh excellent *Muſidorus* aunſwered *Pyrocles*, howe do you teache me rather, to fall out with my ſelfe, and my fortune, ſince by you I haue receyued all good, you only by me this affliction? to you and your vertuous mother, I in my tendreſt yeares, and fathers greateſt troubles, was ſent for ſuccour. There did I learne the ſweete myſteries of Phyloſophy; there had I your liuely example, to confirme that which I learned; there laſtly had I your friendſhip, which no vnhappines can euer make me ſaye, but that hath made me happy. Now ſee how my deſteny (the gods knowe) not my will, hath rewarded you: my father ſends for you away out of your land, whence but for me you had not come: what after followed, you knowe. It was my loue not yours, which firſt ſtayed you heere; and therefore if the heauens euer held a iuſt proportion, it were I and not you, that ſhould feele the ſmart. O blame not the heauens, ſweete *Pyrocles* ſayde *Muſidorus*, as their courſe neuer alters, ſo is there nothing done by the vnreacheable ruler of them, but hath an euerlaſting reaſon for it. And to ſaye the truth of theſe things, we ſhould deale vngratefully with nature, if we ſhould be forgetfull receyuers of her giftes, and ſo diligent Auditors of the chaunces we like not. We haue liued, and haue liued to be good to our ſelues, and others: our ſoules which are put into the ſturring earth of our bodyes, haue atchieued the cauſes of their hether cõming: They haue knowne, & honoured with knowledge,

the cauſe of their creation, and to many men (for in this time, place, and fortune, it is lawfull for vs to ſpeake glorioufly) it hath bene behouefull, that we ſhould liue. Since then eternitie is not to be had in this coniunction, what is to be loſt by the ſeparation, but time? which ſince it hath his ende, when that is once come, all what is paſt is nothing: and by the protracting nothing gotten, but labour and care. Do not me therefore that wrong, (who ſomething in yeares, but much in all other deſerts, am fitter to dye then you) as to ſay you haue brought me to any euill: ſince the loue of you, doth ouerballance all bodely miſchiefes, and thoſe miſchiefes be but miſchiefes to the baſer mindes, too much delighted with the kennell of this life. Neither will I any more yeeld to my paſſion of lamenting you, which howſoeuer it might agree to my exceeding friendſhip, ſurely it would nothing to your exceeding vertue. Add this to your noble ſpeech my deere Cozen ſaid *Pirocles*, that if we complaine of this our fortune, or ſeeme to our ſelues faultie, in hauing one hurt the other, we ſhowe a repentance of the loue we beare to theſe matchleſſe creatures, or at leaſt a doubt, it ſhould be ouerdeerely bought, which for my part (and ſo dare I aunſwere for you) I call all the gods to witneſſe, I am ſo farre from, that no ſhame, no torment, no death, would make me forgoe the leaſt part, of the inward honor, eſſentiall pleaſure, and liuing life, I haue enioyed in the preſence of the faultleſſe *Philoclea*. Take the preheminence in all things, but in true louing, aunſwered *Muſidorus*, for the confeſſion of that no death ſhall get of me. Of that aunſwered *Pirocles* ſoberly ſmiling, I perceiue wee ſhall haue a debate in the other world, if at leaſt there remayne any thing of remembrance in that place. I do not thinke the contrarye ſayde *Muſidorus*, although you knowe, it is greately helde, that with the death of bodye and ſences (whiche are not onely the beginning, but dwelling and nouriſhing of paſſions, thoughts and immaginations) they fayling, memorye likewiſe fayles, which riſeth onely out of them: and then is there left nothing, but the intellectuall parte or intelligence, which voide of all morall vertues, which ſtande in the meane of perturbacions, doth onely liue in the contemplatiue vertue, and power of the omnipotent good, the ſoule of ſoules, and vniuerſall life of this great worke, and therefore is vtterly voide, from the poſſibilitie of drawing to it ſelfe, theſe ſenſible conſiderations. Certenly anſwered *Pirocles*, I eaſely yeeld, that we ſhall not knowe one another, and much leſſe theſe paſſed things, with a ſenſible or paſſionate knowledge. For the cauſe being taken away, the effect followes. Neither do I thinke, we ſhall haue ſuch a memorye, as nowe we haue, which is but a relicke of the ſenſes, or rather a print the ſenſes haue left of things paſſed, in our thoughtes, but it ſhall be a vitall power of that very intelligence; which as while it was heere, it helde the chiefe ſeate of our life, and was as it were the laſt reſorte, to which of all our knowledges, the hyeſt appeale came, and ſo by that meanes was neuer ignorant of our actions, though many times rebelliouſly reſiſted, alwayes with this priſon darkened: ſo, much more being free of that priſon, and returning to the life of all things, where all infinite knowledge is, it cannot but be a right intelligence, which is both his name and being, of things both preſent and paſſed, though voyde of imagining to it ſelfe any thing, but euen growen like to his Creator, hath all things, with a ſpirituall knowledge before it. The difference of which is as hard for vs to conceaue, as it had for vs, when wee were in our mothers wombes, to comprehende (if any body would haue tould vs)

what

what kinde of light we nowe in this life see. What kinde of knowledge we nowe haue, yet nowe we do not only feele our present being, but we conceaue what we were before we were borne, though remembrance make vs not do it, but knowledge, and though we are vtterly without any remorse of any misery, we might then suffer. Euen such and much more odds, shall there be at that second deliuery of ours; when voyde of sensible memorye, or memoratiue passion, wee shall not see the cullours, but lifes of all things that haue bene or can be: and shall as I hope knowe our friendship, though exempt from the earthlie cares of friendship, hauing both vnited it, and our selues, in that hye and heauenly loue of the vnquenchable light. As he had ended his speeche, *Musidorus* looking with a heauenly ioy vpon him, sang this song vnto him, he had made before loue turned his muse to another subiecte.

SInce natures workes be good, and death doth serue
As natures worke: why should we feare to dye?
Since feare is vaine, but when it may preserue,
Why should we feare, that which we cannot flye?

Feare is more paine, then is the paine it feares,
Disarming humane mindes, of natiue might:
While each conceate, an ouglie figure beares,
Which were not euill, well vew'd in reasons light.

Our owly eyes, which dimm'd with passions bee,
And scarce discerne the dawne of comming day,
Let them be clearde, and now begin to see,
Our life is but a step, in dustie way.
Then let vs holde, the blisse of peacefull minde,
Since this we feele, great losse we cannot finde.

Thus did they like quiet Swannes, sing their owne obsequies, and vertuously enhable theyr mindes against all extremities, which they did thinke woulde fall vppon them, especially resoluing, that the fyrst care they would haue, should be by taking the faulte vpon themselues, to cleere the two Ladyes, of whose case (as of nothing else that had happened) they had not any knowledge. Although their friendly hoste, the honest Gentleman *Kalander*, seeking all meanes how to helpe them, had endeuored to speake with them, and to make them knowe who should be their iudge. But the curious seruaunt of *Philanax* forbad him the entrye, vppon paine of death. For so it was agreed vppon, that no man should haue any conference with them, for feare of newe tumults. Insomuch that *Kalander* was constrayned to retire himselfe, hauing yet obtayned thus much, that he would deliuer vnto the two Princes, their apparell and iewells, which being left with him at *Mantinea*, (wisely considering that theyr disguised weedes, which were all as then they had, would make them more odious in the sight of the iudges) he had that night sent for, and now brought vnto them. They accepted their owne, with great thankefulnes, knowing from whence it came, and attired themselues in it against the nexte daye, which being in deede ritch and princely, they accordinglye

determined to maintaine the names of *Palladius* and *Daiphantus*, as before it is mencioned. Then gaue they themſelues to conſider, in what ſort they might defende their cauſes, for they thought it no leſſe vaine to wiſh death, then cowardly to feare it, till ſomething before morning, a ſmall ſlumber taking them, they were by and by after callde vp to come to the aunſwere, of no leſſe then theyr liues imported. But in this ſort was the iudgement ordred. As ſoone as the morning had taken a full poſſeſſion of the Element, *Euarchus* called vnto him *Philanax*, and willed him to draw out into the middeſt of the greene (before the chiefe lodge) the throne of iudgement ſeate, in which *Baſilius* was woont to ſit, and according to their cuſtomes, was euer carried with the Prince. For *Euarchus* did wiſely conſider, the people to be naturally taken with exterior ſhewes, farre more then with inward conſideracion, of the materiall pointes. And therefore in this newe entrie into ſo entangled a matter, he would leaue nothing which might be eyther an armour or ornament vnto him, and in theſe pompous ceremonyes he well knewe a ſecreat of gouernment much to conſiſt. That was performed by the diligent *Philanax*, and therein *Euarchus* did ſet himſelfe all cloathed in blacke, with the principall men, who could in that ſodainenes prouide themſelues of ſuch mourning rayments. The whole people commaunded to keepe an orderly ſilence of each ſide, which was duly obſerued of them, partly for the deſire they had to ſee a good concluſion of theſe matters, and partly ſtriken with admiracion, aſwell at the graue and princely preſence of *Euarchus*, as at the greatnes of the cauſe, which was then to come in queſtion. As for *Philanax*, *Euarchus* woulde haue done him the honour to ſit by him, but he excuſed himſelfe, deſiring to be the accuſer of the priſoners in his maiſters behalfe; and therefore ſince he made himſelfe a partie, it was not conuenient for him to ſit in the iudiciall place. Then was it awhile deliberated, whether the two young Ladies, ſhould be brought forth in open preſence, but that was ſtopped by *Philanax*, whoſe loue and faith, did deſcend from his maiſter to his children, and only deſired, the ſmart ſhould light vpon the others, whome he thought guiltie of his death and diſhonour, alleaging for this, that neyther wiſedome would, they ſhould be brought in preſence of the people, which might herevpon growe to new vprores: nor iuſtice required, they ſhould be drawen to any ſhame, till ſome body accuſed them. And as for *Pamela*, he proteſted the lawes of *Arcadia* would not allowe any iudgement of her, although ſhe her ſelfe, were to determine nothing, till age or marriage enabled her. Then the Kings body being layde vppon a Table, iuſt before *Euarchus*, and all couered ouer with blacke, the priſoners, namely the Queene, and two young Princes, were ſent for to appeare in the Protectors name: which name was the cauſe, they came not to knowledge, how neere a kinſeman was to iudge of them, but thought him to be ſome Noble man, choſen by the Country, in this extremitye. So extraordinary courſe, had the order of the heauens produced at this time, that both nephewe and ſonne, were not only priſoners, but vnknowen, to their vncle and father, who of many yeares had not ſeene them. And *Pyrocles* was to pleade for his life before that throne, in which throne lately before he had ſaued the Kings life. But firſt was *Gynecia* led foorth, in the ſame weedes that the daye and night before ſhe had worne, ſauing that in ſtead of *Zelmanes* garment in which ſhe was founde, ſhe had caſt on a long cloake, which reached to the ground of ruſſed courſe cloath, with a poore felt hat, which almoſt couered all

her

her face, moſt part of her goodly heare (on which her hands had layd many a ſpitefull holde) ſo lying vpon her ſhoulders, as a man might well ſee, had no artificiall careleſnes. Her eyes downe on the ground, of purpoſe not to looke on *Pyrocles* face, which ſhe did not ſo much ſhunne, for the vnkindnes ſhe conceaued of her owne ouerthrow, as for the feare, thoſe motions in this ſhort time of her life, ſhould be reuiued, which ſhe had with the paſſage of infinite ſorrowes mortified. Great was the compaſſion the people felt, to ſee their Princeſſe ſtate, and beawtie, ſo deformed by fortune and her owne deſert, whome they had euer found a Lady moſt worthy of all honour. But by and by the ſight of the other two priſoners, drewe moſt of the eyes to that ſpectacle. *Pyrocles* came out led by *Sympathus*, cloathed after the Greeke manner, in a long coate of white veluet, reaching to the ſmall of his legge, with great buttons of Diamonds all along vppon it: His neck without any coller, not ſo much as hidden with a ruffe, did paſſe the whitenes of his garments, which was not much in faſhion vnlike to the crimſon rayment, our Knightes of the order firſt put on. On his feete he had nothing but ſlippers, which after the auncient manner, were tyed vp with certayne laces, which were faſtened vnder his knee, hauing wrapped about (with many pretty knots) his naked legs. His fayre auberne heare (which he ware in great length, and gaue at that time a delightfull ſhew, with being ſturd vp and downe with the breath of a gentle winde) had nothing vppon it, but a white Ribbin, in thoſe dayes vſed for a Diademe. Which rolled once or twiſe about the vppermoſt parte of his forehead, fell downe vppon his backe, cloaſed vp at each ende with the richeſt pearle were to be ſeene in the world. After him followed an other Noble man, guiding the noble *Muſidorus*. Who had vpon him, a long cloake, after the faſhion of that, which we call the Apoſtles mantle, made of purple Satten; not that purple which we now haue, and is but a counterfet of the *Getulian* purple (which yet was farre the meaner in price and eſtimacion) but of the right *Tyrian* purple, which was neereſt to a cullour betwixt our murrey and skarlet. On his head, which was blacke and curled, he ware a *Perſian Tiara*, all ſet downe with rowes of ſo rich Rubies, as they were inough to ſpeake for him, that they had to iudge of no meane perſonage.

In this ſorte with erected countenaunces, did theſe vnfortunate Princes ſuffer themſelues to be ledd, ſhewing aright by the compariſon of them and *Ginecia*, how to diuers perſons, compaſſion is diuerſly to be ſturred. For as to *Ginecia*, a Ladie knowne of great eſtate, and greatly eſteemed, the more miſerable repreſentation was made of her ſodaine ruyne, the more mens heartes were forced to bewayle ſuch an euident witneſſe of weake humanitie: ſo to theſe men, not regarded becauſe vnknowne, but rather (beſides the deteſtacion of their facte) hated as ſtraungers, the more they ſhoulde haue falne downe in an abiecte ſemblance, the more in ſteed of compaſſion they ſhoulde haue gotten contempt: but therefore, were to vſe (as I may tearme it) the more violence of magnanimitye, and ſo to conquer the expectation of the lookers, with an extraordinarye vertue. And ſuch effecte in deede it wrought in the whole aſſemblye, theyr eyes yet ſtanding as it were in ballance, to whether of them they ſhould moſt directe theyr ſight. *Muſidorus* was in ſtature ſo much higher then *Pyrocles*, as commonly is gotten by one yeares growth. His face now beginning to haue ſome tokens of a beard, was compoſed to a kinde of manlike beawtie.

His cullour was of a well pleaſing brownenes, & the features of it ſuch, as they caried both delight and maieſtie: his countenance ſeuere, and promiſing a minde much giuen to thinking. *Pyrocles* of a pure complexion, and of ſuch a cheerefull fauour, as might ſeeme either a womans face on a boy, or an excellent boyes face in a woman. His looke gentle and baſhfull, which bred the more admiracion, hauing ſhewed ſuch notable proofes of courage. Laſtly, though both had both, if there were any ods, *Muſidorus* was the more goodly, and *Pyrocles* the more louely. But aſſoone as *Muſidorus* ſaw himſelfe ſo farre forth led among the people, that he knew to a great number of them his voyce ſhould be heard, miſdoubting their intention to the Princeſſe *Pamela*, (of which he was more carefull then of his owne life,) euen as he went (though his leader ſought to interrupt him) he thus with a lowde voyce ſpake vnto them. And is it poſſible ô *Arcadians*, ſayd he, that you can forget the naturall dutie you owe to your Princeſſe *Pamela*? hath this ſoyle bene ſo little beholding to her noble Auncеſters? hath ſo long a time rooted no ſurer loue in your hearts to that line? Where is that faith to your Princes blood, which hath not only preſerued you from all daungers heretofore, but hath ſpred your fame to all the nations in the world? Where is that iuſtice, the *Arcadians* were wont to flouriſh in, whoſe nature is to render to euery one his owne? Will you now keepe the right from your Prince, who is the only geuer of iudgement, the keye of iuſtice, and life of your lawes? Do you hope in a fewe yeares, to ſet vp ſuch another race, which nothing but length of time can eſtabliſh? Will you reward *Baſilius* children with vngratefulnes, the very poyſon of manhood? Will you betray your long ſetled reputation, with the fowle name of traytors? Is this your mourning for your Kings death, to encreaſe his loſſe with his daughters miſery? Imagin your Prince do looke out of the heauens vnto you, what do you thinke he could wiſh more at your hands then that you do well by his children? And what more honor I pray you can you do to his obſequies, then to ſatisfie his ſoule with a louing memorie, as you do his body with an vnfelt ſolemnitie? What haue you done with the Princeſſe *Pamela*? *Pamela* the iuſt enheretrix of this Countrey, *Pamela* whom this earth may be happy, that it ſhall be hereafter ſayde ſhe was borne in *Arcadia*. *Pamela* in her ſelfe your ornament, in her education your foſter childe, and euery way your only Princeſſe, what accompt can you render to your ſelues of her? Truly I do not thinke that you all knowe what is become of her: ſo ſoone may a Diamond be loſt? ſo ſoone may the fayreſt light in the world be put out. But looke, looke vnto it, O *Arcadians*, be not ſo wilfully robbed of your greateſt treaſure, make not your ſelues miniſters to priuate ambitions, who do but vſe your ſelues to put on your owne yokes. Whatſoeuer you determine of vs (who I muſt confeſſe are but ſtrangers) yet let not *Baſilius* daughters be ſtraungers vnto you. Laſtly, howſoeuer you barre her from her publicke ſouereigntie, (which if you do, little may we hope of equitie where rebellion raignes) yet deny not that childs right vnto her, that ſhe may come and do the laſt duties to her fathers body. Deny not that happines (if in ſuch a caſe there be any happines) to your late King, that his body may haue his laſt touch of his deereſt child. With ſuch like broken maner of queſtions and ſpeeches, was *Muſidorus* deſirous as much as in paſſing by them he could, to moue the people to tender *Pamelas* fortune. But at length by that they came to the iudgement place, both *Sympathus* and his guider had greatly ſatisfied him, with the aſſurance they gaue him, this aſſemblie of people had neyther meaning nor power, to

do

do any hurt to the Princeſſe, whome they all acknowledged as their ſouereigne Lady. But that the cuſtome of *Arcadia* was ſuch, till ſhe had more yeares, the ſtate of the country to be guided by a Protector, vnder whome, he and his fellow were to receiue their iudgement. That eaſed *Muſidorus* hart of his moſt vehement care, when he found his beloued Lady to be out of daunger. But *Pyrocles* aſſoone as the Queene of the one ſide, he and *Muſidorus* of the other, were ſtayed before the face of their iudge, (hauing only for their barre the Table on which the Kings body lay) being nothing leſſe vexed with the doubt of *Philoclea*, then *Muſidorus* was for *Pamela*, in this ſort with a lowlie behauiour, and only then like a ſuppliant, he ſpake to the Protector. Pardon me moſt honoured Iudge, ſaid he, that vncommaunded I begin my ſpeech vnto you, ſince both to you and me, theſe wordes of mine ſhall be moſt neceſſary. To you hauing the ſacred exerciſe of iuſtice in your hand, nothing appertaines more properly then truth nakedly & freely ſet downe. To me, being enuironed round about with many daungerous calamities, what can be more conuenient, then at leaſt, to be at peace with my ſelfe, in hauing diſcharged my conſcience, in a moſt behouefull veritie. Vnderſtand therefore, and truly vnderſtand, that the Lady *Philoclea* (to whoſe vnſtayned vertue it hath bene my vnſpeakeable miſerye, that my name ſhould become a blot) if ſhe be accuſed, is moſt vniuſtly accuſed of any diſhonorable fact, which by my meanes ſhe may be thought to haue yelded vnto. Whatſoeuer hath bene done, hath bene my only attempt, which notwithſtanding was neuer intended againſt her chaſtetye. But whatſoeuer hath bene enformed, was my fault. And I atteſt the heauens, to blaſpheame which I am not now in fit tune, that ſo much as my comming into her chamber, was wholie vnwitting vnto her. This your wiſdome may withall conſider, if I would lye, I would lye for mine owne behooſe, I am not ſo olde, as to be weary of my ſelfe; But the very ſting of my inward knowledge ioyned with the conſideracion I muſt needes haue, what an infinite loſſe it ſhould be to all thoſe who loue goodnes in good folkes, if ſo pure a child of vertue ſhould wrongfully be deſtroyed, compells me to vſe my toong againſt my ſelfe, and receiue the burden of what euill was, vppon my owne doing. Looke therefore with pittifull eyes vppon ſo fayre beames, and that misfortune which by me hath fallen vppon her, helpe to repaier it with your publicke iudgement, ſince whoſoeuer deales cruelly with ſuch a creature, ſhewes himſelfe a hater of mankinde, and an enuier of the worlds bliſſe. And this peticion I make, euen in the name of iuſtice, that before you proceed further againſt vs, I may knowe how you conceiue of her noble, though vnfortunate action, and what iudgement you will make of it. He had not ſpoken his laſt word, when all the whole people both of great and low eſtate, confirmed with an vnited murmur *Pyrocles* demaund, longing (for the loue generally was borne *Philoclea*) to knowe what they might hope of her. *Euarchus* though neither regarding a priſoners paſſionate prayer, nor bearing ouerplauſible eares to a many hedded motion, yet well enough content, to winne their liking with things in themſelues indifferent, he was content: firſt, to ſeeke aſmuch as might be of *Philocleas* behauior, in this matter: which being cleered by *Pyrocles*, & but weakely gayneſayd by *Philanax* (who had framed both his owne & *Dametas* euidence moſt for her fauour and in truth could haue gone no further then coniecture,) yet finding by his wiſedome, that ſhe was not altogether faultleſſe, he pronounced, ſhe ſhould all her life long, be kept priſoner among certaine women of religion like

the *veſtall* nonnes, ſo to repaye their touched honour of her houſe, with well obſeruing a ſtrycte profeſſion of chaſtitie. Although this were a greate preiudicating of *Pyrocles* caſe, yet was hee exceedingly ioyous of it, being aſſured of his Ladies life; and in the depth of his minde not ſorry, that what ende ſoeuer he had, none ſhould obtaine the after enioying that Iewell, whereon he had ſet his liues happines. After it was by publicque ſentence deliuered, what ſhould be done with the ſweete *Philoclea*, (the lawes of *Arcadia* bearing, that what was appointed by the magiſtrates in the noneage of the Prince, coulde not afterwards be repealed) *Euarchus* ſtill vſing to himſelfe no other name but protector of *Arcadia*, commaunded thoſe that had to ſay againſt the Queene *Gynecia* to proceede, becauſe both her eſtate required ſhee ſhoulde bee firſt heard, and alſo for that ſhee was taken to bee the principall, in the greateſt matter they were to iudge of. *Philanax* incontinently ſtepped foorth, and ſhewing in his greedy eyes, that he did thirſt for her bloud, beganne a well thought on diſcourſe of her (in his iudgement) execrable wickednes. But *Gynecia* ſtanding vp before the iudge, caſting abroad her armes, with her eyes hidde vnder the bredth of her vnſeemely hatt, laying open in all her geſtures the deſpairefull affliction, to which all the might of her reaſon was conuerted, with ſuch like words ſtopped *Philanax*, as hee was entring into his inuective oration. Staye ſtaie *Philanax* ſaide ſhee, do not defile thy honeſt mouth, with thoſe diſhonourable ſpeeches thou arte about to vtter, againſt a woman, now moſt wretched, lately thy miſtreſſe. Let either the remembraunce how great ſhe was, moue thy harte to ſome reuerence; or the ſeing how lowe ſhe is, ſturre in thee ſome pittie. It may be truth doth make thee deale vntruely; and loue of iuſtice frames vniuſtice in thee, doe not therefore (neither ſhalt thou needе treade vpon my deſolate ruines. Thou ſhalt haue that thou ſeekeſt; and yet ſhalt not be oppreſſoure of her, who cannot chooſe but loue thee, for thy ſingular faith to thy maſter. I doe not ſpeake this to procure mercie, or to prolong my life, no no I ſay vnto you I will not liue, but I am onely loth, my death ſhoulde bee engreeued with any wronge thou ſhouldeſt doe vnto me. I haue beene to painefull a iudge ouer my ſelfe, to deſire pardon in others iudgement. I haue beene to cruell an executioner of mine owne ſoule, to deſire that execution of iuſtice ſhoulde bee ſtayed for me. Alas they that know, how ſorrow can rent the ſpirits, they that know what fiery hells are cõtiened in a ſelf condemning mind, need not feare that feare can keepe ſuch a one, from deſiring to be ſeperated from that, which nothing but death can ſeperate. I therefore ſay to thee (O iuſt iudge) that I and only I, was the worker of *Baſilius* death. They were theſe handes that gaue vnto him that poyſonous potion, that hath brought death to him, and loſſe to *Arcadia*, it was I and none but I, that haſtened his aged yeares, to an vnnaturall end, and that haue made all his people orphans, of their royall father. I am the ſubiect that haue killed my Prince, I am the wife that haue murdred my husband, I am a degenerate woman, an vndoer of this countrie, a ſhame of my children. What wouldeſt thou haue ſaide more Oh *Philanax*? and all this I graunt, there reſteth then nothing els to ſay, but that I deſire you, you will appointe quicklie ſomme to ridd mee of my life, rather then theſe handes, which ells are deſtenied vnto it, and that indeede it maye bee doone with ſuch ſpeede as I may not long dye in this life, which I haue in ſo greate horrour: with that ſhee croſſed her armes, and ſate downe vppon the grounde, attending the iudges aunſwere. But a greate while it was, before anye boddye coulde bee heard ſpeake, the whole people concurring in a lamentable crye, ſo much had *Gy-*

necias

neci.s wordes and behauiour ſturred their hartes to a dolefull compaſſion, neither in troath coulde moſt of them in their iudgements tell, whether they ſhoulde bee more ſorrie for her faulte or her miſerie: for the loſſe of her eſtate, or loſſe of her vertue. But moſt were moſt moued, with that which was vnder there eyes: the ſenſe moſt ſubiecte to pittie. But at length the reuerent awe they ſtoode in of *Euarchus*, brought them to a ſilent wayting his determination, who hauing well conſidered the abhomination of the facte, attending more the manifeſt proofe of ſo horrible a treſpaſſe; confeſſed by her ſelfe, and proued by others; then any thing relenting to thoſe tragicall phraſes of hers (apter to ſturre a vulgare pittie, then his minde, which hated euill, in what culloures ſo euer he founde it) hauing conſidered a while with the principall men of the country, and demaunded there allowannce, he definitiuely gaue this ſentence. That where as both in priuate and publike reſpectes, this woman had moſt haynouſly offēded, (in priuate, becauſe marriage being the moſt holy coniunction that falls to mankinde, out of which all families and ſo conſequently all ſocieties doe proceede, which not onely by communitie goods, but communitie children, is to knit the mindes in a moſt perfet vnion, which who ſo breakes diſſolues al humanitie, no man liuing free from the danger of ſo neere a neighbour, ſhe had not onely broken it, but broken it with death, and the moſt pretended death that might be: In publike reſpect, the Princes perſons; being in all monarchall gouernmentes the very knot of the peoples welfare, and light of all their doinges to which they are not onely in conſcience, but in neceſſitie bounde to be loyall, ſhe had trayterouſly empoyſoned him, neither regarding her contries profit, her owne dutie, nor the rigor of the lawes.) That therefore, as well for the due ſatisfaction to eternall iuſtice, and accompliſhment of the *Arcadian* ſtatutes, as for the euerlaſting example to all wiues and ſubiectes, ſhe ſhould preſently be conueyed to cloaſe priſon, and there be kept with ſuch foode as might ſerue to ſuſtaine her aliue, vntill the day of her husbands buryall, at which time, ſhee ſhoulde bee buried quicke, in the ſame tombe with hime. That ſo his murder might bee a murder to her ſelfe, and ſhe forced to keepe company with the body from which ſhe had made ſo deteſtable a ſeuerance; And laſtly death might redreſſe their diſioyned coniunction of marriage. His iudgement was receaued of the whole aſſemblie, as not with diſliking, ſo with great aſtoniſhmēt, the greatnes of the matter and perſon as it were ouerpreſſing the might of their conceites. But when they did ſet it to the beame, with the monſtrouſnes of her ouglye miſdeede, they coulde not but yeeld in their hartes, there was no ouerbalancing. As for *Gynecia*, who had already ſetled her thoughts, not only to look but long for this euent, hauing in this time of her vexation, found a ſweetnes in the reſt ſhe hoped by death, (with a countenaunce witneſſing ſhe had before hand ſo paſſed thorowe all the degrees of ſorrowe, that ſhee had no new looke to figure forth any more) raſe vp and offred forth her faire handes to bee bounde or led as they would, being indeed troubled with no parte of this iudgement, but that her death was as ſhe thought long delayed. They that were appointed for it conueyed her to the place ſhe was in before, where the guarde was relieued, and the number encreaſed to keepe her more ſure for the time of her execution: None of them all that led her, though moſt of them were ſuch, whoſe harts had beene long hardned with the often exerciſing ſuch offices, being able to barre teares from their eyes, and others manifeſt tokens of compaſſionate ſorrow. So goodly a vertue is a reſolute conſtancie, that euen in euill deſeruers, it ſeemes that partie might haue beene notably

tably well deſeruing. Thus the excellent Lady *Gynecia*, hauing paſſed fiue and thirtie yeares of her age, euen to admiration of her beautifull minde and body, and hauing not in her owne knowledge, euer ſpotted her ſoule with any wilfull vice, but her imoderate loue of *Zelmane*, was brought, firſt by the violence of that ill anſwered paſſion, and then by the diſpayring conceite, ſhe took of the iudgement of God in her husbandes death and her owne fortune, purpoſely to ouerthrowe her ſelfe, and confirme by a wronge confeſſion, that abhominable ſhame, which with her wiſdome, ioynde to the truth, perhappes ſhee might haue refelled. Then did *Euarchus* aske *Philanax*, whether it were he that would charge the two yonge priſoners, or that ſome other ſhoulde doe it, and hee ſit according to his eſtate, as an aſſiſtant in the iudgement. *Philanax* tolde him as before hee had done, that hee thought no man coulde laye manifeſt the naughtines of thoſe two yong men, with ſo much either truth or zeale as himſelfe, and therefore he deſired he might do this laſt ſeruice to his faithfully beloued maſter, as to proſecute the traiterous cauſers of his death and diſhonour; which being done, for his parte hee ment to geue vp all dealing in publicke affaires, ſince that man was gone who had made him loue them. *Philanax* thus being redye to ſpeake, the two Princes were commaunded to tell their names who aunſwered according to their agreements, that they were *Daiphantus* of *Lycia*, and *Palladius* Prince of *Iberia*. Which when they had ſaid, they demaunded to know by what aucthoritie, they coulde iudge of them, ſince they were not only forryners and ſo not borne vnder their lawes, but abſolute Princes and therefore not to bee touched by lawes. But aunſwere was preſently made them, that *Arcadia* lawes, were to haue their force vpon any were founde in *Arcadia*: ſince ſtrangers haue ſcope to know the cuſtomes of a contry, before they put them ſelues in it: and when they once are entred, they muſt knowe, that what by many was made, muſt not for one bee broken. And ſo much leſſe for a ſtraunger, as hee is to looke for no priueledge in that place, to which in time of neede, his ſeruice is not to be expected. As for their being Princes, whether they were ſo or no, the beleefe ſtood in their own wo-rdes, which they had ſo diuerſly falſifyed, as they did not deſerue beleefe. But what ſoeuer they were, *Arcadia*, was to acknowledge them but as priuate men, ſince they were neither by magiſtracy nor alliance to the princely bloud, to claime any thing in that region. Therefore if they had offended, (which now by the plaintife and there defence was to bee iudged) againſt the lawes of nations; by the lawes of nations they were to be chaſtiſed: if againſt the peculiare ordinaunces of the prouince thoſe peculiare ordinaunces were to laye hold of them. The Princes ſtoode a while vpon that demaunding leaſure to giue perfecte knowledge of their greatnes; but when they were aunſwered, that in a caſe of a Princes death, the lawe of that contrie had euer beene, that imediate tryall ſhoulde bee had: they were forced to yeelde, reſolued that in thoſe names, they woulde as much as they could, couer the ſhame of their royall parentage, and keepe as long as might be (if euill were determined againſt them) the euill newes from their carefull kinsfolke, wherein the chiefe man they conſidered was *Euarchus*: whom the ſtrange and ſecreate working of iuſtice, had brought to be the iudge ouer them, in ſuch a ſhadowe, or rather pit of darkenes, the wormiſh mankinde liues, that neither they knowe how to foreſee, nor what to feare: and are but like tenisballs, toſſed by the racket of the hyer powers. Thus both ſides reddie, it was determined, becauſe their caſes were ſeperated. Firſt *Philanax* ſhoulde be hard againſt *Pyrocles*, whome they termed *Daiphantus*, and

that

that heard, the others cauſe ſhoulde followe, and ſo receaue together ſuch iudgement, as they ſhould be found to haue deſerued. But *Philanax* that was euen ſhorte breathed at the firſt, with the extreame vehemencie he had to ſpeake againſt them, ſtroking once or twiſe his forehead, and wiping his eyes, (which either wepte, or he woulde at that time haue them ſeeme to weepe,) looking firſt vpon *Pyrocles*, as if he had proclaymed all hatefullnes againſt him, humblie turning to *Euarchus*, (who with quiet grauitie, ſhewed great attention) he thus began his oration. That which all men, who take vpon them to accuſe an other, are woont to deſire (moſt worthy protector) to haue many proofes of my faultes in them they ſeeke to haue condemned: that is to me in this preſent action, my greateſt comber, and anoyaunce. For the number is ſo great, and the quallitie ſo monſtrous, of the enormities this wretched young man hath committed, that neither I in my ſelfe, can tell where to begin (my thoughts being confuſed with the horrible multitude of them) neither doe I thinke your vertuous eares will be able to endure the reporte: But will rather imagine, you heare ſome tragedie inuented of the extremitie of wickednes, then a iuſt reſitall of a wickednes indeed committed, for ſuch is the diſpoſition of the moſt ſincere iudgements, that as they can belieue meane faultes, and ſuch as mans nature may ſlide into, ſo when they paſſe to a certaine degree, nay when they paſſe all degrees of vnſpeakeable naughtines, then finde they in themſelues a hardenes to geue credit, that humane creatures can ſo from all humanitie bee transformed. But in my ſelfe, the ſtrength of my faith to my deade maſter wil helpe the weakenes of my memory; in you, your excellent loue of iuſtice will force you to vouchſafe attention: And as for the matter, it is ſo manifeſt, ſo pittifull euidences lie before your eyes of it, that I ſhall neede to bee but a breife recounter, and no rhetoricall enlarger of this moſt harmefull miſchiefe. I will therefore, in as fewe wordes as ſo huge a treſpaſſe can bee conteyned, deliuer vnto you the ſum of this miſerable fact: leauing out a great number of particular tokens, of his naughtines, and only touching the eſſentiall pointes, of this dolefull caſe. This man, whome to beginne withall I know not how to name, ſince being come into this contrie, vnaccompanied like a loſte pilgrime, from a man grewe a woman, from a woman a rauiſher of wemen, thence a priſoner, and now a Prince. But this *Zelmane*, this *Daiphantus*, this what you will, (for any ſhape or title he can take vpon him, that hath no reſtrainte of ſhame) hauing vnderſtoode the ſolitatie life my late maſter liued, and conſidering how open he had layde himſelfe to any trayterous attempte, for the firſt maske of his falſehoode, diſguiſed himſelfe like a woman: which being the more ſimple and hurteleſſe ſexe, might eaſier hide his ſubtle harmefullnes. And preſenting himſelfe to my maſter, the moſt curteous Prince that liued, was receaued of him with ſo greate graciouſnes, as might haue bounde not only any gratefull minde, but might haue mollified any enemies rancoure. But this venemous ſerpent, admitted thus into his boſome, as contagion will eaſily finde a fit body for it, ſo had he quickly falne into ſo neere acquaintaunce with this naughtie woman, whom euen now you haue moſt iuſtly condemned, that this was her right hand, ſhee ſawe with no eyes but his, nor ſeemed to haue any life but in him, ſo glad ſhee was to finde one more cunning then her ſelfe, in couering wickednes with a modeſt vaile. What is to be thought paſſed betwixt two ſuch vertuous creatures, whereof the one hath confeſſed murder, and the other rape, I leaue to your wiſe cõſideration. For my hart haſtens to the miſerable point of *Baſilius* murder, for the executing of which with more facilitie, this yong nimph of *Dianas* bringing

tably well deſeruing. Thus the excellent Lady *Gynecia*, hauing paſſed fiue and thirtie yeares of her age, euen to admiration of her beautifull minde and body, and hauing not in her owne knowledge, euer ſpotted her ſoule with any wilfull vice, but her imoderate loue of *Zelmane*, was brought, firſt by the violence of that ill anſwered paſſion, and then by the diſpayring conceite, ſhe took of the iudgement of God in her husbandes death and her owne fortune, purpoſely to ouerthrowe her ſelfe, and confirme by a wronge confeſſion, that abhominable ſhame, which with her wiſdome, ioynde to the truth, perhappes ſhee might haue refelled. Then did *Euarchus* aske *Philanax*, whether it were he that would charge the two yonge priſoners, or that ſome other ſhoulde doe it, and hee ſit according to his eſtate, as an aſſiſtant in the iudgement. *Philanax* tolde him as before hee had done, that hee thought no man coulde laye manifeſt the naughtines of thoſe two yong men, with ſo much either truth or zeale as himſelfe, and therefore he deſired he might do this laſt ſeruice to his faithfully beloued maſter, as to proſecute the traiterous cauſers of his death and diſhonour; which being done, for his parte hee ment to geue vp all dealing in publicke affaires, ſince that man was gone who had made him loue them. *Philanax* thus being redye to ſpeake, the two Princes were commaunded to tell their names who aunſwered according to their agreements, that they were *Daiphantus* of *Lycia*, and *Palladius* Prince of *Iberia*. Which when they had ſaid, they demaunded to know by what aucthoritie, they coulde iudge of them, ſince they were not only forryners and ſo not borne vnder their lawes, but abſolute Princes and therefore not to bee touched by lawes. But aunſwere was preſently made them, that *Arcadia* lawes, were to haue their force vpon any were founde in *Arcadia*: ſince ſtrangers haue ſcope to know the cuſtomes of a contry, before they put them ſelues in it: and when they once are entred, they muſt knowe, that what by many was made, muſt not for one bee broken. And ſo much leſſe for a ſtraunger, as hee is to looke for no priueledge in that place, to which in time of neede, his ſeruice is not to be expected. As for their being Princes, whether they were ſo or no, the beleefe ſtood in their own wordes, which they had ſo diuerſly falſifyed, as they did not deſerue beleefe. But what ſoeuer they were, *Arcadia*, was to acknowledge them but as priuate men, ſince they were neither by magiſtracy nor alliance to the princely bloud, to claime any thing in that region. Therefore if they had offended, (which now by the plaintife and there defence was to bee iudged) againſt the lawes of nations; by the lawes of nations they were to be chaſtiſed: if againſt the peculiare ordinaunces of the prouince thoſe peculiare ordinaunces were to laye hold of them. The Princes ſtoode a while vpon that demaunding leaſure to giue perfecte knowledge of their greatnes; but when they were aunſwered, that in a caſe of a Princes death, the lawe of that contrie had euer beene, that imediate tryall ſhoulde bee had: they were forced to yeelde, reſolued that in thoſe names, they woulde as much as they could, couer the ſhame of their royall parentage, and keepe as long as might be (if euill were determined againſt them) the euill newes from their carefull kinsfolke, wherein the chiefe man they conſidered was *Euarchus*: whom the ſtrange and ſecreate working of iuſtice, had brought to be the iudge ouer them, in ſuch a ſhadowe, or rather pit of darkenes, the wormiſh mankinde liues, that neither they knowe how to foreſee, nor what to feare: and are but like tenisballs, toſſed by the racket of the hyer powers. Thus both ſides reddie, it was determined, becauſe their caſes were ſeperated. Firſt *Philanax* ſhoulde be hard againſt *Pyrocles*, whome they termed *Daiphantus*, and

that

that heard, the others cauſe ſhoulde followe, and ſo receaue together ſuch iudgement, as they ſhould be found to haue deſerued. But *Philanax* that was euen ſhorte breathed at the firſt, with the extreame vehemencie he had to ſpeake againſt them, ſtroking once or twiſe his forehead, and wiping his eyes, (which either wepte, or he woulde at that time haue them ſeeme to weepe,) looking firſt vpon *Pyrocles*, as if he had proclaymed all hatefullnes againſt him, humblie turning to *Euarchus*, (who with quiet grauitie, ſhewed great attention) he thus began his oration. That which all men, who take vpon them to accuſe an other, are woont to deſire (moſt worthy protector) to haue many proofes of my faultes in them they ſeeke to haue condemned: that is to me in this preſent action, my greateſt comber, and anoyaunce. For the number is ſo great, and the quallitie ſo monſtrous, of the enormities this wretched young man hath committed, that neither I in my ſelfe, can tell where to begin (my thoughts being confuſed with the horrible multitude of them) neither doe I thinke your vertuous eares will be able to endure the reporte: But will rather imagine, you heare ſome tragedie inuented of the extremitie of wickednes, then a iuſt reſitall of a wickednes indeed committed, for ſuch is the diſpoſition of the moſt ſincere iudgements, that as they can belieue meane faultes, and ſuch as mans nature may ſlide into, ſo when they paſſe to a certaine degree, nay when they paſſe all degrees of vnſpeakeable naughtines, then finde they in themſelues a hardenes to geue credit, that humane creatures can ſo from all humanitie bee transformed. But in my ſelfe, the ſtrength of my faith to my deade maſter wil helpe the weakenes of my memory; in you, your excellent loue of iuſtice will force you to vouchſafe attention: And as for the matter, it is ſo manifeſt, ſo pittifull euidences lie before your eyes of it, that I ſhall neede to bee but a breife recounter, and no rhetoricall enlarger of this moſt harmefull miſchiefe. I will therefore, in as fewe wordes as ſo huge a treſpaſſe can bee conteyned, deliuer vnto you the ſum of this miſerable fact: leauing out a great number of particular tokens, of his naughtines, and only touching the eſſentiall pointes, of this dolefull caſe. This man, whome to beginne withall I know not how to name, ſince being come into this contrie, vnaccompanied like a loſte pilgrime, from a man grewe a woman, from a woman a rauiſher of wemen, thence a priſoner, and now a Prince. But this *Zelmane*, this *Daiphantus*, this what you will, (for any ſhape or title he can take vpon him, that hath no reſtrainte of ſhame) hauing vnderſtoode the ſolitatie life my late maſter liued, and conſidering how open he had layde himſelfe to any trayterous attempte, for the firſt maske of his falſehoode, diſguiſed himſelfe like a woman: which being the more ſimple and hurteleſſe ſexe, might eaſier hide his ſubtle harmefullnes. And preſenting himſelfe to my maſter, the moſt curteous Prince that liued, was receaued of him with ſo greate grariouſnes, as might haue bounde not only any gratefull minde, but might haue mollified any enemies rancoure. But this venemous ſerpent, admitted thus into his boſome, as contagion will eaſily finde a fit body for it, ſo had he quickly falne into ſo neere acquaintaunce with this naughtie woman, whom euen now you haue moſt iuſtly condemned, that this was her right hand, ſhee ſawe with no eyes but his, nor ſeemed to haue any life but in him, ſo glad ſhee was to finde one more cunning then her ſelfe, in couering wickednes with a modeſt vaile. What is to be thought paſſed betwixt two ſuch vertuous creatures, whereof the one hath confeſſed murder, and the other rape, I leaue to your wiſe cõſideration. For my hart haſtens to the miſerable point of *Baſilius* murder, for the executing of which with more facilitie, this yong nimph of *Dianas* bringing

ging vp, fayned certaine rites she had to performe, so furious an impietie had caried him, from all remembrance of goodnes, that hee did not onely not feare the Gods, as the beholders and punishers of so vngodly a villany, but did blasphemously vse their sacred holly name, as a minister vnto it. And forsooth a Caue hereby was chosen, for the temple of his deuotions, a Caue of such darkenes, as did prognosticate he ment to please the infernall powers, for there this accursted catife, vpon the alter of falshood, sacrificed the life of the vertuous *Basilius*. By what meanes he trayned him thether, alas I knowe not, for if I might haue knowen it, either my life had accompanied my master, or this fellowes death had preserued him. But this may suffise, that in the mouth of this Caue, where this traytor had his lodginge and chapple, when already master sheepeheard his companion, had conueyed away the vndoubted enheritrix of this cuntrie, was *Gynecia* founde by the dead corps of her husband, newly empoysoned, apparelled in the garments of the young Lady, and reddy no question to haue fled to some place, according to their consorte, but that she was by certaine honest shepeheards arrested: while in the meane time, because their should be lefte no reuenger of this bloudy mischief, This noble *Amazon*, was violently gotten into the chamber of the Lady *Philoclea*, wherby the mingling as much as in him lay) of her shame, with his misdeede, he might enforce her to be the accessary to her fathers death, and vnder the countenaunce of her and her sister (against whom they knew wee woulde not rebell) seaze as it were with one gripe into their treacherous hands, the regiment of the mightie prouince. But the almightie eye preuented him of the end of his mischiefe, by vsing a villaine *Dametas* hand, to enclose him in there, where with as much fortification as in a house could be made, he thought himselfe in most securitie. Thus see you most iust iudge, a shorte and simple story of the infamous misery, falne vpon this contrie. In deed infamous, since by an effeminate man, we should suffer a greater ouerthrow, then our mightiest enemies haue beneuer able to lay vpon vs. And that all this, which I haue said is most manifest, aswell of the murdering of *Basilius*, as the rauishing of *Philoclea*, (for those two partes I establish of my accusation) who is of so incredulous a minde, or rather who will so stoppe his eyes from seing a thing cleerer then the light, as not to holde for assured so palpable a matter. For to beginne with his most cruell misdeede, is it to be imagined, that *Gynecia* (a woman though wicked, yet wittie) woulde haue attempted and atchieued an enterprise, no lesse hazardous then horrible, without hauing some councellor in the beginning, and some comforter in the performing? Had she, who shewed her thoughtes, were so ouerruled with some straunge desire, as in despite of God, nature and womanhood, to execute that in deedes, which in wordes wee cannot heare without trembling, had shee I saye no practise to leade her vnto it? Or had shee a practise without conspiracie? Or coulde shee conspire without some boddye to conspire with? And if one were; whoe so likelye as this, to whome shee communicated I am sure her minde, the worlde thinkes her boddye? Neither let her wordes taking the whole faulte vppon her selfe, bee heerein any thinge availeable. For to those persons who haue vomited out of their soules all remnants of goodnes, there restes a certaine pride in euill, and hauing ells no shadowe of glorye lefte them, they glorye to bee constante in iniquitye, and that God knowes must bee helde out to the laste gaspe, without reuealing their accomplices. As thinking greate courage is declared, in being neither affeard of the heauens nor ashamed of the worlde. But let *Gynecias* action dye with her selfe, what

can

can all the earth answere for his comming hether? Why alone, if hee bee a Prince? How so richly Iewelled if he be not a prince? Why then a woman if nowe a man? Why now *Daiphantus*, if then *Zelmane*? Was all this play for nothing, or if it had an ende, what ende but the ende of my deere master? Shall we doubte so many secret conferences with *Gynecia*, such fained fauour to the ouer soone beguiled *Basilius*, a Caue made a lodging, and the same lodging made a temple of his religion, lastly such changes and trauerses, as a quiet Poet coulde scarse fill a poeme withal, were directed to any lesse scope, then to this monstrous murder? O snakie ambition, which can winde thy selfe in so many figures, to slyde thether thou desirest to come! O corrupted reason of mankinde, that can yeelde to deforme thy selfe with so filthie desires! And O hopelesse bee those mindes, whom so vnnaturall desires doe not, with their owne ouglinesse sufficiently terrefie! But yet euen of fauour let vs graunt him thus much more, as to fancie that in these foretolde thinges, fortune might be a greate Actor, perchaunce to an euill ende yet to a lesse euill end all these entangled deuises were entended. But I beseech your Ladyshippe, my Lady *Daiphantus* tell me, what excuse can you finde for the chaunging your lodging, with the Queene that verie instant shee was to finish her execrable practise? How can you cloake the lending of your cloake vnto her, was all that by chance too? Had the starres sent such an influence vnto you, as you should bee iuste weary of your lodging, and garments, when our Prince was destenied to the slaughter? What say you to this, O shamefull and shameless creature? Fit indeede to bee the dishonour of both sexes. But alas, I spend too many words in so manifest and so miserable a matter. They must be foure wilde horses (which according to our lawes are the executioners of men which murdre our Prince) which must decide this question with you. Yet see so farre had my zeale to my beloued Prince transported me, that I had almost forgotten my second parte, and his seconde abhomination, I meane his violence offred to the Lady *Philoclea*: wherewith as if it had welbecome his womanhoode, he came brauing to the iudgement seate, indeede our lawes appointe not so cruell a death (although death too) for this facte as for the other. But whosoeuer well wayes it, shall finde it spronge out of the same fountaine of mischeuous naughtines, the killing of the father, dishonouring the mother, and rauishing the child. Alas could not so many benifites receaued of my Prince, the iustice of nature, the right of hospitalitie, be a bridle to thy lust, if not to thy crueltie? Or if thou hadest (as surely thou haste) a harte recompensing goodnes with hatred, could not his death, which is the last of reuenges, satisfie thy mallice, but thou must heape vpō it the shame of his daughter? Were thy eyes so stonie, thy brest so tygreshe, as the sweete and beautifull shewes of *Philocleas* vertue, did not astonish thee? O wofull *Arcadia*, to whom the name of this mankinde curtisan, shall euer be remembred as a procurer of thy greatest losse! But too farre I finde my passion, yet honest passion hath guided mee; the case is euerie way too too much vnanswearable. It resteth in you O excellent protector to pronounce iudgement, which if their bee hope, that such a yonge man may proue proffitable to the world; who in the first exercise of his owne determination, farre passed the arrantest strumpet in luxuriousnesse, the conningest forger in falsehoode, a player in disguising, a Tygre in crueltie, a Dragon in ingratefulnes; let him be preserued like a iewell, to doe greater mischeefe. Yf his youth bee not more defiled with trecherie, then the eldest

mans age, let I ſay his youth, be ſome cauſe of compaſſion. If hee haue not euery way ſought the ouerthrowe of humaine ſocietie, if hee haue done any thing like a Prince, let his naming himſelfe a Prince, breede a reuerence of his baſe wickedneſſe. If hee haue not broken all lawes of hoſpitalitie, and broken them in the moſt deteſtable degree that can be, let his being a gueſt, be a ſacred protection of his more then ſauage doings: or if his whoriſh beawtye, haue not bene as the hye waye of his wickedneſſe, let the picture drawne vppon ſo poyſonous a wood, be reſerued to ſhewe howe greatly coulours can pleaſe vs. But if it is as it is, what ſhould I ſaye more, a very ſpirit of helliſh naughtines, if his acte be to be puniſhed, and his defiled perſon not to be pittied, then reſtore vnto vs our Prince, by duly puniſhing his murderers, for then wee ſhall thinke him and his name to liue, when wee ſhall ſee his killers to dye. Reſtore to the excellent *Philoclea* her honour, by taking out of the world her diſhonour, and thinke that at this daye, in this matter are the eyes of the worlde vppon you, whether any thing can ſway your minde from a true adminiſtracion of iuſtice. Alas though I haue much more to ſaye, I can ſaye no more, for my teares and ſighes interrupt my ſpeeche, and force me to geue my ſelfe ouer to my priuate ſorrowe. Thus when *Philanax* had vttered the vttermoſt of his mallice, he made ſorrowe the cauſe of his concluſion. But while *Philanax* was in the courſe of his ſpeeche, and did with ſuch bitter reproches defame the princely *Pyrocles*, it was well to be ſeene, his heart was vnuſed to beare ſuch iniuries, and his thoughtes ſuch, as could arme themſelues better againſt any thing then ſhame. For ſometimes bluſhing, his bloud with diuers motions comming and going, ſometimes cloaſing his eyes, and laying his hande ouer them, ſometime geuing ſuch a looke to *Philanax*, as might ſhewe hee aſſured himſelfe, hee durſt not ſo haue ſpoken if they had bene in indifferent place: with ſome impaciencie he bare the length of his Oration: which being ended, with as much modeſt humblenes to the Iudge, as deſpitefull skorne to the accuſer, with words to this purpoſe, he defended his honour.

My accuſors tale, may well beare witnes with me, moſt rightfull Iudge, in how hard a caſe, and inuironed with how many troubles, I may eſteeme my ſelfe. For if hee, who ſhewes his toong, is not vnaquainted with rayling, was in an agonye in the beginning of his ſpeech, with the multitude of matters he had to lay vnto me, wherein notwithſtanding the moſt euill could fall vnto him, was, that hee ſhould not do ſo much euill as hee would; howe combred do you thinke may I acknowledge my ſelfe, who in things no leſſe importing then my life, muſt be mine owne aduocate, without leaſure to aunſwere, or foreknowledge what ſhoulde be obiected? in things I ſay promoted with ſo cunning a confuſion, as hauing mingled truthes with falſehoodes, ſurmiſes with certaintyes, cauſes of no moment with matters cappitall, ſcolding with complayning, I can abſolute neyther graunt nor denye, neyther can I tell, whether I come hether to be iudged, or before iudgement to be puniſhed, being compelled to beare ſuch vnworthye woordes, farre more grieuous then any death vnto me. But ſince the forme of this gouernment, allowes ſuch toong libertye vnto him, I will picke aſwell as I can out of his inuectiue thoſe fewe poyntes, whiche may ſeeme of ſome purpoſe in the touching of mee,

hoping

hoping that by your eaſye hearing of me, you will ſhewe, that though you hate euill, yet you wiſhe men may proue themſelues not euill; ſo in that hee hath ſayde, you will not waye ſo much what hee hath ſayde, as what hee hath proued, remembring, that truth is ſimple and naked, and that if hee had guided himſelfe vnder that banner, hee needed not out of the way haue ſought ſo vilde and falſe diſgracings of mee, enough to make the vntrueſt accuſation beleeued. I will therefore, vſing truth as my beſt eloquence, repeate vnto you as much as I knowe in this matter, and then by the only cleerenes of the diſcourſe, your wiſedome I knowe will finde, the difference betwixt cauilling ſuppoſition, and directe declaration. This Prince *Palladius* and I, being enflamed with loue, (a paſſion farre more eaſely reprehended, then refrayned) to the two peereleſſe daughters of *Baſilius*, and vnderſtanding, howe hee had ſecluded himſelfe from the worlde, that like Princes, there was no acceſſe vnto him, wee diſguiſed our ſelues, in ſuch formes, as might ſooneſt bring vs to the reuealing of our affections. The Prince *Palladius*, had ſuch euent of his doings, that with *Pamelas* conſent hee was to conuey her out of the thraldome ſhe liued in, to receaue the ſubiection of a greater people then her owne, vntill her fathers conſent might be obteyned. My fortune was more hard, for I bare no more loue to the chaſte *Philoclea*, then *Baſilius* deceaued in my ſexe, ſhewed to me, inſomuch that by his importunacy, I could haue no time to obtayne the like fauour of the pure *Philoclea*: till this pollicye I founde, taking, vnder cullour of ſome deuotions, my lodging, to drawe *Baſilius* thether, with hope to enioye me, which likewiſe I reuealed to the Queene, that ſhe might keepe my place, and ſo make her husband ſee his error. While I in the meane time, being deliuered of them both, and hauing lockt ſo the dores, as I hoped if the immaculate *Philoclea* would condeſcend to goe with me, there ſhould be none to hinder our going. I was made priſoner there, I knowe not by what meanes when being repelled by her deuine vertue, I would fayneſt haue eſcaped. Heere haue you the thread to guide you in the Labyrinth, this man of his toong, had made ſo monſtrous. Heere ſee you the true diſcourſe, which hee mountbanke faſhion, doth make ſo wide a mouth ouer. Heere may you conceaue the reaſon, why the Queene had my garment, becauſe in her going to the caue, in the Moone-ſhine night, ſhe might be taken for me, which he vſeth as the knot of all his wiſe aſſertions: ſo that as this double minded fellowes accuſation was double, double likewiſe my aunſwere muſt perforce be, to the murder of *Baſilius*, and violence offred to the inuiolate *Philoclea*. For the fyrſt, O heauenly gods, who would haue thought any mouth could haue bene founde ſo mercenary, as to haue opened ſo ſlight prooſes of ſo horrible matters? his fyrſt Argument is a queſtion who would imagine that *Ginecia* would accompliſh ſuch an Acte, without ſome acceſſaries? and if any, who but I? truly I, and ſo farre from imagining any thing, that till I ſawe theſe mourning tokens, and heard *Ginecias* confeſſion, I neuer imagined the King was dead. And for my part ſo vehemently, and more like the manner of paſſionate, then giltie folkes, I ſee, the Queene perſecute her ſelfe, that I thinke condemnation may goe too haſtely ouer her, conſidering the vnlikelyhood, if not impoſſibilitie, her wiſedome, and vertue ſo long nouriſhed, ſhould in one moment throw downe it ſelfe, to the vttermoſt ende of wickednes. But whatſoeuer ſhe hath done (which as I ſay,

I neuer beleeued) yet how vniuſtly ſhould that aggrauate my fault. She founde abroade I within dores (for as for the wearing my garment I haue tolde you the cauſe) ſhe ſeeking as you ſaye to eſcape, I locking my ſelfe in a houſe: without perchaunce the conſpiracie of one poore ſtraunger, might greatly enable her attempt, or the fortification of the Lodge (as the trimme man alleadged) might make me hope to reſiſt all *Arcadia*. And ſee how treacherouſly he ſeckes to drawe from me, my chiefeſt cleering, by preuenting the credit of her words, wherewith ſhe had wholie taken the fault vpon her ſelfe. A honeſt and vnpartiall examiner, her words may condemne her, but may not abſolue me. Thus voide of all probable allegacion, the crauen crowes vppon my affliction, not leauing out any euill, that euer he hath felt in his owne ſoule, to charge my youth withall. But who can looke for a ſweeter breath out of ſuch a ſtomacke? or for honny from ſo filthye a Spyder? What ſhould I ſay more? if, in ſo inhumane a matter, which he himſelfe confeſſeth, ſincereſt iudgements are lotheſt to beleeue, and in the ſeuereſt lawes proofes clerer then the Sunne are required, his reaſons are only the skumme of a baſe malice, my anſweres moſt manifeſt, ſhining in their owne truth, there remayne any doubt of it, becauſe it ſtands betwixt his affirming and my denyall, I offer, nay I deſire, and humblie deſire I may be graunted the tryall by combat, wherein let him be armed and me in my ſhirt, I doubt not Iuſtice will be my ſhield, and his hart will ſhew it ſelfe as faint as it is falſe.

Now come I to the ſecond part of my offence, towards the young Lady, which howſoeuer you tearme it, ſo farre forth as I haue tolde you, I confeſſe, and for her ſake hartely lament. But if herein I offred force to her, loue offred more force to me. Let her beawtie be compared to my yeares, and ſuch effectes will be found no miracles. But ſince it is thus as it is, and that iuſtice teacheth vs not to loue puniſhment, but to flye to it for neceſſitye: the ſalue of her honour (I meane as the world will take it, for elſe in truth it is moſt vntouched) muſt be my marriage, and not my death, ſince the one ſtops all mouthes, the other becommes a doubtfull fable. This matter requires no more words, and your experience I hope in theſe caſes ſhall neede no more, for my ſelfe me thinkes I haue ſhewed already, too much loue of my life to beſtowe ſo many. But certainely, it hath bene loue of truth, which could not beare ſo vnworthy falſehood, and loue of iuſtice, that would brooke no wrong to my ſelfe nor other, and makes me now, euen in that reſpect to deſire you, to be moued rather with pittie at a iuſt cauſe of teares, then with the bloudy teares this Crocodile ſpends, who weepes to procure death, and not to lament death. It will be no honour to *Baſilius* tombe, to haue guiltleſſe bloud ſprinckled vpon it, and much more may a Iudge ouerway himſelfe in crueltie, then in clemencie. It is hard, but it is excellent, where it is found, a right knowledge, when correction is neceſſary, when grace doth more auaile. For my owne reſpect, if I thought in wiſedome I had deſerued death, I would not deſire life: for I knowe nature will condemne me to dye, though you do not; and longer I would not wiſh to drawe this breath, then I may keepe my ſelfe vnſpotted of any horrible crime; only I cannot nor euer will denye, the loue of *Philoclea*, whoſe violence wrought violent effects in me: with that he finiſhed his ſpeeche, caſting vp his eyes to the Iudge, and croſſing his hands, which he held in their length before him, declaring a reſolute pacience in whatſoeuer ſhould be done with him. *Philanax* like a watchfull aduerſary curiouſly marked all that he ſaide, ſauing that

in

in the beginning he was interrupted by two Letters were brought him from the Princeſſe *Pamela*, and the Lady *Philoclea*: who hauing all that night conſidered and bewayled their eſtate, carefull for their mother likewiſe, of whome they could neuer thinke ſo much euill, but conſidering with themſelues that ſhe aſſuredly ſhould haue ſo due tryall by the lawes, as eyther ſhe ſhould not neede their helpe, or ſhould be paſt their helpe, They looked to that which neerelyeſt touched them, and each wrate in this ſort for him in whome their liues ioy conſiſted.

The humble harted Philoclea *wrate much after this manner.*

MY Lords, what you will determine of me, is to me vncertayne, but what I haue determined of my ſelfe I am moſt certaine, which is no longer to enioy my life, then I may enioy him for my husband, whom the heauens for my hyeſt glory, haue beſtowed vpon me. Thoſe that iudge him, let them execute me. Let my throate ſatisfye their hunger of murder. For alas what hath he done, that had not his originall in me? Looke vppon him I beſeech you with indifferency, and ſee whether in thoſe eyes all vertue ſhines not. See whether that face could hide a murder. Take leaſure to knowe him, and then your ſelues will ſay, it hath bene too great an inhumanitie, to ſuſpect ſuch excellency. Are the gods thinke you deceaued in their workemanſhip? Artificers will not vſe marble but to noble vſes. Should thoſe powers be ſo ouerſhot, as to frame ſo precious an Image of their owne, but to honorable purpoſes? O ſpeake with him, ô heare him, ô knowe him, and become not the putters out of the worlds light. Hope you to ioy my fathers ſoule with hurting him he loued aboue all the world? Shall a wrong ſuſpicion make you forget the certaine knowledge of thoſe benefits, this houſe hath receiued by him? Alas alas, let not *Arcadia* for his loſſe, be accurſſed of the whole earth and of all poſteritie. He is a great Prince, I ſpeake vnto you that which I knowe, for I haue ſeene moſt euident teſtimonies. Why ſhould you hinder my aduancement? who if I haue paſt my childhood hurtleſſe to any of you, if I haue refuſed no body to do what good I could, if I haue often mitigated my fathers anger, euer ſought to maintayne his fauour towards you, nay if I haue held you all as fathers and brothers vnto me, rob me not of more then my life commes vnto. Teare not that which is inſeparably ioyned to my ſoule; but if he reſt miſliked of you, (which ô God, how can it be) yet geue him to me, let me haue him, you knowe I pretend no right to your ſtate. Therefore is it but a priuate petition I make vnto you. Or if you be hard hartedly bent, to appoint otherwiſe (which oh ſooner let me dye, then knowe) then to ende as I began, let me by you be ordered to the ſame ende: without for more crueltie you meane to force *Philoclea* to vſe her owne hands to kill one of your Kings children.

Pamelas *Letter (which ſhe meant to ſend to the generall aſſemblie of the Arcadian Nobilitie,) (for ſo cloſely they were kept, as they were vtterly ignorant of the newe taken orders) was thus framed.*

IN ſuch a ſtate my Lords you haue placed me, as I can neither write nor be ſilent; for how can I be ſilent, ſince you haue left me nothing but my ſolitary words to teſtifie my miſerie? and how ſhould I write (for as for ſpeech I haue none but my Iaylor, that can heare me) who neither can reſolue what to write, nor to whom to

« to write? What to write is as hard for me to ſaye, as what I may not write, ſo little « hope haue I of any ſucceſſe, and ſo much hath no iniury bene left vndone to me- « wards. To whom to write, where may I learne, ſince yet I wot not how to entitle « you? Shall I call you my Souereignes? ſet downe your lawes that I may do you « homage. Shall I fall lower, and name you my fellowes? ſhew me I beſeech you the « Lord and mayſter ouer vs. But ſhall *Baſilius* heyre, name her ſelfe your Princeſſe? « Alas I am your priſoner. But whatſoeuer I be, or whatſoeuer you be, ô all you be- « holders of theſe dolefull lines, this do I ſignifye vnto you, and ſignifye it with a « hart, that ſhall euer remayne in that opinion. The good or euill you do to the « excellent Prince was taken with me, and after by force from me, I will euer im- « pute it as eyther way done to mine owne perſon. He is a Prince and worthie « to be my husband, and ſo is he my husband by me worthely choſen. Beleeue « it, beleeue it, eyther you ſhall be traytors for murdering of me, or if you let me « liue, the murderers of him ſhall ſmart as traytors. For what do you thinke I can « thinke? Am I ſo childiſh, as not to ſee, wherein you touch him you condemne « me? Can his ſhame be without my reproach? no nor ſhall be, ſince nothing he « hath done, that I will not auowe. Is this the comfort you bring me in my fathers « death, to make me fuller of ſhame then ſorrowe? would you do this, if it were « not with full intention to preuent my power, with ſlaughter? And ſo do I pray « you, it is hye time for me, to be weary of my life too long ledd, ſince you are « weery of me, before you haue me? I ſay againe, I ſay it infinitely vnto you, I will « not liue without him, if it be not to reuenge him: eyther do iuſtly in ſauing both, « or wiſely in killing both. If I be your Princeſſe, I commaund his preſeruation; « if but a priuate perſon, then are we both to ſuffer. I take all truth to witnes he hath « done no faulte but in going with me. Therefore to conclude, in iudging him you « iudge me, neither conceaue with your ſelues, the matter you treate, is the life of a « ſtranger, though euen in that name he deſerued pittie, nor of a ſhepheard, to which « eſtate loue of me made ſuch a Prince deſcend, but determine moſt aſſuredly, the « life that is in queſtion is of *Pamela, Baſilius* daughter.

Many blots, had the teares of the ſweet Ladyes made in their letters, which many times they had altred, many times torne, and written anewe, euer thinking ſome thing eyther wanted, or were too much, or would offende, or which was worſt, would breede denyall: but at laſt, the day warned them to diſpatch, which they accordingly did, and calling one of their guard (for no body elſe was ſuffred to come neere them) with great entreaty, they requeſted him, that hee woulde preſent them, to the principall Noblemen and Gentlemen together. For they had more confidence in the numbers fauour, then in any one, vppon whome they would not laye the liues they helde ſo precious. But the fellowe truſtie to *Philanax*, who had placed him there, deliuered them both to him, (what time *Pyrocles* began to ſpeake) which he ſodaynly opened, and ſeeing to what they tended, by the firſt wordes, was ſo farre from publiſhing them (whereby he feared in *Euarchus* iuſt minde, eyther the Princeſſes might be endaungered, or the priſoners preſerued, of which choyſe he knewe not which to thinke the worſt) that hee would not himſelfe reede them ouer, doubting his owne hart might be mollified, ſo bent vpon reuenge. Therefore vtterly ſuppreſſing them, he lent a ſpitefull eare to *Pirocles*, and aſſoone as he had ended, with a very willing hart deſired *Euarchus*

he

he might accept the combat: although it woulde haue framed but euill with him, *Pyrocles* hauing neuer founde any match neere him, beſides *Muſidorus*. But *Euarchus* made aunſwere, ſince bodyly ſtrength is but a ſeruant to the minde, it were very barbarous and prepoſterous, that force ſhoulde bee made iudge ouer reaſon. Then woulde hee alſo haue replied in wordes vnto him, but *Euarchus* who knewe what they coulde ſaye, was already ſaide, taking their arguments into his minde, cammaunded him to proceede againſt the other priſoner, and that then he woulde ſentence them both together. *Philanax* nothing the milder for *Pyrocles* purging himſelfe, but rather (according to the nature of arguing, eſpecially when it is bitter) ſo much the more vehement entred thus into his ſpeech againſt *Muſidorus*, being ſo ouergone with rage that hee forgate in this oration his preciſe methode of oratory. Behold moſt noble protector, to what a ſtate *Arcadia* is come, ſince ſuch manner of men, may challenge in combat the faithfulleſt of the nobilitie, and hauing merited the ſhamefulleſt of all deathes, dare name in marriage the Princeſſes of this cuntrie. Certainely my maſters, I muſt ſaye, you were much out of taſte, if you had not rather enioy ſuch Ladies, then be hangd. But the one you haue as much deſerued, as you haue diſhonoured the other. But now my ſpeech muſt be directed to you good maſter *Dorus*, who with *Pallas* helpe pardie, are lately growne *Palladius*. Toomuch this ſacred ſeate of iuſtice, grauntes vnto ſuch a fugitiue bondſlaue who in ſteede of theſe examinations, ſhoulde be made confeſſe, with a whippe, that which a halter ſhoulde puniſh. Are not you he Sir, whoſe ſheepehooke was prepared to be our Scepter? In whom lay the knot of all this tradgedy? or els perchaunce, they that ſhoulde gaine little by it were dealers in the murder, you onely that had prouided the fruites for your ſelfe, knewe nothing of it, knewe nothinge: hath thy companiõ here infected thee with ſuch impudency as euen in the face of the world to deny that which al the world perceaueth? The other pleades ignorance, and you I doubt not will alleage abſence. But he was ignoraunt, when he was hard by, and you had framed your abſence, iuſt againe the time the acte ſhoulde bee committed, ſo fit a liuetenante he knew he had lefte of his wickednes, that for himſelfe his ſafeſt meane, was to conuey away the Lady of vs all, who once out of the contrie, he knew wee woulde come with oliue branches of interceſſion vnto her, and fall at his feete to beſeech him to leaue keeping of ſheepe, and vouchſafe the tiranniſing ouer vs, for to think they are Princes, as they ſay (although in our lawes it behooues them nothing) I ſee at all no reaſon. Theſe iewells certainly with their diſguiſinge ſleightes, they haue pilfred in their vagabonding race. And think you ſuch Princes ſhould be ſo long without ſome followers after them? Truely if they be Princes, it manifeſtly ſhewes their vertues ſuch, as all their ſubiectes are glad to be rid of them. But be they as they are, for we are to conſider the matter, and not the men. *Baſilius* murder hath beene the cauſe of their comming, *Baſilius* murder, they haue moſt trecherouſly brought to paſſe; yet that I doubte not, you will denie as well as your fellowe. But howe will you denie the ſtealinge awaie the Princeſſe of this Prouince, which is no leſſe then treaſon? So notably hath the iuſtice of the gods prouided, for the puniſhing of theſe malefactors, as if it were poſſible, men would not beleue the certaine euidences of their principall miſchiefe, yet haue they diſcouered them ſelues ſufficiently for their moſt iuſt ouerthrowe. I ſaye therefore (to omit my cheefe matter of the Kings death) This wooluiſh ſheepheard, this counterfeite Prince,

hath trayterouſly contrary to his alleageaunce (hauing made himſelfe a ſeruant and ſubiecte) attempted the depriuing this contry of our naturall Princeſſe: and therefore by all right muſt receaue the puniſhment of traytors. This matter is ſo aſſured as he himſelfe will not deny it, being taken and brought backe in the fact. This matter is ſo odious in nature, ſo ſhamefull to the worlde, ſo contrarye to all lawes, ſo hurtefull to vs, ſo falſe in him, as if I ſhould ſtande further in declaring or defacing it, I ſhoulde either ſhewe great doubts in your wiſedome, or in your iuſtice. Therefore I will transferre my care vpon you, and attend to my learning and comfort, the eternall example you will leaue to al mankinde of diſguiſers, falſefiers, adulterers, rauiſhers, murderers, and traytors. *Muſidorus* while *Philanax* was ſpeaking againſt his coſin and him, had looked rounde about him, to ſee whether by any meanes hee might come to haue caught him in his armes, and haue killed him; ſo much had his diſgracing wordes filled his breſte with rage. But perceauing himſelfe ſo guarded as hee ſhoulde rather ſhowe a paſſionate acte, then performe his reuenge, his hande trembling with deſire to ſtrike, and all the vaines in his face ſwelling; caſting his eyes ouer the iudgement ſeate. O Gods ſaide hee, and haue you ſpared my life to beare theſe iniuries of ſuch a driule? Is this the iuſtice of this place, to haue ſuch men as we are, ſubmitted not onely to apparent falſehood, but moſt ſhameful reuiling? But marke I pray you the vngratefulnes of the wretch, how vtterly hee hath forgotten, the benefits both he and all this contry hath receaued of vs. For if euer men may remember their owne noble deedes, it is then when their iuſte defence, and other vniuſt vnkindenes doth require it. I omit our ſeruices done to *Baſilius* in the late warre with *Amphialus* importing no leſſe then his daughters liues, and his ſtates preſeruation: were not we the men that killed the wilde beaſtes which otherwiſe had killed the Princeſſes, if wee had not ſuccourd them? Conſider if it pleaſe you, where had bene *Daiphantus* rape, or my treaſon, if the ſweete beauties of the earth, had then bene deuoured? Either thinke them nowe dead, or remember they liue by vs. And yet full often this telltale can acknowledge the loſſe they ſhoulde haue by their taking away, while maliciouſly he ouer paſſeth who were their preſeruers, neither let this be ſpoken of mee, as if I ment to ballance this euill with that good, for I muſt confeſſe, that ſauing of ſuch creatures was rewarded in the acte it ſelfe: but onely to manifeſt the partial iangling of this vile pickthanke. But if we be the traytors, where was your fidelitie, O onely tonge-valliant Gentleman, when not onely the yonge Princeſſe, but the King himſelfe was defended from vttermoſt perill, partely by me but principally by this excellent yonge mans both wiſdome and valure? Were wee that made our ſelues againſt hundreds of armed men, openly the ſhieldes of his life, like ſecretly to bee his impoyſoners? Did wee then ſhewe his life to bee dearer to vs then our owne, becauſe wee might after robbe him of his life, to dye ſhamefully? Truely truely maſter orator, whoſoeuer hath hired you to be ſo buſie in their matters, who keepe honeſter ſeruauntes then your ſelfe, hee ſhoulde haue bid you in ſo manie raylings, bring ſome excuſe for your ſelfe, why in the greateſt neede of your Prince, to whome you pretend a miraculous good will, you were not then as forewarde to do like a man your ſelfe, or at leaſte to accuſe them that were ſlacke in that ſeruice, but commonlye the vſe their feete for there defence whoſe tounge is their weapon. Certaynelye a verye ſimple ſubtiltie it had beene in vs, to repoſe

repoſe our liues in the daughters, when we had killed the father. But as this Gentleman thinkes to winne the reputation of a copious talker by leauing nothing vnſaide which a filthy minde can imagine, ſo thinke I (or els all wordes are vaine) that to wiſe mens iudgement, our cleerenes in the Kings death is ſufficiently notorious. But at length when the marchaunt hath ſet out his guilded baggage, laſtly he comes to ſome ſtuffe of importance, and ſaith I conueied away the Princeſſe of this contrie. And is ſhe indeede your Princeſſe? I pray you then whom ſhould I waite of els, but her that was my miſtres by my profeſſed vow, & Princeſſe ouer me while I liued in this ſoile? Aske her why ſhe went, aske not me why I ſerued her. Since accounting me as a Prince, you haue not to do with me, taking me as her ſeruant, then take withall that I muſt obay her. But you will ſay I perſwaded her to flie awaye, certainely I will for no death deny it, knowing to what honour I ſhoulde bring her from the thraldome by ſuch fellowes councell as you, ſhee was kept in. Shall perſwaſion to a Prince growe treaſon to a Prince? It might be error in me but falſehoode it coulde not be, ſince I made my ſelfe partaker of whatſoeuer I wiſhed her vnto, who will euer counſaill his King, if his counſaill be iudged by the euent, and if it be not found wiſe, ſhall therefore be thought wicked? But if I be a traytor, I hope you will graunt me a correlatiue, to whom I ſhall be the traytor. For the Princeſſe againſt whom the treaſons are conſidered, I am ſure will avowe my faithfulnes, without you will ſaye that I am a traytor to her, becauſe I left the contrie: and a traytor to the contrie, becauſe I went with her. Heere do I leaue out my iuſt excuſes of loues force, which as thy narrow hart hath neuer had noble roome inough in it to receaue, ſo yet to thoſe manlike courages, that by experience know how ſubiect the vertuous mindes are to loue a moſt vertuous creature, (witneſſed to be ſuch by the moſt excellent guiftes of nature) will deeme it a veniall treſpaſſe, to ſeeke the ſatisfaction of honourable deſires. Honourable euen in the curiouſeſt pointes of honour, whereout there can no diſgrace nor diſperagement come vnto her. Therfore O iudge, who I hope doeſt know what it is to be a iudge, that your ende is to preſerue, and not to deſtroy mankinde, that lawes are not made like limetwigges, or nets, to catch euery thing that toucheth them, but rather like ſea markes to auoide the ſhipwracke of ignoraunt paſſingers, ſince that our doinge in the extremeſt interpretation is but a humaine error, and that of it you may make a proffitable euent (we being of ſuch eſtate, as their parents would not haue miſliked the affinitie) you will not I truſt at the perſwaſion of this brabler, burne your houſe to make it cleane, but like a wiſe father, turne euen the fault of your children to any good that may come of it: ſince that is the fruite of wiſdome, and ende of all iudgements. While this matter was thus handling, a ſilent and as it were aſtoniſhed attention, poſſeſt all the people. A kindely compſſion moued the noble Gentleman *Simpathus*, but as for *Kalander*, euery thing was ſpoken either by or for his own deere gueſtes, moued an affect in him: ſomtimes teares, ſometimes hopefull lookes, ſometimes whiſpering perſwaſions in their eares, that ſtoode by him, to ſeeke the ſauing the two yong Princes. But the generall multitude wayted the iudgemẽt of *Euarchus*, who ſhewed in his face no motions, either at the ones or other ſpeeche, letting paſſe the flowers of rhetoricke, and onely marking whether their reaſons tended, hauing made the queſtion to be asked of *Gynecia*, who continued to take the whole faulte vpon her ſelfe, and hauing cauſed *Dametas*, with *Miſo* and *Mopſa* (who by *Philanax* order had bene helde in moſt cruell priſon) to make a full declaration, howe much they knewe of theſe paſſed matters, and then

gathering

gathering as aſſured ſatisfaction to his owne minde as in that caſe he could; not reeding to take leaſure for that, whereof a long practiſe had bred a well grounded habit in him, with a voice of geſture directed to the vniuerſall aſſemblie, in this forme pronounced ſentence. This weightie matter, wherof preſently we are to determine, doth at the firſt conſideration yeeld two important doubtes. The firſt whether theſe men be to be iudged. The ſecond how they are to be iudged. The firſt doubt ariſeth becauſe they geue themſelues out for Princes abſolute, a ſacred name, and to which any violence ſemes to be an impietie. For how can any lawes, which are the bonds of all humane ſocietie be obſerued if the lawe giuers, and lawe rulers, bee not helde in an vntouched admiration? But heereto although alredy they haue beene ſufficiently aunſwered, yet thus much againe I will repeate vnto you. That what ſoeuer they be or be not, heere they be no Princes, ſince betwixt Prince and ſubiect there is as neceſſarie a relation, as betweene father and ſonne, and as there is no man a father, but to his childe, ſo is not a Prince, a Prince but to his owne ſubiects. Therefore is not this place to acknowledge in them any principallitie, without it ſhould at the ſame time, by a ſecreate conſent confeſſe ſubiection. Yet hereto may be obiected, that the vniuerſall ciuillitie, the lawe of nations (all mankinde being as it were coinhabitors or worlde-citizens together) hath euer required publicke perſons, ſhoulde be of all parties eſpecially regarded ſince not onely in peace, but in warre, not only Princes, but herauldes and trumpets, are with great reaſon exempted from iniuryes. This pointe is true, but yet ſo true, as they that will receaue the benefit of a cuſtome, muſt not be the firſt to breake it. For then can they not complaine, if they be not helpt by that which they themſelues hurte. Yf a Prince do actes of hoſtilitie, without denouncing warre, if he breake his oath of amitie, or innumerable ſuch other thinges contrary to the lawe of armes, he muſt take heede how he fall into their hands whom he ſo wrongeth, for then is courteſie the beſt cuſtome he can claime, much more theſe men, who haue not onely lefte to doe like Princes, but to be like Princes, not onely entred into *Arcadia*, and ſo into the *Arcadian* orders, but into domeſticall ſeruices, and ſo by making them ſelues priuate, depriued themſelues of reſpecte due to their publicke calling. For no proportion it were of iuſtice, that a man might make himſelfe no Prince when he woulde doe euill, and might a newe create himſelfe a Prince, when he would not ſuffer euill. Thus therefore by al lawes of nature and nations, and eſpecially by their owne putting themſelues out of the ſanctuary of them, theſe yong men can not in iuſtice auoide the iudgement: but like priuate men, muſt haue their doinges either cleared, excuſed, or condemned. There reſteth then the ſecond point, howe to iudge well. And that muſt vndoubtedly bee done, not by a free diſcourſe of reaſon, and skill of philoſophy: but muſt be tied to the lawes of *Greece*, and municipall ſtatutes of this kingedome. For although out of them, theſe came, and to them muſte indeede referre their offſpringe, yet becauſe philoſophicall diſcourſes, ſtande in the generall conſideration of thinges, they leaue ao euery man a ſcope of his owne interpretation. Where the lawes applyinge them ſelues to the neceſſary vſe, folde vs within aſſured boundes, which once broken mās nature infinitly rāgeth. Iudged therfore they muſt be, & by your lawes iudged. Nowe the action offereth it ſelfe to dewe ballance, betwixte the accuſers two-folde accuſation, and their aunſweare accordingly applied. The queſtions beeinge the one of a facte ſimplie, the other of the quallity of a fact. To the firſt they vſe direct deniall, to the ſecond quallification and excuſe. The y deny the murder of the king;

and

& mightie againſt preſumptiõs bring forth ſome probable anſwers, which they do principally fortefie with the Queenes acknowledging her ſelfe only culpable. Certainely as in equallitie of coniectures, we are not to take holde of the worſe, but rather to be glad we may finde any hope that mankind is not growen monſtrous, (being vndoubtedly leſſe euill a guiltie man ſhoulde eſcape, then a guiltleſſe periſh) ſo if in the reſt they be ſpotleſſe, then is no farther to be remembred. But if they haue aggrauated theſe ſuſpitions, with newe euills then are thoſe ſuſpitions ſo farre to ſhowe themſelues, as to cauſe the other pointes to be thorowly examined, and with leſſe fauour wayed ſince this no man can deny they haue beene accidentall, if not principall cauſes of the Kinges death. Now then we are to determine of the other matters, which are laide to them, wherein they doe not deny the facte, but deny or at leaſte diminiſh the faulte, but firſt I may remember (though it were not firſt alleaged by them) the ſeruices they had before done, truely honourable and worthy of great rewarde, but not worthy to counteruaile with a following wickednes. Reward is proper to well doing, puniſhment to euill doing, which muſt not bee confounded, no more then good and euill are to be mingled. Therefore hath bene determined in all wiſedomes, that no man becauſe he hath done well before, ſhould haue his preſent euils ſpared, but rather ſo much the more puniſhed, as hauing ſhewed he knew how to be good, woulde againſt his knowledge bee naught. The facte then is nakedly without paſſion, or partialitie to bee viewed: wherein without all queſtion they are equallie culpable. For though he that termes himſelfe *Daiphantus* were ſooner diſapointed of his purpoſe of conueying away the Lady *Philoclea*, then he that perſwaded the Princeſſe *Pamela* to flie her countrie, and accompanied her in it: yet ſeing in cauſes of this nature, the wil by the rules of iuſtice ſtandeth for the deed, they are both alike to bee founde guiltie, and guiltie of hainous rauiſhment. For though they rauiſhed them not from themſelues, yet they rauiſhed them from him that owed them, which was their father. An acte puniſhed by all the *Grecian* lawes, by the loſſe of the head, as a moſt execrable thefte. For if they muſt dye, who ſteale from vs our goodes, how much more they, who ſteale from vs that, for which we gather our goodes, and if our lawes haue it ſo in the priuate perſons, much more forcible are they to bee in Princes children, where one ſteales as it were the whole ſtate, and well being of that people, being tyed by the ſecret of a long vſe, to be gouerned by none but the next of that bloud. Neither let any man maruaile, our anceſtours haue bene ſo ſeuere in theſe caſes, ſince the example of the *Phenician Europa* but eſpecially of the Grecian *Helene*, hath taught them, what deſtroying fires haue growen of ſuch ſparckles. And although *Helene* was a wife, and this but a child, that booteth not ſince the principall cauſe of marrying wiues is, that we may haue children of our owne. But now let vs ſee how theſe yong men (truely for their perſons worthy of pittie, if they haue rightly pittied themſelues) do goe about to mittigate the vehemencie of their errors. Some of their excuſes are common to both, ſome peculiar onely to him that was the ſheepeheard. Both remember the force of loue, and as it were the mending vp of the matter by their marriage, if that vnbrideled deſire which is intituled loue, might purge ſuch a ſickenes as this, ſurely wee ſhoulde haue, many louing excuſes of hatefull miſchiefe. Nay rather no miſchiefe ſhoulde be committed, that ſhould not be vailed vnder the name of loue. For as well he that ſteales, might alleage the loue of mony, he that murders the loue of reuenge, he that rebells the loue of greatneſſe, as the adulterer the loue of a woman. Since they do in

all

all ſpeeches affirme they loue that, which an ill gouerned paſſion maketh them to follow. But loue may haue no ſuch priuiledge. That ſweete and heauenly vniting of the mindes, which properly is called loue, hath no other knot but vertue, and therefore if it be a right loue, it can neuer ſlide into any action that is not vertuous. The other and indeed more effectuall reaſon is that they may be married vnto them and ſo honourably redreſſe the diſhonour of them, whom this matter ſeemeth moſt to touch. Surely if the queſtion were, what were conuenient for the parties, and not what is iuſte in the neuer changing iuſtice, there might much bee ſaide in it. But herein we muſt conſider, that the lawes look how to preuent by due examples, that ſuch thinges be not done: and not how to ſalue ſuch things, when they are doone. For if the gouernors of iuſtice, ſhall take ſuch a ſcope, as to meaſure the foote of the lawe, by a ſhow of conueniencie, and meaſure that conueniencie not by the publike ſocietie, but by that which is fitteſt for them which offende: young men, ſtronge men, and rich men, ſhall euer finde priuate conueniences, howe to palliate ſuch committed diſorders, as to the publike ſhall not onely bee inconuenient but peſtilent. The marriage perchaunce might be fit for them, but verie vnfit were it to the ſtate, to allowe a patterne of ſuch procurations of marriage. And thus much doe they both alleage. Further goes he that went with the Princeſſe *Pamela*, & requireth the benefit of a councellor, who hath place of free perſwaſion; and the reaſonable excuſe of a ſeruant, that did but waite of his miſtres. Without all queſtion, as councellors haue great cauſe to take heede how they aduiſe any thing, directly oppoſite to the forme of that preſent gouernement, eſpecially when they doe it ſingly without publike alowaunce, ſo yet is the caſe much more apparant: ſince neither ſhe was an effectuall Princeſſe, her father being then aliue, & though he had bene deade, ſhe not come to the yeares of aucthoritie, nor hee her ſeruant, in ſuch manner to obey her, but by his owne preferment firſt belonging to *Dametas*, and then to the Kinge, and therefore if not by *Arcadia* lawes, yet by houſholde orders, bounde to haue done nothing without his agreement. Thus therefore ſince the deedes accompliſhed by theſe two, are both abhominable and inexcuſeable. I doe in the behalfe of iuſtice, & by the force of *Arcadia* lawes pronounce, that *Daiphantus* ſhalbe throwne out of a hie tower to receaue his death by his fall. *Palladius* ſhall bee behedded the time before the ſunne ſet: the place in *Mantinea*: the executioner *Dametas*: which office he ſhall execute all the dayes of his life, for his beaſtly forgetting the carefull dutie he owed to his charge. This ſaide he turned himſelfe to *Philanax*, and two of the other noble men, commaunding them to ſee the iudgement preſently performed. *Philanax* more greedie then any hunter of his praye, went ſtraite to laye holde of the excellent priſoners, who caſting a farewell looke one vpon the other, repreſented in their faces aſmuch vnappalled conſtancie, as the moſt excellent courage can deliuer, in outward graces. Yet if at all there were any ſhewe of change in them, it was that *Pyrocles* was ſomthing neerer to baſhfulnes, and *Muſidorus* to anger; both ouer ruled by reaſon and reſolution. But as with great number of armed men, *Philanax* was deſcending vnto them, and that *Muſidorus* was beginning to ſaye ſomething in *Pyrocles* behalfe. Beholde *Kalander*, that with armes caſte abroade, and open mouth came crying to *Euarchus*, holding a ſtranger in his hād that cried much more then he, deſiring they might be heard ſpeake before the priſoners were remoued. Euen the noble Gentleman *Simpathus* ayded them in it, and taking ſuch as hee coulde commaund, ſtopped *Philanax* betwixt entreatie and force, from carrying a-

way

way the Princes, vntill it were heard what new matters theſe men did bring. So againe mounting to the Tribunall, they hearkened to the ſtraungers vehement ſpeach, or rather appaſſionate exclayming. It was in deede *Kalodulus*, the faithfull ſeruaunt of *Muſidorus*, to whome his maiſter, when in deſpite of his beſt grounded determinations he firſt became a ſlaue to affection, had ſent the ſheaphearde *Menalcas* to be arreſted: by the helpe of whoſe rayment in the meane time he aduaunced himſelfe to that eſtate, which he accompted moſt high, becauſe it might be ſeruiceable to that fancy, which he had placed moſt high in his minde. For *Menalcas* hauing faithfully performed his errand, was as faithfully impriſoned by *Kalodulus*. But as *Kalodulus* perfourmed the firſt part of his duety in doing the commaundement of his Prince: ſo was he with abundance of ſincere loyalty extremely perplexed, when he vnderſtood of *Menalcas* the ſtraunge diſguiſing of his beloued Maiſter. For as the actes he and his Coſen *Pyrocles* had done in *Aſia*, had filled all the eares of the *Theſſalians* and *Macedonians* with no leſſe ioy then admiration: ſo was the feare of their loſſe no leſſe grieuous vnto them, when by the noiſe of report they vnderſtood of theyr lonely committing themſelues to the Sea, the iſſue of which they had no way learned. But now that by *Menalcas* hee perceyued where he was, geſſing the like of *Pyrocles*, comparing the vnuſednes of this act with the vnripeneſſe of theyr age, ſeeing in generall coniecture they could doe it for nothing, that might not fall out dangerous: he was ſomewhile troubled with himſelfe, what to doe, betwixt doubt of theyr hurt, and doubt of theyr diſpleaſure. Often he was minded (as his ſafeſt and honeſteſt way) to reueale it to the king *Euarchus*: that both his authority might preuent any domage to them, and vnder his winges he himſelfe might remaine ſafe. But conſidering a iourney to *Byzantium* (where as yet he ſuppoſed *Euarchus* lay) would require more time, then hee was willing to remaine doubtfull of his Princes eſtate, he reſolued at length to write the matter to *Euarchus*, and himſelfe the while to goe into *Arcadia*: vncertayne what to doe when he came thither, but determined to doe his beſt ſeruice to hys deare Maiſter, if by any good fortune he might finde him. And ſo it happened that being euen this day come to *Mantinea*, and as warely and attentiuely as he coulde giuing eare to al reports, in hope to hear ſome thing of them he ſought, he ſtraight receyued a ſtraunge rumor of theſe thinges: but ſo vncertainely as popular reports cary ſo rare accidents. But this by all men he was willed, to ſeek out *Kalander* a great Gentleman of that Countrey, who would ſooneſt ſatisfie him of all theſe occurrents. Thus enſtructed he came euen about the midſt of *Euarchus* iudgement to the deſert. Where ſeeing great multitudes, and hearing vnknowen names of *Palladius*, and *Daiphantus*, and not able to preſſe to the place where *Euarchus* ſate, he enquired for *Kalander*, and was ſoone brought vnto him: partly becauſe he was generallye knowen vnto all men, and partly becauſe he had withdrawen himſelfe from the preſſe, when he perceiued by *Euarchus* words whether they tended, being not able to endure his gueſts condemnation. Hee enquired forthwith of *Kalander* the cauſe of the aſſembly: and whither the fame were true of *Euarchus* preſence: who with manye teares, made a dolefull recitall vnto him, both of the *Amazon* and ſheepheard, ſetting forth their naturall graces, and lamenting their pittifull vndoing. But his deſcription made *Kalodulus* immediatly knowe the ſheepheard was his Duke, and ſo iudging the other to be *Pyrocles*, and ſpeedely communicating it to *Kalander*, who he ſaw did fauour their caſe, they brake the preſſe with aſtoniſhing

euery man with their cryes. And being come to *Euarchus*, *Kalodulus* fell at his feete telling him thoſe he had iudged were his owne Sunne and Nephewe; the one the comforte of Macedon, the other the onely ſtay of *Theſſalia*. With many ſuch like words, but as from a man that aſſured himſelfe in that matter he ſhoulde neede ſmal ſpeeche. While *Kalander* made it knowen to all men, what the priſoners were to whom he cried they ſhould ſalute their father, and ioy in the good hap the gods had ſent them; who were no leſſe glad, then all the people amazed at the ſtrange euent of theſe matters. Euen *Philanax* owne reuengefull hart was mollified, when he ſaw from diuerſe partes of the world ſo neere kinſemen ſhould meete in ſuch a neceſſitie. And with all the fame of *Pyrocles* and *Muſidorus*, greatly drewe him to a compaſſionate conceite, and had already vncloathed his face of all ſhew of mallice. But *Euarchus* ſtaide a good while vpon himſelfe, like a valliant man that ſhould receaue a notable encounter, being vehemently ſtricken with the fatherly loue of ſo excellent children, and ſtudying with his beſt reaſon, what his office required. At length with ſuch a kind of grauitie, as was neere to ſorrow, he thus vttred his mind. I take witnes of the immortall gods (ſaide he) O *Arcadians*, that what this daye I haue ſaide, hath beene out of my aſſured perſwaſion, what iuſtice it ſelfe and your iuſte lawes require. Though ſtraungers then to me, I had no deſire to hurt them, but leauing aſide all conſiderations of the perſons, I wayed the matter which you committed into my hands, with moſt vnpartiall and fartheſt reach of reaſon. And thereout haue condemned them to looſe their liues, contaminated with ſo manye foule breaches of hoſpitalitie, ciuilitie and vertue. Now contrarye to all expectations, I finde them to be my onely ſonne and Nephew, ſuch vpon whom you ſee, what guiftes nature hath beſtowed. Such who haue ſo to the wonder of the worlde heretofore behaued themſelues, as might geue iuſte cauſe to the greateſt hopes, that in an excellent youth may be conceaued. Laſtly in fewe wordes ſuch, in whome I placed all my mortall ioyes, and thought my ſelfe now neere my graue, to recouer a newe life. But alas ſhall iuſtice halte? Or ſhall ſhe winke in ones cauſe which had *Lynces* eyes in anothers? Or rather ſhall all priuate reſpectes geue place to that holy name? Bee it ſo, bee it ſo, let my graye heares bee layde in the duſt with ſorrow, let the ſmall remnant of my life, bee to me an inward and outward deſolation, and to the world a gazing ſtock of wretched miſery: But neuer neuer, let ſacred rightfulnes fall. It is immortal and immortally ought to be preſerued. If rightly I haue iudged, then rightly I haue iudged myne own children. Vnleſſe the name of a child, ſhould haue force to change the neuer changing iuſtice. No no *Pyrocles* & *Muſidorus* I prefer you much before my life, but I prefer Iuſtice as far before you, while you did like your ſelues, my body ſhould willingly haue ben your ſhield, but I cannot keep you from the effects of your own doing. Nay I cānot in this caſe acknowledge you for mine. For neuer had I ſheapheard to my nephew, nor euer had woman to my ſon, your vices haue degraded you frō being princes, & haue diſanulde your birthright.

Therefore if there be anie thing left in you, of Princely vertue, ſhew it in conſtant ſuffering, that your vnprincely dealing hath purchaſed vnto you. For my part I muſt tell you, you haue forced a father to rob himſelfe of his children. Do you therefore, O *Philanax*, and you my other Lordes of this countrie, ſee the iudgment berightly performed in time, place and maner, as before appointed. With that though he would haue refrained them; a man might perceiue the teares drop downe his long white beard. Which moued not onely *Kalodulus* and *Kerxenus* to

roaring

roaring lamentations, but al the assembly dolefully to record that pittiful spectacle. *Philanax* himselfe could not abstaine from great shewes of pittying sorrow, and manifest withdrawing from performing the kinges commaundement. But *Musidorus* hauing the hope of his safety, and recouering of the princesse *Pamela*: which made him most desirous to liue, so sodainly dashed: but especialy moued for hys deare *Pyrocles*, for whom he was euer resolued his last speach should be, and stirred vp with rage of vnkindnesse, he thus spake. Enioy thy bloudie conquest tyrannicall *Euarchus*, said he; for neither is conuenient the title of a king, to a murderer, nor the remembrance of kindred, to a destroyer of his kindred. Go home and glorie that it hath been in thy power, shamefully to kill *Musidorus*. Let thy flattering Orators dedicate Crownes of Laurell vnto thee, that the first of thy race, thou hast ouerthrowne a Prince of *Thessalia*. But for me I hope the *Thessalians* are not so degenerate from their aunce stors, but that they will reuenge my iniurie; and their losse vpon thee. I hope my death is no more vniust to me; thē it shalbe bitter to thee, howsoeuer it be, my death shall triumph ouer thy crueltie, neither as now would I liue to make my life beholding vnto thee. But if thy crueltie hath not so blinded thine eyes, that thou canst not see thine own heart, if thy heart be not so diuelish, as thou hast no power but to torment thy self: then look vpō this yong *Pyrocles*, with a manlike eie; if not with a pittifull: Giue not occasion to the whole earth to say, see how the gods haue made the Tyrant teare his owne bowels! Examine the eies and voices of all this people, and what all men see, be not blinde in thine owne case. Looke I say looke vpon him, in whom the most curious searcher is able to finde no fault: but that he is thy sonne. Beleeue it, thy owne subiectes will detest thee, for robbing them of such a Prince, in whome they haue right as well as thy selfe. Some more wordes to that purpose he would haue spoken, but *Pyrocles* who often had cald to him, did nowe fully interrupt him, desiring him not to do him the wrong to geue his father ill wordes before him, willing him to consider it was their owne fault, and not his vniustice, and withall to remember their resolution of well suffering all accidents, which this impaciencie did seeme to varry frō: and then kneeling down with all humblenesse, hee tooke the speach in this order to *Euarchus*. If my dayly praiers to the Almightie Gods, had so farre preuayled, as to haue graunted me the end whereto I haue directed my actions; I should rather haue beene nowe a comfort to your minde, then an example of your iustice, rather a preseruer of your memorie by my life, then a monument of your iudgement by my death. But since it hath pleased their vnsearchable wisedomes, to ouerthrow all the desires I had to serue you, and make me become a shame vnto you; since the last obedience I can shew you, is to die: vouchsafe yet O father (if my fault haue not made me altogether vnworthy, so to terme you) vouchsafe I say to let the few & last words your sonne shall euer speake, not be tedious vnto you. And if the remembrance of my vertuous mother, who once was deare vnto you, may beare any sway with you, if the name of *Pyrocles* haue at any time bene pleasant, let one request of mine which shall not be for mine owne life, be graciously accepted of you. What you owe to iustice is performed in my death. A father to haue executed his onely sonne, wil leaue a sufficient example for a greater crime then this. My bloud will satisfie the highest point of equitie, my bloud will satisfie the hardest hearted in this countrie. O saue the life of this Prince, that is the onely all I will with my last breath demaund of you. With what face will you looke vpon your sister, when in reward of nou-

riſhing me in your greateſt neede, you take away and in ſuch ſort take away that which is more deare to her then all the world, and is the onely comfort, wherewith ſhe nouriſheth her olde age? O giue not ſuch an occaſion to the noble *Theſſalians*, for euer to curſe the match that their Prince did make with the *Macedon* bloud. By my loſſe there followes no publique loſſe, for you are to hold the ſeate, and to prouide your ſelfe perchance of a worthier ſucceſſor. But how can you or all the earth recompence that domage, that poore *Theſſalia* ſhall ſuſtaine? who ſending out (whom otherwiſe they would no more haue ſpared then their owne eyes) their Prince to you, and you requeſting to haue him, by you hee ſhould thus diſhonourably be extinguiſhed. Set before you, I beſeech you, the face of that miſerable people, when no ſo oner ſhall the newes come that you haue met your Nephew, but withall they ſhall heare that you haue beheaded him. How manie teares they ſhall ſpend, how many cõplaints they ſhal make, ſo manie iuſt execrations will light vpõ you. And take heede O father (for ſince my death anſweres my fault, while I liue I wil call vpõ that deare name) Leaſt ſeeking too preciſe a courſe of iuſtice, you be not thought moſt vniuſt: in weakning your neighbours mightie eſtate, by taking away their onely piller. In me, in me this matter beganne, in me let it receiue his ending. Aſſure your ſelfe no man will doubt your ſeuere obſeruing the lawes, when it ſhal be knowne *Euarchus* hath killed *Pyrocles*. But the time of my euer farewell approcheth, if you do thinke my death ſufficient for my fault, and doe not deſire to make my death more miſerable then death. Let theſe dying wordes of him, that was once your ſonne, pearce your eares. Let *Muſidorus* liue, and *Pirocles* ſhall liue in him, and you ſhall not want a childe. A childe cried out *Muſidorus*, to him, that killes *Pyrocles*? with that againe he fell to intreate for *Pyrocles*, and *Pyrocles* as faſt for *Muſidorus*, each employing his wit how to ſhew himſelfe moſt worthy to die, to ſuch an admiration of all the beholders, that moſt of them examining the matter by their owne paſſions, thought *Euarchus* (as often extraordinarie excellencies, not being rightly conceiued, do rather offend then pleaſe) an obſtinate hearted man, and ſuch a one, who being pittileſſe, his dominion muſt needes be inſupportable. But *Euarchus* that felt his owne miſerie more then they, and yet loued goodneſſe more then himſelfe, with ſuch a ſad aſſured behauiour as *Cato* killed himſelfe withall, when he had heard the vttermoſt of that their ſpeach tended vnto: he commaunded againe they ſhould be carried away, riſing vp from the ſeate (which he would much rather haue wiſhed, ſhould haue been his graue) and looking who would take the charge, whereto euerie one was exceeding backward. But as this pittifull matter was entring into, thoſe that were next the Dukes bodie, might heare from vnder the veluet, wherewith he was couered, a great voice of groning. Whereat euerie man aſtoniſhed, (and their ſpirites appalled with theſe former miſeries, apt to take anie ſtrange conceite) when they might perfitly perceiue the bodie ſtirre, Then ſome beganne to feare ſpirits, ſome to looke for a myracle, moſt to imagine they knew not what. But *Philanax* and *Kerxenus*, whoſe eies, honeſt loue (though to diuerſe parties) held moſt attentiue, leapt to the table, and putting of the veluet couer, might plainly diſcerne, with as much wonder as gladneſſe, that the Duke liued. For ſo it was, that the drinke he had receiued, was neither as *Gynecia* firſt imagined, a loue potion, nor as it was after thought, a deadly poyſon, but a drinke made, by notable Arte, and as it was thought not without naturall magicke to procure for thirtie houres, ſuch a deadly ſleepe, as ſhould oppreſſe all ſhew of life. The

cauſe

cauſe of the making of this drinke had firſt been, that a Princeſſe of *Cyprus*, graund-mother to *Gynecia*, being notably learned, (and yet not able with al her learning, to anſwere the obiections of *Cupid*) did furiouſly loue a yoong nobleman of her fathers Court. Who fearing the kinges rage, and not once daring either to attempt or accept ſo high a place, ſhee made that ſleeping drinke, and found meanes by a truſtie ſeruaunt of hers, (who of purpoſe inuited him to his chamber) to procure him, that ſuſpected no ſuch thing, to receiue it. Which done, he no way able to reſiſt, was ſecretly carried by him into a pleaſant chamber, in the midſt of a garden, ſhe had of purpoſe prouided for this enterpriſe: where that ſpace of time, pleaſing her ſelfe with ſeeing and cheriſhing of him, when the time came of the drinks end of working, and he more aſtoniſhed then if he had falne from the cloudes, ſhe bad him chooſe either then to marrie her, and to promiſe to flie away with her in a bark ſhe had made readie, or elſe ſhe would preſently crie out, and ſhewe in what place he was, with othe hee was come thither to rauiſh her. The noble man in theſe ſtraightes, her beautie preuailed, he married her, and eſcaped the Realme with her. And after many ſtrange aduentures, were reconciled to the king her father, after whoſe death they raigned. But ſhe gratefully remembring the ſeruice, that drinke had done her, preſerued in a bottle (made by ſingular Arte long to keepe it without periſhing) great quantitie of it, with the foretold inſcription, which wrong interpreted by her daughter in law the Queene of *Cyprus*, was giuen by her to *Gynecia* at the time of her marriage, and the drinke finding an old body of *Baſilius*, had kept him ſome houres longer in the trance, then it would haue done a yoonger. But a good while it was, before good *Baſilius* could come again to himſelf: in which time *Euarchus* more glad then of the whole worldes Monarchie, to be rid of his miſerable magiſtracie, which euen in iuſtice he was now to ſurrender to the lawful Prince of that countrie, came from the Throne vnto him, and there with much adoe made him vnderſtand, how theſe intricate matters had fallen out. Many garboiles paſſed through his fancie before he could be perſwaded, *Cleofila* was other then a woman. At length remembring the Oracle, which now indeede was accompliſhed (not as before he had imagined) conſidering all had fallen out by the higheſt prouidence, and withall waying in all theſe matters his owne fault had been the greateſt. The firſt thing he did, was with all honorable pompe, to ſend for *Gynecia*: who poore Ladie thought ſhe was leading forth to her liuing buriall: and (when ſhe came) to recount before all the people, the excellent vertue was in her, which ſhe had not onely maintained all her life moſt vnſpotted: but nowe was contented ſo miſerably to die, to follow her husband. He told them how ſhe had warned him to take heede of that drinke, and ſo withall the exalringes of her that might be, he publikely deſired her pardon, for thoſe errours he had committed. And ſo kyſſing her, left her to receiue the moſt honourable fame of anie Princeſſe throughout the world, all men thinking (ſauing onely *Pyrocles* and *Philoclea* who neuer bewraied her) that ſhewas the perfit mirrour of all wifely loue. Which though in that point vndeſerued, ſhe did in the remnant of her life daily purchaſe, with obſeruing al dutie & faith to the example & glorie of *Greece*. So vncertain are mortall iudgments, the ſame perſon moſt infamous, and moſt famous, and neither iuſtly. Then with Princely entertainment to *Euarchus*, and many kinde words to *Pyrocles*, whom ſtill he dearely loued though in a more vertuous kinde, the marriage was concluded, to the ineſtimable ioy of *Euarchus*, (towardes whom now *Muſidorus* acknowledged,

ledged his fault) betwixt theſe peereleſſe Princes and Princeſſes. *Philanax* for his ſingular faith euer held deare of *Baſilius* while he liued, and no leſſe of *Muſidorus*, who was to inherite that Dukedome, and therein confirmed to him and his, the ſecond place of that Prouince, with great increaſe of his liuing to maintain it: which like proportion he vſed to *Kalodulus* in *Theſſalia:* Highly honouring *Kalander* while he liued: and after his death continuing in the ſame meaſure to loue and aduannce this ſonne *Clitophon*. But as for *Sympathus*, *Pyrocles*, (to whom his father in his owne time gaue the whole kingdome of *Thrace*) held him alwaies about him, giuing him in pure gift, the great Citie of *Abdera*: But the ſolemnities of theſe marriages, with the *Arcadian* paſtoralles, full of many comicall aduentures, hapning to thoſe rurall louers; the ſtraunge ſtories of *Artaxia* and *Plexirtus*, *Erona* and *Plangus*; *Helene* and *Amphialus*, with the wonderfull chaunces that befell them: The ſhepheardiſh loues of *Menalcas* with *Kalodulus* daughter; the poore hopes of the poore *Philiſides* in the purſuite of his affections; the ſtrange continuance of *Klaius* and *Strephons* deſire; Laſtly the ſonne of *Pyrocles* named *Pyrophilus*, and *Melidora*, the faire daughter of *Pamela* by *Muſidorus*, who euen at their birth entred into admirable fortunes; may awake ſome other ſpirite to exerciſe his penne in that, wherewith mine is already dulled.

FINIS.

LONDON.
Printed for William Ponſonbie, dwelling in Paules Church yard, neere vnto the great north doore of Paules.
Anno Domini. 1593.